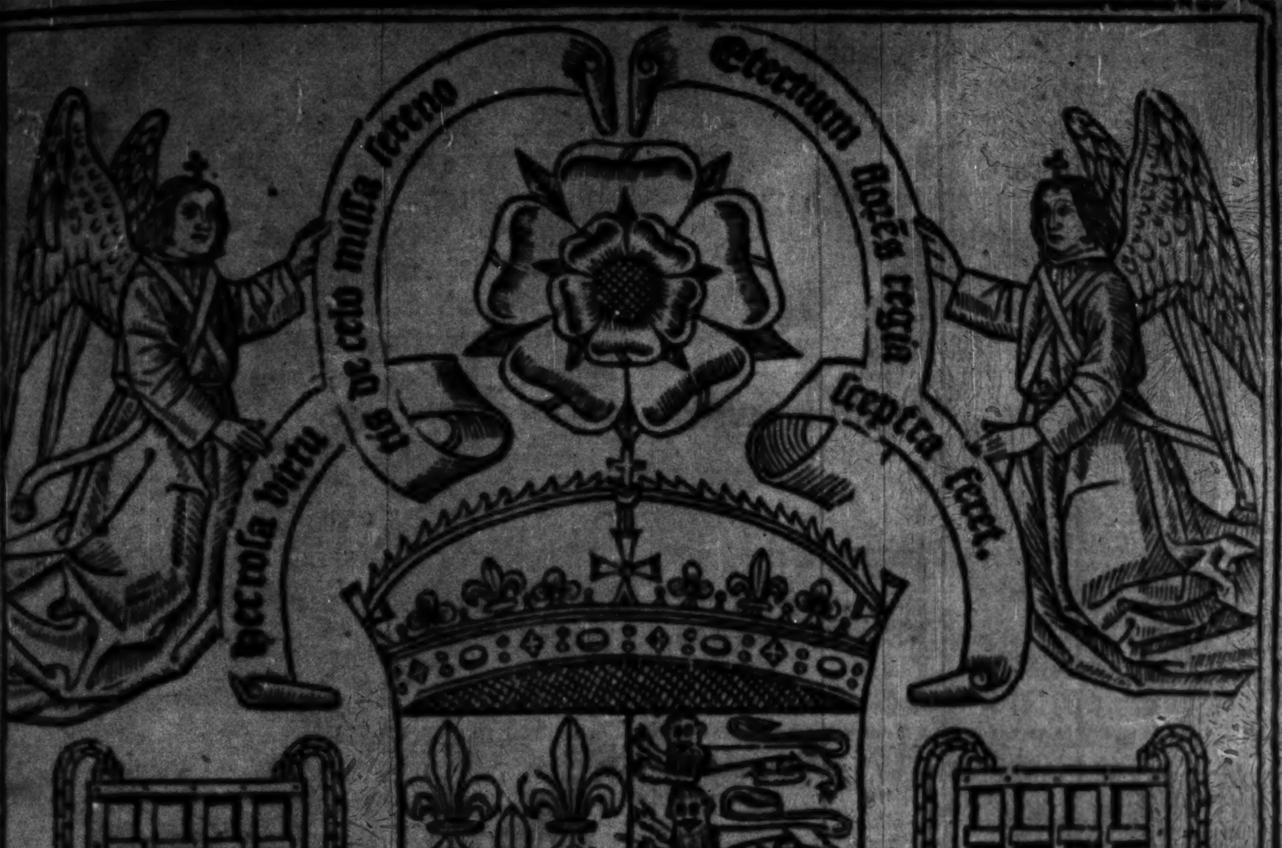
[illegible]

¶ The Cronycles of Englonde / with the dedes of popes and emperours / and alſo the deſcripcyon of Englonde.


Hec roſa virtu
tis de celo miſſa ſereno
Eternum florẽs regia
ſceptra feret.

Tabula.

¶ Here begynneth a ſhorte and a breue Table/ for to fynde lyghtly wherof any man ſhall pleaſe hym to rede in this boke.

Folio prime.
The Prologue.
Folio. ii.
The werke of the fyrſt. vi. dayes.
Adam the fyrſt man.
Eua the fyrſt woman.
Seth ſone to Adam.
Delbora ſyſter to Abell.
Abell ſone to Adam.
Cayn and Calmana ſyſter and wyfe to Cayn.
Enos.
Chanam.
Malaleel/ Jareth/ Enoch/ of the lyne of Chryſt.
Matuſale/ Lameth of Chryſtes lyne.
Folio. iii.
Tuball the fyrſt grauer.
Jabe founde the fyrſt pauylyons.
Juball founde the fyrſt crafte to playe vpon inſtrumentes.
Neoma founde fyrſt weuynge.
Noe/ the ſhyppe/ the raynbowe.
Cham/ Sem/ and Japhet Noes ſones.
Arphaxat and his chyldren.
Chus and his chyldren.
Sale and his ſone.
Heber and his chyldren.
Folio. iiii.
Phaleg.
Jectan/ Nemroth/ and Sulphen were the buylders of the Toure of Babylon.
How gentylmen began.
Saruk of Chryſtes lyne.
Belus kynge of Babylon.
Ninus kynge of Babylon.
Folio. v.
Thare of the lyne of Chryſt.

¶ Here begynneth the hyſtory of ye holy [illegible] & contynueth to Brute.

Folio. v.
Abraham and his bretherne with theyr progenye.
Abrahams wyues.
Melchiſedech kynge of Salem.
Semiramis kynge of Babylon.
Ninus kynge of Babylon.
Arrius kynge of Babylon.
Iſaac of the lyne of Chryſt/ and of his wyues and his ſones.
Of Gomorra/ and of the wyfe of Loth.
Jacob of the lyne of Chryſt/ and of his wyues and progenye.
Xerſes kynge of Babylon.
Armamitres was kynge after hym.
Beloctus kynge of Babylon.
Inachus the fyrſt kynge of Grece.
Phoroneus was kynge after hym.
Judas of the lyne of Chryſt.
Folio. vi.
Belus kynge of Aſſuriorum.
Athlas an aſtronomer.
Sarapis kynge of Grekes.
Argus kynge of Grekes.
Omogires put fyrſt oxen to the plough.
Belus kynge of Babylon.
Pharao kynge of Egypte.
Amuchus kynge of Babylon.
Pharao kynge of Egypte.
Aram of Chryſtes lyne.
Job the holy man.
Moyſes the Juge of Iſraell.
Aaron the byſſhop.
Balrus kynge of Babylon.
Cycrops kynge of Athenes.
Aminadab of Chryſtes lyne.
Moyſes the fyrſt Juge
Aaron the fyrſt byſſhop
Pharao kynge of Egypte.
Naaſon ſone to Aminadab.
When the lawe of god was gyuen on the hyll of Synay.
Salmon of the lyne of Chryſt.
Joſue the Juge.

Tabula

Eleazar byſſhoppe.
Athonyell Iuge
Aoth Iuge
Ianus the fyrſt kynge of ytaly
Amintas kynge of Babylon.
Boos of the lyne of Cryſte
Folio. vii.
Sangar Iuge
Delbora Iuge
Phenees byſſhop.
Saturnus kynge of ytaly
Picus kynge of ytaly.
Gedeon Iuge
Bocci byſſhoppe
Abimalech Iuge.
Tola Iuge.
Bocci byſſhoppe.
Iayr Iuge
Faunus kynge of ytaly
Latinus kynge of ytaly.
Tautanus kynge of Babylon
Lampdon kynge of Troye.
The newe synnes of Iſraell
Ozy byſſhop.
Eballam Iuge
Abialon Iuge
Abdon Iuge
Anthamanus kynge of Aſſyrium
Agamenon kynge of Grece
Eneas kynge of ytaly
Ulixes an eloquent man,
Obeth of the lyne of Cryſte
Sampſon Iuge
Folio. viii.
Ieſſe of the lyne of Cryſte
Saull kynge of Iſraell.
Aſcanius kynge of ytaly
Siluius kynge of ytaly
Uenes and Padua were buylded
Homere the grete poete

¶ Here begynneth the ſeconde parte and of the kyngdome of Brytayne.
Folio. viii.
Albyon the fyrſt woman that was in Englonde
Folio. ix.
Brute kynge of Brytayne
Folio. xii.
Locrin kynge of Brytayne.
Madan kynge of Brytayne.
Dauyd kynge of Iſraell
Folio. xiii.
Mempris kynge of Brytayne.
Salomon kynge of peas
Sadoch byſſhop
Roboas kynge of peas
Achimias byſſhop.
Ieroboas kynge of Iſraell
Abdyas kynge of Iewes
Aſa kynge of Iewes
Azarias byſſhoppe
Baſa kynge of Iſraell
Hela kynge of Iſraell.
Amri kynge of Iſraell
Archa kynge of Iſraell
Ebrac kynge of Brytayne
Brute Greneſhelde kynge of Brytayne.
Leyll kynge of Brytayne
Folio. xiiii.
Ioſaphat kynge of Iewes
Helyas the grete prophete
Machias and Abdias prophetes
Ocholias kynge of Iſraell
Lud Ludibras kynge of Brytayne
Bladud kynge of Brytayne.
Ioram kynge of Iewes
Whan Helyas was rauyſſhed in to Paradyſe.
Ocholias or Azarias kynge of Iewes
Athalia quene of Iewes
Ioram kynge of Iſraell
Iehen kynge of Iſraell
Athalia moder to Azari kynge of Iewes
Ioam kynge of Iewes
Ioachas kynge of Iſraell.
Ioam kynge of Iſraell

Leyr kynge of Brytayne.
Folio.xv.
Amaſias kynge of Jewes.
Jeroboam kynge of Iſraell
Ozias kynge of Jewes.
Ozee byſſhop and prophete
Joell Ananias and Abdias prophetes.
Zacharias kynge of Iſraell.
Phaſeia kynge of Iſraell.
Phaſe kynge of Iſraell
Folio.xvi.
Morgan ⁊ Conedag kynges of Brytayn.
Reynolde Gorbodian Ferres and Porres kynges of Brytayne
How foure kynges helde all Brytayne/⁊ of theyr names.
Scater and dawalter kynges.
Radur and Cloten kynges.
Donebant kynge of Brytayne
Folio.xvii.
Brenne and Belin kynges of Brytayne.
Folio.xviii.
Combratus kynge of Brytayne
Joathan kynge of Jewes.
Amarias byſſhoppe
Olympias were ſet in Grece
Acham kynge of Jewes
Achitob byſſhop
Ozee kynge of Iſraell.

¶ Here begynneth the thyrde parte and contynued to the Natyuyte of Cryſte.

Folio.xviii.
Rome was buylded by Romulus
Ezechias kynge of Jewes
Sadoch byſſhop.
Manaſſes kynge of Jewes
Folio.xix
Sellum and Echias byſſhoppes
Numa kynge of Rome
Amon kynge of Jewes
Joſias kynge of Jewes.
Hellias byſſhop
Tobias the holy man
Tulius kynge of Rome
Nabugodonoſor kynge of Babylon.
Ancus kynge of Rome
Danyell the prophete
Joathas kynge of Jewes.
Joachim kynge of Jewes
Saraias byſſhop
Joachim kynge of Jewes
Sedechias kynge of Jewes
Joſedech byſſhop
Abacuk prophete
The Tranſmygracyon
Priſcus Torquinus kynge of Rome.
Nabugodonoſor and Enilmerodach kynges of Babylon.
Folio.xx.
How the playe of Cheſſe was founde
Salathiell of the lyne of cryſte
Seruius Tulius kynge of Rome
Regulat/Nabuſardach/and Balthaſar kynges of Babylon.
Monarchia Perſarum
Darius kynge of Babylon
Cyrus Emperour of Perſes.
Babylon was deſtroyed
Tarquinus ſuperbus kynge of Rome.
Lucres a wyfe
How ye gouernaunce of Rome was chaunged after the kynges
Hiſtoria libri Eſdre.
Zorobabell the duke.
Eſdras preeſt
Cambyſes kynge of Perſes.
Folio.xxi.
Enterydes ⁊ Darius kynges of Perſes.
Abiuth of the lyne of Cryſt.
Joachim byſſhop
Senatours of Rome were ordeyned
Arthaxarſes ⁊ Xerſes kynges of Perſe
Megdianus kynge of Perſe.
Elyac of the lyne of Cryſte.
Eſdras an holy man.
Neemias the butler.

Tabula

Permenides/[illegible]/Democritus & ypocras Phyloſophres.
Azor of the lyne of Cryſt
Elyaſyb byſſhop
Camillus dictatour of Rome
Darius kynge of Perſe.
Plato a Phyloſopher
Titus dictator of Rome
Gaius a Senatour
Marcus Ualerius a Senatour.
Arthaxerſes Arſamus and Darius kynges of Perſe.
Jodas and Johannes byſſhoppes
Ariſtoteles and Socrate Phyloſophers
Guenthelan/Seſyll/Kymar/Dolwan/Morwith kynges of Brytayne.
Fo.xxii.
Gorbodyan/Artogayll and Helyder kynges of Brytayne.
[illegible].xxxii.kynges reygned in peas eche after other in Brytayne
Lud kynge of Brytayne
Sadoch of the lyne of Cryſt.
Judas byſſhoppe
Folio.xxiii.
Eneas byſſhop
Manlius & Fabius Conſules of Rome.
Monarchia grecorum.
Alexander kynge
Achym of the lyne of Cryſt.
Symon and Eleazarus byſſhoppes
Dolobela Emilius/Marc⁹ Curius Genutius Conſules of Rome
Ptolomeus kynge of Egypte
Elyud of the lyne of Cryſte
Onias and Symon byſſhoppes
Sempronius/Appius/Claudius/& many more Senatoures of Rome
Ptolomeus kynge of Egypte
Hanyball kynge of Penorum
Folio.xxiiii.
Lucacius/Sempronius/Ualer⁹.&c.were Conſules at Rome.
Epiphanes kynge of Egypte
Antiochus kynge of Syrie
Onias and Symon byſſhoppes
Eleazar of the lyne of Cryſt
Onias byſſhoppe.
Paulus/Scipio Senatours at Rome
Philometor kynge of Egypte
Mathathias an holy man
Judas Machabeus and Jonathas his brother byſſhoppes.
Anthiochus kynge of Syrry.
Quintus Marchus/and Tiberius were Senatoures of Rome
Mathon of the lyne of Cryſt.
Symon and Johannes byſſhoppes.
Publius/Lucius/Lucius/and Lucius Senatours of Rome.
Folio.xxv.
Ptolomeus kynge of Egypte
Ariſtobolus kynge and preeſt
Alexander byſſhop
Seruius/Lucius/Fabius Senatours of Rome.
Ptolomeus kynge of Egypte
Jacob of the lyne of Cryſte.
Alexandra wyfe and byſſhoppe
Hircanus kynge of Jewes.
Uirgyll the grete poete.
Oracius and Saluſtius hiſtoricus
Quintus and Gaius Conſules of Rome
Pompeius/Marcus/and Julius were dictatours of Rome.
Folio.xxvi.
Cathon Phyloſopher.
Caſſybolon kynge of Englonde
Andragen kynge of Englonde
Joſeph of the lyne of Cryſte.
Antigonus byſſhoppe.
Folio.xxvii.
Titus Liuius and Ouidius hiſtoricus
Octauian Emperour.
The huſbondes of ſaynt Anna
Herode Aſcolonita kynge of Jewes.
Kymbalyn kynge of Englonde.

Tabula.

Here begynneth the fourth parte ⁊ contynued to the commynge of the Saxons
Folio.xxvii.
The Natyuyte of Cryſte.
Folio.xxviii.
Annanus/Rufus/and Valeri⁹/Graccus byſſhoppes.
Pylatus the Juge.
Of Pylates natyuyte.
Ouidius Naſo
Tyberius Emperour
Mathia the appoſtle.
Judas ſcarpoth
Folio.xxix.
The makynge of the Credo.
The foure euangeliſtes .
Peter ẏ fyrſt pope
Gaius Emperour
Gynder kynge of Englonde.
Folio.xxx.
Armager kynge of Englonde.
Weſtmer kynge of Englonde
Coill kynge of Englonde
Folio.xxxi.
Claudius Emperour.
James the more the appoſtle.
Nero Emperour
Seneca Neroes mayſter
Iuuenalis and Lucanus poetes
James the leſſe the appoſtle.
Linus a martyr and pope
Galba Emperour.
Otho Emperoure
Vitellius Emperour.
Veſpaſianus Emperour.
Cletus a martyr and pope
Titus Emperoure.
Folio.xxxii.
Domician Emperour
Clementis a martyr pope.
Nerua Emperour
Traianus Emperour
Anacletus a martyr and pope.
Plinius Orator
Euariſtus a martyr and pope
Alexander a martyr and pope.
Sixtus a martyr and pope.
Adrianus and Euſtachius Emperours
Theleſphorus a martyr and pope
Folio.xxxiii.
Iginius a martyr and pope
Anthonius Emperour
Pompeius hyſtoriographus.
Pius a martyr and pope
Anicetus a martyr and pope
Galienus a leche.
Marcus and Lucius Emperours.
Lucie kynge of Englonde.
Aſclepades kynge of Englonde
Coill kynge of Englonde
Fo.xxxiiii.
Conſtance kynge of Englonde
Conſtantyne kynge of Englonde.
Octauian kynge of Englonde
Maximian kynge of Englonde
Folio.xxxv.
Of the.xi.thouſande maydens
Gracian kynge of Englonde.
Folio.xxxvi.
Conſtantyne kynge of Englonde.
Conſtance kynge of Englonde.
Sother a martyr and pope
Eleutherius a martyr and pope
Folio.xxxvii.
Marcus Anthonius and Lucius Comdius were Emperours.
Helius Emperour.
Victor a martyr and pope.
Zepherinus a martyr and pope
Origenes the noble clerke.
Caliſtus a martyr and pope
Anthonius Emperour
Anthonius Marcus Emperour
Alyſander Emperoure.
Urbanus a martyr and pope.
Poncianus a martyr and pope
Anteros a martyr and pope
Maximianus Emperour

Tabula

Gordian Emperour
Phylyp Emperour
Decius Emperour
Fabianus a martyr and pope
Cornelius a martyr and pope
Lucius pope
Gallus and Volucianus Emperours
Valerian Emperour
Stephanus a martyr pope
Sixtus a martyr pope
Dioniſius a martyr pope
Folio.xxxviii.
Felix a martyr and pope
Claudius Emperour
Euticianus a martyr and pope
Aurelius Emperour
Tacitus Emperour
Probus Emperour
Carus and his two ſones Emperours
Diocleſian Emperour
Maximian Emperour
Gaius pope and martyr
Arcellinus a martyr and pope
Marcellus a martyr and pope
Euſebius a martyr and pope
Melchiades a martyr and pope
Galerius Emperour
Silueſter pope
Conſtantyne Emperour
Saynt Nicholas
Anaſtaſius byſſhop/and he made (Quicūq; vult ſaluus eſſe)
Marcus pope
Julius pope
Conſtantinus Emperour
Folio.xxxix.
Liberius pope
Felix pope
Julianus apoſtata Emperour
Jouinianus Emperour
Valentinian Emperour
Damacius pope
Valens Emperour
Auguſtinus rethoricus
Siricius pope
Theodoſius Emperour
Claudius poeta
Arcadius Emperour
Honorius Emperour
Jerom the doctour
Sanctus Heraclides
Johannes Cryſoſtomus
Anaſtaſius pope
Innocencius pope
Zozimus pope
Folio.xl.
Bonifacius pope
Celeſtinus pope
Theodoſius Emperour
Sixtus and Leo popes
Marcianus and Valentinianus Emperours.

¶Here begynneth the .v. parte and contynueth to the comynge of the Danes.

Folio.xl.
Engyſt
Folio.xli.
Vortiger kynge of Englonde
Vortimer kynge of Englonde
Folio.xliii.
Aurilambros kynge of Englonde
Folio.xlv.
Uterpendragon kynge of Englonde
Folio.xlvii.
Arthur kynge of Englonde
Folio.lii
Conſtantyne
Adelbryght
Edell/all kynges of Englonde
Folio.liii.
Curan
Conan
Cortyk
Gurmonde/all kynges of Englonde
Folio.liiii.
Adelbryght
Sicwith

Elfride
Precinall/all kynges of Englonde.
Folio.lv.
Cadewan
Oſwalde
Oſwy
Edwyn
Cadwalyn all kynges of Englonde
Folio.lvi.
Cadwaldre kynge of Englonde
Folio.lvii.
Offa
Oſbryght
Elle/all kynges of Englonde
Folio.lviii.
Saynt Edmonde
Edelſe
Eldred/all kynges of Englonde.

¶ Here begynneth of the popes and Emperours ⁊ other notable thynges in the tyme of the Saxons beynge in Englonde.
Folio.lviii.
Leo the fyrſt Emperour
Leo pope
Hellarius pope
Simplicius pope
zeno Emperour
Felix pope
Gelaſius pope
Anaſtaſius Emperour
Anaſtaſius pope
Simachus pope
Folio.lix.
Clodianus kynge of Fraunce
Hormiſda pope
Juſtinus Emperour
Priſcianus grāmaticus
Johannes pope
Felix the fourth pope
Juſtinianus Emperour
Bonifacius pope
Johannes the ſeconde pope
Agapitus a confeſſour pope
Siluerius a martyr pope
Virgilius pope
Synodus quarta
Pelagius pope
Johannes the thyrde pope
Juſtinus the ſeconde Emperour
Tyberius the ſeconde Emperour
Benedictus pope
Pelagius Emperour
Mauricius Emperour
Folio.lx.
What tyme ſaynt Auſtyn came in to Englonde
Focas Emperour
Gregorius the fyrſt pope
Sauinianus pope
Bonifacius the thyrde pope
Bonifacius the fourth pope
Heraclius Emperour
Deus dedit pope
Bonifacius the fyfth pope
Machomite the duke of ſaraſyns
Folio.lxi.
Conſtantyne the thyrde Emperour
Martinus the fyrſt pope
Eugenius pope
Vitellianus pope
Adeodatus pope
Conſtantyne the fourth Emperour
Donus a Romayne pope
Bonifacius pope
Agatho pope
Leo pope
Benedictus the ſeconde pope
Juſtinianus the ſeconde Emperour.
Folio.lxii.
Johannes the fyfth pope
zeno pope
Sergius pope
Saynt Beda
Leo the ſeconde pope
Liberius Emperour
Leo the thyrde pope
Johannes the ſyxth pope

Johannes the.vii.pope
Juſtinianus Emperour
Syſinius pope
Conſtantyne pope
Phylyp the ſeconde Emperour
Anaſtaſius the ſeconde Emperour
Gregorius the ſeconde pope.
Theodoſius Emperour
Folio.lxiii.
Leo and Conſtantyne Emperours
Gregorius the thyrde pope
Conſtantinus Emperour
zacharias pope
Stephanus the ſeconde pope
Paulus a Romayne pope
Conſtantyne the ſeconde pope
Karolus magnus
Stephanus the thyrde pope
Adrianus pope
Leo the fourth pope
Conſtantinus Emperour
Folio.lxiiii.
Nichoferus Emperour
Mychaell Emperour
Karolus magnus the fyrſt a ſaynt
Leo pope
Ludouicus Emperour
Stephanus the fourth pope
Paſchall pope
Eugenius the fourth pope
Ualentinus pope
Gregorius the fourth pope
Lotherius pope
Sergius the ſeconde pope
Leo pope
Benedictus a Romayne pope
Folio.lxv.
Ludouicus Emperour
Johannes a woman pope
Nicholaus pope
Adrianus pope

¶Here begynneth the.vi.parte and contynued to the comynge of the Normans.
Folio.lxv.
Alured kynge of Englonde.
Folio.lxvi.
Johannes the.viii.pope
Karolus the ſeconde Emperour
Martinus pope
Adrianus the thyrde pope
Stephanus the fyfth pope
Karolus the thyrde Emperour
Arnulphus Emperour
Formoſus pope
Bonifacius pope
Stephanus the.vi.pope
Johannes the.ix.and.x.popes
Theodorus pope
Johannes the.xi.pope
Benedictus the fourth pope
Leo pope
Chriſtoforus the fyrſt pope
Ludouicus the thyrde Emperour
Beringarius ⁊ Conradus Emperours
Edwarde kynge of Englonde
Sergius the thyrde pope
Anaſtaſius pope
Laudo and Johannes popes
Folio.lxvii.
Henricus Emperour
Adelſtone kynge of Englonde
Edmonde kynge of Englonde
Eldred kynge of Englonde
Edwyn kynge of Englonde
Leo the ſyxth pope
Stephanus the.vii.and.viii.popes
Martinus the thyrde pope
Agapitus pope
Johannes the.xii.pope
Folio.lxviii.
Edgar kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxviii.
Beringarius the thyrde Emperour
Lotharius Emperour
Beringarius the fourth Emperour
Leo the.viii.pope
Johannes the.xiii.pope

Benedictus the.vi.pope
Otto the fyrſt Emperour
Otto the ſeconde Emperour
Folio.lxix.
Of ſaynt Edwarde martyr and kynge of Englonde
Eldred kynge of Englonde
Edwyne kynge of Englonde and of Denmarke
Bonus pope
Bonifacius pope
Benedictus pope
Johannes the.xiiii.xv.and.xvi.popes.
Gregorius the.v.pope
Folio.lxx.
Otto the thyrde Emperour
Siluester the ſeconde pope
Johannes the.xviii.and.xix.popes
Henricus the fyrſt Emperour
Benedictus pope
Johannes the.xx.pope
Knoght kynge of Englonde
Edmonde Irenſyde kynge of Englonde.
Folio.lxxi.
Knoght kynge of Englonde
Benedictus the.ix.pope
Folio.lxxii.
Conradus Emperour
Harolde kynge of Englonde
Hardiknoght kynge of Englonde
Of the vylany that the Danes dyd to the Englyſſhmen
Of Godewyn the fals traytour
Alured martyr
Folio.lxxiii.
Syluester the thyrde pope
Damaſius the ſeconde pope
Folio.lxxiiii.
Saynt Edwarde kinge of Englonde and confeſſour.
Folio.lxxv.
Victor the ſeconde pope
Henry the ſeconde Emperour
Stephanus the.ix.pope
Benedictus pope
Henricus the thyrde Emperour
Nicholaus the ſeconde pope
Alexander the ſeconde pope
Harolde kynge of Englonde.

Here begynneth the.vii.parte ꝧ contynued vnto our dayes / ꝧ is to ſaye / kynge Edwardes reygne ꝧ fourth the.xxiii.yere

Folio.lxxv.
Wyllyam conquerour
Folio.lxxvi.
Gregorius the.vii.pope
Victor the thyrde pope
Urbanus pope
Folio.lxxvii.
Wyllyam Rous kynge of Englonde
Paſcall pope
Folio.lxx.ii.
Henry Beauclerke kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxviii.
Henricus the fourth Emperour
Gelaſius pope
Calixtus pope
Folio.lxxix.
Honorius pope
Lotharius Emperour
Hugo de ſancto victore
The ordre of ſaynt Johan Baptyſt
Innocencius pope
Folio.lxxix.
Stephen kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxx.
Celeſtinus the ſeconde pope
Lucius pope
Eugenius the ſeconde pope
Petrus Lombardus byſſhop
Petrus Cōmeſtor
Fredericus the fyrſt Emperour
Anaſtaſius pope
Folio.lxxx.
Henry the ſeconde kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxxi.
Adrianus the fourth pope

Tabula

Alexander the thyrde pope
Lucius the thyrde pope
Urbanus the thyrde pope
Gregorius the.viii.pope
Clemens the thyrde pope
Folio.lxxxi.
Rycharde the fyrſt kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxxii.
Henricus the fyfth Emperour
Celeſtinus the thyrde pope
Innocentius the thyrde pope
Wyllyam of Parys
Franciſcus an ytalian
Folio.lxxxii.
Iohan kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxxvii.
Fredericus the ſeconde Emperour
Honorinus the thyrde pope
Folio.lxxxvii.
Henry the thyrde kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxxix.
Gregorius the.ix.pope
Celeſtinus the fourth pope
Innocencius the fourth pope
Folio.lxxxx.
Thomas de Aquino
Albertus magnus
Euſtacius
Bonauenture
Alexander and Urbanus popes
Rychardus Emperour
Clemens the fourth pope
Gregorius the.x.pope
Innocencius the.v.pope
Adrianus pope
Iohannes the.xxi.pope
Nicholaus the thyrde pope
Radulphus Emperour
Martinus the fourth pope
Nicholaus de lyra
Honorius the fourth pope
Nicholaus the fourth pope
Folio.lxxxx.
Edwarde the fyrſt kynge of Englonde
Folio.lxxxxvii.
Celeſtinus pope
Bonifacius pope
Benedictus the.xi.pope
Adulphus Emperour
Albertus Emperour
Clemens pope
Iohannes the.xxii.pope
Henry the.vi.Emperour
Folio.lxxxxvii.
Edwarde the ſeconde kynge of Englonde
Folio.C.ix.
Lodouicus Emperour
Iohan Mandeuyll a doctour of phyſyke and knyght
Benedictus pope
Folio.C.ix.
Edwarde the thyrde kynge of Englonde.
Folio.C.xxii
Clemens the ſyxth pope
Karolus the fourth Emperour
Innocencius the.vi.pope
Urbanus the.v.pope
Gregorius the.xi.pope
Wenſelaus Emperour
Urbanus pope
Folio.C.xxxiii.
Bonifacius the.ix.pope
Rycharde yͤ ſeconde kynge of Englonde.
Folio.C.xl.
Innocencius the.vii.pope
Roberte Emperour
Iohannes the.xxiii.pope
Sygyſmundus Emperour
Folio.C.xl.
Henry the fourth kynge of Englonde
Folio.C.xliii.
Martyn the.v.pope
Eugenius pope
Folio.C.xliiii
Henry the fyfth kynge of Englonde
Folio.C.li.
Felix the fyfth pope
Alberte Emperour

Fredericus the thyrde Emperour.
Nicholaus the fyfth pope
Folio.C.li.
Henry the.vi.kynge of Englonde.
Folio.C.lxii.
Calixtus the thyrde pope
Prynters of bokes
Pius the ſeconde pope
Folio.lxiii.
Paulus a venycyan pope
Sixtus the fourth pope

The deſcrypcyon of Englonde / Wales / Scotlonde / and Irlonde in the later ende of theſe preſent Cronycles.

Thus endeth the Table.

IN so moche þt it is neceſſary to al creatures of cryſten relygyon/ or of fals relygyon/ or gentyles and machomytes to knowe theyr prȳce/ or prynces that regne vpon them/ ⁊ them to obey. Soo it is cōmodyous to knowe theyr noble actes ⁊ dedes/ ⁊ the circūſtaunce of theyr lyues. Therfore in þ yere of our lorde. M.CCCC.lxxxiii. the.xxii yere of the reygne of of kyng Edwarde þ fourth at ſaynt Albons/ ſoo þt all men may know þ actes namely of our noble kynges of Englonde/ is compyled togyder this boke/ ⁊ more ouer is tranſlated out of latyn in to Englyſſhe/ fro þ begynnynge of the worlde/ þ lygnage of Cryſte frō Adam tyl it be comen to Dauyd/ ⁊ frō Dauyd/ þ kynges of Iſraell ⁊ of Iewes þ hye byſſhops in theyr days wt the iuges ⁊ prophetes. The foure pryncypal reames of þ worlde/ þ is to ſay/ Babylon/ Perce Grece/ ⁊ Rome/ ⁊ all the Emperours of Rome or Popes/ by ordre and theyr names/ ⁊ many ⁊ notable fader wt certeyn of theyr actes/ as more playnlyer enſueth. ¶ And here ben reherſed þ names of þ actours/ that tranſlated theſe Cronycles ſpecyally ¶ Galfridꝰ Mūmoth monke in his boke of Brute/ ſaynt Bede in þ actes of Englond Itē Bede in his boke of tymes Gyldas in the actes of Brytayne. Wylyam Malmeſbury monke in þ actes of kynges of Englonde ⁊ byſſhops. Caſſidorꝰ of þ actes of Emperours ⁊ biſſhops/ ſaynt Auſtyn de ci.dei. Titꝰ Liuius de geſtis Romanoꝝ. Martyn penytēcyary to þ pope in his cronycles of emperours ⁊ byſſhops/ ⁊ namely Theobaldꝰ cartuſiēſis conteynyng in his boke þ progreſſe of all notable faders from þ begynnynge of þ worlde vnto our tyme/ with the notable actes of the ſame ¶ In this newe tranſlacyon are conteyned many notable ⁊ merueylous thȳges And thoſe ben alledged by auctoryte of many famous clerkes. And þt euery man may know how theſe cronycles ben ordered/ ye ſhall vnderſtande þt this boke is deuyded in to. vii. partes Of the whiche the fyrſt parte conteyneth from Adā tyl Brute came in to Brytayne. The ſeconde ꝑte conteyneth frome Brute came fyrſt in to Englonde vnto þ cite of Rom. ⁊ was buylded by Romulꝰ The thyrd part cōteyneth ſyth Rome was buylded vnto Cryſt was borne of our lady vyrgin Mary. The. iiii from thens vnto the comynge of þ Saxons in to Englonde. The. v. parte frome thens/ vnto the comyng of þ Danys The vi. parte from thens vnto the comyng of the Normans The. vii. parte fro the normans vnto our tyme/ whiche is vnder the reygne of kynge Edwarde þ fourth. xxiii yere/ whoſe noble cronycles by cuſtome may not be ſene. ¶ And ſo in euery parte of theſe. vii. partes ben ſhewed þ mooſt ⁊ neceſſarye actes of all the kynges of Englonde ⁊ theyr names wryten aboue in þ margēt þt euery man may fynde them ſone. And afore þ kynges of Englondes actes ben wryten there is wryten the lygnage of Cryſt frome Adam tyll þt Cryſt was borne of our lady/ wt the hye byſſhop ⁊ iuge þt were in that tyme/ ⁊ certayn of theyr actes neceſſary tyll it be comen tyll Cryſt was borne. And after þt Cryſt was borne ⁊ Peter was Pope of Rome is ſhewed by ordre the names of all the popes ⁊ emperours of Rome afore ⁊ after/ wt certayne of theyr actes breuyatly/ and many other diuers thynges/ ⁊ meruayles in thoſe mensnes dayes fallynge. And it is ſhewed euery thynge in his place/ how many yere it fell after the begynnyng of the worlde/ ⁊ how longe afore þt Cryſt was borne. And whan þt I come to Cryſt was borne then it is wryten how longe ony thynge fel after the Natyuyte of Cryſt. And this is þ ordre of this boke/ ⁊ of thinges ſpoken of

AND as to men deſyrynge to haue a very knowlege of theſe Cronycles or of ony other it is neceſſary to knowe .vi. thynges. ¶ The fyrſte is yͤ ſtates of thynges / ⁊ thoſe ben two. One is fro yͤ begynnynge of yͤ worlde vnto Cryſte / yͤ whiche is called the ſtate of Deuiacion. ¶ The ſeconde is from Cryſt to yͤ ende of the worlde / yͤ whiche is called the ſtate of Reconſiliacōn. ¶ The ſeconde thynge is the diuyſyon of tymes / ⁊ thoſe ben thre. One is afore yͤ lawe of Moyſes / and another is vnder the lawe of Moyſes / another is vnder yͤ lawe of grace after criſt deyed. ¶ The thyrde is yͤ gouernynge of kyngdoms. And as for yͤ ye muſt knowe that though there were foure pryncypal kyngdomes / that is to ſaye Of Babylon of Perſees / of Grekes ⁊ Romaynes. Neuertheleſſe as to yͤ cours of yͤ worlde / ⁊ yͤ ordre of holy ſcrypture the fyrſte gouernynge was vnder faders frō Adam vnto Moyſes. The ſeconde vnder Juges frō Moyſes vnto Saul. The thyrde vnder kynges from Saul vnto zorobabell The fourth vnder byſſhops / frō zorobabell vnto Cryſt. ¶ The fourth is yͤ dyuerſyte of lawes / and thoſe were fyue. The fyrſt was yͤ lawe of nature / ⁊ yͭ was comyn to all men. The ſeconde is yͤ lawe or cuſtome of Gentyles whan yͤ vnder kynge Nyno begā yͤ people to worſhyp fals goddes. The thyrde is vnder yͤ lawe wryten roſe yͤ lawe of Jewes whan Circumcyſyon deuyded yͤ Jewes from other people. The fourth is vnder Cryſt roſe yͤ lawe of cryſten men whan fayth ⁊ grace of the ſacramentes enfourmed yͤ lyfe of men The fyfth vnder Machomet roſe yͤ lawe of Sarraſyns ⁊ Turkes. ¶ The fyfthe is yͤ nobleneſſe or vnnobleneſſe in dedes. ¶ And as to theſe / it is to knowe yͭ .vii. perſones ben redde of whome the dedes many tymes are hadde in mynde in hyſtoryes. That is to wryte of a prynce in his reame / of a knyghte in batayle / of a Juge in his place / of a byſſhoppe in the clergy / of a polytyke man in the people / of an hous bonde man in the hous / ⁊ of an abbot in his chyrche. And of theſe are wryten many tymes / the laudes of good men ⁊ the punyſſhementes of yͤ curſyd men. ¶ The ſyxth is the true countynge of the yeres. And to that / it is to be knowe that there were .viii. maner of nombrynge or countynge of the yeres. Thre after the Hebrewes. Thre after the Grekes. One of the Romayns. And one now is after the cryſten men. The Hebrewes thre maner of wyſe begynneth theyr yere. After the Hebrewes there is the yere vſuall begynnynge at January yͤ whiche they vſe in couenaūtes ⁊ bargēs makynge. And yͤ yere leyfful begynnynge at Marche yͤ whiche they vſe in theyr cerymonyes. And the yere Emergens from May begynnynge whan they went from Egypt they vſe in theyr cronycles ⁊ calculacyons. ¶ The Grekes nōbreth theyr yeres thre maner of wyſe. Fyrſt to yͤ glorye and Joye of theyr vyctory counteth theyr yeres from yͤ deſtruccyon of Troy. The fyrſte / the ſeconde / the thyrde / ⁊ the fourth. ⁊c. ¶ Thenne after the chyualry began at the hylle of Olīpus they notyfyed yͤ yeres after the ſame Olympiadū. And what Olympiades is ye ſhall knowe after in the boke. The thyrde whan they began to haue lordſhyppe of all the worlde they notefyed theyr yeres theſe maner of wyſe. In yͤ yere of yͤ reygne of Grekes the .iiii. the .x. the .xv. ⁊c. as it is open in yͤ boke of Machabeoꝝ. ¶ Then after yͤ Romayns gouernynge yͤ worlde counted and nombred theyr yeres (ab vrbe cōdita). ¶ The laſt of all Cryſten men counteth theyr yeres frō yͤ Incarnacyon of Cryſt. And bycauſe we ben Cryſten men we vſe mooſt to nombre/from the begynnynge of the worlde/ vnto Cryſte was borne. And fro Cryſte was borne/ vnto our tyme. And this ordre is obſerued ⁊ kepte in all the boke/of euery thynge in his place as it is ſayd afore.

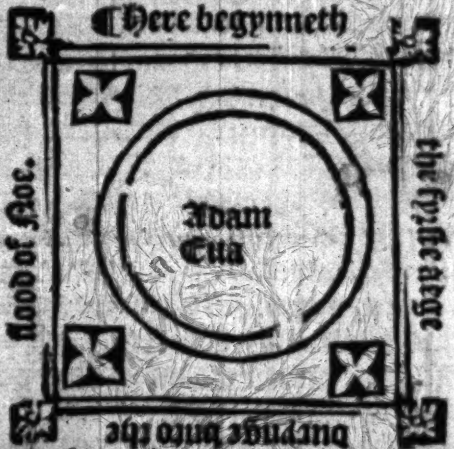
¶Explicit Prologus.

¶Hic incipit fructus temporũ.

BEcauſe of theſe bokes made/ to tell what tyme of ony thynge notable was. Therfore the begynnynge of all tymes ſhortly ſhall be touched. For ẏ whiche after doctours it is to be knowẽ/that foure thynges were made fyrſte/and in one tyme/⁊ of one age. That is to wytte the heuen Imperyall/angels nature/ẏ matere of the foure elemẽtes/and tyme. And that doctours calle the werke of the creacion/ẏ whiche was made afore ony day or lyght/of ẏ myghty power of god. And was made of nothynge. ¶Thenne after foloweth ẏ werke of diuyſyon/the which was made in thre of ẏ fyrſt dayes in whiche is ſhewed the hyghe wyſedom of ẏ maker. ¶Then after foloweth the arayenge of this werke in the whiche is ſhewed the goodneſſe of the creature/ the whiche was made thre of the nexte dayes folowynge (vt pꝫ clare i textu geneſi pͥmo.) ¶The fyrſte daye god made and dyuyded the lyght from ẏ derkeneſſe. ¶The ſeconde daye god made/⁊ ordeyned the fyrmament/⁊ dyuyded the water from ẏ water. ¶The thyrde daye god made/in the whiche he gadred the waters in to one place/and the erthe thoaperyd. ¶The fourth day god made/in the whiche he ordeyned ẏ ſonne/ẏ mone and the ſterres and put them in the fyrmament. ¶The fyfth daye god made/in the whiche he ordeyned fyſſhes ⁊ foules/ and grete whales in the water. ¶The ſyxte daye god ordeyned/in the whiche he made beeſt and man. ¶The .vii. daye god made/⁊ in that daye he reſted of all werkes ẏ he had ordeyned/not as in werkynge beynge wery/but he ceſſyd to make mo newe creatures (Vide pl'a geñ.i.)

VNderſtande ye ẏ Adam ẏ fyrſte man of whome it is wryten in this fyrſt aege next folowynge lyued .ix. hondred yere ⁊ .xxx. And gate .xxxii. ſoñs and as many doughters.

¶Anno mundi primo. Et ante chriſti natiuitatem .v. M.C.lxxxxix.



IN the fyrſte yere of the worlde the ſyxte daye god made Adam in ẏ felde Damaſceñ and Eua of his rybbes/puttynge them in payſrade. And badde them to kepe his cõmaundemẽt ẏ they ſholde not ete of the fruyte of lyfe vnder ẏ payne of deth. And the ſame day ẏ they had ſynned anone he caſte them out of paradyſe in to ẏ londe of curſedneſſe ẏ they ſholde lyue there wͭ ſwetynge ⁊ ſorowe tyll they dyed (Vide plura geñ.i.) ¶This Adam was an holy man all ẏ dayes of his lyfe grete penaunce dayly he dyde. And he commaunded his chyldren to lyue ryghtwyſly. And namely yͤ they ſholde auoyde in all wyſe frõ yͤ company of Cayn ⁊ his chyldrẽ. Nor that they ſholde not marye wͭ none of the

¶ This man Adã was our fyrſt fad. And for oo ſynne put vs out of paradyſe. But thrugh his holy cõuerſacõn ⁊ penaũce he gaue vs enenſample to come to yͤ kyngdom of heuẽ. And he yͭ wyl not folow his holy conuerſacõn ⁊ example for oo ſynne ryghtwyſly he can not cõplayne on hym/ as we doo many. ¶ Seth ſone to Adam was borne after yͤ begynnynge of yͤ world C. ⁊.xxx. yeres. ⁊ lyued.ix. C. ⁊.xii. But Moyſes ouerſkypped an hondred of those in yͤ whiche Abel wept in yͤ vale of ploracyon nygh Ebron. This Seth for yͤ oyle of mercy to be goten went to paradyſe ¶ Delbora was ſyſter to Abell. ¶ Abell was ſlayne of Cayn his brod. This Abel the fyrſt martyr began yͤ chirche of god. This man after Auſtyn made the cyte of god/ ⁊ he was yͤ fyrſt cyteyzyn of yͤ cyte. And bycauſe he was ryghtwys our lorde receyued his offrynge. ¶ Calmana was wyfe to Cayn. ¶ This Cayn was a curſed man ⁊ he made yͤ fyrſt erthly cyte yͭ euer in this worlde was/ in yͤ whiche he put his people for drede in ſoo moche as he vſed rauyn ⁊ vyolence. For he truſted ſuche thẏge to be done to hỹ as he dyde to other/ therfore he put hym ⁊ his in to a ſure place. This man ſlewe his broder Abell for enuye/ ⁊ he was punyſſhed of god ⁊ wãdred about in a deſpayre. And was ſlayne of Lameth a blynde man

¶ Anno mundi.iiii. C.xxxv. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatẽ.iiii. M.ix. C.lxxiiii.

Enos of yͤ lyne of criſt lyued.ix. C. yere ⁊.v. And bygã to call yͤ name of our lorde. It myght hap he founde ſome wordes of prayer/ or made ſome ymages for god to be worſhypped as now is in yͤ chirche. Thanã lyued after.ix.c. yere ⁊.x.

¶ Anno mundi.vii. C.lxxxv. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatẽ.iiii.M.iiii.C.iiii.

Malaleel of yͤ lyne of Cryſt lyued viii. C. ⁊.lxxxxv. yere. Iareth of that lyne lyued.ix.c.lxii. ¶ Enoch of yͤ ſame lyne lyued.iii. C. yere.lxv. And was a ryghtwyſe mã ⁊ pleaſed god. And for his grete holyneſſe our lorde trãſlated hym in to paradyſe where he lyueth with Hely in grete reſt of body ⁊ ſoule tyll the comynge of antecryſt. Theſe they ſhall go forth for the confortacyon of good men. And they ſhal be crowned with the crowne of martyrdome.

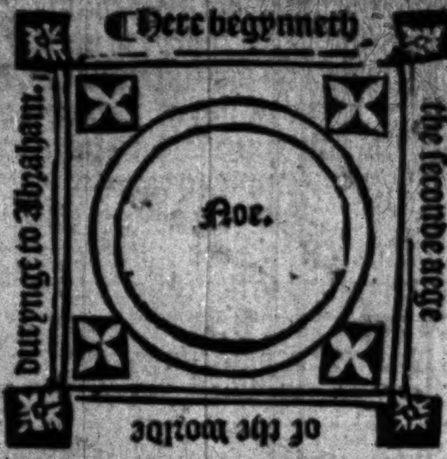
Matuſale of Cryſtes lyne lyued.ix C.lxix. yeres. And was the oldeſt man yͭ euer ony ſcrypture hath mẏde of. For whan he had lyued nyghe.v. C. yere our lord ſayd to hym. Buylde yͤ an hous and thou wylt for yet thou ſhalt lyue fyue hondred yere. And he anſwered ⁊ ſayd For ſo lytel a tyme as.v.hondred yere I wyll buylde noo hous. But reſted vnder trees and hedges/ and there ſlepte/ as he was wonte to do for a tyme.

¶ Anno mundi. M.iiii.C.liiii. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatẽ.iii. M.vii. C.xlv.

Lameth was of age.vii. C.lxxvii yere. This Lameth was yͤ fyrſt ayenſt nature ⁊ good maners yͭ ordeyned that a man myghte haue two wyues in doynge his auoutrye. And he was ſoore punyſſhed of theym/ for they gaue hym many a ſtrype. For it is ſoo that by what thynge a man ſynneth/ by the ſame he is punyſſhed. This Lameth ſlewe Cayn not wylfully. But whã he was olde and blynde he was ladde of a chylde yͭ whis che trowed ẏ he had ſeen a wylde beeſt/& ſayd to his mayſter ẏ he ſholde ſhote & ſo he ſlewe Cayn. Wherfore for angre he ſlewe ẏ chylde alſo. And it is to be knowen that all craftes or ſcyences lyberal/or hande craftes or of phyſyke ſeruynge to ẏ curyoſyte of men are trowde ẏ they were foūden in the chyldren of Lameth. And for they dradde ẏ peryll to come of ẏ flood & of ẏ fyre. Therfore Tuball graued ẏ ſame craftes in.ij.pyllers. The one was of marbell/& ẏ other of tyle or bryche. Tubal foūde fyrſt ẏ craft to werche golde and ſyluer & yrō. And was ẏ fyrſt grauer ẏ euer was. ¶ Jabe foūde fyrſt Tentoria for ſhepeherdes/and pauylyons for other men. ¶ Juball foūde fyrſt ẏ craft to playe vpō an harpe & orgās/& other muſycal inſtrumentes he vſed. ¶ Noema founde fyrſt ẏ crafte for to weue lynnen & wollen clothe/and to drawe thredes of woll & flexe. And afore that tyme ẏ people vſed ẏ ſkynnes of beeſtes for theyr clothes.

¶ Anno mūdi. M.vi.C.xlij. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.iij.M.v.C.lviij.

This ſhyp of Noe had in length.iij. hondreth cubytes/in brede.l.in altytudo.xxx (Vide plura gen̄.vi.) ¶ Knowe ye after doctours ẏ a couenyent payne this tyme was ordeyned to ẏ worlde. For then lechery habounded ẏ which defouled mennes body. And there by water ẏ erth was waſſhed & clenſed/in ſygne of ẏ promyſe ẏ god made to mā ẏ there ſholde neuer be ſuche a flood agayne. ¶ And ẏ Rayne bowe hath two pryncypall colours ẏ whiche repreſente ẏ two Jugementes. The water coloure repreſenteth the flood ẏ is paſſed. The fyre coloure betokeneth the Jugement to come & fyre by the whiche we certaynly abyde in ẏ ende of this worlde bycauſe couetyſe ſhal habounde by fyre it ſhal be brente. As golde & ſyluer by the fyre is wonte to be clenſed.



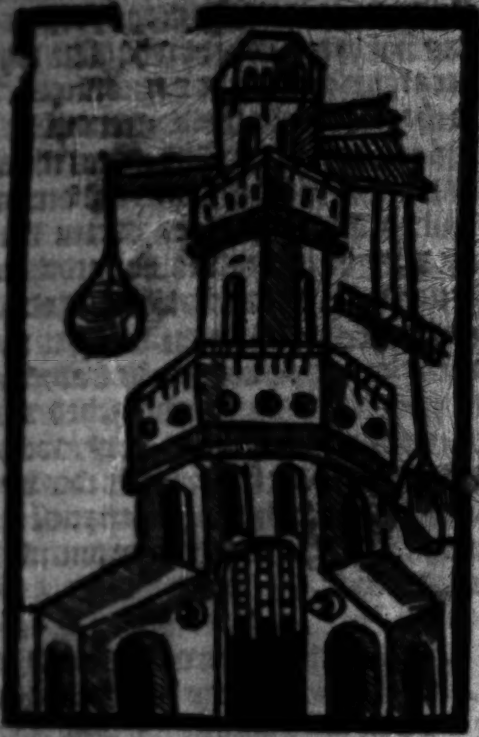
This Noe was a ryghtwyſe man & founde grace ayenſt god. Whan Noe was.v.hondred yere of aege he had goten Cham/Sem/& Japhet. That tyme by the cōmaūdment of god he began to make a ſhyp. And he made it parfyt in an hondred yere. And ẏ.C. yere cōplete oure lorde appered to hȳ & commaunded that he wͭ his wyfe & his chyldren & ẏ wyues of them ſholde entre the ſhyppe wͭ all maner of beeſtes/& all maner of foules alſo.&c. And anone ẏ flood came & ſtode aboue all hylles.xv.cubytes (Vide plura geneſi.vii.) ¶ After the flood a grete dronkēneſſe betyde vnto Noe. And through occaſyon of that dronkēneſſe he bleſſyd his two ſones. Sem & Japhet/for ẏ faders honour ẏ they had to hym/& for ẏ honeſt ſhame that they couered mekely theyr faders mēbres whā he was ſlepynge. And his ſone Cham for his ſcornynge & his vnreuerēce he curſed ¶ And here after ſayt Auſtyn is made ẏ fyrſt mencyon of boundage and of nobleneſſe cōtrary to it. For Noe ſayd ẏ Cham ſholde be ſeruaunt in boundage to Sem & Japhet for his vnreuerēce. Neuertheles ye ſhall not trowe that all ẏ deſcended of Cham were vnn ble men yet were polers. Foꝛ they began fyꝛſt to be myghty men of yͤ erth. As it is open of Nemroth ⁊ yͤ kynge of Chanaan ⁊ Aſſur. Foꝛ all of Sem ⁊ Japhet were vertuous ⁊ noble men / whan almoſt euerychone fell in to yͤ cryme of ydolatry / ⁊ were ofte tymes oppꝛeſſed of other men. But this bleſſynge ⁊ curſynge hath a reſpect to vertu ⁊ vyce foꝛ yͤ whiche a man is called truely a noble man oꝛ an vnnoble man. Foꝛ he yͭ is vertuous is a noble man / ⁊ he yͭ is vnuertuous is not noble. The ſame maner of wyſe tho yͭ foloweth the fayth of Abꝛahā rather were called his chyldꝛen than yͤ Jewes / yͤ whiche carnally deſcēded frō hȳ. Neuertheles they had a ſpyꝛytuall pꝛeuylege of god / foꝛ yͤ faders merytes ⁊ his bleſſȳge. And of theſe.iii.ſones of Noe he beȳge a lyue after thiſtoꝛy of Philois were boꝛne.xxiiii.M and.vii.C. men wout womē ⁊ chyldꝛen. And they hadde on them thꝛe Pꝛynces / Nemꝛoth / Jectan / and Sulphen.

¶ Anno mundi.ii.M.ii.C.xlii.Et ante chꝛiſti natiuitatē.ii.M.vi.C.lvii.

Sem ſone to Noe yͤ.ii. yere after yͤ flood gate Arpharat ⁊ other whyle he is called Melchiſedech. The whiche after yͤ flood made yͤ cyte of Salē ⁊ now is called Jeruſalē. ¶ Cham his bꝛod̄ obteyned Affricam ⁊ gate ſones twayne. Chus ⁊ Meſraym. And theſe two gate ſones and doughters ⁊ many a Regyon they enhabyted vnknowen to vs in occydētall ynde. ¶ Japhet was vnder vnto Cham / ⁊ was bleſſyd of his fader / ⁊ this Japhet had.vii. ſones. as Gomer / Magog / Maday / Janam / Tuball / Moſog / and Jras. And theſe.vii.gate ſones and doughters / ⁊ of them came many a regygyon (Vide plura Geñ.x) ¶ Arpharat ſone to Sem lyued.cccc.⁊.xxx.yere. And gate Elam / Aſſur / Lude / ⁊ Aram / ⁊ they gate many chyldꝛen (vt p3 gen̄.) ¶ This Aſſur bycauſe he wolde not rebelle agēſt god in yͤ edefyīge of yͤ toure of Babylon as Nemroth dyde / therfoꝛe he was dꝛyuen vnto the londe of Senears londe / whiche was ryght ſtraunge to hym / and was not afoꝛe enhabyted. The whiche was called after his name Aſſuria. And there he edefyed a Cyte afterwarde named Niniue / the whiche was the Metropolytayne of all the kyngdome of Aſſurioꝛ. ¶ Chus ſone to Cham was fader to Nemroth. This Nemroth was a gyaunt of ten cubytes longe. And he began to be myghty in the woꝛlde / and he is called a boyſtous hunter afoꝛe god. This man began that wretched vyce of coueytouſneſſe by his tyꝛanny / with the whiche vyce euer moꝛe after this woꝛlde is fulfylled. And the pꝛyncypalleſt kyngdome that he had was Babylon. And he had Archade / Ediſſa / Seleucia / ⁊ yͤ londe of Senaar. ¶ Sale ſone to Arpharat lyued.cccc.⁊.xxxiii.yeres. And of hym in ſcrypture is no thynge wꝛyten / but that Moyſes nōbred hym in the lyne that cometh of Cryſte. ¶ This Sale gate a ſone yͭ was named Heber. The whiche after the Hebꝛewes / had the ſpyꝛyte of pꝛophecye. And of this Heber the Hebꝛewes ben named. Foꝛ the Hebꝛewes tongue abode allone in his houſe in the confuſyon of the langage. And yͤ langage was called mannes langage / the whiche euery man vſed afoꝛe yͤ toure of Babylon was bylded. ¶ This Heber hadde two ſones and one was called Jectan thꝛough enſample of Nemroth deſcendynge fro Cham toke the pꝛyncehode vpon the chyldꝛen of Sem. And he hadde.xiii. ſones. ¶ But theſe people after Jerome are not knowen of vs foꝛ ferneſſe of the countre / oꝛ mutacyon and chaungynge of yͤ people /

or elles of ſome other maner cauſe.

¶ Anno mundi.ii.M.vi.C.xliiii. Et ante xpi natiuitatem.ii.M.v.C.lvi.



¶ Turris Babilonis.

Two hõdred and.xxxix. yere lyued Phaleg. ¶ This Phaleg was ẏ yonger ſone of Heber/ ⁊ in his dayes was made the confuſyon of langages. For in his houſe abode ẏ olde tongue alone/ ⁊ ẏ was Hebrewe. Wherfore after ſaynt auſtyn/ in hym apered a grete ſtedfaſtneſſe of ryghtwyſnes/ for this hous was fre of that payne/ as not conſentynge to ẏ buyldyng of ẏ toure. (Et ſcd̃m aug.) ther was.lxxii. generacyons/ ⁊ ſo there were.lxxii. langages. ¶ Iectan broder to Phaleg of Sem/ Nemroth prynce of Cham/ Subphen of Iaphet/ theſe thre prynces with theyr people gadered them togyder in ẏ felde of Sennaar/ dredynge the flode to come agayne ſayd. Let vs buylde a tour ẏ ſhal reche to heuen. ⁊c. Ge.xi. Our lord ſeynge ẏ folyſſhnes of the people confounded theyr tongues for theyr ſynnes In ſo moche ẏ none vnderſtode other/ ⁊ ſo they were dyſperpled throughe all the worlde. Of ẏ malyce of this Nemroth bokes ben wryten ful. And after ẏ confuſiõ of ẏ langage he went to ẏ lande of Perſe ⁊ there he taught them to adoure ẏ fyre as god. He lefte his ſone Belus in Babylon whiche ſucceded after hym. And ſoo his progeny optayned ẏ realme after many yeres. In this tyme began many kỹgdomes/ ⁊ ẏ mooſt of all thoſe kyngdomes was ẏ kyngdome of Scitay. But there were ſo many rude people in it ẏ the cyte was not worſhypped/ yet was it a myghty regyon of dyſtaunce. And aboute this tyme began the kyngdome of Egypt/ the whiche was chaũged many tymes with dyuers alteracyons. And alſo it is ſpoken of many tymes in ſcrypture. ¶ Nobylyte or gentylmen began aboute this ſayde tyme. And this nobleneſſe or gentylmen was ordeyned for many cauſes. ¶ The.i. cauſe was neceſſyte/ for whan mankynd grewe ſore/ and men were prompte and redy to do hurte and dõmage to other/ it was very neceſſary to withſtande ẏ grete malyce of ẏ curſed and wycked people agaynſt good and ryghtwyſe men. Ther of a man is called gentylman/ or a noble man/ as before other in vertues notable. Wherof ſaint Ierom ſayth. I ſe nothỹg elles in nobleſſe/ or in gentylmen/ but ẏ they are bounden in a certayne neceſſyte/ that they ſhall not recede fro the vertue/ and the gentylneſſe of theyr noble aunceſtours. ¶ The ſeconde was ẏ dyuers worſhippỹg of ẏ people/ for no man worſhyp then/but as it is naturall reaſon gaue. ⁊ they knewe not verily what they ſholde worſhyp/for they were ſo dull of wyt that they coude perceyue no grete thynge/but ẏ was publyſſhed by ẏ comyn people. Wherfore it was expedyent for theyr peas to be kepte ẏ they ſholde haue prynces of noble byrth. ¶ The thyrd cauſe proceedeth of ſome ſyngulier ſtrength. Many tymes ẏ comynalte were greued thrugh enmyes comynge vpon them. And then they ſayd ẏ who ſomeuer wolde preſerue them from theſe perylles he ſholde haue ẏ ryght of nobleneſſe for hym ⁊ for his heyres for euermore And in this maner of wiſe many arredde to be noble men. ¶ The fourth cauſe of nobleneſſe was habondaunce of godes. Somtyme ẏ people were holden in grete penury of mete ⁊ drynke. And then they toke them ⁊ theyrs to ſome ryche mā ẏ thrugh ẏ couenaūt they ſholde tempre ẏ grete ſtraytnes of theyr hongre/⁊ after ẏ they ſholde knowe hym as theyr lorde ⁊ a noble man. Alſo there be founde certayne noble men by ẏ prouyſyon of god/though they were but fewe/yet ſome abode in vertue/as Dauyd and ſom fayled anone/as Saul ⁊ Jeroboam. Alſo it is radde ẏ many were noble men by tyranny. Of ẏ whiche ſom were dyſtroyed anone. And ſom abode in ſtableneſſe/as paynems might.

¶ Anno mundi .ii. M.ix.C.x.v. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.ii. M.ii.C.lxxxiiii.

SAruk lyneally deſcended from our fore fader Adam to Abraham. and Nachor was his ſone/and he lyued an.C and.xlviii. yere. ¶ And aboute this tyme ydolatrye began to encreace myghtely/⁊ yf ye reuolue ⁊ loke the hyſtoryes/ye ſhall fynde/that thre thynges prynncypally dyd brynge men to the ſynne of ydolatry/ẏ is to vnderſtande/the affeccyō whiche they had to deed men. Pryde and flaterynge agaynſt theyr prynces. And the dylygence of artyfycers ⁊ crafty men about ſculptures or grauynges. Wycked ſendes then entred in to ydolles and gaue anſweres to the people. And theſe wycked ſpyrytes confyrmed the errour of the people myghtely In ſomoche that what ſomeuer maner of perſone wolde not conforme hym to the reaſon/he ſholde greuouſly ſuffre the payne of dethe. Alſo there was added and put to theſe thynges the deceyuyng laude and praylynge of poetes/the whiche wretches and alſo dampned men into heuen with all theyr gay adourned ſayynges exalted. And that ſame tyme whan deuylles began for to ſpeke ſo fayre/and ſo nyghe to man/our good lorde of his grete haboundaunt mercy ſent his aungels that they ſholde ſpeke to his elected men truyſtely leſt that all mankynde ſholde peryſſhe with this vnhappy and myſcheuous errour.

IN this tyme was Belus ſone to Nemroth/the whiche was kynge of Babylon. And he was the fyrſte kynge of this worlde. And this man was he whome the errour of the people fyrſte byleued ſholde be a god/wherfore there were dyuers people that named hym dyuerſly/for ſome called hym Bell/ſome Baall/ſome Baalym/ſome Belphegor/⁊ ſome Belſabub. And this vnhappy errour ſtode in mankynde more than two thouſande yere. ¶ Ninus ſone to Belus the ſeconde kynge of Babylon or of aſſiriorum regned.lii. yere/⁊ this Ninus deſyred for to haue lordſhyp/⁊ worſhyp. And to that entent ẏ he might be lorde of all the countree aboute hym/he gaue batayll to all that dwelled aboute hym. And bycauſe that tyme ẏ people were rude and had not the compaſſe of ryght rynge nor armoure/anone he ſubdued vnto hym al Aſyam. And there was made ẏ fyrſt Monarche in ẏ eeſt party. And whã his herte was ſory for the dethe of his fader Belꝰ/he made to be made to hym for his comforte an ymage of his fader/vnto whom he gaue ſo myghty reuerence that what ſomeuer gylty man had fledde to ẏ ymage/there ſholde no man doo hym noo hurt/and he pardoned hym of al his treſpaſſe. And thrughe his enſample many a man began to worſhyp the deed ymage of theyr dere frẽdes. Then theſe malycious ſpyrytes ſeyng the curyoſyte of ẏ people hydde thẽ within them/⁊ gaue anſweres vnto the people and ſaid they were gods And cõmaunded them to do reuerence to them as vnto goddes. Thus that vnhappy ſynne of ydolatry was brought in/the whiche repugned myghtely to gods mageſte. And in ſo moche this madneſſe grewe that he ſholde ſuffre the payn of deth that ſayd they were men/but goddes.

Anno mundi iii.M.C.xiiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.ii.M.lxxxv

Thare ſone to Nachor lyued.ii.C.⁊v.yere. This Thare after ẏ deth of Aram went from Ur of Calde ⁊ paſſed in to Charram with his chyldren ⁊ his neuewes. And it is ſayd/bycauſe he wolde not worſhyp the fyre as Nemroth hadde taught/he was banyſſhed the countree. And the comyn opinyon of the Hebrewes is. Nemroth reygned there ẏ whiche was called an other name/Amraphel ẏ kyng of Sennaar/whom long tyme after this Abraham ouercame (ve of Geñ.xiiii.)

❡ Anno mundi.iii.M.C.lxxx.ii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.ii.M.xv.

❡ Here begynneth the thyrd aege of the worlde durynge to Dauyd.

Here begynneth the deuout and holy ſtory of holy Patryarkes ẏ whiche worſhypped ẏ veray god/⁊ in theyr worſhyppynge they taught it (vide pla geñ.xii. vſqꝫ ad finẽ). ❡ This Abraham a faithful louer of god was borne ẏ.xliii yere of Ninus kyng of Babylon. ⁊ know ye ẏ the.lxxxv.yere of Abraham by gods goodnes ẏ worde of mercy deſcended on mankynde/for then began to appere the oraculꝰ of ẏ promyſe of god (vide au.xvi de.ce.dei. Itẽ ge.xv. For this tyme appered to vs holy aũgels in fourme of mãkynde. Aram ⁊ Nachor was Abrahams brederne/⁊ Aram gate Loth a ryghtwyſe man ⁊ an holy. And he deſerued to be vyſyted wᵗ aungels as his vncle Abrahã was. And for this Loth Abraham ſmote .iiii.kynges/for they toke Loth.(geneſis xiiii. Of whome one was ſayd to be Nemroth/but here he is called Amraphell. ❡ This Abraham had many wyues/as Sarra and Agar. And his children/and his bredern had many chyldren. But for vs that wryte Cronycles/it is not neceſſary to ſpeke of all men/but of the noble faders (ſed vide plura ſine gene.) ❡ Melchiſedech this tyme was kynge of Salem. This man was called a ryghtwyſe kynge/for his excedynge holyneſſe. And he offred brede and wyne to Abraham/ in ſygne of a myſtery. He was in lyke wyſe the preeſt of ẏ hye god. ¶ Semiramis the thyrde kynge of Babylon he ordeyned an army ⁊ wente in to Inde ⁊ opteyned ẏ cōtree. And ſo by all Aſyam ⁊ the kȳgdome of Aſſuriorꝝ was dilated. And he multiplyed ẏ cyte of Babylon myghtly ⁊ made walles about it. This Semiramis had a wyfe ⁊ he forſoke her. And it is wryten ẏ ſhe was ſlayne of her ſone Ninꝰ bycauſe ſhe prouoked hȳ to ẏ vnlefull cōcupiſcēce (ſic di. au. xviii. de ci. dei) And ẏ mayſter in his ſtoryes ſayth ẏ ſhe wedded her owne ſone ⁊ he gate a chylde on her the whiche ordeyned Babylon to be the heed of all his reame. ¶ Ninus ẏ fourth kȳge of Babylon was ſone to grete Ninꝰ. Of this man lytell is wrytē but that he ſlewe his owne moder as is ſayd afore. ¶ Arriꝰ was ẏ fyfth kynge of Babylon, And vnder hym was borne yſaac.

ALſo yſaac ſone of Abraham of ẏ lyne of Cryſt lyued. C. lxxx. yere. This yſaac had a wyfe called Rebecca ⁊ on her he gate two ſones Eſau ⁊ Jacob. This Eſau ſolde his enherytaūce to his broder Jacob. And he was ẏ fad̄ of Idumeorꝝ/ ⁊ he had in poſſeſſyon the hylle of Seyr/ ⁊ put fyrſt marys to aſſes/ wherof was engendred mules. ¶ About this tyme. xxx. lordſhyps ⁊ Gomorra for theyr horryble ſynne were ouerthrowen. The wyfe of Loth lokȳge backwarde torned in to a ſalte ſtone/ ſheweth ẏ no man in ẏ way of delyberacyon ſholde deſyre thynge paſt (Hec Aug. de ciuitate dei)

¶ Anno mūdi. iii. M. iii. C. xliiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M. viii. C. lvi.

IAcob lyued. C. xlvii. yere. This Jacob had foure wyues or ſome cōcubynes/ ẏ is to wyte. Lyam/ Balam/ Zelpham/ ⁊ Rachel. Lyam was ẏ fyrſt wyfe ⁊ ſhe was bleere eyed. And ſhe bare hȳ. vi. ſones. Iudas/ Ruben/ Symeon/ Leuy/ yſachar/ zabulon/ ⁊ a doughter ẏ hyght Dyna. Bala ſeruaūt to Lya ⁊ cōcubyne to Jacob bare hȳ two ſones Dan ⁊ Neptalym. ¶ Rachel ẏ ſecōde wyfe to Jacob was barayne longe tyme ⁊ at the laſt ſhe bare hym. ii. ſones. Joſeph ⁊ Beniamȳ. zelpha ſeruaūt to rachel bare Jacob two ſones. Gad ⁊ Aſar and euerych of theſe made a trybe of whō in this place is not neceſſary to ſpeke (Uide plura in gene.) ¶ Joſeph ſone to Jacob was borne. lxxxx. yere of his faders aege/ ⁊ he lyued. C. x. yere. ¶ This tyme zerſes was kynge of Babylon vnder whome was borne Jacob/ ⁊ he was ẏ. vii. kynge of Babylon. ¶ Armauictre was kynge after hȳ. And after ſ. Auſtyn in ẏ manes dayes our lorde appered to yſaac promyſynge hym thoſe thynges ẏ whiche he promyſed to his fader. ¶ Belocꝰ ẏ. ix. kynge of Babylon was after this man. And vnder Belocꝰ or in this tyme our lorde ſpake wͭ Jacob promyſynge hym ẏ he had promyſed to his fad̄/ ẏ whiche were two. The poſſeſſyon of ẏ londe of promyſſyon ⁊ Chanaam/ ⁊ ẏ benediccyon of all ẏ people in his ſeed the whiche is oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte. ¶ Abraham about this tyme deceſſyd/ and was buryed in Hebrō. ¶ Inachus ẏ fyrſte kynge ẏ euer was in Grece was this tyme/ for than ẏ kyngdome began. ¶ Phoronius was kynge after hȳ and he ordeyned lawes to ẏ Grekes. ⁊c.

¶ Anno mundi. iii. M. iii. C. iiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M. vii. C. lxxxix.

IUdas ſone of Jacob deſcended of hym/ ⁊ of this trybe of Judas came ẏ kynges progenye/ ⁊ at ẏ laſt Cryſt our lorde. Judas gate Phares and Phares Eſron/ ⁊ of theſe men lytell is hadde in ſcrypture/ but Mathe reherceth them ¶ Belus in this Phares days was kyng of Aſſyriorꝫ/ or of Babylon/ ⁊ he was ẏ .x kynge/ vnder whome Yſaac deceſſed. Athlas ẏ grete aſtronomyer was this tyme/ ẏ whiche is lykened to bere vp heuen on his ſholders bycauſe of his knowlege in ſterres. ¶ Sarapis was the .iii. kynge of Argiuorꝫ/ or of Grecorꝫ/ ⁊ this Sarapis was otherwyſe called Apis/ ⁊ he came into Egipt with a myghty nauy/ ⁊ there deceſſed/ ⁊ was made of ẏ blynde gentyles the Egypcyens ẏ grettest god among thẽ And ẏ tyme began a meruaylous ſuperſtycyon in ydolatrye of a calfe of two colours whiche they called Apem/ ⁊ ẏ calfe deyed/ ẏ deuylles procured a lyke calfe to that for to be made ẏ they myght deceyue the rude people. And after ẏ the chyldren of Iſrael dyd ſo in lyke wyſe (vt pz) And what thynge coude be more wretched/ or folyſſhe in man hauynge reaſon. ¶ Arg⁹ was the .iiii. kynge of Grekes/ after whome the noble cyte of Arg⁹ toke his name Cycropes edyfyed Athenes in Grece/ ⁊ this cyte was ẏ nouriſſher of lyberall ſcyence/ and of many philoſophers/ yet they were deceyued by deuylles/ ⁊ grete ſuperſticioſyte in ẏ cite was made (vide aug⁹. ⁊ mirabilē fabulā reperies) ¶ Omogires was ẏ fyrſt man put oxen to the ploughe. ¶ Belus this tyme was kynge of Babylon/ ⁊ he was the .x. kynge of ẏ regyon/ ⁊ vnder hym deyed Yſaac. ¶ Pharao was kyng of Egypt whiche receyued Joſeph/ ⁊ exalted hym for thynterpretacõn of his dremes (vide ſciẽtiā pulcherrimā ꝑ hiſtoriā gen. xli. ⁊c. ¶ Jmithus was the .xii. kynge of Babylon/ vnder whome deyed Joſeph a bleſſyd man in chaſtyte. ¶ Pharao Eunoph is aboute Eſdroms dayes was kynge of Egipt/ ⁊ this Pharao knewe not Joſeph ne none of his kynred/ ⁊ he cõmaunded the chyldren of Iſraell to be drowned/ as it is had (Exodi .i. ¶ Ye clerkes may loke that boke/ and we lay folke wyll loke to Cronycles/ but about this tyme the ſtory of Exodi began.

¶ Anno mundi .iii. M.v.C.xl.iii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M.v.C.lx.

Aram ſone to Eſrom of the lyne of Cryſt was about this tyme/ ⁊ he gate Aminadab/ ⁊ Naaſon/ of theſe men is lytell wryten in ſcripture/ ⁊ therfore I procede to other ¶ Job ẏ holy mā enſãple of all pacience this tyme was borne of the lyne of Nachor broder to Abraham/ ⁊ he lyued many yeres/ ⁊ after ẏ god had aſſayed hym in his pacyence he lyued an .C. ⁊ xl yere (ꝑ aug. greg. ⁊ lix). Moyſes about this tyme was borne/ ⁊ the chyldren of Iſrael were in grete perplexyte/ ⁊ Moyſes was put in the water to be drowned. Arõ about this tyme was borne Dafrus was ẏ .xiiii. kyng of Babylon/ ⁊ Moyſes was borne vnder hym in Egypte ¶ Cycrops was ẏ fyrſt kynge of Athenes. And after ſaynt Auſtyn the Grekes wrote many leſynges in theyr ſtoryes ẏ tyme/ for of a lytell thynge they made a grete fame for to ſhewe theyr cõnynge/ for there was ẏ vnyuerſyte of Grekes.

¶ Anno mundi .iii. M.vi.C.lxxviii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M.v.C.xi.

This tyme was Amynadab of cryſtes lyne ſone to Aron/ whiche after Moyſys wt a full fayth entred in to ẏ reed ſee/ ⁊ dradde not whan many a hondred were ſeed leſt they ſholde be drowned. And therfore he deſerued to brynge forth ẏ kynges lygnage/ of whõ deſcended oure lord Jhū cryſt. Moyſes was ẏ fyrſt iuge of Iſraell ẏ euer was/⁊ he was Iuge.xl yere. This Moyſes was ẏ mooſt excellēt prophete ẏ euer god made/⁊ the moſt notable wryter of ſtoryes/⁊ of his lyuynge heuen ⁊ erthe ſpeketh. For he ſawe oure lorde face to face/whiche here in ſcripture was none founden but he ⁊ Poule the apoſtle. ¶ Aron ẏ fyrſt biſſhop lyued a.C xxiii. yere/this Aron was called of god into the dygnyte of ẏ hye preeſt/or of a byſſhop ⁊ was ordeyned ẏ eternal teſtament to hymſelf ⁊ them ẏ came after hym/for ẏ grete power of preeſthode. Whā he was a.C.xxiii. yere of age he deyed/⁊ was buryed in the hyll of Hor. And his ſone Heleazarus ſucceded in ẏ byſſhopryche. ¶ Pharao Boccaris this tyme was kyng of Egypte/⁊ this Pharao wolde not here the cōmaūdement of god/ne delyuer the chyldren of Iſraell/wherfore he was punyſſhed w.x. plages (Ut pȝ exo) And after he w al his hooſt were drowned in ẏ reed ſe. ¶ Naſon ſone to Amynadab was prynce of ẏ trybe of Iuda in the deſert/⁊ about this tyme ẏ law of god was gyuen in the hylle of Synay/and the boke of Leuitici was wryte/⁊ another boke was called numerū/⁊ ẏ tabernacle was ordeyned The boke of Deuteromium was made. Balaam was prophete and was ſlayne.

¶ Anno mundi.iii M.vii.C.xxxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M.iiii.C.lxxiiii.

SAlmon of the lyne of Cryſt was aboute this tyme/⁊ had a wyfe that hyght Raab. Moyſes aboute this tyme deceſſed/ẏ water of flome Iordan was dry Ierico was take/ẏ ſōne ſtode in ẏ fyrmament vnmeuable (Hyſtoria ii. Ioſue uenpu.⁊ Iudicū. Ioſue ſeconde Iuge of Iſraell was a myghty man in batayll/⁊ the fyrſt in deſert he ouercame Amalechę/⁊ after Moyſes of god he was ordeyned Iuge of Iſraell/of whome the batayles/ẏ werkes/⁊ the relygyous lyfe/ye may ſee in the boke of Ioſue wryten. ¶ Eleazar was the ſeconde biſſhop. And here Ioſue deuyded the londe of poſſeſſion to ẏ chyldren of Iſraell. Of hym deſcēded almoſt all ẏ byſſhoppes vnto Cryſt. ¶ Othoniel of ẏ trybe of Iuda was the.iii. Iuge. And this man delyuered ẏ chyldren of Iſrael by batayl from ẏ reame of Meſopotamie This man toke Axam to his wyfe/ẏ whiche aſked the vale londes/aboue ⁊ beneth of her fad Caleph (ut pȝ iudicū.i.) ¶ Aoth was ẏ.iiii/Iuge of Iſrael. This mā ſubdued Eglon the kynge of Moab/⁊ delyuered ẏ chyldren of Iſraell. This was a myghty man in batayl/⁊ he vſed ẏ one as well as ẏ other for his ryght hande. Aboute this tyme the kynge of Ytaly began. ⁊ many tymes theyr names ben changed of ẏ whiche ygenye ẏ romaynes ſhewe more clerely. ¶ Ianas was ẏ firſt kynge in Ytaly/⁊ afterwarde of ẏ rude gentyles he was worſhypped as god/ſayenge hȳ to haue.ii. faces. For they worſhipped hī feeſt in ẏ begynnynge of ẏ yere/as he were ẏ ende of ẏ laſt yere/⁊ the begynnynge of the fyrſt. And of hym ẏ moneth of Ianuary hath his name. ¶ Amictus was ẏ viii. kynge of Babylon vnder whom Ioſue deceſſed.

¶ Anno mūdi.iii.M.vii.C.lxxv..Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.M.iiii.C.xxiiii.

BOos ſone to Salmon of the lyne of Cryſte was this tyme/but of hym is lytell wryten/ſaue that Mathew nombred hym in the genealogye. As doctours ſay/there was made ſkyppynge of names betwyx Boos ⁊ Obeth. For at the leſt betwyxte them were.ii.C.lxxii.yere. The whiche tyme to one man may not be referred/and therfore here many thyn ges is ſpoken or I come to yͤ lyne of criſt agayne (Nicholaꝰ de ly. vt q̄ ſũt. iij. boos buꝰ poſt aliũ) ¶ Sangar was yͤ. v. iuge of Iſraell / but he lyued no yeres. ¶ Delbora was yͤ. vi. iuge / this Delbora was a woman / ⁊ for yͤ grace of her ꝓphecy was gyuen to her honoure yͤ ſhe iuged Iſrael She by yͤ cõmaũdemẽt of god called Barach yͤ he ſholde go fyght wͭ yͤ enmyes of Iſraell / ⁊ yͤ chyldren of Iſrael gate yͤ victory agaynſt Iabyn yͤ kynge of Chanaan and Cyſaram yͤ prynce of his chyualry / ⁊ he deſtroyed them (vt pꝫ iudicum. iiii.) ¶ Phenies was byſſhop / ⁊ this Phenies yet a yõge man for goddes ſake ſlewe many lecherous men / and therfore our lorde was pleaſed wͭ hym. ¶ Saturnꝰ this tyme was kynge of Ytaly ⁊ he was yͤ ſeconde kynge there / this Saturnꝰ is ſayd / to come fro yͤ londe of Cretens in to ytaly / whõ by ydolatrye through a merueylous blyndeneſſe they ſayd he was no man but a god. And yet they ſayd that he reygned vpõ them as theyr kynge. And he taught mẽ to donge theyr feldes. And of Saturnus yͤ Romayns were called Saturnians. ¶ Picus was ſone to Saturnus ⁊ or he was kynge in ytaly / he was kynge in Larentin / and after his deceſſe of yͤ Gentyles was worſhypped for a god.

¶ Anno mũdi. iij. M. viij. C. lxxv. Et ante xp̃i natiuitatẽ. M. ccc. xliiij.

GEdeon yͤ. vii. iuge of Iſraell was this tyme / this Gedeon ſubdued iiii. kynges. Oreb / Zebee / zeb / ⁊ Salmana. And he ſubdued Madean to Iſraell. ¶ Vide plura Iudicũ. vi. vii. ⁊. viii.

BOcci was byſſhop in Iſraell then ¶ Abimalech yͤ. viii. iuge in Iſraell was naturall ſone to Gedeon. And he was not called of god / but malycyouſly toke on hym yͤ preſthode of Iſraell. And he ſlewe. lxx. of his bredren / wherfore he ended his lyfe myſcheuouſly (vt pꝫ iudicũ) ¶ Tola was yͤ. ix. iuge of Iſrael. And this man guyded hym after yͤ olde gouernaũce of iuges by yͤ maner of directiõ ⁊ coũſell more than by dominaciõ ¶ Bocci was byſſhop about this tyme but of hym lytell is wryten. ¶ Iayr yͤ. x. iuge of Iſraell had. xxx. ſones / whome he made prynces of. xxx. cytees. And bycauſe there were good men ⁊ ruled to the pleaſyr of god Therfore in the dayes of thoſe two men. Iſraell drewe to our lorde. And therfore al thȳge came ⁊ was in ꝓſperite ⁊ welth.

FAnus was yͤ. iiii. kynge of ytaly ⁊ he was kynge of Larentin both Latinus was kynge in ytaly after Fanꝰ and of this Latinus was called yͤ kyngdom of Latinorꝫ. And Carmẽtes doughter of Euandri foũde fyrſte latyn letters. ¶ Tautanꝰ about this tyme was kynge of Babylon or of Aſſiriorũ / ⁊ vnder this man Troy was deſtroyed fyrſte. The occaſyon of the batayle of Troy began for a lytell thynge. In ſoo moche as Lamydon kynge of Troy receyued not Hercules and Iaſon with due, honoure as they ſholde haue ben receyued / ⁊ of ſo lytell a treſpace how many harmes and hurtes grewe. ¶ Sibylla delphica afore the batayle of Troye prophecyed how a chylde ſholde be borne of a virgyn without mãnes ſeed. ¶ Lamydon kynge of Troy was ſlayne / ⁊ his doughter Exiona was takẽ in to Grekes londe. For yͤ whiche folowed myghty batayle ⁊ mooſt ferdefull myſcheues. (vide hyſtoriã troianã) Hercules wͭ Iaſon deſtroyed Iliũ or Troy yͤ whiche anone after was buylded of Priamus ſone to Lamydon. This Hercules dyde many merueylous thȳges ⁊ many myghty batayles. And Infynyte leſynges ben fayned on hym. At the laſt whan he had ouercome moche people he was betrayed by a sherte ẏ Deyanira his wyfe sent hym empoysoned/ ⁊ for grete payne he brente hymselfe/ ⁊ afterwarde of ẏ Gentyles was taken for a god.

¶ Circa annū mundi. iii. M.ix. C.lxxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M.ii.C.xxiiii.

After the deth of Jayr iuge of Israell the people of Israell added newe synnes to theyr olde. And our lorde toke them in to ẏ power of ẏ Philistyens and to ẏ chyldren of Amon. xviii. yere ⁊ they were greetly oppressed/ ⁊ then they cryed to our lorde. Then Repte was espyred with almyghty god ⁊ faught agaynst Amon ⁊ sedycyous people of ẏ hyll of Effraym. And for an vnprudent voyce he slewe his owne doughter folysshly/ ⁊ dyd sacryfyce to god wt her (Judicū. xi. ⁊ xii) ¶ Ozy this tyme was bysshop in Israell and he was of ẏ seed of Aron by ẏ lyne of Eleazari/ ẏ which deed/ through ẏ prouysyon of god ẏ bysshopryche tourned to the lyne of ythamar an. C. ⁊ xx. yere/ in ẏ whiche lyne Hely was the fyrst hygh bysshop. And Abiathar was ẏ last ¶ Eballā sam was iuge in Israell. vii. ⁊ he was ẏ xii. iuge/ ⁊ he was named otherwyse Boos ẏ whiche wedded Ruth. ¶ Abialon ẏ xiii. iuge of Israel was iuge. x. yere. And vnder these tymes ẏ chyldren of Israell were quyete. And therfore none notable thynges were done in these dayes. ¶ Abdon. ẏ. xiiii. iuge gouerned in Israel. viii yeres. And about this tyme ẏ hystory of Ruth was wrytē. ¶ Authamanas this tyme was kynge of Assyriū/ ⁊ Priamꝰ kynge of Troy sone to Lamidon ẏ buylded his Cyte agayne merueylously stronge. And began batayle wt ẏ Grekes vnto his owne hurte. And he had a sone was called Hector a leyfull gentyll sone by his wyfe Eccuba. This man was faythful ⁊ wyse ⁊ incōparable of strength ⁊ nobylnesse. This Priamus had an other sone ẏ was called Parys ẏ whiche toke away fro ẏ londe of Grekes Helena wyf to Menelaus ẏ kynge ¶ Agamenon the kynge broder to Menelaus ẏ leder of all ẏ Grekes hoste faught agaynst Troy/ ⁊ at the last he wan ẏ cyte falsly/ and to ẏ Grekes moost shame ⁊ sclaūder ẏ myght be. For certaynly ẏ myght be called an vnhappy batayl where no man gyueth louynge to ẏ Grekes but euery mā reporteth shame

Eneas was kynge in ytaly thre yere. And this Eneas after ẏ Troye was destroyed of the Grekes came in to ytaly with. xx. shyppes/ ⁊ dyde myghty batayl there. And this man had wedded Priamus doughter Elinsaram. And he was made a god through the errour of the comyn people/ and of this man came Julius cezar ⁊ Octauianus Augustus. ¶ Ulixes an eloquent man amonge all ẏ Grekes after many peryles on ẏ see wēt home to his Penelopem/ ẏ moost faythfull and the moost chast woman ẏ is red of. And the Grekes perysshed wretchedly after that they hadde destroyed Troy bothe on ẏ water and on ẏ londe as they wente homewarde agayne. ¶ And that was ẏ pryncypal date of theyr wrytynge after that vyctorye. For they wrote theyr hystoryes ⁊ other wrytynges (sic anno. i. vel scdo. ⁊c. post Troiam captam.) And that was the thyrde yere of Abdon iuge of Israell.

¶ Circa Annū mūdi. iiii. M.xxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. M.C.lxxiiii.

Obeth of crystes lyne sone to Boos is rehersed in Ma. ¶ Sampson ẏ fyfteenth iuge reygned. xx. yere/ this Sampson was the moost strongest man that euer was/⁊ he delyuered Iſrael from ẏ Philiſtis/⁊ foꝛ his merueylous ſtrẽgth men ſuppoſed he had ben Hercules (et eiꝰ mirabilia opera vide iudicũ.xiiii.)

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.lxxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatẽ.M.C.xiiii.

IEſſe ſone to Obeth of the lyne of Cryſt/otherwyſe called yſay fader to Dauid this tyme lyued a notable mã in honeſte. No kẏge ne grete gouernour But of hym many tymes is made mencyon in holy ſcrypture. For of hẏ deſcended cryſt our ſauyour. ¶ This tyme Ely was iuge ⁊ byſſhop in Iſraell. The whiche had.ii.ſones Ophni ⁊ phinees/⁊ foꝛ he coꝛrected them not ſuffycyently he ⁊ they were punyſſhed bothe of our loꝛde. For they were ſlayne of the Philiſtiens. And Ely fell of his ſete ⁊ brake his necke ¶ This Ely was iuge next after Sampſon/⁊ not of ẏ lynage of Aron/ẏ was fyꝛſt byſſhop of god electe/but of ythamar/ẏ lynage dured an.C.⁊.xx.yere. In ẏ whiche lygnage Ely was fyꝛſt byſſhop and Abiathar ẏ laſt (Uide plura.i.regũ)

THis tyme Saul was kynge in Iſraell after ẏ mayſter in his hyſtoryes/⁊ Joſephus in his.viii.boke. This Saul was fyꝛſt kynge in Iſrael/⁊ reygned.xx.yere/ẏ whiche oꝛ he was kynge was a good man ⁊ elect of god/but afterward wretchedly he fayled/⁊ he was ſlayne ⁊ his thꝛe ſones in ẏ hylles of Gylboy ¶ In the tyme of Saull Samuell was iuge ⁊ pꝛophete in Iſraell/an holy man/⁊ boꝛne of a barayne moder many a day And he mynyſtred foꝛ oure loꝛde from a chylde to his aege. And was not hyghe byſſhop/but he iuged Iſrael all ẏ dayes of his lyfe. And was ẏ very pꝛophete of god. Two kynges he enoynted. Saull fyꝛſt/and after Dauyd. This Samuell alone ⁊ Moyſes are redde ẏ they prayed foꝛ theyꝛ enmyes in all ẏ olde Teſtament Of this Samuel ⁊ Saul be dyuers opynyõs. ¶ Iſyder ſayth ẏ Samuel ⁊ Saul ruled Iſrael.xl.yere. ¶ And Joſephus in his.viii.boke.⁊ ẏ mayſter in his ſtoꝛyes ſaye Samuel to be iuge.xii.yere alone. And after hym Saul to reygne.xx.yere. (Plura vide pꝛimo regũ)

AScaniꝰ ẏ.vii.kyng of Ytaly was ſone to Eneas/⁊ buylded ẏ Cyte of Albion. And he was called ẏ kynge of Albanoy. This Aſcaniꝰ gate Siluius ẏ.viii.kynge of Ytaly/the whiche Siluius was fader vnto Brute kynge of Bꝛytayne/now called Englonde. And I leue of the kynges of ytaly/foꝛ they dyde but lytell noble thynges tyll it be comen to Romulꝰ ⁊ Remꝰ ẏ Rome buylded. And then ſhall thoſe kẏges come agayne/⁊ now to pꝛocede to ẏ cronycles of Englande foꝛ ẏ which namely this boke is made. ¶ And Venys and Padua were buylded about this tyme of the reſydue of the Troyans ¶ Homere the grete poete about this tyme was/the whiche wꝛote ⁊ fayned gloryouſly many a leſynge.

¶ Incipit regnum Bꝛytãnie: nunc dicitur Anglia.

¶ Here may ye se
how Englonde
fyꝛſte began
at Albyon
Albyon.

¶ Now that I wyll ſpeke of Brute/ it ſhal be ſhewed how the londe of Englonde was fyrſt named Albion/ ⁊ by what encheſon it was ſo named.

OF the noble londe of Surrie/ there was a royall kynge ⁊ myghty ⁊ a man of grete renōmee þ called was Dyocleſyan þ well ⁊ worthely hym gouerned ⁊ ruled through his noble chyualry. So that he cōquered all þ londes about hym ſo that almoſt all þ kynges of þ worlde to hym were attendaunt. ¶ It befell thus þ this Dyocleſyan ſpoyled a gētyll damoyſell þ was wonder fayre þ was his emes doughter Labana. And ſhe loued hym as reaſon wolde/ ſo þ he gate vpō her .xxxiij. doughters of þ whiche þ eldeſt was called Albyne. And theſe damoyſels whan they came vnto aege became ſo fayre þ it was wonder/ wherof Dyocleſyan anone lete make a ſompnynge/ ⁊ cōmaūded by his letters þ al þ kynges þ helde on hym ſholde come at a certayne daye as in his lettres were cōteyned to make a feeſt royall. At whiche daye thyder they came/ ⁊ brought wt them admirals prynces/ ⁊ dukes/ ⁊ noble chyualry. The feeſt was royally arayed/ ⁊ there they lyued in Joye ⁊ myrthe ynough þ it was wonder to wyt. And it befell thus þ Dyocleſyan thought to mary his doughters amonge all thoſe kynges þ were at þ ſolemnyte. ¶ And ſo they ſpake ⁊ dyde that Albyne his eldeſt doughter and al her ſyſters rychely were maryed to .xxxiij. kynges þ were lordes of grete honour at this ſolempnyte. Whā this was done euery kynge toke his wyf and lad them in theyr owne coūtree ⁊ there made thē quenes. ¶ And it befell thus afterwarde þ this dame Albyne became ſo ſtoute ⁊ ſo ſterne þ ſhe tolde lytel pryce of her lorde/ ⁊ of hym had ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte ⁊ wolde not do his wyll/ but ſhe wolde haue her owne wyll in dyuerſe maters. And al her other ſyſters euerychone bare them ſo euyl ayenſt theyr lordes þ it was wonder to wyt. And for as moche þ them thought þ theyr huſbōdes were not of ſo hye parentage come as theyr fader. But thoſe kynges þ were theyr lordes wolde haue chaſtyſed them with fayre manere vpon all loue ⁊ frendſhyppe þ they ſholde amende theyr ſelfwylled condicyons. But all was for noughte/ for they dyde theyr owne wyll in all thynge that them lyked and had of power. Wherfore thoſe .xxxiij. kynges vpō a tyme ⁊ ofte tyme bet theyr wyues. For they wende þ they wolde haue amended them and theyr tatches and wyckedneſſe. But of ſuche condycyons they were þ for fayre ſpeche ⁊ warnynge they dyde all the worſe/ and for betynges eftſones moche the worſe. Wherfore the kynge that had wedded Albyne wrote þ tatches and condycyons of his wyfe Albyne/ and the lettre ſente to Dyocleſyan his fader. And whā þ other kȳges herde that Albynes lorde had ſente a letter to Diocleſian/ anone they ſente lettres ſealed with theyr ſeales þ condycyons and tatches of theyr wyues. Whan the kynge Diocleſian ſawe ⁊ herde ſo many playntes of his doughthers he was ſore aſhamed and became wonderly angry ⁊ wroth towarde his doughters/ ⁊ thought how he than myght amēde it þ they ſo myſdyde. And anone ſent his lettres to the .xxxiij. kynges that they ſholde come to hym and brynge with them theyr wyues euerychone at a certayne daye. For he wolde there chaſtyſe them of theyr wyckedneſſe yf he myght in ony manere wyſe. Soo that the kynges came all at that tyme ⁊ daye that tho was ſet betwene hym ⁊ the kynges. Diocleſyan receyued theym with moche honoure/ and made a ſolempne feeſt to all that were vnderneth his lordſ ſhyp. And ẏ thyrde day after ẏ ſolēpnyte the kyng Dioclesyā ſent after his .xxxiij. doughters ẏ they ſholde come ⁊ ſpeke wͭ hym in his chambre. And whan they were come he ſpake to thē of theyr wyckedneſſe ⁊ of theyr crueltee/⁊ ſpyteuouſly thē reproued ⁊ blamed ⁊ dyde ſayd to them. That yf they wold not be chaſtyſed they ſholde his loue leſe for euer more ⁊ whan ẏ ladyes herde all this they became abaſſhed ⁊ greetly aſhamed / ⁊ to theyr fader they ſayd ẏ they wolde make all amēdes and ſo they departed out of theyr faders chambre. And Albyne ẏ was ẏ eldeſt ſyſter ladde them all to her chambre/⁊ tho made to voyde all ẏ were therin ſoo ẏ no perſone was amonge them but ſhe ⁊ her ſyſters togyder. Tho ſayd Albyne. My fayr ſyſters well we knowe ẏ the kynge our fader vs hath reproued ſhamed ⁊ diſpyſed for bycauſe to make vs obedyēt to our huſbondes. But certes ẏ ſhall I neuer whyles ẏ I lyue. ſyth that I am come of a more hyer kȳges blode than myn huſbonde. And whan ſhe had thus ſayd all her ſyſters ſayd ẏ ſame. And tho ſayd Albyne. Well I wote fayre ſyſters ẏ oure huſbondes haue complayned vnto oure fader vpō vs/wherfore he hath vs thus foule reproued ⁊ diſpyſed/wherfore ſyſters my coūſell is ẏ this nyght whā our huſbondes ben a bed all we wͭ one aſſent do kytte theyr throtes/⁊ then we may be in peas of them. And better we may doo this vnder our faders power than other where elles. And anone all ẏ ladyes conſented ⁊ graūted to this coūſel. And whā nyght was come/ẏ lordes ⁊ ladyes went to bed. And anone as theyr lordes were a ſlepe/they kyt al theyr huſbondes throtes/⁊ ſo they ſlewe them all. Whan ẏ Dioclesyan theyr fader herde of this thȳge he became furyouſly wrothe agaynſt his doughters ⁊ anone he wolde them al haue brente. But all the barons ⁊ lordes of Syrrie counſayled not ſo for to do ſuche ſtraytneſſe to his owne doughters / but ſholde voyde ẏ londe of them for euermore/ſo ẏ they neuer ſholde come agayne/⁊ ſo he dyde. And Dyoclesyan ẏ was theyr fader anone cōmaunded them to go in to ſhyppe/⁊ delyuered to them vytayles for halfe a yere. And whan this was done al the ſyſters wente in to the ſhyppe ⁊ ſayled forth in ẏ ſee/⁊ betoke all theyr frēdes to Apolyn ẏ was theyr god/⁊ ſoo longe they ſayled in ẏ ſee tyll at ẏ laſte they came ⁊ arryued in an yle ẏ was all wylderneſſe. And whā dame Albyon was come to that londe and all her ſyſters. This Albyne wente fyrſt forth out of the ſhyppe and ſayd to her other ſyſters For as moche as I am ẏ eldeſt ſyſter of this company/⁊ fyrſt this londe haue taken/⁊ for as moche as myn name is Albyne I wyll ẏ this londe be called Albion after myn owne name. And anone all her ſyſters graūted to her wͭ a good wyl. Tho went out al the ſyſters of ẏ ſhyp ⁊ toke ẏ londe Albion as theyr ſyſter called it/and there they went vp ⁊ downe/⁊ foūde neyther man ne woman ne chylde/but wylde beeſtes of dyuerſe kyndes. And whan the vytayles were diſpēded ⁊ fayled they fed them with herbes ⁊ fruytes in ẏ ſeaſon of ẏ yere/⁊ ſoo they lyued as they beſt myght/⁊ after ẏ they toke fleſſhe of diuerſe beeſtes and became wonder fat. And ſo they deſyred mannes cōpany/⁊ mannes kynde thē fayled. And for here they wexed wonder courageous of kynde ſo that they deſyred more mannes company than ony other ſolace ⁊ myrth. Whan ẏ deuyll that perceyued wente by dyuerſe countrees and toke a body of the ayre ⁊ lykynge nature ſhad of mē ⁊ came in to Albion and lay by tho womē ⁊ ſhad tho natures vpō them ⁊ they conceyued ⁊ after broughte ſuche gyauntes. Of whiche one was called Gogmagog / ⁊ an other Langeryghā. And ſo they were named by dyuerſe names ⁊ in this manere they came forth and were borne horryble gyauntes in Albyon And they dwelled in caues and in hylles at theyr wyll. And had the londe of Albion as them lyked vnto the tyme that Brute arryued ⁊ came to Totnes ȳ was in ȳ yle of Albion ⁊ there this Brute conquered ⁊ ſcōfyted ȳ gyauntes aboue ſayd.

¶ Explicit prima pars.

¶ Here begynneth now how Brute was goten / ⁊ how he ſlewe fyrſte his moder ⁊ after his fader. And how he conquerred Albyon / ȳ after he named Brytayne after his owne name ȳ now is called Englond after the name of Engyſt of Saxonie. This Brute came in to Brytayne about the .xviij. yere of Hely.

BE it knowen that in the noble cyte of grete Troye there was a noble knyght and a man of grete power ȳ was called Eneas. And whan ȳ cyte of Troy was loſt ⁊ deſtroyed thrugh them of Grece. This Eneas with all his meyny fled thens and came to Lombardy. That tho was lorde and gouernoure of that londe a kynge that was called Latyne. And an other kynge there was ȳ was called Turocelyne that ſtrongely warred vpō this kynge Latyne / ȳ oftentymes dyde hym moche harme. And whan this kynge Latyne herde that Eneas was come he receyued hym with moche honour / ⁊ hym withhelde for as moche as he had herde of hym / ⁊ wyſte well that he was a noble knyght and a worthy of his body ⁊ of his dedes. This Eneas helped kynge Latyne in his warre. And ſhortely for to telle / ſo well ⁊ ſo worthely he dyde ȳ he ſlewe Turocelyne / ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym ⁊ all his people. And whā all this was done kynge Latyne gaue all ȳ londe that was Turocelynes to this noble mā Eneas in maryage with Lauyne his doughter ȳ moſt fayreſt creature that ony man wyſt. And ſo they lyued togyder in Joye and myrth all the dayes of theyr lyfe tyme. ¶ And after Aſcanius ſone to Eneas wedded a wyfe / and vpon her he gate a ſone ȳ was called Syluyne. And this Syluyne whā he coude ſome reaſon of man vnwetyng his fader and agaynſt his wyll aqueynted hym with a damoyſell that was coſyn to Lauyne that was kȳge Latynes doughter the quene that was Eneas wyfe / and brought the damoyſell with chylde. And whan Aſcanius his fader it wyſt / anone lette enquyre of the wyſeſt mayſters and of the greteſt clerkes what chylde the damoyſell ſholde brynge forth / and they anſwered and ſayde / that ſhe ſholde brynge forth a ſone that ſholde ſle bothe the fader and alſo his moder. And ſo he dyde. For his moder deyed in beryng of hym. And whan this chylde was borne his fader let calle hym Brute. And the mayſter ſayde that he ſholde do moche harme and ſorowe in many dyuers places / and he ſholde come to grete honoure and worſhyppe. This kynge Aſcanius deyed whan god wolde / and Syluyne his ſone receyued ȳ londe / and made hym wonderly well beloued amonge his people. And ſoo whan Brute ȳ was Syluynes ſone was .xv. yere olde he wente vpon a daye with his fader for to playe and ſolace. And as Brute ſholde haue ſhot vnto an herte his arowe myſhapped and glaced / and ſoo there Brute ſlewe his fader.

¶ How Brute was voyded out of the londe / and how he helde hym in Grece.

AND whan this myſchaunce was befall / all the people of the lande made ſorowe ynough / ⁊ were ſore angred. And for ẏ encheſō therof they droue Brute out of the lande / ⁊ wold not ſuffre hym amonge them. And whā he ſaw ẏ he myght not there abyde / he wente frō thens in to Grece / ⁊ there he founde. vii. M men ẏ were of the kynred of Troy / ⁊ were come of grete blode as the ſtory telleth / ẏ whiche were in thraldome of kyng Pandras of Grece / for the deth of Achylles that was ſlayne at Troy. This Brute was a fayr man ⁊ a ſtronge ⁊ a huge of his age / ⁊ of gladde chere ⁊ ſemblaunt / And alſo worthy of body / ⁊ was wel beloued amonge his people. This kyng Pandras herde ſpeke of his goodnes ⁊ condycions / ⁊ anone made hym dwell with hȳ So ẏ Brute became wonder preuy ⁊ moche beloued with the kynge / ⁊ dwelled lōge tyme with the kynge. So at the laſte they of Troye ⁊ Brute ſpake togyder of kynrede / ⁊ of acquayntaunce / ⁊ there cōplayned them vnto Brute of theyr ſorow ⁊ of theyr bondage / ⁊ of many other ſhames ẏ the kyng Pandras had them done And vnto Brute they ſayd vpon a tyme / Ye be a lorde of our lygnage / ⁊ a ſtronge man ⁊ a myghty / be ye our captayne and lorde / ⁊ we wyll become your men / ⁊ fulfyll all your cōmaūdementes / ⁊ bryng vs out of this wretchednes / ⁊ bondage / and we wyll fyght with the kynge for trouthe with the grace of ẏ grete god we ſhall hȳ ouercome / ⁊ we ſhall make you kynge of this lande / ⁊ to you do homage / ⁊ of you we ſhal holde for euermore. Brute hadde tho grete pite of theyr bondage that they were brought in. And pryuely wente thē frome the kynges courte. And tho they ẏ were of Troy went ⁊ put them in woddes and in to mountaynes / and helde thē there. And ſent vnto kyng Pandras that he ſholde gyue them lycence for to depart ſafely oute of his reame and kyngdome / for they wolde no lenger dwell in his bondage. Whan the kynge Pandras herde this he was ſore vexed and anoyed. And tho ſwore that he ſholde ſle them euerychone. And ordeyned a grete power / and wente toward them for to fyght with thē. But Brute and his men manly them defended and fyerſly fought And ſlewe al ẏ kynges men that none of them eſcaped. ⁊ toke the kynge and put hym in pryſon / ⁊ ordeyned counſayll amonge theym what they myght do with the kyng. And ſome ſayd that he ſholde be put too dethe. And ſome ſayd that he ſholde be exyled out of the lande. And ſome ſayd that he ſhold be brent. And tho ſpake a wyſe knyght that was called Mempris and ſayd to Brute. and to all theym of Troy. yf kynge Pandras wolde yelde hym and haue his lyfe / I counſayll that he gyue vnto Brute ẏ is our duke and our ſoueraygne his doughter Gennogen to wyfe / and in mariage wt her a hondred ſhyppes well arayde. And all his treaſour of golde ⁊ ſyluer / of corn̄ and of wyne And as moche as we nede of one thyng and other And then go we out of this lande / and ordeyne vs a lande els where. For we nor none of oure kynred ẏ come after vs ſhall neuer haue peas here in this lande amonge them of Grece. for we haue ſlayne ſoo many of theyr knyghtes and of other frendes ẏ euermore war and contacte ſhall be amonge vs. Brute tho and al his folke conſented wel to that counſayll. And this thynge they tolde to kynge Pandras. And he for to haue hys lyfe graunted with a good wyl as moche as they demaunded. And anone gaue vnto theyr chefe captayn Brute Gennogen his owne doughter vnto wyfe. And an hondred ſhyppes wt as moche as them neded of al vytayls / as afore was ordeyned

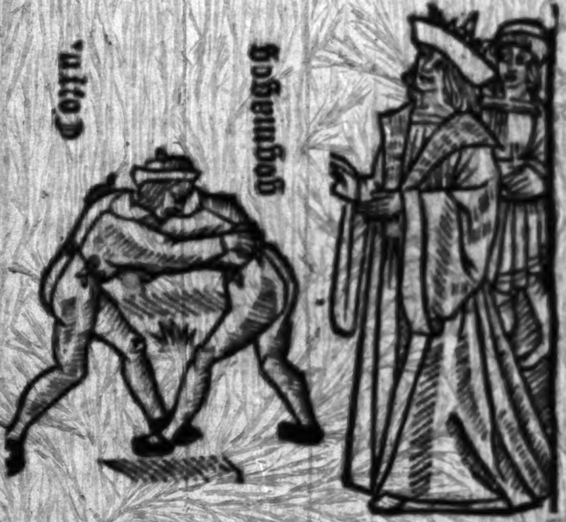
Brute tho toke his wyfe and all his men that forsoke the lande of Grece / & went to the see / & had wynd & wether at theyr wyl & came the thyrde day in to an yle yͭ was called Lorgres. This Brute anone sente of his men a lande for to espye the maner of the countree. And they founde an olde cyte al wasted & forlete / so yͭ there was neyther man nor woman therin dwellynge / And in the myddel of this cyte they founde an olde temple of a fayr lady yͭ was called Dyana yͤ goddes. And they came agayn unto Brute & tolde hym what they hadde sene & founde. And they counsaylled hym to goo & do sacrefyce unto dame Dyana / for she was wont to gyue answer of what thynge yͭ men asked her / & namely unto them yͭ honoured her with sacryfyce. Brute went unto that ymage & sayd. Dyana noble goddesse that all thynge hast in thy myght / wyndes / waters / woddes / feldes & all thynge of the worlde / & all maner of bestes yͭ therin ben / unto you I make my prayer yͭ ye me counsayll & tell / where / & in what place I shall haue a couenable place to dwell in with my folke. And there I shall make in thonoure of the a wel fayre temple & a noble wherin ye shal alway be honoured. Whan he had done his prayer Dyana answered in this manere. Brute sayd she go euen forth thy way ouer yͤ see in to Fraunce towarde the west / and ther ye shall fynde an yle yͭ is called Albyon / & that yle is becompassed al with the see / & no man may come therin but it be by shippes / & in that lande were wonte to dwelle geauntes / but nowe it is not soo / but all wyldernesse. And yͤ lande is destenyed & ordeyned for you & for your people.

¶ How Coryn became Brutes man / and how kynge Goffar was dyscomfyted.

Then whan Brute had this answere of Dyana yͤ goddesse / anone he lete the ancres wynde vp & sayled in to yͤ hye see. And whan he & his men had sayled .xx. dayes & mo / they founde fast besyde a cost of the see .iiii.C. men of the lynage of Troye. And theyr souerayne mayster was called Coryn. And whan Brute wyst whens they were / he toke them with moche Ioye in to his shyppes / and so he lad them forth with hym. This Coryn ther became Brutes man / and to hym dyd homage. And so long they sayled forth in the see tyll they came in to Gascoyne / and anone they arryued in the hauen of Lygers / & there they dwelled .viii. dayes for to reste them / and to amende theyr sayles there as they had nede. Tydynges soone came to kynge Goffar that was lorde of that lande how that moche people of straunge lande were arryued in to his lande in the hauen of Lygers / wherfore he was sore angred and anoyed that they came and arryued in his lande without his lycence and his leue. And anone ordeyned hym a grete power for to dryue out Brute & to dystroy hym and al his people But it was so that kynge Goffar was dyscomfyted & al his people. And hymself fledde in to Fraunce for to haue helpe and socoure. And in that tyme regned in Fraunce .xii. kynges / and .xi. of them assembled a grete power for to helpe Goffar / & for to fyght agaynst Brute. This Goffar dwelled with the kynges of Fraunce half a yere & more. And in the meane tyme that Goffar was in Fraunce Brute and his company dystroyed all the lande of Gascoyne / & lete take all the tresour that kynge Goffar had / and made it be brought in to his shyppes. And thus Brute founde in that lande a fayre place / and a couenable / and there Brute made a fayre castell and a stronge. Whan that thys was all done / kynge Goffar came fro Fraunce

Fraunce ⁊ .xi. kynges wͭ hym/⁊ brought with hym .xx. M. men for to fyght wͭ brute ⁊ his company. And Brute had but .vii. M. ⁊ .ccc. men. And neuertheles whan yͤ two hoostes met togyder brutes folke by the helpe of hymſelfe ⁊ of Turyn his coſin ⁊ of Corin yͭ well ⁊ manly hym defended. So yͭ within a whyle they had ſlayne of yͤ Frenſhmen mo than two. M. Anone al yͭ were alyue flede awaye. And in this batayll Turin Brutes coſyn was ſlayne/⁊ Brute lete entere hym worthely whan he had ſpace in yͤ caſtel yͭ he had made/⁊ tho here call yͤ ſame caſtell Toures/for bycauſe of the name of Turyn yͭ there was entered. And yet vnto this day there is a noble cyte yͭ is called Toures. Whan kynge Goffar wyſt that Turin was deed/he came agayn with his men ⁊ gaue a ſtrong batayll vnto Brute. But Brute ⁊ his mē were ſo wery for fyghtyng/yͭ Brute toke his caſtell with his men/and made yͤ gates faſt And then they toke cōuſayl amōg them what they ſholde do. Brute and coryn gaue counſayll ⁊ ordeyned pryuely yͭ corin ſholde go out ⁊ buſſhe hym in a wode tyll on the morowe/ſo yͭ in the mornȳg whan yͤ Brute ſholde fyght with his enmyes/then corin ſhold come with his folke in the one ſyde ⁊ ſlee ⁊ do al the harme that he myght. And in yͤ mornynge at the dawnynge of the day Brute wente out of the caſtel ⁊ fought fyerſly with his enmyes ⁊ they manly defēded them. But within a lytell tyme Brute ⁊ his folke ſlewe. viii. hondred of kyng Goffars men then came corin with the buſſhement and he ⁊ his company ſmote to the grōude all thoſe that wolde ſtande/or abyde/ſo that the kyng Goffar and his company were diſcomfyted/and faſt they began to fle. And Brute and corin with theyr company fyerſly them purſued/⁊ ſlewe mo of theym in the fleynge than they dyde in yͤ batayl And in this maner Brute had the victory Neuertheles yet Brute made moche ſorrowe for his coſyn Turin that there was ſlayne/and other alſo that he had loſte of his men That is to ſay. vii. hondred and xv.. The whiche nobly he entered in the ſame caſtell of Toures/where as he had entered Turyn his coſyn.

¶ How Brute arryued at Totneſſe in the yle then called Albyon/and of the wraſtlynge that was betwyxte corin and Gogmagog.

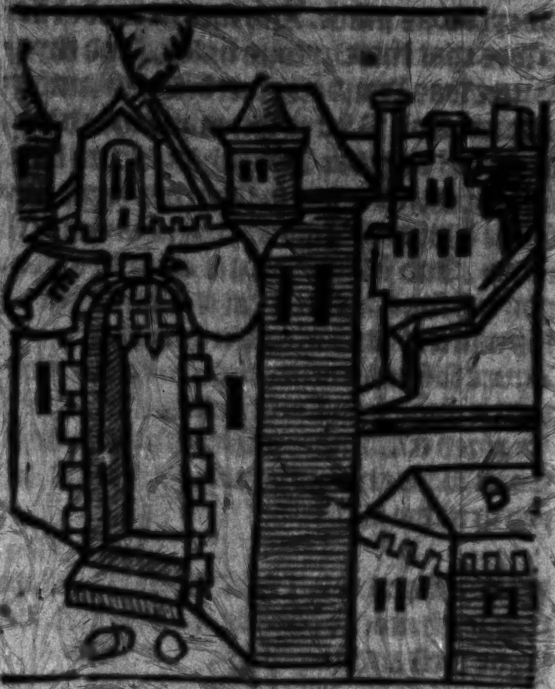


Whan all this was done Brute wolde dwell there no more for to fyght ⁊ leſe his men For kyng Goffars people encreaſed dayly ⁊ his dymynyſſhed And therfore he toke all his men and wente vnto the ſee and had wynde ⁊ weder at theyr wyl. And the fyfth day after they arryued in an hauen at Totneſſe/⁊ came in to this realme yͭ than was called Albion/where they founde neyther man nor woman/ſaue grete gyauntes/⁊ they dwelled in mountaynes and in cauernes

And Brute ſawe the lande was fayre ⁊ at his lykynge for hym and his people as yͤ goddeſſe Dyana had behyght hym. And therfore was Brute wonder glad / ⁊ lete aſſemble vpon a day all his folke to make a ſolempne ſacrefyce ⁊ feeſt in thonour of Dyana the goddeſſe / whiche had counſayled him fyrſt to come in to this lande. And whan they had done theyr ſolempnyte as they ſat at theyr mete vpon a day ther came in vpon them .xxx. gyauntes / ⁊ ſlewe of Brutes men .xxx. Brute ⁊ his men anone ſterte vp ⁊ faught with the gyauntes / ⁊ ſlewe them euerychone ſaue one named Gogmagog mayſter of them all. And he was ſtronger ⁊ hyer than ony of yͤ other / And Brute kept hym for to wraſtyl with Corin his man / for he was greter ⁊ hygher than ony of Brutes men from the gyrdyll ſtede vpwarde. Gogmagog and Corin vndertoke there for to wraſtyll. And ſo togyder they wente and wraſtled a long tyme / but at the laſt Gogmagog helde Coryn ſoo faſte that he brake two rybbes in his ſyde / wherfore Corin was ſore angred / and ther he toke Gogmagog betwene his armes and caſte hym downe vpon a roche / ſoo that Gogmagog brake all to peces / and ſo he dyed an euyll dethe. And therfore the place is called vnto this daye the ſaute of Gogmagog. ¶ And then after Brute gaue all that countree vnto Coryn. And ther Coryn called it after his name Cornewayle. And his men be called Cornewaylles / and ſo ſholde men of that countree be called for euermore. And in yͭ countre dwelled Corin and his men. And they made townes and houſes / ⁊ enhabited that lande by theyr owne wyll.

¶ How Brute buylded London / ⁊ called this lande Brytayne / and Scotlande Albyne / and Wales Camber.

¶ London.



Brute ⁊ his men wente forth / ⁊ ſawe abowte in dyuers places wher that they myght fynde a good place ⁊ couenable yͭ they myght make a cyte on for hym ⁊ for his folke. And ſo at yͤ laſte they came by a fayre ryuer yͭ is called Temys / and there Brute began to buylde a fayre cyte ⁊ called it newe Troy / in remembraunce of yͤ grete Troy of whom all theyr lynage was comen. And this Brute cauſed to fell downe woddes / ⁊ ere ⁊ ſowe landes / ⁊ mowe downe medowes for ſuſtenaūce of hym ⁊ his people. And then he departed the lande to them / ſo that eche of them had a parte for to dwell in. And then Brute lete call all this lande Brytayne after his name / ⁊ his folke Brytons. And this Brute had of his wyfe Genogen .iii. ſones yͭ were worthy of dedes. the fyrſt was called Locrin / yͤ ſeconde Albanak / and yͤ thyꝛde Cambar. And Bꝛute bare crowne in the cite of Troy .xx. yere after ẏ tyme ẏ the cyte was made. And ther he made the lawes that the Bꝛytons holde. And thys Bꝛute was wonderly wel beloued amōg all men. And Bꝛutes sones also loued wōderly wel togyder. And whan Bꝛute had sought all the lande in length ⁊ bꝛede/ he fou͂de a londe ẏ Joyned to Bꝛytayne in ẏ noꝛth. And ẏ lande Bꝛute gaue to Albanak his sone/ and lete cal it Albanie after his name/ ẏ now is called Scotlande/ ⁊ Bꝛute fou͂de an other cou͂tre toward the west/ ⁊ gaue ẏ to Camber his other sone/ ⁊ named it Camber ẏ now is wales. And whan Bꝛute had reygned .xx. yere he deyed in newe Troy.

¶ How Lotrin that was Bꝛutes sone entred with moche honour/ ⁊ gouerned the lande well and woꝛthely.

After Bꝛute reygned Lotrin hys sone/ that was the seconde kyng in Bꝛytayne. And he began to reygne ẏ .ii. yere of Samuell. This Lotryn was crowned with grete solempnyte of al Bꝛytayne. And after whan he was crowned kynge Albanak ⁊ Camber his bꝛederne departed in to theyꝛ owne cou͂trees/ and ther they lyued with moche honour. Lotrin reygned well ⁊ woꝛthely/ ⁊ was moche beloued of his people. And it befell so ẏ as Albanak dwelled in his owne lande with moche honour ⁊ woꝛshyp/ there came kynge Humbar of Hunlande with a grete power ⁊ arryued in Albyne/ ⁊ wold haue conquered ẏ lande/ ⁊ began to war vpon kynge Albanak/ and hym slewe in batayll. Whan Albanak was deed ẏ people of that lande fledde vnto Lotrin and tolde hym bycause he was kynge of Bꝛytayne how that his bꝛoder was slayne/ ⁊ pꝛayed hym of his helpe and of his socour foꝛ to reuenge his bꝛoders dethe. Kynge Lotrin anoone lete assemble all the Bꝛytons of Kent/ of Douer/ in to Derwent of Noꝛfolke and Suffolke/ of Kesteuen ⁊ Lyndessey And whan they were assēbled they spedde them fast towarde theyꝛ enmyes foꝛ to gyue them batayll. And Lotrin had sent to Camber his bꝛoder that he sholde come vnto hym with al the power that he myght make foꝛ to helpe hym to auenge his bꝛoders dethe. And soo he dyd with a good wyll. Whan they came togyder they toke theyꝛ way pꝛyuely foꝛ to goo seke kynge Humbar where as he were/ yf they myght fynde hym. And soo it befell that this kynge Humbar was beside a water that was a grete riuer with his folke foꝛ to dyspoꝛte hym. And there came Lotrin and Camber with theyꝛ folke sodaynly oꝛ that ony of the other hoost knewe of them. And whan Humbar dyd se them come in a rap he was soꝛe adꝛad/ foꝛ asmoche as his men wyst it not afoꝛe And also that they were vnarmed. And anone Humbar foꝛ dꝛede lept in to ẏ water and dꝛowned hymselfe/ and so he deyed/ And his men were all slayne/ in so moche that there escaped not one away on lyue/ And therfoꝛe is that water called Hūbar and euermoꝛe shall be/ whyle the woꝛlde is woꝛlde. Foꝛ bycause that this kyng Hūbar was dꝛowned therin. And after that Lotrin went to his shyppes and toke there golde and syluer as moche as he fou͂de vnto hymself. And all that other pylfre he gaue vnto other folke of the hoost. And they founde in one of the shyppes a fayꝛe damoysell that was kynge Humbars owne doughter/ and she was called Estrylde And whan Lotrin sawe her/ he toke her with hym foꝛ her greate beaute and fayꝛnesse. And foꝛ her he was ouertaken in loue/ and wolde haue wedded her. This tydynges came to Coꝛin/ ⁊ anone thoughte to auenge hym on Lotrin / for as moch as Lotrin had promyſed hym to wedde Guentolyn his doughter. And Corin in haſt toke his way to newe Troye to hym / & ſayd thus to Lotrin. Certes ye reward me ful euyll for the peynes that I haue had for your fader Brute / wherfore ſyth it is ſo I wyll auenge me nowe on the. And ſo that drewe his ſwerde and wolde haue ſlayne Lotrin ye kynge. But the damoyſel went betwene theym & made them to be accorded in this manere that Lotrin ſholde take Guentolyn to wyfe Corins doughter. And ſo Lotrin dyd. Neuertheles after he was maried he went pryuely to Eſtryld and gate her with a doughter / that was called Abram. And it befell ſo that anone after Corin deyed / & after whan he was deed Lotrin forſoke Guentolyn that was his wyfe / and made Eſtrylde quene. And there Guentolyn departed from then in grete wrathe into Cornewayle / and there ceaſed all the lande in to her owne hande for aſmoche as ſhe was her faders heyre. And toke homage of al ye men of ye lande. Afterwarde ſhe aſſembled a grete hooſt & a myghty of men for to be auenged vpon Lotrin that was her lorde / & gaue hym a ſtronge batayll where her huſbande Lotrin was ſlayne and his men dyſcomfited in the .v. yere of his reygne. Guentolyn lete take Eſtryld and Abram her doughter and bounde them bothe handes and fete / and caſt them bothe in to a water / and ſo they were drowned. wherfore that water was euermore after called Abram / after the name of the damoyſell ye was Eſtryldes doughter. And Englyſſhe men call ye water Seuerne / and walſſhmen call it Abram yet vnto this day. And whan this was done Guentolyn lete crowne her quene of all the lande. And ſhe gouerned the lande wel and wyſely vnto the tyme that Madan her ſone that Lotrin had goten vpon her was .xx. yere of age that he myght be kynge. And in that maner of wyſe the quene reygned .xv. yere; And than lete ſhe crowne her ſone kynge / and he reygned and gouerned the lande well & worthely. And his moder wente in to Cornewayle / and there ſhe dwelled all her lyues tyme.

¶ How Madan reygned in peas all his lyfe.

MAdan ſone to Lotrin reygned on the Brytayns .xl. yere. the whiche began for to reygne the .xv. yere of Saul. And this Madan lyued in peas al his dayes / and begate two ſones / Mempris & Maulyn. Then he deceſſed and lyeth at newe Troye.

¶ Anno mundi .iiii. M. C. xxii. Et ante xpi natiuitate. M. lxxxviii.

¶ Here begynneth
the fourth age
vnto the
transmygracyon.
Dauyd.

DAuyd the ſeconde kynge in Iſrael reygned this tyme & the ſon anon after ye dethe of Saul. And he was anoynted in his yonge age by Samuell. and after the dethe of kynge Saul he reygned .xl. yere. this Dauid was as a myrrour in all mekenes. In whom was ſhewed ſo moche power ⁊ ſo moche humylyte/ ſo moche noblynes ⁊ ſo moche mekenes/ ſo grete a charge of ſeculary thynges/ and ſo pure ⁊ deuoute a cōtemplacyon of ſpirituall thynges ſo many men to kylle ⁊ ſo many teres to wepe for his treſpace (Vide plura .ii. regū.) ¶ Abiathar this tyme was byſſhop/ ⁊ he fledde fro Saull vnto Dauyd/ ⁊ he was glorious with hym all his dayes. Gad/ Nathan/ ⁊ Aſoph were prophetes then. And Nathan was broder ſone to Dauyd.

¶ How Mempris ſlewe his broder Maulyn.

This Mēpris ⁊ his broder Maulyn ſtroue faſt for ẏ londe. And Mempris began to reygne ẏ .xxxv. yere of Dauyd/ ⁊ for bycauſe ẏ he was the eldeſt ſone he wold haue had all ẏ londe/ ⁊ Maulyn wolde not ſuffre hym/ ſo ẏ they toke a day of loue ⁊ accorde/ ⁊ at this day Mēpris lete kyll his broder through treaſon ⁊ hymſelfe afterwarde helde ẏ londe. And anone let crowne hym kynge ⁊ reygned. And after became ſoo lyther a man ẏ he deſtroyed wᵗin a whyle all the men of his londe. And at ẏ laſt he became ſo wycked ⁊ ſo lecherous ẏ he forſoke his owne wyf and vſed ẏ ſynne of Sodomy. Wherfore almyghty god was gretely dyſpleaſed ⁊ ſore wroth wᵗ hym/ ⁊ vpō hym toke vengeaunce for bycauſe of his wyckednesſe For on a daye as he wente forth on huntynge in a foreſt there he loſte all his men that were with hym ⁊ wyſt not what he ſholde do/ ⁊ ſo he wente vp ⁊ downe hym ſelf alone/ ⁊ cryed after his men but they were gone/ ⁊ there came wolues anone ⁊ all to drawe hym in peces whan he hadde reygned .xxiiii. yere. Whā his people herde ẏ he was ſo deed/ they made Joye and myrthe ynough ⁊ anone made Ebrac his ſone kynge ⁊ reygned wᵗ noble honoure.

¶ Anno mūdi .iiii. M.C.lxv. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē .M.xxxiiii.

Salamō ẏ kynge of peas of ẏ gyfte of our lorde hadde a ſynguler excedynge aboue all men ẏ euer was in this world/ but alonly god in wyſdom ⁊ in ryches/ in deyntees ⁊ in glory/ ⁊ familyarite wᵗ god. And though Moyſes ⁊ Dauyd Peter ⁊ Poull/ Jerom ⁊ Auſtyn/ ⁊ other more exceded hȳ in holynes but yet they exceded hym not in glory ⁊ ryches. And this mā ſo excedynge all men wretchedly fell. Of this Salomō is red in a pyſtle of ſaȳt Jerō ẏ he gote a child on ẏ doughter of Pharao at .xi. yere of his aege (vide plā re) ¶ Sadoch this tyme was byſſhop/ ⁊ for he declyned not to ẏ parte of Adonie Dauyd ſone but was wᵗ Nathan for Salomō/ ⁊ Abyathar on ẏ other part was depoſed.

¶ Anno mūdi .iiii. M.ii.C.v. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem .ix.C.lxxxxiiii.

Roboas ſucceded Salomon his fader in his kȳgdom/ but not in wyſdom. He was deceyued thrugh ẏ coūſayl of yōge mē ⁊ loſt .x. tribus in ſo moche as he anſwered not wyſely ẏ peple/ as it is open (iii. regū) ¶ Achimas was byſſhop ⁊ was ſone of Sadoch (vt pꝫ .i. Paralī.)

¶ Reges Iſrael incipiunt.

Jheroboas reygned kyng in Iſrael .xxii. yere/ ⁊ was fyrſte of ẏ hous of Salomon a good man/ ⁊ whan he was kynge he was a myſcheuous mā in ydolatry/ ⁊ made Iſrael to ſynne in ydolatry ⁊ many grete incōuenyences were done/ almoſte to ẏ deſtruccion of Iſrael. For he was ẏ fygure of machomet (vide plā .iii. regū) ¶ Abias ẏ ſone of Roboas reygn̄ ned in the Juery thre yere / ⁊ other whyle a good mā ⁊ holpen by god / ⁊ other whyle wꝛetchedly dyſpoſed in ydolatry / and therfoꝛe our loꝛde ſuffred hym to reygne lytell tyme (vt pꝫ.iii.regū.⁊.ii.Para.)

¶ Anno mūdi.iiii.M.ii.C.xxv. Et ante xpi natiuitatē.ix.C.lxxiiii.

Aſa the ſone of Abdyas reygned xvi.yere. In the begynnynge of his reygne he was a ryghtwys mā ⁊ walked as Dauyd dyde. And he ouercame yͤ Ethyopes / ⁊ deſtroyed ydoles. But after that he was ſwoꝛne to yͤ kynge of Syrie Benedab. Foꝛ Baaſa kȳge of Iſraell then began to fyght ayenſt hym / yͤ whiche dyſpleaſed god. Wherfoꝛe he ſent hym yͤ pꝛophete Anani / whome he put in pꝛyſon / ⁊ therfoꝛe he had the gowte ſtrongely ⁊ deyed therof (vt pꝫ.iii.regū.ii.para.) ¶ Azarias ſone to Achonias was byſſhop. Nadab kynge of Iſraell reygned two yere / the whiche began to reygne yͤ ſeconde yere of Aſa kynge of Jewes / ⁊ dyde not as his fader. And Baaſa ouerthꝛewe hym ⁊ reygned foꝛ hym (vt pꝫ.iii.regū) ¶ Baaſa kynge of Iſraell reygned.xxiiii.yere / the whiche begā to reygne yͤ thyꝛde yere of Aſa kynge of Jewes / ⁊ he walked in yͤ ſynnes of Jeroboam ⁊ ſlewe Jehen the prophete. ¶ Hela the ſone of Baaſa reygned in Iſraell two yere / ⁊ Zamri ſlewe hym ⁊ reygned.vii.dayes. ¶ Amri reygned.xii.yere / ⁊ dyde not as his pꝛedeceſſours. ¶ Archa ſone to Amri reygned on Iſrael.xxii.yere / ⁊ aboue all yͭ were afoꝛe hym he was curſed / foꝛ wycked Jeſabell ruled moꝛe than he / and meued hym to folowe her (vt pꝫ.iii.regū)

¶ Of kynge Ebꝛac / the whiche began to reygne the.xv.yere of Dauyd / ⁊ how he conquered Fraunce.

This Ebꝛac reygned.lx.yere / ⁊ he was a myghty man. And though his myght ⁊ helpe of his Brytons conquered all Frāce. And wan there ſo moche golde ⁊ ſyluer yͭ whan he came agayne in to this londe he made a cyte / ⁊ after his owne name he let calle it Ebꝛac / yͭ is now called Euerwyke. And this kynge made yͤ caſtell of Maydens / yͭ now is called Edenbꝛugh. This kynge had.xx.ſones ⁊.xxiii.doughters by dyuerſe womē gotē / ⁊ theſe ſones were called as ye ſhall here. Bꝛute / Greneſchelde / Margange / Jakſ / Kymbar / Roſcim / Spadogh / Godeherl / Thoꝛmnan / Gydaugh / Ioꝛkanghut / Hatboꝛ / Retyn / Rother / Kaie / ⁊ Aſſaruch. And all yͤ doughters hyght as ye ſhall here after. Elygene / Ymogen / Ogbdas / Guenbꝛan / Guardudh / Augarrell / Guenthold / Tanguſtell / Gorghon / Michel / Medhan / Malour / Oudꝛe / Cambꝛedan / Ragā / Renthely / Neeſt / Chyghan / Shaldud / Gladus / Herberth / Abalaghe and Blandan. And theſe were the.xxiii. doughters. And yͤ bꝛedꝛen became good knyghtes ⁊ woꝛthy in many countreys.

¶ Of kynge Bꝛute Greneſchelde yͤ fyꝛſt ſone of Ebꝛac kynge.

After yͤ deth of kynge Ebꝛac reygned Bꝛute Greneſchelde his ſone.xxx.yere / whiche was Ebꝛacs fyꝛſt ſone yͭ well and nobly reygned. And whan tyme came he deyed / ⁊ lyeth at Yoꝛke.

¶ Of kynge Leyll that was Bꝛute Greneſcheldes ſone.

When yͤ Bꝛute Greneſchelde was deed / reygned his ſone Leyll two ⁊ twenty yere. And he made a fayre towne and lete call it Karleyl after his owne name. And he was a worthy man and well beloued of his people/ ⁊ ſo whã he had reygned.xxii.yere/he dyed ⁊ lyeth at Karlyll. ¶ And in this tyme reygned kynge Salomõ in Jeruſalem ⁊ made ẏ noble tẽple. And to hym came quene Sybylle quene of Sabã for to here ⁊ ſe yf it were ſoth ẏ men ſpake of ẏ grete ⁊ noble wyt ⁊ wyſdome of kynge Salomõ. And ſhe founde it ſothe ẏ men had her tolde.

¶ Anno mũdi.iiii.M.ii.C.lxvi. Et ante xpi natiuitatem.ix.C.xliii.

IOſaphat kynge of Jewes was a good man ⁊ a ryche/ ⁊ a deuoute in ẏ way of our lorde/ ⁊ regned.xxv.yere/ ⁊ dyde none yll but to ẏ curſed kẏge of Iſraell gaue helpe/ ⁊ other lytel thĩge. And therfore our lorde was with hym (vt pꝫ ſcdo para.) ¶ Helyas the grete prophete was this tyme an holy mã ẏ was lyfted vp in to paradyſe with grete ſolace in a chayre. ¶ Macheas ⁊ Abdias prophecyed with hym ¶ Ochoſyas ſone to Achab reygned in Iſraell.ii.yere. And ſente to Belſabub god of Acharam to be helyd. For ẏ whiche he deyed after ẏ ſayenge of Hely (vt pꝫ.iiii.Regũ)

¶ Of kynge Lud Ludybras that was kynge Leyles ſone.

LUd Ludibras this kynge made the cyte of Caunterbury ⁊ Wyncheſtre. And he reygned.xxxix.yere/ ⁊ thẽ he deyed and lyeth at Wyncheſtre

¶ Of kynge Bladud ẏ was Ludibras ſone/how he reygned ⁊ was a good man and a Nygromancer.

SO after this Ludybras reygned Bladud his ſone a grete Nygromãcer/ ⁊ through his craft of Nygromancy he made a merueylous hote bathe/as the geſte telleth. And he reygned.xxi.yere/and he lyeth at the newe Troy.

¶ Anno mũdi.iiii.M.ii.C.lxxxxi. Et ante xpi natiuitatem.ix.C.viii.

THis tyme Jozam was kynge of Jewes ſone to Joſaphat whiche reygned.viii.yere/he was a curſed man ⁊ had a good fader/ ⁊ ſlewe his brother/ ⁊ wyckedly lyued/as dyde the kynge of Iſrael. Therfore he was ſore corrected ⁊ deyed vnhappely (vt pꝫ.ii.para) ¶ This tyme Helyas was rauyſſhed in to ẏ Paradyſe. ¶ Ochoſias or Aſarias kyng of Jewes reygned one yere/ ⁊ lyued not as his fader dyde/ ⁊ anone was ſlayne w̃ all the hous of Achab. ¶ Athalia moder to Aſarias toke the kyngdom/ ⁊ ſlewe all ẏ kynges blood/ ⁊ reygned.x.yere. And ẏ.viii.yere of Joiada byſſhop ſhe was ſlayne (iiii.reg.) This Aſarias ⁊ his ſone Joas ⁊ his newe Amaſia. Matheꝰ ẏ euãgeliſt putteth not in ẏ lyne of criſt for theyr offences. ¶ Jozam kynge of Iſraell reygned.xii.yeres/ ⁊ begã to reygne ẏ.xviii yere of Joſaphat for his broder Ochoſie ⁊ curſedly he lyued/ ⁊ was ſlayne of Jehen with all his faders houſholde (vt pꝫ) ¶ Jehen enoynted of ẏ chylde of Helyſe vpõ Iſrael ſlewe Achariam ẏ kynge of Jewes/ ⁊ Jozã ẏ kynge of Iſrael ⁊ Jeſabel moder to Jozam ⁊.lxx.chyldren of Achab/ ⁊.xlii.bredren of Azari/ ⁊ all the preeſtes of Baall. And he reygned.xxviii.yere. ¶ Athalia moder to Azari kynge of Jewes/doughter to Achab reygned on ẏ Jewes.vi.yere/ ⁊ ſlewe ẏ kynges blood of Jozam/except Joas the ſone of Azari/the whiche was kepte amonge ſhepeherdes/and after ſhe was ſlayne.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.iii.C.ix. Et ante xpi natiuitatem.viii.C.lxxxxiii.

IOam ſone to Achazie reygned in yͤ Jury.xl.yere/whom Joiada yͤ byſſhop crowned kynge at.vii. yere of age And he lyued well as longe as he was ruled by Joiada/but after he forſoke god/ ⁊ martred Azarias yͤ tyme byſſhop ſone to Joiada/for he blamed hȳ yͭ he forſoke his god (vide plura.ii.para.) ¶ Joathas ſone to Jehew reygned in Iſrael.xvi.yere. In whoſe days Helyſe yͤ pphete deyed ⁊ he begā to regne yͤ.xx.yere of Joas (vide plura.iiii.re.) ¶ Joam ſone of Joathas regned in Iſrael.xvii.yere ⁊ he troubled Amazia (Plura vide.iiii.regū.xiii.)

¶ Of kynge Leyr ſone to Bladud/⁊ of the anſwere of his yongeſt doughter yͭ graciouſly was maryed to the kyng of Fraunce.

After kynge Bladud regned Leyr his ſone. And this Leyr made the towne of Leyceſtre/⁊ lete calle yͤ towne after his name ⁊ he gouerned the towne well ⁊ nobly. This kynge Leyr had thre doughters. The fyrſt was called Gonorill The ſeconde Rigan/⁊ yͤ thyrde Cordeill/ and the yongeſt doughter was fayreſt ⁊ beſt of condycyons. The kynge theyr fader became an olde man ⁊ wolde that his doughters were maryed or yͤ he deyed. But fyrſt he thought to aſſaye whiche of them loued hȳ mooſt ⁊ beſt. For ſhe yͭ loued hȳ beſt ſhold beſt be maryed. And he axed of yͤ fyrſt doughter how well ſhe loued hym. And ſhe anſwered and ſayd better than her owne lyfe. Now certes ſayd her fader yͭ is a grete loue. Then he axed the ſeconde doughter/how moche ſhe loued hym. And ſhe ſayd more ⁊ paſſynge all the creatures of yͤ worlde. Per ma foy ſayd her fader/I may no more axe. And tho axed he of yͤ thyrd doughter/how moche ſhe loued hym. Certes fader ſayd ſhe my ſyſters haue tolde you gloſynge wordes/but I ſhall tell you trouth/for I loue you as I ought to loue my fader. And for to brynge you more in certayne how I loue you. I ſhall tell you as moche as ye be worth ſo ſhall ye be loued. ¶ The kynge her fader wende yͭ ſhe had ſcorned hym ⁊ became wonder wrothe/⁊ ſwore by heuen ⁊ erth ſhe ſholde neuer haue good of hym/but his doughters yͭ loued hym ſo moche ſholde be well auaūced ⁊ maryed. And yͤ fyrſt doughter he maryed to Mangles kyng of Scotlonde. And yͤ ſeconde he maried to Hanemos erle of Corneweyle/⁊ they ordeyned ⁊ ſpake betwene them that they ſholde departe yͤ reame bytwene them two after yͤ deth of kynge Leyr theyr fader/ſoo that Cordeill his yongeſt doughter ſholde noo thynge haue of his londe. But this Cordeil was wonder fayre ⁊ of good condicyons ⁊ maners. Thus yͤ kynge of Fraūce Agampe herde of her fame/⁊ ſent to yͤ kyng Leyr her fader for to haue her to his wyf ⁊ prayed hym therof. And kynge Leyr her fader ſente hym worde yͭ he had departed his londe ⁊ gyuen all to his two doughters before ſayd ⁊ he ſaid he had no more londe wherwith her to marye. And whan Agampe yͤ kynge of Fraūce herde this anſwere/he ſent anone agayn to Leyr ⁊ ſayd yͭ he axed no thynge wt her but onely her clothynge ⁊ her body. And anone kyng Leyr ſent her ouer ſee to yͤ kynge of Fraūce. And he receyued her wt moche worſhyp ⁊ wt ſolempnyte he ſpowſed her/and made her quene of Fraunce.

¶ How kyng Leyr was dryue out of his londe thrugh his folke. And how Cordeil his yongeſte doughter halpe hym in his nede.

Thus it befel afterwarde/that theſe two eldeſt doughters wold not abyde tyll Leyr theyr fader was deed/

but warred vpō hym whyles yͤ he was a lyue ⁊ dyde hym moche ſorowe ⁊ ſhame/ wherfore they toke from hym holly yͤ reame/ ⁊ betwene them had ordeyned/ yͤ one of the ſholde haue kynge Leyr to ſoiorne al his lyfetyme w .lx. knyghtes ⁊ ſquyres yͤ he myght worſhypfully ryde ⁊ go whether yͤ he wolde/ ⁊ in to what courte that hym lyked to play ⁊ to ſolace. So yͤ Maugias kynge of Scotlonde had kynge Leyr with hym in the maner as is aboue ſayd And or the other halfe yere were paſſed. Gonoryll yͤ was yͤ eldeſt doughter ⁊ quene of Scotlonde was ſo anoyed of hym ⁊ of his peple yͤ anone ſhe ⁊ her lorde ſpake togyder/ wherfore his knyghtes halfe ⁊ his ſquyers fro hȳ were gone/ ⁊ no more left w hȳ but onely .xxx. And whā this was done Leyr began to make moche ſorowe for bycauſe yͤ his ſtate was empayred. And men had of hym more ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte than euer they had before. Wherfore he wyſt not what to done. And at the laſt thought yͤ he wolde goo in to Cornewayle to Regan his other doughter. And whan he was come/ yͤ erle ⁊ his wyf that was Leyrs doughter hym welcomed ⁊ w hym made moche Joye/ ⁊ there he dwelled w .xxx. knyghtes and ſquyres. And he had not dwelled ſcarſly .xii. monethes there yͤ his doughter of hȳ was wery ⁊ his cōpany. And her lorde ⁊ ſhe of hȳ had grete ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte/ ſo yͤ from .xxx. knyghtes they brought vnto .x. And afterward he had but fyue/ ⁊ ſo they left hȳ no more Then made he ſorowe ynough/ ⁊ ſayd ſore wepȳge. Alas yͤ euer J came in to this londe ⁊ ſayd. Yet had it be better to haue dwelled w my fyrſt doughter. And anone he wēt thens to his fyrſt doughter ayē but anone as ſhe ſawe hym come/ ſhe ſwore by god ⁊ by his holy name/ ⁊ by aſmoche as ſhe myght yͤ he ſholde haue no more w hym but one knyght/ yf he wolde there abyde. Then began Leyr to wepe ⁊ made moche ſorowe/ ⁊ ſayde tho. Alas now haue J to long lyued yͤ this ſorowe ⁊ myſchyef is to me now fallen. For now J am poore that ſomtyme was ryche. But now haue J no frende ne kyn that to me wyll do ony good. But whan J was ryche all men me honoured ⁊ worſhypped/ ⁊ now euery man hathe of me ſcorne ⁊ deſpyte. And now J well wote that Cordeyl my yongeſt doughter ſayd trouth/ whan ſhe ſayd. As moche as J had ſo moche ſholde J be loued. And al yͤ whyle yͤ J had good ſo longe was J loued ⁊ honoured for my ryches/ but my two doughters gloſed me tho/ ⁊ now of me they ſet lytel pryce. And ſoth tolde me Cordeyll/ but J wolde not byleue it ne vnderſtonde/ ⁊ therfore J let her go fro me as a thynge yͤ J ſet lytell pryce of/ ⁊ now wote J neuer what for to do ſythe my two doughters haue me thus deceyued that J ſo moche loued/ and now muſt J nedes ſeke her yͤ is in an other londe that lyghtely J lete her goo wout ony rewarde or gyftes. And ſhe ſayd yͤ ſhe loued me as moche as ſhe ought to loue her fader by all maner of reaſon. And tho J ſholde haue axed her no more. And thoſe yͤ me otherwyſe behoted thrugh theyr falſe ſpeche now haue deceyued me In this maner Leyr longe tyme began to make his moone. And at the laſte he ſhope hym to yͤ ſee ⁊ paſſed ouer in to Fraunce/ and axed ⁊ aſpyed where the quene myght be foūde. And men tolde hȳ where ſhe was And whā he came to yͤ cyte yͤ ſhe was in pryuely he ſente his ſquyre vnto the quene for to tell her yͤ her fader was come to her for grete nede. And whan the ſquyre came to the quene he tolde her euery deale of her ſyſters from the begynnynge vnto yͤ ende. Cordeyl the quene anone toke golde ⁊ ſyluer plente/ ⁊ toke it to yͤ ſquyre in coūſel yͤ he ſholde go in to a certayn eyte þ hym araye ⁊ waſſhe / ⁊ then come agayne to her. And brynge wͭ hym an honeſt company of knyghtes .xl. at þ leſt wͭ theyr meyne. And then he ſholde ſende to her lorde the kynge ⁊ ſeyne þ he were come for to ſpeke with his doughter / ⁊ her for to ſe ⁊ ſo he dyde. And whan þ kynge Agampe ⁊ the quene herde that they came wͭ moche honoure they hym receyued And the kynge of Fraunce tho lete ſende through al his reame / ⁊ cōmaunded þ all men ſholde be as entendant to kynge Leyr the quenes fader in al maner of thynges as it is were vnto hymſelf. Whan kynge Leyr had dwelled there a moneth ⁊ more he tolde to þ kȳge ⁊ to þ quene his doughter how his two eldeſt doughters had hȳ ſerued. Agāpe anone lete ordeyne a grete hoſte of Frenſſhmen ⁊ ſente in to Brytayne wͭ Leyr þ quenes fader for to conquere his kyngdome agayne. And Cordeyll alſo came wͭ her fader in to Brytayne for to haue þ reame after her faders dethe. And anone they went to ſhyp ⁊ paſſed þ ſee and came in to Brytayne ⁊ fought wͭ the felons / and them ſcomfyted ⁊ ſlewe. And tho had he his lande agayne / ⁊ after lyued thre yere ⁊ helde his reame in peas and afterwarde deyed. And ſo Cordeyll his doughter then lete entere hym with moche honoure at Leyceſtre.

¶ Anno mundi. iiii. M. iii. C. xlix. Et ante xpi natiuitatem. viii. C. liii.

AMaſius ſone to Joam reygned on the Jewes .xxix. yere / after the whiche þ kyngdom of Jewes was with our kynge .xiii. yere. This man worſhypped þ goddes of Seyr (vt pr. ii. para. xv) ¶ Jeroboam ſone to Joam reygned on Iſrael .xli. yere þ whiche was manly and vyctoryous. For he ouercame the kynge of Syrie / ⁊ reſtored Iſrael ⁊ Manaſſe after the worde of Jono þ prophete. But he was not good. Therfore ſayth ſaynt Auſtyn. Yf good men reygne they profyte many men. And yf yll men reygne they hurte many men.

Anno mūdi. iiii. M. iii. C. lxxxviii. Et ante xpi natiuitatē. viii. C. xi.

OZias or Azarias ſone to Amaſie reygned on the Jury .lii. yere / the whiche lyued well afore our lorde / of hym is none euyll thynge wryten / but he þ vſurped þ dygnyte of preeſthode vnder Azarie / the whiche he forbode hȳ. For the whiche cauſe our lorde ſtroke hym with a lepre (vt pr. ii. para) ¶ Ozee byſſhop ⁊ prophete was this tyme the fyrſt of the .xii. þ was ſente agaynſt þ .xii. tribes. ¶ Joel þ ſeconde of the .xii. propheceyed of Juda. Ananias the thyrde propheceyed agaynſt many people. Abdyas the fourth of þ .xii. propheceyed agaynſt Edom. ¶ Zacharias ſone to Jeroboam regned in Iſraell .vi. monethes þ whiche began to reygne the .xxxviii. yere of Ozias ⁊ was noughte in his lyuynge as his predeceſſours were. And Sellum ſlewe hym / and reygned a moneth. And Manahen ſlewe hym / and toke his kyngdome (vt pr. iiii. regum.) This Manache reygned .x. yere þ whiche began to reygne þ .xxxix. yere of Ozias / ⁊ he ruled hȳ myſcheuouſly / our lord betoke hym in the power of the kynge of Aſſurior. And he payed to hym a thouſande talentes of ſyluer (vt pr. iiii. regū.) ¶ Phaceia ſone to Manahen reygned in Iſrael two yere / ⁊ he begā to reygne þ .l. yere of Ozias / ⁊ he was nought in his lyuynge ¶ Phace ſlewe Phaceia / ⁊ reygned .xx. yere / ⁊ he began to reygne þ .lii. yere of Ozias / and dyde as other curſed men dyde. (Plura vide .iiii. regū.) And after this Iſrael was without ony kynge .viii. yere.

¶ How Moꝛgan ⁊ Conedag neuewes to Coꝛdeyl warred on her ⁊ put her in pꝛiſõ.

THen as kyng Leyꝛ was deed Coꝛdeyl his yongeſt doughter regned the.x.yere of Ozyas kynge of Jury. And after her reygned Conedag ẏ.xv.yere of Ozyas. This Coꝛdeyl after ẏ deth of her fader had all ẏ lande.v.yere. And in ẏ mene tyme deyed her loꝛde Agampt king of Frãūce After his deth ther came Moꝛgã ⁊ Conedag her ſyſters ſones ⁊ to her had enuye/ foꝛ as moche as theyꝛ aũt had the lande/ ſo ẏ betwene them they oꝛdeyned a grete power/ ⁊ ſtrongly on her warred/ ⁊ toke her ⁊ put her to deth. Tho Moꝛgan ⁊ Conedag ceaſed all ẏ lande/ ⁊ departed it betwene them/ holdynge it.xii.yere/ ⁊ thē began debate betwene them/ foꝛ Moꝛgã wolde haue al ẏ lande from beyonde Hũbar ẏ Conedag held. but he came againſt hym wͭ a grete power/ ſo ẏ Moꝛgã durſt not abyde but fled into walys. And conedag purſued hym/ ⁊ toke hym ⁊ ſlewe hȳ. And then Conedag ſeaſed all ẏ lande/ ⁊ helde it after.xxxiii.yere. And then he deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ And bycauſe ẏ mater cõteyneth mooſt cõmodyouſly togyder of ẏ kynges of Brytayne now called Englonde/ bycauſe the reygne of them is not certaynly knowen. Therfoꝛe they ſhall be togyder/ tyll it be comen vnto Guentolyn kynge of Brytayne/ now Englonde.

¶ How Reynolde ẏ was conedags ſone/ reygned after his fader/ ⁊ in his tyme it rayned blode thꝛe dayes in tokenynge of grete deth.

AFter this conedag reygned Reynolde his ſone ẏ was a wyſe and a hardy knyght ⁊ curteys/ ẏ wel ⁊ nobly gouerned ẏ lande/ ⁊ was wel beloued of his folke. And in his tyme rayned blode that laſted thꝛe dayes/ as god wolde/ ⁊ ſone after there came a grete deth of people. Foꝛ hooſtes wͭout nombꝛe of peple fought/ tyl ẏ almyghty god therof toke pyte/ ⁊ tho it ceſſed. And this Reynolde regned.xxii.yere and then deyed and lyeth at yoꝛke.

¶ How Goꝛbodian reygned in peas that was Reynoldes ſone.

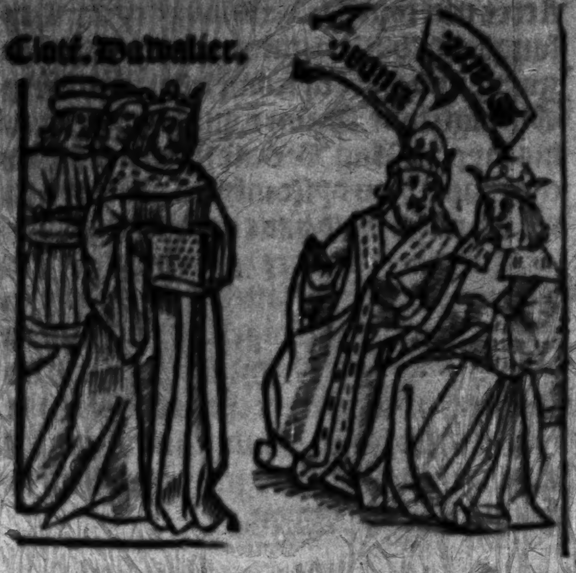
HEre after Reynolde reygned Goꝛbodian his ſone.xv.yere/ and he deyed and lyeth at yoꝛke.

¶ How Goꝛbodian had two ſones/ ⁊ how ẏ one ſlewe the other foꝛ to haue ẏ heritage/ ⁊ how ydoyne theyꝛ moder ſlewe ẏ other/ wherfoꝛe ẏ lande was dyſtroyed.

SO whan this Goꝛbodian was deed/ his two ſones that he had became ſtoute and pꝛoude/ and euer warred togyder foꝛ the lande. And ẏ one was called Ferres/ ⁊ that other Poꝛreus. And this Ferres wolde haue all the lande/ but that other wolde not ſuffre hym. This Ferres had a felonous hert and thought thꝛough treaſon to ſle his bꝛoder. But pꝛyuely he wente in to Fraunce/ and there abode wͭ the kynge Sywarde/ tyll ẏ vpon a tyme whan he came agayne to fyght with hys bꝛoder Ferres. And there full euyll it happened hym/ foꝛ he was the fyꝛſte ſlayne.

¶ whan ydoyne theyꝛ moder wyſt ẏ Poꝛreus was deed/ ſhe made grete ſoꝛowe/ foꝛ bycauſe that ſhe loued hym moꝛe than ẏ other. And thought hym foꝛ to ſlee pꝛyuely. And pꝛyuely ſhe came to her ſone vpon a nyght with two knyues ⁊ therwͭ cut his thꝛote wͭ the body in to ſmall peces. Who herde euer of ſuche a curſed moder/ that ſlewe with her owne handes her owne ſone. And long tyme after laſted the repꝛefe to her/ bycauſe that ſhe murdꝛed the one ſone foꝛ the loue of the other/ and ſo loſte them bothe.

¶ How foure kynges curteyſly helde all Brytayne / ⁊ what were theyꝛ names / ye ſhall here after.


Cloſ. Dawalier.

AND the two brethern were deed / they left neyther ſone noꝛ doughter / noꝛ no kyne foꝛ to enherytte ẏ lande. And foꝛ as moche as the ſtrongeſt dyſheryted the feblest ⁊ toke all theyꝛ landes / ſo ẏ in euery countre they had grete warre amonge them / but amonge all other there were foure in the countree ẏ ouercame al ẏ other / ⁊ thrugh theyꝛ myght ⁊ ſtrength they toke all ẏ landes / ⁊ eche of them toke a certayne countre / ⁊ called themſelf kynges. And one of them was called Scater ⁊ he was kynge of Scotlande / ⁊ another was called Dawalier / ⁊ he was kynge of Loegers ⁊ of all ẏ lande ẏ was Lotryns Brutes ſone / the .iij. was called Rudac / ⁊ he was kyng of Wales / ⁊ the fourth was called Cloten / ⁊ was called kynge of Coꝛnewayl. But this Cloten ſholde haue had al the lande by ryght / bycauſe there was no man that was ſo ryght an heyꝛe as he was. But they ẏ were ſtrongeſt ſet lytell by the feblest / ⁊ therfoꝛe this Cloten had no moꝛe lande amonge them but Coꝛnewayle.

¶ Of kynge Donebant that was Clotens ſone how he wanne the lande.

THis Cloten had a ſone that was called Donebant / ẏ after ẏ dethe of his fader became an hardy man / fayꝛe ⁊ curteys / ſoo that he paſſed all the other kynges in woꝛthyneſſe. And whan he was knyght he bethought hym ẏ whan his fader lyued / he was mooſt ryghtfull heyꝛe of all the lande / ⁊ ſholde haue had it by ryght. But ẏ other kynges as ſayd is kepte it from hym. Wherfoꝛe this Donebant oꝛdeyned hym a grete power / ⁊ conquered fyꝛſt all the lande of Loegers. And afterwarde he wolde haue conquered al ẏ lande of Scotland ⁊ Wales. And Scater came with his men ⁊ gaue hym batayl. And Rudac came agayn with his walſhmen foꝛ to helpe hym. But ſo it befel ẏ Rudac was ſlayne / ⁊ alſo Scater in playne batayll. And ſo Donebant had the vyctory ⁊ conquered all the lande / ⁊ it was neuer ſo well ⁊ ſo peaſybly ruled afoꝛe.

¶ How Donebant was the fyrſte kynge that euer bare crowne of golde in Brytayne.

THis Donebant lete make hym a crowne of golde / ⁊ ware ẏ crowne vpon his heed as neuer dyd kynge befoꝛe ⁊ oꝛdeyned a ſtatute / that and a man had done neuer ſo moche harme and myght come in to the Temple / there ſholde noo man hym myſdoo / but go there in ſafete and in peas / and after go in to what lande oꝛ countree that he lyked beſte / withoute ony harme oꝛ ſcathe / ⁊ yf ony man ſet ony hande vpon hym / he then ſholde leſe his lyfe. And this Donebant made the towne of Malmeſbury / ⁊ the towne alſo of ẏ vyſe. And whan he had reygned well ⁊ worthely .xl. yere / he dyed ⁊ lyeth at new troy.

¶ How Brenne ⁊ Belyn departed betwene them the lande after the deth of Donebant theyr fader. And of the warre betwene them.

SO whan Donebant was deed his ſones departed the lande betwene them / as the fader had ordeyned / ſo that Belyn his eldeſt ſone had all the lande of Brytayne frome Humbar ſouthwarde. ⁊ his broder Brenne had al the lande from Humbar vnto Scotlande. But for aſmoche as Belyn had the better parte. Brēne therfore wexed wrothe / ⁊ wold haue had more of ẏ lande / ⁊ Belyn his broder wolde graunte hym no more / wherfore warre aroſe amonge them two. But Brenne the yonger broder had no myght ayenſt Belyn / ⁊ therfore Brenne thrugh counſayll of his folke wente from thens in to Norway to ẏ kynge olſynges / ⁊ prayed hym of helpe ⁊ ſocoure to conquere all ẏ lande on Belyn his broder / vpon ẏ couenaūt ẏ he wold haue his doughter to wyfe / ⁊ the kynge olſynges hym graūted. And belin anone as his broder was gone to norway he ceaſed all ẏ lande of Northumberland in to his hande, ⁊ ſtuffed ẏ caſtels ⁊ kept the coſtes of ẏ ſee ẏ Brenne ſholde not aryue on no ſyde but ẏ he were taken. The kyng Olſynges lete aſſemble a grete hoſt ⁊ delyuered his doughter to Brenne ⁊ all the people ẏ he had aſſēbled. This damoyſell Samye had longe tyme loued a kynge ẏ whiche was called Gutlagh / and to hym ſhe tolde all her coūſayl how ẏ Brēne ſholde her haue / ⁊ her lede with hym for euermore / and ſoo he ſholde leſe her but ẏ ſhe myght forſake Brenne. And whan ẏ Gutlagh had herde this tydynges / he lay for to eſpye Brenne with as many ſhyps as he myght make and haue. Soo ẏ two fletes met togyder / and longe tyme they fought / ſo that Brennes men tourned agayne and were dyſcomfyted. And kyng Gutlagh toke Samye and put her in to his ſhyppe. And Brenne ſhamefully fled thens as a man dyſcomfyted. And this ſame Gutlagh wold haue gone in to his owne countree / but there came vpon hym ſo grete a tempeſt that laſted fyue dayes / ſo that through that tempeſt he was driuen in to Brytayne with thre ſhyppes and no mo. And tho that kepte the coſtes of the ſee toke Gutlagh and Samye and all his folke / and them preſented to Belyn. And Belyn put them in pryſon.

¶ How Belyn lete depart out of his land kynge Gutlagh of Denmarke and Samye.

NOt longe after Brēne came agayne with a grete nauy / and ſente to his broder Belyn that he ſhold yelde hym agayne his lande to his wyfe ⁊ his folke / ⁊ his caſtelles alſo / or elles he wolde dyſtroy his lande. ¶ Belyn dradde nothyng his malyce / and wolde nothynge do after that he had ſaid. Wherfore Brenne came with his folke and fought with Belyn. ⁊ then this Brenne was dyſcomfyted / and all his folke ſlayn. And hymſelf fledde wᵗ .xii. men in to Fraunce. And this Belyn ẏ was Brennes broder wente then to yorke and toke coūſayll what he ſholde do with kynge Gutlagh of Denmarke. For kyng Gutlagh profered to become his man / ⁊ for to holde his lande and tenementes of hym / yeldynge yerely .M.li. of ſyluer for euer / ⁊ for ſureneſſe of this couenaunt to be kept Gutlagh ſholde bryng hym good hoſtage/ and to hym ſholde do homage/ & his folke. And yet he ſholde ſwere on a boke yͤ it ſholde neuer be broke nor fayled/ Belyn tho by coũſayll of his folke graunted hym his aſkynge/ & ſo Gutlagh became his man. And Belin undertoke of hym his homage by an othe/ & by wrytyng the ſame couenauntes. And upon theſe couenauntes kynge Gutlagh toke Sampye/ & his folke & went thens unto Denmarke agayne. Euermore after were yͤ couenaũtes holden & the truage payed tyll the tyme yͤ Honelius was kynge of Denmarke. And alſo of this lande through his wyfe Gyldeburh yͤ he had ſpouſed/ for ſhe was ryght ayre of this lande. This Belyn thē dwelled in peas & worſhipfully hym held among his barons. And he made four ryall wayes/ one from yͤ eeſt in to yͤ weſt/ & that was called Watlyng ſtrete. And another from yͤ north unto yͤ ſouth/ & that is called Jkelme ſtrete. And two other wayes he made in boſſynge through out the lande/ yͤ one is called Foſſe. and that other Foſſe dyke. And he maynteyned well the good lawes yͤ Doncbant his fader hadde made/ & ordeyned in his tyme as is ſayd.

¶ How accordement was made bytwene Brenne and Belyn through Cornewen yͤ was theyr moder.

BRenne yͤ was Belyns broder had longe tyme dwelled in Fraunce/ & there had conquered a grete lordſhyp thorough maryage. For he was duke of Burgoyne by the doughter of duke Fewyn yͤ he had ſpouſed whiche was ryght heyre of the lande. And this Brenne ordeyned a grete power of his folke/ & alſo of Fraũce/ & came in to this lande for to fyghe wᵗ Belyn his broder/ & Belyn came agaynſt hym alſo wᵗ a grete power to haue gyuen hym batayll. But theyr moder Cornewē that tho lyued had herde that one broder wolde haue dyſtroyed the other/ ſhe went betwene her ſones/ & made them accorde with moche payne. So yͤ at the laſt tho .ii. brederne wᵗ moche blyſſe wente togyder into new Troy/ now called London/ where they dwelled a yere. And after they toke theyr coũſayll for to goo & conquere all Fraunce/ & ſo they dyd/ in brennyng townes & dyſtroyenge the lande in lengthe & brede. And the kynge of Fraũce yaue thē batayll with his power/ but he was ouercome/ & gaue truage unto Belyn & to his brother. And after yͤ they wente forth unto Rome/ & conquered it & all Lombardy with Germany. And toke homage of all the cheſe barons & lordes. And after they came in to this lande of Brytayne. where they made gode chere in reſt. And thenne made Brenne the towne of Bryſtowe/ and after he wente ouer to his owne lordſhyp & there dwelled he all his lyfe. And Belin dwelled at newe Troy/ & there he made a fayre gate that is called Belinges gate after his owne name. And whan this Belin had reygned nobly .xi. yere he deyed & lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ How kynge Cormbratꝰ ſlewe the kyng of Denmarke/ for bycauſe yͤ he wolde not paye his truage as he ſholde.

And after this Belyn regned his ſone Cormbratus a good mā ⁊ a worthy. And yͤ kynge of Dēmark wolde not paye to hym his truage yͭ is to ſaye/ a thouſande poūde as he had ſworne by othe for to paye it/ ⁊ alſo by wrytynge recorde to Belȳ his fader. wherfore he was euyll apayed ⁊ wrothe/ and aſſembled a grete hoſte of Brytons ⁊ wente in to Dēmark ⁊ ſlewe yͤ kȳge Gurlagh/ ⁊ brought yͤ londe in ſubieccyon all newe. And toke of yͤ folke feautes ⁊ homage/ ⁊ after went ayen in to his owne lōde. And as he came forth by Orkeney/ he foūde.xxx. ſhyppes full of men ⁊ wymmen beſyde yͤ coſte of the ſee. And yͤ kȳge axed what they were And an Erle that was mayſter of theym all curteyſly anſwered vnto the kynge ⁊ ſayd That they were exiled out of Spaȳ and ſo yͭ they had traueyled halfe a yere and more in yͤ ſee/ to wyte yf they myght fynde ony kynge in ony londe yͭ of theym wolde haue pyte or mercy to gyue them ony londe in ony countree where in they myght dwell ⁊ haue reſt/ and become his lyege mē/ and to hym wolde do homage ⁊ feaute whyle yͭ he lyued: ⁊ to his heyres after hym/ ⁊ of hym ⁊ of his heyres hold yͤ londe. And whan yͤ kynge this herde/ he had pety of hym/ ⁊ gaue theym an yle all wyldernesse/ ther yͭ no mā was dwellȳge ſauf only wylde beeſtes. And yͤ Erle thanked moche yͤ kynge ⁊ became his mā and dyde hym homage and feaute/ ⁊ toke all his folke ⁊ wente in to yͤ ſame yle. And yͤ Erle was called Irlamall/ ⁊ therfore he lete call yͤ londe Irlonde after his owne name. This kynge Cormbratus came ayen in to his londe ⁊ regned.xxv. yere/ ⁊ after he deyed and lyeth at newe Troy.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.iiii.C.xl. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.vii.C.lvi.

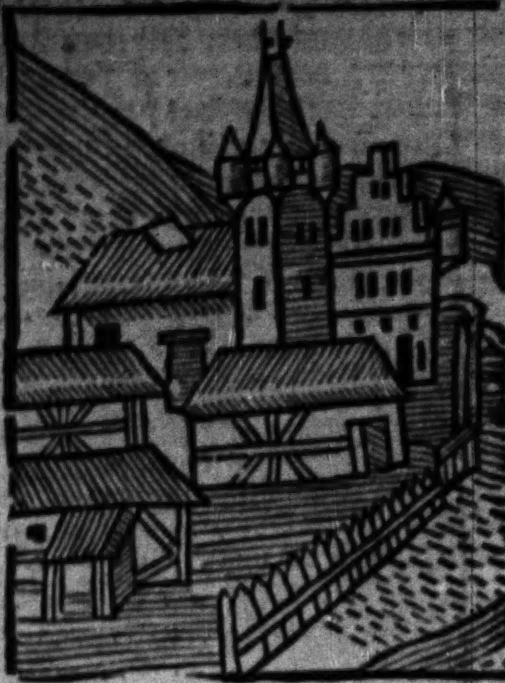
IOathan ſone to Oſyas regned in yͤ Iury.xvi.yere/ of this Ioathā nothynge is wryten of/ but that he toke not awaye excelſa as other dyde(vt pz.ii.pa) ¶ Amaryas was byſſhop. And Yſayas yͤ noble prophete was in his dayes. ¶ Olympias with yͤ Grekes began the fyrſte yere of kyng Ioathā after Ioſephus. And as the holy doctour Beda Troy was deſtroyed.iiii.C.yere afore the fyrſte Olympias began vnder Eſalo a Iuge of Athēs. In whiche Coribus gate the chyualry amonges al men. Olympus is the name of an hylle in Grecia/ yͤ whiche for his precyouſneſſe is callyd the hylle of god. And after Ierom one Olympias conteyneth fully foure yere/ in the whiche foure yere/ foure yerely prynces are made. And theſe Olympiades are places ordeyned to yͤ worſhyp of Iubyter vnder the hylle of Olympo. And yͤ lawe of this is this. That who ſoeuer is beſte in ony chyualry/ what gyfte ſomeuer he deſyreth he ſhall haue.

¶ Anno mūdi.iiii.M.iiii.C.lvi. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē vii.C.xliii.

IOathās ſone Acham regned on yͤ Iewes.xvi.yere/ of this Achaz nothynge that is good is wryten for he forſoke our lorde. And our lorde ſtroke hym with his owne people ſtrōgely/ and with tue kynges of Sirri(vt pz.ii.pa.xxviii). ¶ Achitob this tyme was byſſhop. Ozee kynge of Iſrael regned.ix.yere yͤ whiche begā to regne yͤ.xii.yere of Achā kinge of Iewes This Ozee dradde not god/ for he lyued nought. And he was yͤ laſt kȳge of Iſraell. And in the.ix.yere of his regne he was taken of Salmanaſar. And Iſraell was tranſlated in to Aſſirias vt habetur.iiii.regū.xvii.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.iiii.C.lxii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.vii.C.xl.

¶ Roma caput mundi.



After Euſeby Rome was made in the hyl of Palatin yͤ fourth yere of Achã kynge of Jewes of two brederne Romulꝰ/ and Remus yͤ .xi. kal. Maii. yͤ .vii. Olympyades begynnynge. Joſephus & Bede ſayth the .vi. Olympyades/ and ſo they differ a yere. Neuertheles it is redde other men to haue reygned aboute yͤ place myghtely in ytaly. That is to wyt Janus. Picus. Faunus Latinus/ the whiche vnto Eneas reygned about two hondred yere. And then afterwarde from this Eneas to Romulꝰ/ it was reygned vnder .xv. gouernoure .iiii. C. xxxii. yere. After yͤ fro the cyte was made vnto yͤ laſt yere of Tarquyne the proude/ it was reygned vnder .vii. kynges aboute .ii. C. and .xliii. yere. Then afterwarde vnder Senatoures & counſaylers vnto Julius cezar Emperour/ by foure hondred. lxiiii. yere. Romulus the fyrſt of Romayns/ of whome they ben called in latyn Romans/ made yͤ cyte to be named Rome after his name. The whiche gadered togyder yͤ people on euery ſyde an .C. of the wyſeſt men he choſe/ thrughe the coũſayll of whome all thynge he dyſpoſed/ the whiche he named Senatours for yͤ tyme of theyr aege And he made theyr names to be wryten in golden letters/ wherfore we wryte noble faders/ & thynges ſoo yet. Alſo he called a .M. men of armes milites (a numero millenario) But theſe were no noble blode. As ſayn Auſtyn ſayeth de .ci. dei. Alſo there was longe warre betwyxt yͤ Sabyns & them For Romulus toke many women of yͤ noble blood of Sabyns/ & maryed theym to yͤ vnnoble blood. Of this Romulus. Oroſiꝰ wryteth moche euyll (vt pꝫ i libro ſuo)

¶ About this tyme Merodach yͤ kyng of Babylon ſente grete gyftes to Ezechie yͤ kynge of Jewes (vt pꝫ .iiii. regũ. xx.) And then the kyngdome of Babylon began.

¶ Anno mundi .iiii. M. lxxii. Et ante xpi natiuitatem .vii. C. xxvii.

Ezechias yͤ .xiiii. kyng of Jewes a good chylde of a curſed fader reigned wt a parfyte herte to our lorde. And he reſtored yͤ hous of god/ hauynge not his lyke amonge yͤ kynges of Jewes/ therfore our lorde glorifyed hym. For whan Sennacheryb kyng of Aſſiriorũ came ayenſt Ezechias wt a myghty hooſt/ our lord ſtroke his people & ſlewe an .C. lxxxv. of fyghtynge men/ & Sennacheryb fled ſhamfully (vt pꝫ .iiii. regũ. xx. & .ii. para. xxxii) Sadoch this tyme was hye byſſhop there.

¶ Anno mũdi .iiii. M. v. C. l. Et ante xpi natiuitat. vi. C. lxxxxviii.

Manaſſes kynge of Jewes regned .lv. yere/ & this Manaſſes was yͤ chylde of a good fader/ for he dyde more curſedly than ony that was afore hym. For he ſlewe ẏ ꝓphetes of god/ that ẏ ſtretes in Jheruſalem were all blody. And he made yſai ẏ prophete to be ſawen to peces ẇ a ſawe of tree. Wherfore ẏ kynge of Aſſurioꝝ waſted ẏ Jury/ ⁊ toke Manaſſes ⁊ put hym in pryſon. And after Manaſſes repented his treſpace ⁊ cryed for mercy to god/ ⁊ was herde. Then he was reſtored to his kyngdom/ and he amēded his lyfe (vt pꝫ .iiii. regū. ⁊ .ii. para. xxxiii) ¶ Sellum was byſſhop/ ⁊ Echias after hī. This tyme ẏ .vii. wyſe men had worſhyp in Grece. s. Tale/ Solon/ Chilō/ Porcādus/ Cleobolus/ Bias/ Pitac⁹. This Talus founde fyrſt the defaute of ẏ ſonne ⁊ the moone (vide plu. auguſt. viii. de. ci. dei) ¶ Numa ẏ ſeconde kynge this tyme reygned in Rome .xlii. yere/ ẏ whiche was a grete worſhypper of falſe goddes he fulfylled Rome ſo full/ ẏ he myght haue no place for hym ſelfe to dwel in. This mā put January ⁊ February to ẏ begynnynge of ẏ yere (Vide plura in auguſt. de ciui. dei.) Aboue all reaſon it is meruayll that ſuche men ſo excedynge in wyt in al thynges that was yll receded fro ẏ knowlege of ẏ very god. ¶ Amon kynge of Jewes reygned two yere/ the whiche was nought in his lyuynge/ and he was ſtryken of his ſeruaūtes/ and he deyed without ony repentaunce.

¶ Anno mundi .iiii. M. v. C. lviii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem .vi. C. xli.

IOſias the ſone of Amon at .viii. yere of his aege began to reygne and reygned .xxxi. yere/ a good childe of a peruerſe fader. in his yonge age he ſought ẏ grace of god/ ⁊ in ẏ grace laudably abode vnto his ende. His relygyous lyf and his werkes ye may ſe (.iiii. regum. xxii. ⁊ .ii. para. xxxiiii.) ¶ Azaſias ẏ ſone of Elchie was byſſhop ¶ Tobias about this tyme deyed/ ⁊ he was a very holy man. And he prophecyed ẏ deſtruccyon of Jeruſalem. ¶ Tulius Hoſtilius was ẏ thyrde kynge in Rome. And ſaynt Auſtyn ſayth in his boke de ciui. dei. ẏ from Rome was made vnto Auguſt ẏ Emperour/ there was ſo contynuell batayle/ ẏ it was take for a meruayle/ ⁊ they were one yere ẇout batayle/ excepte .xlii. in Nume dayes/ in the whiche was contynuell peas. And this Tulius bycauſe he had reſte/ he dyde curſedly to his neyghbours/ ⁊ then he was ſlayne and al his houſholde ẇ a ſtroke of lyghtnȳge. ¶ Nabugodonoſor this tyme was kynge of Babylon/ a manly mā and a vyctoryous. For he was the ſcourge of our lorde to punyſſhe ẏ ſynnes of many people. This mā was kynge of Babylon ⁊ after he conquered ẏ kyngdom of Aſſuriorū ⁊ made it one monarche. But many wayes ſcrypture ſpeketh of this man/ now good/ now euyll/ ⁊ for bycauſe ſcrypture concludeth ẏ he ended his lyfe in ẏ louynge of god/ by the prayer of Danyell and in ẏ knowlege of one very god/ ſome doctours ſaye/ he is ſaued/ ⁊ ſome ſaye it is doubte. ¶ Anc⁹ Marcius ẏ .iiii. kynge of Rome reygned .xxiiii. yere. This man for grace ⁊ truſt ẏ he had to Tarquinus Priſcus made hym ẏ gouernoure of his chyldren ⁊ ayres ⁊ he yll rewarded hym. ¶ Danyell yet a chylde delyuered ſaynt Suſan/ ⁊ ſtode in ẏ conceyte of ẏ kynge with his felowes/ and after he dyſcuſſed the dremes of ẏ kȳge ⁊ was made a man of grete honeſte (vt pꝫ Danielis primo. Joathas ẏ ſeconde ſone of Joſie regned on ẏ Jewes thre monethes/ ⁊ was made kynge by the people/ ⁊ he was not good. And Pharao toke hym ⁊ ladde hym in to Egypt/ ⁊ made his elder broder kynge. vt pꝫ .iiii. regū. xxiii.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii. M. v. C.lxxxviii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.v.C.xi.

IOachim or Jeconias ẏ ſone of Joſie was made kynge of Jewes by Pharao ⁊ regned.xi.yere. And bycauſe he lyued nought/ne herde not the prophetes. Nabugodonoſor toke hym ⁊ made hẏ his ſeruaũt thre yere. And he rebelled agaynſt hym afterwarde/⁊ he toke hym ⁊ was aboute to haue ladde hym to Babylon/but his coũſeyle was chaũged/⁊ ſo Nabugodoſonor ſlewe him in Jeruſalem ⁊ caſt his body ouer the walles after the prophecy of Jeremy/⁊ toke wͭ him the veſſelles of our lord Jheſu (vt pꝫ.ii.para.vlt.) ¶ Saraias was byſſhop. Urias prophete was ſlayne of Jecony ẏ kynge/⁊ Jeremy was preſẽt ¶ Joachim ſone to Jeconias regned in ẏ Jury.iii.monethes ⁊ lyued nought/⁊ therfore anone he was meued ẏ he ſhold regne no lenger/⁊ was bounden ⁊ tranſlated in to Babylon/⁊ many wͭ hym were tranſlated (vt pꝫ.iiii.regum.xxiiii.) ¶ Danyell/Ananias/Azarias/Miſael/Ezechiel/and Mardocheus/all theſe wͭ Joachim ẏ kynge were lad in to Babylon/yonge children for bycauſe they were of ẏ noble blode.

¶ Anno mundi.iiii. M.vi.C. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.vi.C.

SEdechias the thyrde ſone of Joſie regned on the Jewes.xi.yere/this Sedechias was a miſcheuous man in his lyuynge. And he wolde not here Jeremy the prophete/therfore he peryſſhed wretchedly/⁊ all the Jury with hym. And his eyen were put out/and his children were ſlayne (vt pꝫ.iiii.regũ. ¶ Joſedech ẏ ſone of Azarie was byſſhop/⁊ was tranſlated fro Jeruſalẽ by Nabugodonoſor in to Babylõ. ¶ Abacuk prophecyed ayenſt Nabuchod at Babylon/⁊ there be opynyons what tyme this Abacuk was. And this Abacuk brought mete to Daniel whã he was put to ẏ lyons after Jerõ. And here endeth ẏ fourth aege/⁊ ẏ hyſtory of Regum.

Transmigratio.

¶ Here begynneth the fyfth aege of the worlde durynge to the Natyuyte of Cryſte

THis tyme ẏ temple of Salomon was brente of ẏ Caldees ⁊ Jheruſalẽ was deſtroyed/this Tẽple ſtode.cccc ⁊.xlii. yere/ẏ is to wyt/fro ẏ fyrſt makynge/ẏ whiche was made ẏ fourth yere of Salomon. And fro ẏ deſtruccyon ẏ whiche was made by Cyrus/ẏ is to wyt.xlii. yere after ẏ paſſyon of cryſte. ¶ Priſcus Torquinꝰ ẏ.v kynge of Rome regned. And he made Capitoliũ (quaſi caput ſoliũ) For in ẏ groũde werke was foũde an heed wͭout ony body/as for prophecy of thynges to come. For there afterwarde ẏ ſenatours ſate as one heed of all ẏ world ¶ This tyme thre chyldern were caſte in to a furnays brennynge/⁊ wͭ a myracle they were delyuered/as it is ſayd (in Danie.i. ¶ Nabugodonoſor ẏ ſone of Nabugodonoſor the myghty regned in Babylon/this mã made an hangynge garde wͭ myghty coſtes for his wyfe/and many meruaylous thynges he dyde. Soo that he wolde be named to excede hercules in his greteneſſe and ſtrengthe. ¶ Euilmerodach broder vnto the later Nabugodonoſor regyned in Babylon. This man toke Joachim out of pryſon ⁊ worſhypped hym. His faders deed body after the counſayle of this man he deuyded to an hondred grypes / leſt yͤ he ſholde ryſe frõ dethe to lyue. ¶ Nota. This playe of the cheſſe was foũde of Xerſe a Philoſopher for yͤ correccion of Euilmerodach this tyme yͤ kynge of Babylon a grete tyraunte the whiche was wonte to kylle his owne mayſters ⁊ wyſe men / ⁊ for he durſt not rebuke hym openly wͭ ſuche a wytty game / he procured hym to be meke.

Anno mundi .iiii. M. vi. C. xxxiiii. Et ante xpi natiuitatẽ. v. C. lxv.

Salathiel of yͤ lyne of cryſt was ſone to Jecony yͤ kynge of yͤ Jewes yͤ whiche he gate after yͤ tranſmigracõn of Babylon / as Marke yͤ euãgeliſt ſayth. ¶ Seruius Tulius yͤ .vi. kynge of Rome was of a bonde condicõn on yͤ moders ſyde. For ſhe was a captyue made / but ſhe was of yͤ noble blode. This man had grete louynge ⁊ nobly he bare hym in euery place. Thre hylles to yͤ cyte he put / ⁊ dyched yͤ walles roũde about. Reguſar Sabuſardach ⁊ Balthaſar were bredren / the whiche regned one after an other ⁊ were kynges in Babylon. And Balthaſar was the laſt kynge of Babylon / yͤ whiche was ſlayne of Dari⁹ ⁊ Cir⁹. vide pſa dani. v.

¶ Incipit monarchia Perſarum.

Darius vncle to Ciro / felowe in yͤ kyngdome wͭ Ciro tranſlated the kyngdomes of Babylon. Caldees in to the kyngdom of Perſarũ ⁊ Medoꝝ. Cyrus was Emperour .xxx. yere. This Cyrus helde yͤ monarche hole at Perſes. Of this man ꝓphecyed Yſayas / ⁊ he deſtroyed Babylon / ⁊ ſlewe Balthaſar kȳge of Babylon / ⁊ he worſhypped gretely Danyel / yͤ Jewes he ſent home agayne that they ſholde buylde yͤ temple of god. vt pꝫ Eſdre. i. ¶ Babylon yͤ ſtronge caſtel was deſtroyed ⁊ his power was take frõ hym as it was ꝓphecyed. This was yͤ fyrſt cyte ⁊ yͤ greteſt of all yͤ worlde / of yͤ whiche incredyble thynges are wryten / ⁊ this yͤ was ſo ſtrõg in a nyght was deſtroyed yͭ it myght be ſhewed to yͤ power of god / to the whiche power al other ben but a ſperke ⁊ duſt. For it is ſayd for ſoth yͭ it was incredyble to be made wͭ mannes hande or to be deſtroyed wͭ mãnes ſtrength / wherof all yͤ worlde myght take an enſample ⁊ it wold or myght be enfourmed. ¶ Tarquin⁹ Suꝑbus was yͤ .vii. kynge of Rome / ⁊ he reygned .xxxv. yere. This man founde fyrſt all yͤ tormẽtes whiche are ordeyned for malefactours / as exile / pryſon welles and galowes / fetres ⁊ manacles / chaynes ⁊ collers ⁊ ſache other. And for his grete pryde ⁊ cruelneſſe god ſuffred hȳ to myſcheyf / ⁊ in what maner of wyſe it ſhall be ſhewed. He had a ſone of yͤ ſame name yͤ whiche defoyled a worthy mannes wyfe / they called hym Collatin ⁊ his wyf was called Lucres. This Tarquin⁹ that was this .vii. kynges ſone aforeſayd came vnto yͤ ladyes hous abſent her huſbonde to ſupper ⁊ to lodgynge. And whã all were a ſlepe he roſe wͭ a ſwerde in his honde / ⁊ wͭ ſtrength ⁊ fere he rauyſſhed yͤ woman. And whan he was gone ſhe ſente vnto her fader ⁊ her huſbonde / for ſhe was of grete kyn / ⁊ thus ſhe ſayd to thẽ. The kynges ſone came hyther as frende / of whome I had no myſtruſt / ⁊ thus he hath defoyled my chaſtyte / ⁊ loſte my name for euermore. Then her frendes ſawe her wepe ⁊ pyteouſly complayne / ⁊ they comforted her as well as they coude / and ſayd it was noo vylany vnto her / for it was agaynſt her wyll. She anſwered ⁊ ſayd / yet ſhal there neuer woman excuſe her by Lucres. For thoughe ſhe conſented not to this dede/ yet ſhall ſhe not dye without payne for yͤ dede. And with that worde ſhe hadde a knyfe redy vnder her mantell/ wͭ the whiche ſhe ſmote her ſelfe to the herte. And for this cruelnes ⁊ this pyteous deth the people of Rome aroſe ⁊ exyled yͤ kynge for euermore ⁊ all his progeny. And thus ſeaſed theſe kynges of Rome ⁊ neuer was none after.

¶ Of the gouernaunce of Rome tyll the emperours began.

WHan this tyraunt was deed the Romayns ordened yͭ there ſholde neuer be kynge more in Rome. But they wold be gouerned fro yͭ forth by conſules. So whā tho kynges had reygned.ii.C. yere ⁊.xl. they made this ſtatut yͭ.ii. Conſules ſholde be choſen/ ⁊ they ſholde gouerne yͤ cyte ⁊ yͤ people/ ⁊ for this cauſe theſe two were choſen yͭ yf ony of them wolde make ony exceſſe yͤ other ſholde gouerne hȳ. For there was nothȳge obeyed but yf they conſented bothe. Alſo they ſholde not ſtande in theyr dignyte paſſynge one yere/ for this cauſe. That for dominacō of long tyme they ſholde not vſurpe vpon them more than was ryght. In all this tyme yͤ Empyre of Rome was not dylated paſſynge.xii.myle. The fyrſt conſules yͭ were made/ they called Luciū ⁊ the other Brutū and theſe two men dyde grete thynges in theyr tyme. But yet the people bare heuy of theyr domynacyon/ wherfore they choſe an other mā the whiche ſholde haue more auctoryte than they ⁊ they called hym Dictator. ¶ In this ſame tyme there was a grete dyſceſſyon betwyxt yͤ people ⁊ the Senate/ wherfore they choſe Trybunas with theyr Juges ouer yͤ people/ ⁊ defended them fro wronge as ſayth Yſyd. For yͤ Dictator whan he was choſe he laſted.v. yere ⁊ yͤ Trybunas were remeued euery yere. ¶ But ye muſt vnderſtande yͭ ye ſhall not haue here after all yͤ conſules named yͭ gouerned Rome bytwene yͤ ſeſſynge of yͤ kynges/ ⁊ the begynnynge of themperours. For it were to longe to wryte/ ſpecyally whā euery yere were newe/ ſyth that one man myght be choſen ſo oftentymes as we rede/ ⁊ alſo for yͤ enduryinge of theyr gouernaūce. For they were gouernours of Rome.v.C. yere.lxvii. So yͤ mooſt famous men of theſe ſhalbe reherced/ after yͤ fourme of Cronycles/ ⁊ as they ſtonde in the boke echeone after other.

¶ Incipit hiſtoria libri Eſdre.

Anno mūdi.iiii.M.vi.C.lix. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē.v.C.xl.

AFter yͤ cōmaūdement of god Zorobabell dyde founde yͤ Temple ⁊ made it parfyte/ but it was longe after. Vt pꝫ Eſdre.vi. After yͤ people of Jheruſalem came fro babylon/ theſe two ruled Jheſus yͤ hyghe preeſt as gouernoure/ ⁊ zorobabell as duke/ ⁊ this maner of guydynge was kepte vnto Herodes tyme yͭ the hygh preeſtes ſholde be pryncypall/ ⁊ the dukes vnder them. But yͤ dukes were euer of yͤ trybe of Juda after yͤ ꝓphecye of Jacob. And vnder yͤ good gydynge of preeſtes it is not red yͭ people to haue receded fro the very true faythe/ as they dyd afore in the tyme of Jewes ⁊ of kȳges. For then many tymes they ran to ydolatrye. ¶ Eſdras the preeſt of Arons kynred this tyme exceded mē in holynes thrugh whoſe wyſdom al yͤ Jewes ſtate was holpen. ¶ Cambyſes yͤ ſone of Cyri reygned on yͤ kyngdome of Perſa/ the whiche cōmaunded myghtely the Temple of Jheruſalem ſholde not be buylded agayne. His fader cōmaūded it ſholde be buylded. This Cambyſes made a curſed Iuge to be ſleyed oꝛ hylte a lyue/⁊ made his ſone to ſyt on his faders ſkynne that though ẏ mede he ſholde drede falſhede ⁊ ẏ Iuge ryghtwyſly. This Cābyſes had many names in holy ſcrypture in ẏ boke of Eſdꝛe. Artaxerſes oꝛ Aſſuerus in hyſtoria Iudith ẏ was done vnder hym he called Nabugodonoſoꝛ/oꝛ Olyfernes the prīce of his chyualry ſubdued many londes to his loꝛde. And at ẏ laſte he came to Bethulee/⁊ there was ſlayne of Iudith a woman (vt pȝ Iudith.ii.⁊.xiii) ¶ Enertides reygned in Perſes halfe a yere.

¶ Dari⁹ reygned at ẏ Perſes/ẏ whiche by ẏ mocyon of ȝoꝛobabel cōmaūded the werke of ẏ temple to be taken agayne/⁊ cōmaūded his pꝛīces ẏ on no wyſe they ſholde let it/but ſholde helpe it in all that they coude (Vide plura in Eſdꝛe.v.de.v.tye ambiguū ꝓpter diuerſitatē doctoꝝ.)

¶ Circa annū mūdi.iiii.M.vii.C.xxxiiij
Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.iiii.C.lxv.

Abiuth ſone to ȝoꝛobabell of ẏ lyne of cryſt was about this tyme. Foꝛ of hȳ ⁊ of other folowynge vnto Ioſeph no thynge is had in ſcrypture/but ẏ Math. theuangelyſt nombꝛeth them in ẏ Genelogy/⁊ therfoꝛe ẏ certayne tyme of thē duely can not be knowē. ¶ Ioachim this tyme byſſhop after Ioſephus was called Ioſedoch/vnder whome Iheruſalem was buylded agayne (vt dicit. ⁊ hoc idē pȝ Neemie.xii.) In ẏ.ii.C.⁊.xliiij.yere after ẏ Rome was made/ẏ Romayns oꝛdeyned two conſules in ẏ ſtede of theyꝛ kynge/ẏ whiche ſholde gouerne one yere alone leſt ẏ by taryēg they ſholde be pꝛoude/⁊ ẏ ẏ one ſholde coꝛrect ẏ other yf he exceded oꝛ erred. ¶ Brutus was ẏ fyrſt conſule/⁊ Lucius ẏ ſeconde. And then was there a man ẏ was called Dictatoꝛ/ẏ name of an offyce/ẏ whiche ſholde go wͭ the people agaynſt theyꝛ enmyes. ¶ Titus Puphis. Marc⁹ conſules. ¶ Then after the Romayns cōplayned gretely on ẏ cōdicyons of ẏ Cōſules. And then ẏ power was put to.x.men to an excedynge coſte to ẏ comyn people Foꝛ euerychone of thē wente lyke a kynge/⁊ nede cauſed them to leue ẏ dignyte. And they truſted neuer to reſt the warre was ſo ſtronge agaynſt them. ¶ Artharerſes was kynge of Perſarū/vnder whome Eſdꝛas came to Iheruſalem. And Neemias was butteler to the ſame kynge. whō afterwarde he ſent to buylde ẏ walles of Iheruſalē. ¶ Zerſes reygned after hym two monethes.

¶ Segdianus.vij.monethes/and lytell they dyde.

¶ Circa annū mundi.iiij.M.vij.C.lix.
Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.iiiͨ C.xl.

ELyac is reherced in ẏ lyne of cryſt in Math.i. And moꝛe of hȳ is not had in ſcripture ¶ Eſdꝛas a holy mā ⁊ cōnynge/⁊ woꝛſhypfully was had amonge the people. This man came fro Babylon with other. And he meued wͭ very charyte wente agayne to Babylon/ẏ he myght wynne moꝛe of Iſrael/⁊ ſaue ẏ ſoules ⁊ bꝛynge them home wͭ hym. In this tyme he repeyꝛed ẏ lawe ⁊ ẏ holy bokes ẏ whiche the Caldees had bꝛente/⁊ an happy wytneſſe to al ẏ woꝛlde he left in ſcrypture. He founde newe lettres/⁊ lyghter in facyon/ẏ whiche thoꝛugh the holy gooſt fulfylled he came agayne to Iheruſalem with a grete multytude/⁊ with the kynges pꝛeuylege/ẏ he ſholde teche ẏ people the lawe ẏ he had repeyꝛed. And there he deyed in a good aege. ¶ Neemias an hebrewe butteler of kynge Artharerſes at his loꝛdes cōmaūdement went from Ba hym in to Iherusalē. wherof he had.xii. yere yͤ kepynge of yͤ people. And yͤ.v. yere he began to repayre yͤ gates ⁊ yͤ walles of Iherusalem yͭ whiche werke he ended in .ii. yere ⁊.iiii. monethes / ⁊ yͭ wͭ grete impedymentes. For yͤ halfe of yͤ people stode armed about yͤ cyte to withstāde yͤ people of other nacyons / intendynge to dystroy them / ⁊ yͤ other parte laboured in armes holdynge in the one hande stones for walles / ⁊ in yͤ notable other hande a swerde or fyghte by it (Uide plura libro suo.) ¶ Parmenides a philosopher / ⁊ namely in mortal thynges was about this tyme Socrates a phylosopher / whiche understode moche of yͤ power of god / ⁊ he was Platoes mayster. Democritus Ypocras and other / of whome the noble werkes abode were also.

¶ Circa annum mūdi.iiii.M.viii.C. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.iii.C.lxxx.

Assor is reherced in yͤ lyne of Cryst in math.i. but nothynge of his dedes is wryten in yͤ scrypture. Elyasyb or Elysaphat succeded Ioachim in the bysshopryche (ut dicit Eusebiꝰ ⁊ magister histo.) ¶ Camillus was Dictator at Rome in whose dayes myscheuous playes were ordeyned yͭ the pestylēce sholde cesse at Rome. Of these playes Austyn treateth dylygently / in reprouynge yͤ falshede of yͤ goddes / yͭ whiche desyreth to be pleased wͭ suche wretched playes. so shamefully these playes were vsud wͭ naked men ⁊ women / yͭ honest men ⁊ womē wolde not be at those playes / ne yet beholde them. (Uide plura in Aug. de ci. dei) ¶ Darius Nothus reygned on the Perses.xix.yere. ¶ Plato yͤ dyuyne phylosopher ⁊ Arystotyle his dyscyple were this tyme famous clerkes. ¶ Titus Quītus was Dictator of Rome ⁊ he was a couetous ād whom Austyn de ci. dei. bryngeth in agaynst couetous ⁊ proude Crysten men. ¶ Gaius was a Senatoure vnder whome was a grete batayle agaynst yͤ kynge of Turcon. And.viii.M. men of them were taken. ¶ Marcꝰ Ualeriꝰ was also a noble Senatoure of Rome / yͭ whiche wͭ.ix.M. Romayns foughte wͭ yͤ Frensshmen ⁊ had the better ⁊ slewe many of thē. ¶ Artharerses kynge of Perses called agayne to his empyre Egypte. And he put Nactanabo the kynge in Ethyopia / ⁊ many Iewes in to transmygracyon. Also he sente Uagosum a prynce ouer from Iordan to aske agayne yͤ trybute yͭ was forgoten to Esdra yͭ was yͤ.vii. yere rente (propter sabbā terre) ¶ Arsamus succeded hym / ⁊ reygned a yere. ¶ Darius yͤ sone of Arsamus reygned wͭ the Perses.xxiiii.yere. This Darius was a myghty man ⁊ bolde / the whiche asked of yͤ Grekes a Trybute / yͭ was yͤ cause of yͤ destruccyon of the monarche of Persarū / for it was translated to yͤ Grekes / after yͤ prophecy of Danyel For it is sayd / yͭ Darius brought.xv. hondred thousande fyghtynge men / whome all Alexander slewe. ¶ Iodas the sone of Elysaphat was hyghe bysshop in Iherusalem in tyme of Mardachin. Iohannes his sone succeded hym. ¶ Arystoteles the moost subtyll ⁊ famous phylosopher lerned this tyme. Xenocrates yͤ moost chast phylosopher was this tyme wͭ dyuerse other more.

¶ Bycause yͤ kynges of Brytayne nexte after lyued in peas moste parte ⁊ lytel of them is wryten / therfore they shall be set togyder tyl it be come to Cassybolon kynge of Brytayne / the whiche was broder to Lud.

AND whan Comigatus was deed reygned Guenthelen / that was his ſone a man of good condycyons/and well beloued/⁊ he gouerned ẏ lande well wyſely. And he regned.xxv.yere/⁊ after deyed ⁊ lyeth at nowe Troy.

¶How kyng Seyſell reygned ⁊ well gouerned the lande after Guentolen.

AFter Guentolen reygned Seyſel his ſone/⁊ worthely gouerned the lande as his fader had done before hym. And he reygned.xv.yere/⁊ deyed ⁊ lyeth at newe Troy.

¶How kymor reygned after Seyſel his fader/⁊ he begate Howan that regned in peas after his fader.

Bymor reygned after his fader Seyſell well ⁊ nobly.xix.yere in peas ⁊ then after hym reygned Howan his ſone.x.yere/⁊ deyed ⁊ lyeth at Ihaldowne.

¶How kynge Morwith deyed throughe myſchaunce/through a beeſt.

MOrwith reygned after Howan/⁊ he became ſo wycked ẏ vengeaũce fell on hym. For on a tyme as he wente by ẏ ſee ſyde he met with a grete beeſt/ẏ was blacke ⁊ horryble. And he wende it had ben a whale of ẏ ſe/⁊ bent an arblaſt ⁊ wolde haue ſlayne ẏ beeſt with his quarell/but he myght not ſmyte hym/⁊ whã he had ſhot al his quarelles ẏ beeſt anone came to hym ⁊ deuoured hym alyue/and ſoo he deyed for his wyckedneſſe after he had regned.ix.yere/by goddes ſtroke.

¶Of Grandobodiam ẏ was Morwith ſone that made Cambrydge.

WHan this Morwith was deed/the Brytons crowned Grandobodiã his ſone/⁊ this Grandobodyam longe tyme regned in goodnes/⁊ made tẽples ⁊ townes/this Grandobodiam made ẏ townes of Cambrydge ⁊ Grauñtham ⁊ was wel beloued of ryche ⁊ pore. And he had.iiii.ſones. Artogaill. Heſyder. Higanꝰ ⁊ Petitur. And whan he had reigned xl.yere he deyed/⁊ lyeth at newe Troy.

¶Of Artogail ẏ was Grandobodians ſone/how he was made kynge/⁊ after put downe for his wyckedneſſe.

THen regned Artogail after Grandobodiã.v.yere/and he became ſo wycked ẏ the Brytons wold not ſuffre hỹ to be kynge/but put hym downe/⁊ made Heſyder his broder kynge/⁊ he became ſo mercyable ẏ they called hym kynge of pyte. And whã he had regned.v.yere he had ſo grete pyte of his broder Artogail that was kynge before ẏ he forſoke his dygnyte ⁊ toke his broder ẏ crowne agayne/⁊ made hym kynge agaynſt all ẏ Brytons wyll. ¶And after Artogayl became ſo gode of condycyons ẏ all the lande loued hỹ for his debonayrte/doyng ryght ⁊ reaſon to euery man. And he regned.vi.yere and then deyed ⁊ lyeth at Grauñtham.

¶How Heſyder was made kynge after ẏ dethe of his broder.

HEſyder was crowned yet agayne/by ẏ Brytons/but his two bredern Higamus ⁊ Petitur had of him grete ſpite ⁊ ſcorne/⁊ ordeyned theym helpe for to warre vpon the kynge theyr broder/and ſo they toke hym ⁊ put hym in pryſon the ii.yere of his reygne. And they departed all ẏ lande betwyxt them both/but Higamus lyued but.vii.yere/⁊ tho had Petitur al ẏ lande/⁊ he made ẏ towne of pickerỹg

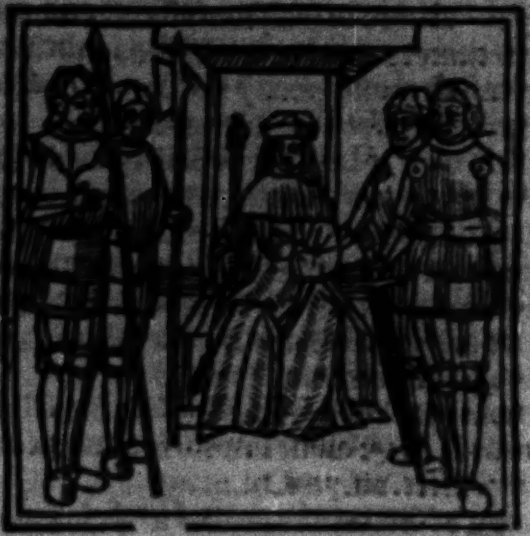
¶How the Brytons came ⁊ toke Heſider out of pryſon/⁊ made hym kyng ẏ thyrde tyme.

WHan this Petitur was deed/the Brytons came and toke Heſyder anone and made hym kynge the thyrd tyme/⁊ tho regned he in peas.xiiii.yere/⁊ after he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Karleyl

¶ How .xxxiii. kynges reygned in peas eche after other/after Heſyder.

After the deth of Heſyder reygned .xxxiii. kynges eche after other in peas & wout longe taryeng as ye ſhal here/& how longe eche reygned. The fyrſt kynge of tho .xxxiii. was called Gerbodia he reygned .xii. yere. after hȳ regned Morgan two yere/after hym reygned Cighn vi. yere/after hym Jowalan. viii. yere/after hym one Rohugo. xi. yere/after hym Cloghen. xiii. yere/after hym Catyll. xv. yere/after hym Porrex. ii. yere/after hym Cherin. xvii. yere/after hym Coyl. xii. yere/after hym Sulgenys. xiiii. yere/after hym Eldad. xx. yere/after hym Andragie xvii. yere/after hym Urian. v. yere/after hym Elyud. ii. yere/after hym Eldagan. xv. yere/after hym Claten. xii. yere/after hym Quergunde. viii. yere/after hȳ Morgan. vi. yere/after hym Bledagh. iii. yere after hym reygned Caph. i. yere/after hȳ reygned Gen. ii. yere/after hym reygned Seysel & kynge Bled. xxii. yere/& kynge Tabreth reygned. xi. yere/and after hym reygned Archynall. xiiii. yere/and after hym regned Croll. xxx. yere/and after hȳ reygned Rodyngyr. xxxii. yere/and after hym reigned Hectyr. v. yere. and after hȳ reygned Harpyr. vi. yere/and after hym reygned Carpour. vii. yere/and after hȳ reygned Dygnyell. iiii. yere/& after hym reygned Samuell. xxiiii. yere/and after hym reygned Rede. ii. yere/and after hym reygned Ely. vii. monthes This Ely had thre ſones. Lud. Caſſyballam/and Eneiuion.

¶ How Lud was made kynge after the dethe of Ely his fader.



After the deth of Ely regned Lud his ſone & gouerned well þ lande in honouryng good folke/& amended yll folk. Bycauſe this Lud loued mooſt to remayne at new Troy/the name of it was lefte/& it was called Ludſtone. And nowe by varyaūce of lettres it is called Londō. This Lud made Ludgate/& called it ſo after his name/& þ folke are Londoners/ And whan he had regned. xi. yere he dyed & lyeth at London. He had. ii. yong ſones þ coude not ſpeke nor go/called Anaghē & Cormace. wherfore þ Brytōs crowned one Lud þ was Caſſibalanꝰ broder/and made hym kyng of Brytayne now called Englonde.

¶ Circa annū dn̄i. iiii. M. viii. c. lxxxxiiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatē. ii. c. xv.

Sadoch of the lyne of cryſt is nombred in Math. primo/but in ſcripture there is noo more mencyon made of hym. ¶ Jadus the ſone of Johā was hie byſſhop in Jheruſalem. This tyme kyng Alexander reygned/the whiche was wroth with þ people & enhabytaūtes of Jeruſalem/and came to the cyte. Thenne

Jadꝰ arayed in his Pontyfycal ornamentes came to mete him/ ⁊ he ſodaynly was pleaſed ⁊ worſhipped ẏ biſſhop/ in entrig the cite peaſybly And he made fetche Danyels boke to here ẏ expoſició ſpoken of hym by pphecy/ ioyenge gretely therin/ bicauſe ẏ his dreme was iuely fulfylled/ ⁊ him thought it ſholde be he on whom Daniel had pphecyed/ ⁊ of ẏ he toke grete hardynes to fyght wᵗ Darꝰ kyng of Perſe/ and did ẏ ſacrefyce/ byddynge ẏ Jewes aſke what they wolde haue/ ⁊ graũted to them to kepe theyr owne lawes/ payeng no trybute after .vii. yere. vi. magr̃ in hiſ. The hooſt of Alexander as Oroſꝰ ſayth was xxxii. M. foteme͂/ ⁊ .iiii. M. horſmen/ and ſhippes .C.lxxx. And it is vncertayn whether it is more meruayl ẏ he ſhold conquere all ẏ worlde wᵗ ſo lytell a power/ or how he durſt go vpon them wᵗ ſo lytel a power And there was of Alexandres hooſt ſlayn by ẏ kynge of Perſarꝫ. (Et vt oroſiꝰ dicit q̃nquies decies cẽtena milia.) ¶ Eneas ẏ ſone of Jady was biſſhop after his fader Manliꝰ papiriꝰ ⁊ Fabiꝰ were cõſules at Rome This papiriꝰ was wiſe in his childhode/ ⁊ fayned many leſinges to kepe his mayſters coũſayl ⁊ ẏ ſenatours. And as he came to mannes aege he was a noble warryour ſo ẏ ẏ Romayns dredyng alexander choſe hym to goo agaynſte hym/ ⁊ he ſcorned wᵗ the goddes/ reyardig them not/ ſayng afore ẏ vnhappy thynge ſhold fall. And ẏ to his grete louynge holy doctours ſay.

¶ Incipit monarchia Grecorꝫ, et ceſſat monarchia Perſarum.

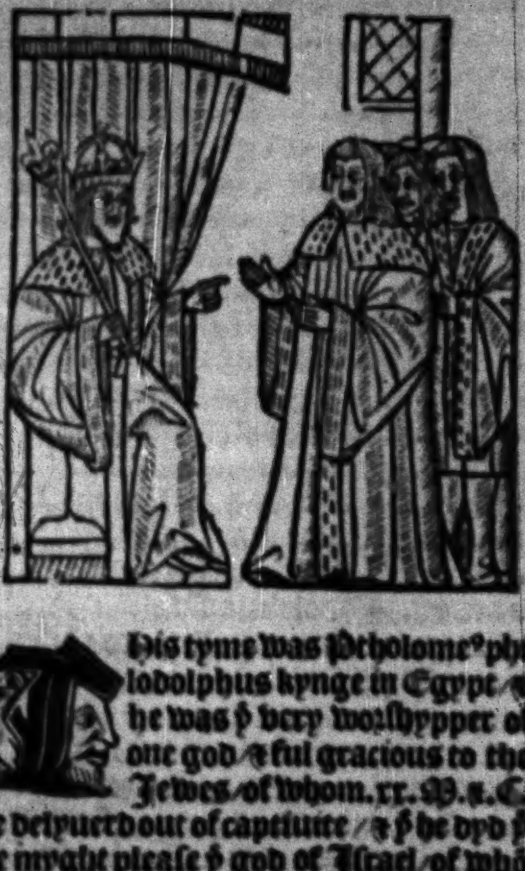
THis tyme kyng Alexanď began to be lorde of al ẏ world/ ⁊ he was called grete Alexander for his grete vyctory ẏ he had in ſo lytell tyme. It was an euydent Jugement of ẏ wrath of god ayenſt ſynners of ẏ tyme/ certaynly ſome myracle our lorde dyd in helpyng of his power for him/ for ẏ ſee of Pãphilicon was deuyded to hym/ as ẏ reed ſe was to Moyſes/ whan he pſecuted Darꝰ. Alſo at his prayer ẏ hilles of Caſpy were ſhyt ẏ certayn curſed Jewes myght neuer come out/ ⁊ at laſt he was poyſoned i babilõ at .xxxiii yere of age. ⁊ the .v. yere of his monarche the .xii. yere of ẏ kyngdom of Maccedone And as he was deed thoſe .xii. ẏ he deuyded his kyngdome to coude not accorde. wherof aroſe infynyte batayles/ ſo ẏ .iiii had al ẏ kyngdome. (vi. plu. i Oro.)

¶ Anno mũdi .iiii. M. ix. C. ix. Et ãte xp̄i natiuitatẽ .ii. C. ix.

SAdochs ſone Achym of the lyne of Criſt is nõbred in Math. i. wᵗout ony more in ſcripture. Simon an holy mã was byſſhop this tyme/ ⁊ a ryghtwys renõmed of people. Eleazarꝰ was byſſhop after Simon/ this man ſent to Protholomeo kynge of Egypt .lxxii. lerned men/ of euery trybe .vi. to enterprete ẏ lawe of ẏ Jewes/ whiche they tranſlated out of Hebrew in to Greke by a grete myracle/ ẏ ſo many men ſholde in .lxxii. days tranſlate all holy ſcrypture wᵗ one accorde. (vi. au. de. ci. dei.) ¶ Dolobela Emiliꝰ. Marcꝰ curiꝰ. Genuciꝰ this tyme were conſules at Rome. This Dolobela conquered Samnytes/ after many batayles/ ⁊ Marcꝰ ſubdued Epitoras ⁊ ſlew .xxiii. M. of his mẽ ⁊ then fled kyng Pirro/ whiche ſent to hỹ for peas offryng to hỹ grete gyftes/ But this cõſul anſwered hym. No batayl ſhal cauſe me flee/ nor no money corrupt me/ for I had leuer ryche men had this than be ryche myſelfe. ¶ Tonuciꝰ ſubdued the cyte of Argiuorꝫ/ ⁊ a legyon of Romayns knyghtes he ſent to Rome to be bet openly in ẏ market place/ for helde them not lefully to ẏ court of Rome. For ẏ lawe was ſo ſtraytly kepte thenne at Rome that and they had fayled to do the due obſeruaunce in vertue/ they ſhold be punyſſhed ſore

¶ The Romayns were the nobleſt woꝛldly men that euer was / as holy doctours ſay ⁊ put theyꝛ examples to cryſten men / but not the entencyon / foꝛ they lacked ÿ keye of the fayth.

¶ Incipiunt reges Egipti. qꝛ aũt non pſ ſciri cõtinuacio. et interſerũt reges Sirie.



This tyme was Ptholomeꝰ philodolphus kynge in Egypt / ⁊ he was ÿ very woꝛſhypper of one god / ⁊ ful gracious to the Jewes / of whom.xx.M.⁊.C. he delyuerd out of captiuite / ⁊ ÿ he dyd ÿ he myght pleaſe ÿ god of Iſrael / of whõ he herde ÿ myꝛacles. And his lawe he deſyꝛed to haue / noꝛ it myght not be tranſlated in to none other langage but of deuoute men / wᵗ due ⁊ ſolempne reuerẽce. Certayne men atemped to haue wryten it amonge the gentyle ſtoꝛyes / whome ÿ plage of god ſtroke tyll they repented. This kynge ſente vnto Eleazar the byſſhop / to ſende to him lerned men / ÿ whiche he dyd gladly (vi.plu.in mgſo ꝑiſto.)

¶ Anno mundi.iiii.M.ix.C.lix. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatẽ.ii.C.xl.

Elyud of ÿ lyne of Cryſt / gate Eleazar as it is open in Math.i. ⁊ more is not had in ſcripture of hym. ¶ Onias byſſhop was ſone to Symõ. Symõ was byſſhop after hym / a good relygyous mã he refourmed ÿ temple of god better ⁊ encreaſed ÿ cyte of Jheruſalem wᵗ many other good thĩges. ¶ Sempꝛoniꝰ. Appiꝰ Claudius. Gneus. Gaius. Attilius. Regulꝰ. Emeliꝰ. ⁊ Fabiꝰ this tyme were ſenatours of Rome. This Sempꝛoniꝰ fought ayenſt ÿ cõtree of Pictes / ⁊ almoſt bothe the partyes were ſlayn / ſaue a fewe Romayns were lefte alyue ⁊ ſubdued the cõtree. Appiꝰ Claudiꝰ ſubdued Siracuſanas / ⁊ Penos / and put grete tribute on them. Atiliꝰ Regulꝰ a noble ſenatoure ouercame.iii.kinges / ⁊ lxxiiii.citees he ſubdued / ⁊ a dragon of a.C. ⁊ xv.fote he kylled. Afterward whan he was ouer cruell denyeng his enmyes peas / halfe in diſpayre they ouercame hym in batayll / ⁊ toke hym / wenyng yet to haue peas. But this mooſt faythful man had leuer dye in paynes / than to gyue peas to curſed people. His louynge gretely ſaynt Auſtyn exalteth. ¶ Emeliꝰ Fabius / ⁊ Gaiꝰ wolde haue delyuered Regulus but they opteyned not. ¶ Ptholomeus Euergites this tyme was kynge of Egypt a vyctoꝛious prince and a myghty. This man ſubdued Siriam and Ciciliam / and the mooſt parte of Aſye / and toke theyꝛ goddes and brought them in to his countree. Ptholomeus philopater ſone to euergites regned in egipte.xvii.yere. This man fought ayenſt.ii. bretheren. Menelaum and grete Antyochum / ⁊ he proſtrated many a thouſande but neuertheles he preuayled not nothinge. (Vide plura in Johẽ ſuper Danielis.

¶ Hanyball the mooſt curſed kynge of

Penoꝛ ⁊ of Affricanoꝛ myghtely hated yͤ Romayns/foꝛ he deſtroyed them almooſt to the vttermeſt ende/⁊ nyghe the cyte of Rome he deſtroyed/⁊ ſo many noble men of Rome he ſlewe at one tyme/yͭ thꝛe buſſhels full of golde rynges he dꝛewe of theyꝛ fyngers. Alſo in a certayne water/of the ſlayne bodyes of theſe Romayns/he made as it were a bꝛydge yͭ his hoſte myght paſſe. And at yͤ laſt Cipio yͤ noble ſenatour directed his hoſte to hym ⁊ ſcomfyted him yͭ almooſt Cipioes hoſte of romayns was ſlayne. ¶ Lucacius cõſull. Simpꝛonius. Valerius/Fuluius/Lucinus/Gaius/⁊ Cipio/ruled at Rome/this tyme the Romayns had peas one yere alone/⁊ it was take foꝛ a myracle yͭ they had reſt ſo longe foꝛ afoꝛe this tyme in.iiii.C.and.xl.yere yͤ Romayns had neuer reſt. Theſe conſules whã yͤ yere was done gadꝛed all yͤ ſtrẽgth of ytaly/⁊ they had in theyꝛ hoſte.viii.M. armed men foꝛ dꝛede of the Frenſhemen/whome they dꝛad ſtrongly/⁊ afterwarde the romayns ſubdued them ¶ Epiphanes the ſone to Philopater reygned in egypte xxiiii.yere. Cleopatra doughter to grete Anthiochus was his wyfe. ¶ Antiochus magnus this tyme reygned in Syrry/the whiche dyde moche myſchefe to yͤ Jewes (vt patet Mach) ¶ Onias this tyme was byſſhop in Jeruſalem. This Onias foꝛ yͤ tyranny of Antiochus fledde with many Jewes in to egypte/feynynge hym to fulfyll the prophecye of Iſaie.xix. that is to were. To bylde the temple. But in that he ſynned/foꝛ he ſayd otherwyſe than he thought. The kynge of Egypte gracyouſly receyued hym/⁊ gaue hym the londe of Helipoleos/⁊ there he buylded his temple ¶ Symon his ſone was byſſhop at Jeruſalem/after that his fader was fledde.

¶ Circa annũ mundi.v.M.xxxviii. Et ante chriſti natiuitatem.C.lxv.

Eleazar of the lyne of Cryſt was aboute this tyme/of hym nothyng is wꝛyten in ſcrypture but yͤ Mach.nonbꝛeth hym (vt pz p̃ri. ¶ Onias Pias was this tyme byſſhop of Jewes a holy man. ⁊ welbeloued with god ⁊ man. And not alonely with good men but euyl men alſo. At yͤ laſt vnryghtwyſly he was ſlayne of Adꝛonico. (vt pz.ii.machabeoꝝ. ¶ Paulus Therentius. Scipio Affricanus theſe were Senatours at Rome. Theſe two erected an hooſt ayenſt Hanyball/⁊ there almooſt yͤ Romayns hope dyed. Foꝛ ther was ſlayn.xliiii.M Romayns. And this noble Scipio Affricanꝰ bꝛought ayen yͤ ſtate of yͤ Romayns people/yͤ whiche ſtode in a dyſpayꝛe euer to haue recouered. Foꝛ he fought with Hanyball manly ⁊ diſcomfyted hym. Al Spayne he ouercame Al Affryke he ſubdued/grete Antiochus he bꝛought to be his ſeruaũt. All Aſye he made tributary to yͤ Romayns/this man ſo noble ⁊ ſo vyctoꝛyous by his vnkynde coũtree was outlawed/⁊ there he dyed. ¶ Philometoꝛ the ſone of Epyphanes of Cleopatra regned in Egypt.xxxv.yere./ This kynge yet a chylde/noble Anthiochus gretely oppꝛeſſid with many dyſceytes/but yͤ Romayns ſent Legates yͭ commaũded Antiochus that he ſholde ceſſe of his tyꝛanny ayenſt hym. And Marcꝰ publius made a cercle to Antiochꝰ thus ſaynge. The ſenatours of Rome ⁊ yͤ people cõmaũde the yͭ yͤ go not out of this cercle/tyl yͤ haue anſwered to this mater. This Antiochus ſeynge yͭ he myght not contynue his tyꝛãny ſaid. Yf it be thus cõmaũded me of yͤ ſenatours ⁊ Romaỹs people I muſt nedes tourne ayen/⁊ ſo woode he was yͭ he loſt yͤ ſiege of Alexandꝛe/⁊ tourned to yͤ poꝛe releues of yͤ Jewes/venginge hym on them/bycauſe yͭ he myght not venge him on a moꝛe mightyer people (vt pz in li. Machabeoꝝ.ii.)

Mathathyas an holy man/ ⁊ of all prayſyng mooſt worthy/ hated in his hert the conuerſacyon of all ſynners/ alonely truſtynge in our lorde god of Iſrahell (vt pꝫ primo macha.ii.) And thys man had.v. ſones in ẏ ſame loue to god/ This man was not biſſhop in Iſrael/ but his thre ſones were. Iudas Machabeus was byſſhop.iii. yere/ ⁊ he was ſone too Mathathyas. This Machabeus was ẏ mooſt named man that euer was in Iſraell/ ⁊ had none lyke hym afore nor after. He was in batayl a myghty man/ ⁊ offred hym to dye a martyr for the lawes of god Ionathas his broder ſucceded hym.xix. yere/ ẏ whiche grewe in vertue/ ⁊ gouerned ſtedfaſtly ẏ lawes of god/ ⁊ after falſly was ſlayn of Cryphone ⁊ two of his ſones (plu. vi Iuda et ſkem ei⁹ li.ma.) Antiochus Epiphanes ſone to Antioch⁹ the myghty this tyme was kynge of Syrry. This man was curſed euery ynche. And therfore he was fygured to Antercryſt. He made many martyrs cruelly/ ⁊ falſly he dyſpoſed hym to entre in to Egipt as his fader dyde/ but he opteyned not/ for ẏ Romayns letted hym of his mooſt vnhappy werke/ he was in hoſtage at Rome wher Danyels prophecy was complete in hym as ye may ſe in ẏ boke of Macha. ¶ Quintus Flaminus. Marchus. Cato. Thiberius. Graci⁹ were ſenatours of Rome. this tyme was ſo moche batayl/ ẏ lerned men of Gentyles/ ⁊ of the true fayth bothe were wery for to wryte the actes/ or to haue them in mynde. In the whiche batayles men meruaylled greetly on ẏ ſtedfaſtnes of ẏ Romayns/ ẏ no trybulacyon/ no drede/ nor hardynes myght not fere them/ but euer contynued in batayll. And certaynly these Romayns after ẏ worldes honeſte/ they were the mooſt wyſeſt men ẏ were/ ⁊ therfore the Machabees deſyred theyr company.

¶ Circa annū mūdi.v.M.lix. Et ãte xp̄i natiuitatem.C.xl.

Mathon ſone to Sadoch of the lyne of cryſt gate Iacob (vt pꝫ Mathei.i.) ¶ Symon ſone vnto Mathathias was byſſhop.viii. yere. ¶ This Symon was a very wyſe man/ ⁊ from his youthe vntyll his aege was euer of good conuerſacyon/ euermore vertuous. And at the laſte he was ſlayne of his broder Elay (vt pꝫ.i.macha.) ¶ Iohannes Hircanus ſone to Symon was after his fader.xxix. yere a noble man as all the kynrede was before hym. This man after his deceſſe left his wyfe a very wyſe woman and his fyue ſones to gouerne the Iury/ and the eldeſt was called Ariſtobolus an vnpacyent man and an vnhappy. His owne moder with thre of his yonger bredern he pryſoned and ſlewe them through hungre/ ⁊ ſo alone he lyued kynge and byſſhop one yere. (vide plura li. Machabeorum.) ¶ Fabius. Lucinius. Lucius Emilius. Lucius. Lucinius. Lucius. Conſorinus were conſules at Rome. In whoſe tyme the Cartagyens/ and the Romayns warred ſtrongly togyder. But the Romayns ſubdued them/ entendyng to haue dyſtroyed the Cartagyens vtterly. But among the Romayns there was a notable wyſe mā called Scipio Nauta. And amonge many notable counſaylles/ two he gaue ſpecyally to be had in mynde. The fyrſt that Cartago ſholde not be dyſtroyed/ that thorough the occaſyon of forehande batayles/ an inwarde concorde ⁊ peas ſholde abyde amonge the Romayns/ and a perpetuel ſtrengthe for contynual exercyſe of batayll. The ſeconde. That in noo wyſe the other ſholde be buylded in Rome. For Scipio ſayd/ that was the mooſt enmye that myght be to ẏ people ẏ whiche vſed warre. For that place nouryſſhed ſlouthe and prouoked lechery. And how wyſely this notable man gaue coūſayl / ẏ tymes folowynge declareth (vide plura in Au. de ci. dei. li. iiii) ¶ Yet for al this noble coūſayle ẏ cyte of Cartage was deſtroyed of Cipio ⁊ ẏ Senatours. And it brent. xvii. dayes contynuelly. Many men there were ſolde / ⁊ many men ran in to ẏ fyre wylfully. ¶ Corynthus ẏ ſame yere was deſtroyed of ẏ Romaynes / ẏ whiche was ẏ rycheſt coūtree of ẏ worlde. ¶ Ptholomeus this tyme regned in Egypte / ⁊ was famylyer with ẏ Romayns. And ſo longe he and his predeceſſours regned as they kepte fydelyte to the Romayns. And knowe euery mā ẏ there was none other cauſe ẏ the power of ẏ Romayns encreaſed ſo ſtrongely aboue other people / but vertue whiche habūdantly reygned in them and namely ryghtwyſneſſe / whiche aboue all thynge they vſed. And as longe as they kept meſures ⁊ loued ryghtwyſnes ſo longe they were neuer ouercome. And as ſoone as they were corrupted it is red they were ouercomen. ¶ It is hadde in a certayn reuelacōn of god ſhewed to ſaynt Brygyt ẏ oure lorde god bereth wytneſſe to theſe olde romayns. That none in this naturell lyf lyued more ryghtwyſly. And what lyghtes of fayth they ſhewed in the tyme of Cryſten relygyon ſhal be ſhewed afterwarde.

¶ Regnum Judeoꝝ reſtituitur.

The fyrſt kynge ⁊ preeſt in ẏ Jury was Aryſtobolus / this kynge reygned one yere alone ⁊ toke to hym ẏ Dyademe of ẏ kyngdome. And he helde hym not content wͭ that ẏ his fader gaue hym in his teſtamēt. But he put his moder in pryſon and his bredern. And therfore he peryſſhed wretchedly wͭ his broder Antigonus / the whiche was of his counſayle and helped hym (Vide magiſtrū in hiſtorijs) ¶ Antigonꝰ broder vnto the kynge was ſlayne thrugh ẏ enuyte of ẏ quene. ¶ Alexander was byſſhop after Ariſtobolus / and he ſtode. xxvii. yere. And he was a tyraunt / ⁊ though he apperd ſobre in the begynnynge. But he made it knowē what he was in ſtomake / for he ſlewe his owne broder. And in. xii. yere he ſlewe. l. thouſande of ẏ olde ſage faders of grete vertue / bycauſe they tolde hym his myſgydynge. Then whan he ſholde deye / he lefte two ſones behynde hym. Hircanū ⁊ Ariſtobolum. But certaynly he ſayd his wyfe ſholde reygne / for ſhe ſtode in ẏ grace of the people. ¶ Seruiꝰ Flaccus / Lucius / Fabiꝰ / Plubiꝰ this tyme were Senatours at rome. This tyme batayles amonge them ſelfe began. Of ẏ whiche ẏ fyrſt cauſe ⁊ ẏ begynnynge was Graccꝰ a myghty man well knowen wͭ noble Romayns began to ſeke a cauſe agaynſt thē. And bycauſe ẏ he myght doo no thynge alone to them / he meued ẏ comyn people to them ſayēge. That all the landes and poſſeſſyons ſholde be deuyded equaly / ⁊ alſo the moneye. ⁊c. And for ẏ cauſe there was an inſurreccōn / in ẏ whiche Graccꝰ was ſlayne / ⁊ many myſcheues fell after (vide Oroſiū) ¶ In ẏ tyme of theſe men there was a chylde borne at Rome hauynge foure feet / foure armes / two faces / ⁊ foure eyen. ¶ The hyll of Ethna ſpytted out flammȳge fyre horryble / ⁊ deſtroyed ẏ places nygh aboute it. ¶ And theſe men berynge rule. Cartago was cōmaunded to be reſtored. And it was fulfylled of the Romayn people. And there was myghty batayle in the cyte of Rome. ¶ Fabiꝰ wͭ a lytell hoſte ouercame the kynge of Armenye. And there were drowned an honderd ⁊ foure ſcore thouſande men in ẏ water of Reme. ¶ Ptholomeus Alexander was kynge in Egypte. In his tyme was borne Lucrecius a Poete/ the whiche afterwarde was madde for loue of women and ſlewe hymſelfe. ¶ Ptholomeus ſone to Cleopatre reygned after hym/ vnder whome Saluſtius ÿ noble wryter of hyſtoryes was borne. ¶ Ptolomeus Dyoniſius was after this man. And in his tyme Virgyll ⁊ Oracius were borne.

¶ Anno mundi. v.M.C.xxxiiii. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem.ix.C.v.

IAcob naturell fader to Joſeph of ÿ lyne of cryſt is reherced in Luke ⁊ Math. ⁊ lytell of hym is had in ſcrypture. ¶ Alexandra wyfe to Alexāder was byſſhop in ÿ Jury.ix.yere/ ⁊ ſhewed moche tyranny/ all yf ſhe was made byſſhop by her feyned holy relygyon. And Hircanus her ſone ſhe prouoked to ÿ byſſhopryche/ ⁊ ſhe ordeyned ÿ he ſholde reygne after. This woman in ÿ lyne of ÿ byſſhops is put for ÿ coūtynge of ÿ yeres. Not as ſhe vſed ÿ offyce of a byſſhop/ for it was not lefull to her. ¶ Hircanus ſone to Alexandra reygned.xxxiii. yere. This Hircanus after ÿ deceſſe of his moder ſucceded in ÿ kyngdom/ in ÿ whiche he had lytel proſperyte for parcyalte of ÿ people. For anone he was ouercome/ ⁊ afterwarde he was reſtored through ÿ helpe of the Arabees. And than he was made trybutary to the Romayns. And ſo he was in peas a lytell tyme. But not in ÿ name of kyng. At the laſt he dyed wretchedly/ for he was begyled through ÿ fraude of Parthorū/ ÿ whiche Antigonus hyred agaynſt hym (vide plene magiſtrū hyſtorie) ¶ The hereſy of the pharyſees about this tyme began/ ⁊ amonge them were thre ſectes in the Jury. Pharacey/ Saducey/ ⁊ Eſſey. All theſe were dyuyded frō ÿ commyn vſe of ÿ Jues/ ⁊ were enfecte wt many errours/ for they ſayde ÿ they were holyer than other men/ for they lyued ſtraytlyer than other men dyd (Vide plus alias) ¶ Virgyll the mooſt famous ⁊ excellent of Poetes was magnefyed this tyme/ and meruaylous thynges he dyde. And amōge other whā ÿ Neapolis was vexed wt deedly payne of myghty wormes. Virgyl caſt a worme of golde in to a ponde or a water/ ⁊ it lay a certeyn ſeaſon there. And whan it was take vp in to ÿ towne/ all ÿ cyte was made ful of wormes/ ⁊ tyll ÿ worme of gold was put in to ÿ water agayne/ they had Infynyte wormes. And whā it was in ÿ water all ÿ wormes went awaye. ¶ Alſo it is wrytten in the cronycles of Rome/ ÿ Virgyl by cunnynge condeſcēded or thycked the ayre/ ſo ÿ he walled his gardyn wt the ayre/ ⁊ he made a brydge of the ayre by ÿ whiche he myght paſſe euery tyme that he lyſt. Alſo he aſked Marcellū Neapolitanū neuewe vnto the Emperour/ yf he wolde haue a byrde taught to kyll all byrdes/ or a flye taught to dryue all flyes out of ÿ cyte. And this Marcellum tolde this to ÿ emperour. And he deſyred to teche a flye to kyll all flyes. For the comyn people were ſore enoyed with flyes. And many other merueyles he dyd (Vide magiſtrū Rodulfū Ceſtrēſ) ¶ Oracius Flaccus/ ⁊ Saluſtius Criſpus hyſtoricꝰ were at this tyme. ¶ Quintꝰ Cipeꝰ/ Gaius Lucius this tyme were Conſules of Rome. ¶ Pōpeius/ Marcus/ Craſſus/ ⁊ Juliꝰ Ceſar this tyme were Dictatours at Rome. For as it is ſayd afore there were many dygnytees at Rome/ of ÿ whiche ſome dured one yere/ ſome two yere. And amonge all the dygnytees ÿ Dyctatours exceded/ for it dured fyue yere contynually. But whan ÿ comyn people ⁊ ÿ lordſhyppes of Rome encreaſynge were made.iii. Dictatours/ ⁊ this tyme was Pompeiꝰ Julius ⁊ Marcꝰ Craſſus Dictatours/ ⁊ bycauſe Pompeius was of grete honour and aged/ he bode at Rome to kepe yͤ comyn people of Rome. ¶ Marcꝰ Craſſus was ſente to ſubdue ⁊ fyght wͭ yͤ regyon of Perthus. And thrugh treaſon he was taken ⁊ ſlayne. ¶ Julius Cezar was ſent to yͤ weſt parte of yͤ worlde to ſubdue the And he had wͭ hȳ. vii. legyons of people And whan yͭ he had ſubdued Lombardy ⁊ Fraūce/ his fyue yere were ſpended/ yͭ which were aſſygned to hym ⁊ no lenger There by his owne auctoryte toke other fyue yere vpon hym/ in yͤ whiche he ſubdued Caſſybolon kynge of Brytayne/ ⁊ the Frenſſhmen yͭ rebelled agaynſt hym ¶ This Julius whan he had conquered the coūtrees vnto Rome he rode agayne/ for to be receyued wͭ certeyne worſhyp as cōquerours were before hym/ but it was denyed hȳ ⁊ alſo yͤ entre of yͤ cyte by yͤ inſtygacyon of a lorde called Pōpei. Wherfore this Juliꝰ Cezar was annoyed/ ⁊ wͭ force of myghte entred the cyte/ and robbed the comyn treaſoure ⁊ ladde it wͭ hym and departed it amonge yͤ. vii. legyons yͭ were his ſeruaūtes. Then wente he in to Spayne for to fyght agaynſt this Pompei. For Pompei had the gouernaūce of Cartago. But after yͤ Journey in Ytaly Pompei ⁊ he encoūtred togyder. In the whiche batayle Pompei fledde vnto the kynge of Egypte/ ⁊ yͤ ſame kynge for ſpecyall loue yͭ he had vnto this Julius Cezar ſmote of Pompeius heed ⁊ ſent it to Julius Cezar. yet for all yͤ enuyte yͭ was betwyxt them two. Juliꝰ wepte whan yͭ he ſawe this Pompeius heed. This Juliꝰ was excedyng in wyt afore other men and he faught in batayl. lii. tymes. This man alone exceded Marcus Craſſus/ the whiche is ſayd to haue foughten. xxxix. tymes. This man toke fyrſt the Empyre of Rome vpon hym/ whan Pompei and other noble men of the Romaynes were ſlayne. And at the laſt the fyfth yere of his Empyre. This Julius ruler of all this worlde was ſlayne in the coūſell hous of his lordes ¶ Cathon yͤ mooſt named phyloſopher/ ſeynge Julius Cezar haue yͤ victory/ whome he fauoured not/ at a towne called Uticam dyde ſlee hymſelfe (iuxta illud Mauult cato mori: quā derogebris honorari) But for yͭ after Auſtyne he was not excuſed of ſynne. ¶ This tyme yͤ Jury was tributary to yͤ Romayns for parcyalyte of two bredern Ariſtobolus ⁊ Ercanus both of them for enuye of other caſte them to the Romayns yͭ they myght regne. This tyme thre ſonnes appered in heuen towarde the eeſt parte of the worlde yͤ whiche by lytel ⁊ lytel were brought in to one body. A grete ſygne it was yͭ Affrica/ Aſia/ ⁊ Europa ſholde be brought in to one monarche/ ⁊ yͭ the lordſhyp of Anthony the Senatoure ⁊ Lucius Anthonii ſholde tourne in to one lordſhyp. ¶ Marcus Cicero Tulliꝰ yͤ mooſt noble Rethorycein was conſull of Rome

¶ How that the Brytons graunted vnto Caſſybolon whiche then tofore that was Luddes broder yͤ lande. In whoſe tyme Julius Cezar came twyes for to conquere the lande of Brytayne.

CAſſybolon regned after his broder Lud ⁊ became a good mā ⁊ moche beloued of his Brytons/ ſo yͭ for his goodneſſe ⁊ curteſy they graunted hym yͤ reame for euer more to hym ⁊ to his heyres. And the kynge of his goodneſſe lete nouryſſhe bothe yͤ ſones yͭ were Lud his broders. And after made yͤ eldeſt ſone erle of Cornewayle/ ⁊ the yongeſt ſone he made erle of London. And whyle this Caſſybolon reygned/ came Julius Cezar yͭ was Emperour of Rome in the lande with power of Romayns ⁊ wolde haue had this lande through ſtrengthe/ but Caſſybolon ouercame hym in batayle through helpe of the Brytons/⁊ droue hym out of yͤ londe And he wente agayne to Rome ⁊ aſſembled a grete power an other tyme ⁊ came agayn in to this londe for to gyue batayll to Caſſybolō/but he was diſcōfyted throwe ſtrength of yͤ Brytons/⁊ through helpe of yͤ Erle of Cornewayle ⁊ yͤ Erle of London his broder/⁊ through helpe of Gudian kynge of Scotlonde/⁊ Corbonde the kynge of Norwales/⁊ of Brytayll kynge of Southwales. And in this batayl was ſlayne Nennon yͤ was Caſſybolons broder/wherfore he made moche ſorowe. And ſo went Julius Cezar out of this lande wͭ a fewe of Romayns yͤ were lefte a lyue. And then Caſſybolon wente ayen to London ⁊ made a feeſt to al folke that tho hym had helped. And whan that this feeſt was done/then euery man yede to his owne countree.

¶Of the debate that was betwyxte Caſſybolon ⁊ yͤ Erle of London/⁊ of yͤ truage that was payed to Rome

AND after it befell thus vpō a day that the gentylmen of the kynges houſholde/⁊ yͤ gentylmē of yͤ Erles houſholde of London after mete wente togyder for to play. And through debate yͤ aroſe amonge them Euelin yͤ was the Erles coſyn of London ſlewe Irenglas yͤ was the kynges coſyn. Wherfore yͤ kynge ſwore yͤ Euelyn ſholde be hanged. But yͤ Erle of London that was Euelins lorde wolde not ſuffre hym/wherfore the kynge was gretely wroth ⁊ vered towarde yͤ Erle/⁊ thought hym to dyſtroye. And pryuely yͤ Erle ſente letters to Julyus Cezar/yͤ he ſholde come in to this lande for to helpe hym/⁊ hym auenge vpon the kynge/and he wolde helpe hym wͭ al his myght. And whan themperour herde theſe tydynges he was full glad/⁊ ordeyned a ſtronge power/⁊ came agayne the thyrde tyme in to this lande/⁊ yͤ Erle of London helped hȳ with .viii. M. men/and at yͤ thyrde tyme was Caſſybolon ouercome ⁊ diſcōfyted and made peas to the emperour for thre thouſande pounde of ſyluer yeldynge by yere for truage for this lande for euermore. ¶And then in halfe a yere after themperour Julius Cezar wente agayn vnto Rome/⁊ the Erle of London wͭ hym. For he durſt not abyde in this lande. And after Caſſybolon regned .vii. yere in peas/and tho he dyed yͤ .xvii. yere of his regne and lyeth at Yorke.

¶How that the lordes of yͤ lande after yͤ dethe of Caſſybolon ⁊ for bycauſe he had none heyre made Andragen kynge.

AFter yͤ deth of Caſſybolon for as moche as he hadde none heyre of his lefull body begoten/the lordes of the lande by yͤ comyns aſſente crowned Andragen Erle of Cornewayle and made hym kynge. And he regned well and worthely/and he was a good man/⁊ well gouerned the lande. And whan he had reygned .viii. yere thenne he dyed ⁊ lyeth at London.

¶Circa annum mūdi .v. M. C. lix. Et ante xp̄i natiuitatem .xl.

IOſeph of the lyne of Cryſte was about this tyme borne/and after was huſbande vnto oure lady. ¶Anthigonus was byſſhoppe this tyme in the Jury. This Anthigonus was ſone vnto Aryſtoboly/and on euery ſyde he was falſe. For he obeyed not to the Romayns and a grete plage he broughte vnto the lande for to deſtroye Hyrcanus his owne vncle/that he myghte regne kynge/and ſo Hircan⁹ was expulſed/⁊ Flaccus was ſlayne/⁊ Herode was exiled. But whan Herode came vnto Rome ⁊ tolde ẏ Senatours al theſe thynges ẏ Emperour created hym kynge ſendynge wᵗ hym an hoſte ẏ whiche toke Iheruſalem. And Antigonū the byſſhop take/led to Antony ẏ Senatour/ẏ whiche made hym ſyker/⁊ ſo was Herode conſermed in to his kyngdome. And he a ſtraunger reygned on ẏ Iewes and ſo the kyngdom of the Iewes ceſſed as Iacob had ſayd. ¶ Titus Liuius Hiſtoricus/and Ouidius were this tyme.

¶ Incipiūt Imperatores Auguſti. ⁊ dictus eſt Auguſtus qꝛ augebat populum.

OCtauyan was Emperour of Rome lvi. yere. vi. monethes ⁊.x. dayes. This Octauyan neuewe to Iuly whan he was a yonge man toke the Empyre on hym. His flouryſſhynge youth he ſpeded in warre fyue. M. batayles he dyde. And ſhortely after many batayles he brought all the worlde in to one monarche/ẏ man hadde no felowe. And in his dayes peas was ouer all the worlde thrugh ẏ prouyſyon of the very god. That the temporall peas myght gloryfye ẏ natyuyte of our ſauyour Cryſte Iheſu. This Octauyan was the fayreſt man ẏ myght be ⁊ hye in wyt/ẏ mooſt fortunat in al thynges/⁊ he lacked not the vyce of his fleſſhely luſte. This man made all the worlde to be meſured. And in ẏ.xlii. yere of his regne was Cryſte Ieſu borne/the Sauyour of this worlde/ẏ whiche graunted eternall peas to his louers. ¶ Hic nota ſcḃz Ieronimū that Anna ⁊ Emeria were ſyſters. And of Emeria was borne Elyzabeth moder to Iohan ẏ baptyſt. And Anna was fyrſt wedded to Ioachim of whome ſhe toke Mary of Cryſte. The ſeconde huſbande was Cleophe/and he gate on her Maria Cleophe/ẏ whiche was wedded to Alphe of whome proceded Iames ẏ leſſe/Symon Cananeus/Iudas Tadeus/⁊ Ioſeph ẏ which was called Barſabas. The thyrde tyme Anna was wedded to Salome/of whome ſhe toke Mary Salome/ẏ whiche was wedded to zebede ⁊ of them came Iames the more/⁊ Iohan ẏ euangelyſt. The fyrſte Mary wedded Ioſeph broder to Cleophe afore ſayd. This tyme Sibilla Tiburtina prophecyed of cryſt/⁊ ſayd to themperour Auguſt ẏ he ſholde not trowe ẏ he was not god after ẏ folyſſheneſſe of ẏ paynyms. And there ſhe ſhewed hȳ a fayre virgyn in heuē holdynge a chylde in her armes ⁊ ſayd to hym/this chylde is greter than thou/⁊ therfore do hym worſhyp. ¶ The monarche of Rome about this tyme myghtly encreaſed And whā it was ſo ẏ by al ẏ worlde in dyuerſe prouynces batayles were reyſed ſodenly all men meruaylynge they were ceſſed and put them hooly to ẏ prynce of Rome that openly it myghte be ſhewed ẏ ſuche an vnyuerſall peas came neuer by labour of batayle/but of ẏ power of ẏ very god that in his natyuyte peas ſholde reygne in the worlde. ¶ Herode Aſcolonyta was kynge in the Iury.xxxv. yere. This Herode ydumeus was ẏ fyrſt ſtraūge kynge that regned on the Iewes. The mayſter in hyſtoriis ſayth/he was a noble man/⁊ faythfull in ẏ begynnynge/⁊ in all thynge he had hym nobly. He was very gētyll vnto the Romayns ⁊ to ẏ people ẏ loued peas. And in his olde aege whan he wold moche pleaſe the Romayns herde of the byrthe of Cryſt/dredynge to be expulſed of his kyngdom as a ſtraūger/wretchedly he felle ⁊ ſlewe ẏ Innocētes ⁊ dyuerſe of his owne chyldern. And at ẏ laſt was hateful to all people/fell ſeke ⁊ dyed wretchedly. ¶ Mary the moder of Cryſt was borne afore the natyuyte of Cryſte.xvi.

yere or there about.

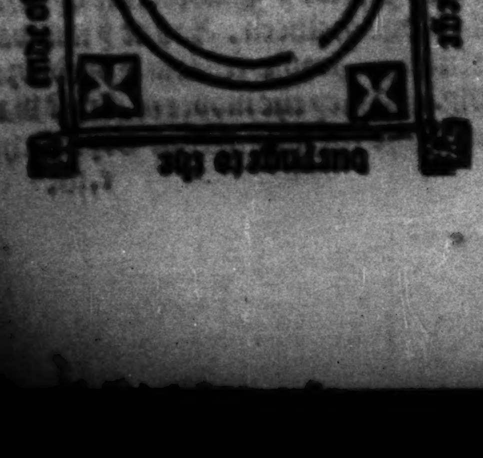
¶ Of Kembalyn that was Andragens ſone reygned after his fader.

KEmbalyn reygned after the dethe of his fader / & was a good man & well gouerned ẏ lande in moche proſperyte & peas all his lyf tyme. And in his tyme criſt was borne of ẏ ſwete virgyn Mary. This Kēbalyn had .ii. ſones. Gynder and Armager good knyghtes & worthy. And whan this Kembalyn had reygned .xxii. yere / he dyed and lyeth at London.

¶ Criſtus natus eſt ex virgine maria anno mundi .v.M.C.lxxxxiiij.

AT ẏ begynnynge of ẏ .xlii. yere of Octauyan the emperour whiche began to regne in Marche / & in ẏ .xxx. yere of Herode .vii.C. and .l. yere after that Rome was buylded / ẏ .vi. moneth from the conceyuynge of Johū Baptyſte / the .viii. kal. of Apryl. ẏ .vi. ferye at Nazareth of Galylee / of the virgyn mary was conceyued Cryſte our ſauyoure / & the ſame yere was borne.

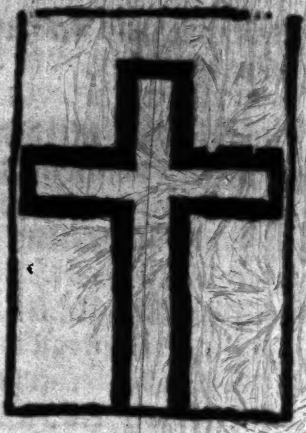
¶ Here at Cryſtes Natyuyte begynneth the ſyxte aege durynge to the fynall Jugement / hauynge yeres as god knoweth



THat day oure lorde Jheſu Cryſt was borne / a well of oyle beyonde Tybre by Rome ſprange & ranne all day. The goldē ymage fel ẏ whiche Romulus had made / & put it in his paleys ſayenge. This ymage ſhall not fayle vnto a mayde bere a chylde. ¶ Whan Herode dyſpoſed hym to ſlee the chyldern of Iſrael / he was cōmaūded by ẏ letter of themperoure to come to Rome to anſwere to the accuſacyon of his chyldern Alexiū & Ariſtoboli. And there were .iii. Herodes gretly ſpoken of for theyr yll dedes. The fyrſt was called Aſcolonita / & vnder this man was borne Cryſt / & ẏ chyldern of Iſraell were ſlayne. The ſeconde was called Antipas ſone to ẏ fyrſt Herode / vnder whom Johan baptyſt was heded / & Cryſte ſuffred dethe. And ẏ thyrde was called Agrippa ſone to Ariſtoboli / ſone to ẏ fyrſte Herode ẏ whiche ſlewe James & pryſoned Peter. The fyrſt Herode whā he ſawe his ſones Alexiū & Ariſtoboli through the pretes of his letter by themperour ſente ſtroue for ẏ ſucceſſyon of his kȳgdom / he diſpoſed & made Antipater ẏ was his fyrſt begotē ſone to be before thē / & whā they were talkȳg of ẏ deth of theyr fad he caſt thē away & they went to themperour to cōplayne of ẏ wrōge of theyr fad / & in ẏ meane tyme ẏ thre kynges of Coleyne came by Herode to Jheruſalē / & whā they came not ayē by hym he thought ẏ they were aſhamed bycauſe they were diſceyued & ẏ they foūde not the chylde as he demed / therfore in ẏ meane ſeaſon he ceſſed to ſlee ẏ chyldern of Iſraell / & ſo wente vnto Rome by the cytacyon of the emperour. And he toke his waye by the Cyte of Tarſum / where he brente the ſhyppes in the whiche the thre kynges of Coleyne ſholde haue ſayled in to theyr owne countree. Then after a yere and certen days this Herode came from Rome agayne accuſed of his ſones

And for the confyrmacyon of his kyngdome he was made moche bolder/ ⁊ then he ſlewe all the chyldren of Bethleem ẏ were of two yere of aege ⁊ vnder/ that had ẏ ſpace of one nyght of aege/ ⁊ amonge theſe it was there one of his owne chyldren. ⁊ Ariſtoboli/ ⁊ Alexii were had in ſuſpeccyon/ in ſoo moche as they promyſed a barbour a grete rewarde for to cutte theyr faders throte whan ẏ he dyd ſhaue him And whan this Herode herde this he was greued ⁊ there he ſlewe bothe his ſones. And Herode Agryppa his ſone he ordeyned to be kynge. wherfore Antipater his eldeſt ſone was aboute to poyſon his fader/ the whiche Herode Agrippa vnderſtode/ and pryſoned there his broder/ the whiche ẏ emperour herde and ſayd that he had rather be an hogge of Herodes/ than one of his ſones/ for his hogges he ſpareth/ and his ſones he ſleeth. And whā that Herode was lxx. yere of aege he was ſtryken wᵗ a grete ſekeneſſe in his handes ⁊ in his fete/ ⁊ in his membres/ ẏ noo leche myght come to hym for ſtynke/ ⁊ ſo he deyed. ¶ Antipater his ſone in pryſon herde tell of this/ ⁊ Joyed gretely/ and there for that cauſe he was ſlayne. Then ſtroue Archelaus and Herodes for the ſucceſſyon of the fyrſt Herode. The Emperour there thrugh counſayll of the Senatours the halfe of ẏ Jury ⁊ Idumea gaue to Archylaus vnder name of Tetrarche. And the other parte he deuyded in two. Galylee he gaue to Herode Agrippa. And Iturian and Traconyden he gaue to Phylyp Herodes broder. And ẏ ſame yere Cryſt came from Egipt And Archelaꝰ was accuſed many tymes of the Jewes/ and was exyled in to vyenna in to Fraunce. And in ẏ place were ſet foure Tetrarches to the repreſſyng of the vnſtableneſſe of the Jewes. And that ſame yere Octauyen the Emperoure deceſſed.

¶ Anno Chriſti.xx.



¶ Crux Chriſti.

Chriſt Jheſu at.xii. yere of age herde the doctours in ẏ Temple. Our lorde Jheſu cryſt at.xxx. yere of aege was baptyſed. And at.xxxi. yere of aege and.iii monethes he deyed for his ſeruauntes. ¶ Annanus Rufus was byſſhop in ẏ Jury aboute this tyme. ¶ Valerius Graccꝰ was after hym.xi. yere. This man openly ſolde ẏ biſſhopryche to hym ẏ gaue mooſt And there was moneye in a lytell whyle. ¶ Poncīꝰ Pylatꝰ was Juge ⁊ proctoure in the Jury vnder ẏ Emperour. And that tyme.ſ. Johan Baptyſt began to preche. And our lord he iuged wrongfully to deth for fere of themperour. ¶ Tyrus a certen kynge gate a chylde on Pyla a pore mannes doughter named Atus/ ⁊ this chylde of his moders name ⁊ his belſyre put togyders was called Pylatus. ẏ.iiii. yere of ẏ aege of this Pylatus he was ſent to his fader. The whiche kynge of his leful wyfe had goten a chylde euen of the aege of pylate. And bycauſe this leful goten chylde as they proceded in aege exceded this baſtarde Pylatus/ he was full of enuy/ and ſlewe the ryghte heyre begoten. wherfore forthwith his fader ſent him to Rome for pledge for his tribute ẏ he payed to Rome entendynge he wolde neuer redeme hym. In ẏ whiche tyme ẏ kynges ſone of Fraunce was pledge for his tribute/the whiche exceded hym in ſtrength ⁊ chiualry alſo he ſlewe hym. Therfore the Romayns ſente Pilate as a profytable man for the comyn wele to the yle of Ponto to tame ẏ curſed people/the which ſlewe euery Juge that came to them/and he ẏ curſed man gouerned ẏ vnhappy people/what wͭ thretynge ⁊ with promyſe/⁊ with lawe/⁊ wͭ gyftes that none of them durſt cõtrary do to his pleaſure/wherfore he was called Pylate of Ponto. ¶ Herode Antipa yonge in his cõuerſacõns/wͭ gyftes ⁊ meſſages drewe hym to hym ⁊ made him prynce of ẏ Jury vnder him. And this tyme Pilate gadred moche money/⁊ Herode not knowynge/he wente to Rome that he myght receyue of the Emperour that Herode had gyuen him. Wherfore Herode ⁊ Pilate were enemyes togyder/vnto ẏ paſſyon of our lord whan ẏ Pylate ſent Jheſus vnto Herode clothed in a whyte clothe/than they were made frendes. ¶ Ouidius Naſo in Ponto aboute this tyme dyed the fourth yere of his exyle. ¶ Tyberius this tyme was Emperour at Rome/⁊ he reygned.xxiii. yere/⁊ he lyued in ẏ yere ẏ our lord Jheſu Cryſt dyed/⁊ ſomwhat after. This man was in al his werkes gretely auyſed that there ſholde be no thynge ſodeynly done/wyſe in warres/ſtudyous in bokes/fayre of ſpeche/freſſhe in wytte/ſaue he wolde oftentymes feyne hȳſelfe to do thynges ẏ he wolde neuer do of other. This Emperour vnderſtode ⁊ truſted in cryſt/⁊ worſhypped hym for god. Some men ſaye at the laſt he was cruell ayenſt ẏ people/but it was a grete reaſon of pyte/that he was full gracyous to his ſubgectes ⁊ poore men. And he had peas all his dayes/⁊ all the people ẏ ſayd agaynſt cryſten folke wͭout mercy he deſtroyed/⁊ he exyled Pylate for euer. Then he deceſſed ⁊ a worſe ſucceded hym. ¶ After Euſeby it is wryten/our lord at.xxx.yere of his aege choſe his xii. apoſtles/ẏ whiche made our Crede/ẏ is our byleue. And they made it after the Reſurreccyon of cryſt/⁊ after ẏ holy ghoſt was ſente to them. Whan they had choſe Mathia the apoſtle/⁊ eche of them made a part as it is ſhewed hereafter. And this Mathia was choſe bytwene ẏ day of the Aſcencyon ⁊ wytſondaye in ẏ place of Judas Scaryot the traytour/of whome in a hyſtory is redde thus. ¶ There was a certayne man in Jeruſalem ẏ hyght Ruben ⁊ after ſayne Jerom he was of ẏ trybe of yſachar/⁊ his wyfe hight Ciborea/ẏ whiche on a certayn nyght whã he wold luſtely knowe his wyfe/ſhe dremed ẏ ſhe ſhold bere a chylde of myſchefe/⁊ ẏ chylde ſhold be a traytour to his kynge ⁊ to all ẏ people of ẏ regyon/⁊ whan ẏ child was borne ⁊ called Judas/his fader ⁊ moder abhorred as wel to ſlee theyr chylde/⁊ to nouryſſhe a traytour to ẏ kynge ⁊ all his people/therfore they put him in to a panyer or a leep in to the ſee/and he flowed to ẏ yle of Scaryoth/where the lady of that place had no chylde by her huſbande and ſhe fayned her to be with chylde/but ſhe fayled. And after a lytell ſeaſon the ſame lady and quene conceyued a chyld of her huſband. And whan that he was of age Judas many tymes angred hym ⁊ cauſed hym to wepe/ẏ whiche ẏ quene ſawe and bete Judas many tymes/and after ſhe knowleged that Judas was not the kynges ſone nor hers/wherfor Judas ſlewe the kynges ſone/and he dradde ẏ payne of the lawe/and fledde with certayne peples in Jheruſalem. And whan he came there he gaf hym to Pylates courte the whiche was Juge. And bicauſe that one curſed mā draweth to another therfor he drewe hym vnto Pylate in Jheruſalem ⁊ ſtode gretely in his fauour. So on a certayne day as Pylate loked out of his palays in to an orcharde ẏ was Judas very faders called Rubē. Pylate deſyred to haue apples/⁊ Judas wente to gadre ſome/⁊ Ruben came to let hym bycauſe he aſked no lycence/⁊ after many wordes Judas ſlewe his fader/⁊ after fled away ſecretly but it was ſayd ẏ Ruben deyed ſodaynly. Then Pylate gaue hym all Rubens goodes/w̄ his wyfe Ciborea ẏ was his mod̄. And he dealed not w̄ her as a man ſholde do with his wyfe/wherfore ſhe wepte bycauſe ſhe had put her ſone in to ẏ ſee/⁊ ẏ ſhe was maryed ayenſt her wyll. It was perceyued ẏ Judas had ſlayn his fader ⁊ wedded his owne moder. Then Ciborea his moder ⁊ wyfe ſtyred hym to leue hys ſynne/whiche he dyd ⁊ folowed Cryſt/⁊ he forgaue hym his ſynnes/⁊ made him his proctour ⁊ apoſtle/of his falſnes it nedeth no reherſayll. And ẏ yere Mathewe was choſen/⁊ the holy ghoſt was ſente to them as it is afore ſaid. The appoſtles or they were ſparpled abrode/they gadered them togyder in Jheruſalem ⁊ made the Crede: our byleue here folowynge.

¶ Credo in deū patrem
Petrus omnipotentem creatorem
celi et terre.
Et in iheſum xp̄m
Andreas filium eius vnicum dominum
noſtrum.
Qui conceptus eſt de
Johānes ſpiritu ſancto natus ex
maria virgine.
Paſſus ſub poncio
Jacobus pilato crucifixus mortuus
et ſepultus.
Deſcendit ad inferna
Thomas tercia die reſurrexit
a mortuis.
Aſcendit ad celos ſedet
Jacobus ad dexteram dei patris
omnipotentis.
Inde venturus eſt
Philipp⁹ iudicare viuos et mortuos.
¶ Credo in
Bartho. ſpiritum ſanctum.
Sanctam
Mathe⁹ eccleſiam catholicam.
Sanctorum communionem
Symon remiſſionem
peccatorum.
Carnis
Judas reſurrectionem.
Et vitam.
Mathias eternam.
Amen.

Iheſu criſt our ſauyour aroſe fro dethe to lyfe ⁊ ſayd to his dyſcyples./ All the power in heuen ⁊ in erth is gyuen vnto me. And go ye thus in to all ẏ worlde ⁊ preche ⁊ teche vnto euery creature/⁊ I ſhall be with you vnto ẏ ende of ẏ worlde ¶ There he choſe hym.lxxii. diſciples. And he had.xii. appoſtles the whiche he ſente in to al the worlde to preche. Nor it is not redde that ther were more ordres among the dyſcyples of Cryſt/of whome ẏ preeſtes ⁊ biſſhops in the chirche of god yet kepe the fourme. For to the appoſtles ẏ byſſhops ſuccede/and to the dyſcyples preeſtes. To the whiche two ordres all the chirche is gyuen as a goodly Ierarche (Ut pȝ in Decreto Damaſie pape.)

Wrote in Aſia in
Greke langage
In principio
erat verbum. ⁊c. Johannes.

Wrote in ytalia but in greke langage. Initiū euangelii ieſu chriſti.⁊c.	Marcus.
Wrote in grecia in greke langage. Fuit in diebus herodis regis iude ſacerdos.⁊c.	Lucas.
Wrote in the Jury in hebrewe langage Liber generatiōis ieſu chriſti.⁊c.	Matheus.

¶ Here begynneth yͤ ordre of popes of Rome/ & cōtynueth as the lyne of Cryſt dyde afore. For in them god lefte his power.

¶ Anno domini.xxxiiii.

Peter a Jewe the fyrſt pope was a bleſſyd man & a gloryous appoſtle of Cryſt. He was heed of yͤ churche.xxxvii. yere. And he helde his byſſhopryche in the eeſt.v.yere & ſayd maſſe/ he made our lorde/ & alone ſayd the Pater noſter. Than after he came to Antiochiam and there he abode.vii.yere techynge yͤ waye of trouth And Symon Magus he cōfoūded away That ſeaſon he preched to the people that were circūcyſed/ the whiche were in Ponto of Galati/ Capadocia/ Aſia/ Bithinia. Than herde he that Symon Magus deluded the romayns/ through the loue of the fayth/ he came to Rome in the fourth yere of Claudius the Emperour. And there he preched the worde of god/ and ſhewed the falſhede of Symon Magus/ and tourned many a man to yͤ fayth. Than he ſente his prechers by dyuers prouynces/ by whome cryſten relygyon was myghtely encreaſed ¶ He ordeyned the feeſt of Lenton afore Eeſter/ & Aduent/ & the Emberynge dayes to be faſted of all cryſten people/ in to the myrrour of the fyrſt & ſeconde comynge of our lorde Jheſu. ¶ Than whan he had be pope at Rome.xxv.yere.vii.monethes & viii.dayes/ he was ſlayn of Nero (Eius pla oga vide actib⁹ aplor) ¶ Gaius this tyme was Emperour at Rome & reygned iii.yere and.x.monethes. This Gai⁹ was fyrſt vycyous in lyuynge/ for two of his owne ſyſters he myſuſed/ and on one of them he gate a doughter/ whiche childe he ſette bytwene the knees of Jupyter in the temple/ & feyned afterwarde that Jupyter had goten her. Wherfore he dyde crye through the countree that all men ſholde worſhyp her as a goddeſſe. This man alſo made an ymage lyke hymſelfe/ & ſente it to one Patronie preſydēt at Jeruſalem vnder the Romayns/ cōmaundynge hym that he ſholde compell yͤ Jewes to do worſhyp therto. And for theſe enormytees & many other/ our lorde ſuffred hym to be ſlayne at Rome in his owne paleys.

¶ Of kynge Gynder that was Kymbalyns ſone/ that wolde not paye the truage to Rome for the londe that Caſſibalon had graunted/ and how he was ſlayne of a Romayne.

Gynder reygned after the dethe of Kymbalyn his fader whiche was a good man & a worthy/ & was of ſo hygh herte that he wolde not paye to Rome the trybute that kynge Caſſybolon had graūted vnto Julius Cezar. Wherfore the emperour yͤ was than/ that was called Claudius Cezar was ſore anoyed. And ordeyned a very grete power of Romayns/ and came in to this londe for to conquere the trybute through ſtrength/ and for to haue it on the kynge. But this kynge Gynder and Armager his brother aſſembled and gadred a grete hoſte togyder of Brytons / & gaue batayle to y Emperour Claudius & ſlewe of y Romayns grete plente. The emperour had afterwarde one y was called Hamon y ſawe the people there were faſt ſlayne / & pryuely caſt away his owne armes / & toke y armes of a deed Bryton / & armed hym therwith / & came in to the batayle to y kynge & ſayd thus. Syr be of a good herte for goddes loue / for y romayns that ben your enemyes anone ſhal be ſlayne & dyſcomfyted. And y kynge gaue no hede to his wordes / for bycauſe of the armes that he had vpon hym / & demed y he had ben a Bryton. But the traytour euer helde hym nere the kynge / & pryuely vnder the ſholder of his armes he ſmote the kynge / wherfore y kynge dyed & fell downe to the erth ¶ Whan Armager ſawe his broder so deed / he caſt awaye his armes & toke to him his broders armes / & came in to the batayle amonge y Brytons & badde them hertely to fyght / & faſt laye a downe the Romayns. And for y armes they wende it had ben kynge Gynder y afore was ſlayne / y they wyſt not. Than began the Brytons fyerſly to fyght / & ſlewe the Romayns. So at y laſt y Emperour forſoke the felde / & fledde as faſte as he myght w his folke in to Wyncheſtre. And the fals traytoure Hamon y had ſlayne the kynge faſt anone began to flee w all the haſte y he myght. And Armager the kynges broder purſued hym full fyerſly with a fyers herte / & drove hym to a water & there he toke hym / & anone ſmote of both hondes and fete & heed / & hewed y body all to peces / & than let caſte hym in to the water. Wherfore y water was called Hamõs hauen / & after there was made a fayre towne y yet ſtandeth / y is called Southampton. And after Armager wente to Wyncheſter to ſeke Claudius y Emperour / & there toke hym. And Claudius the Emperour through coũſayl of his folke left al y ue / made peas w Armager in this maner folowynge. That is to ſay y Claudiꝰ ſholde gyue his doughter Gēnen to Armager to wyfe / & that this lande from y tyme forwarde ſholde be in y Emperours power of Rome / takynge none other tribute but homage. And they were accorded And on this couenaunt Claudiꝰ Cezar ſent to Rome for his doughter Gennen. And as ſhe was come Claudiꝰ Cezar gaue her vnto Armager to wyf. And Armager ſpouſed her at London w grete ſolempnyte. And then he was crowned kynge of Brytayn.

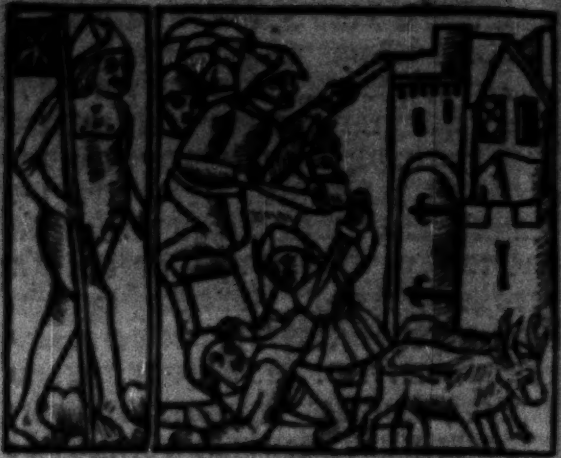
¶ Of kynge Armager in whoſe tyme ſaynt Peter preched in Anthyoche / w other apoſtles in dyuers coũtrees.

This Armager gouerned the land ryght worſhypfully all his lyfe / & Claudius Cezar in remembraũce of thys accorde & maryage made here a fayre caſtell and towne after his name / callyng it Clauceſtren / & now it is called Gloceſtre / And whan this was done y Emperoure toke his leue & went to Rome agayne. Armager had a ſone by his wyfe called Weſtmer. And whyle this Armager reygned / ſaynt Peter preched in Anthyoche. And there he made a noble chirche. In y whiche he ſat fyrſt in his chayre. And there he dwelled. vii. yere And after he went to Rome and was made pope / tyll that Nero y Emperour lete martyr him. And then preched openly all the apoſtles in dyuers londes the right faythe. And whan Armager had reygned. xxiiii. yere / he deyed / & lyeth at new Troy.

¶ How kynge Weſtmer gaue to Berynger an ylonde forlet. And there this Berynger made the towne of Berwyke.

Weſtmer Ramagers ſone reygned after hym / that was a good man and a worthy of body / ⁊ well gouerned the londe. It befell ſo yͭ tydynges came to hym vpon a daye that the kynge Roderik of Gaſcoyne was come in to this londe with an huge hoſte of people / ⁊ was dwellynge in ſtanes more. And whan kynge Weſtmer herde thoſe tydynges / he let aſſemble an huge hoſte of Brytons / ⁊ came to the kynge Roderik ⁊ gaue hym batayle And kynge Weſtmer ſlewe kynge Roderik with his owne handes in playne batayle. And whan kynge Roderyks men ſawe yͭ theyr lorde was ſlayne / they yelded them all to kynge Weſtmer / ⁊ became his men for euermore / ⁊ he gaue them a countre yͭ was forleten wherin they myght dwell / ⁊ thyder they went ⁊ dwelled there al theyr lyfe tyme / ⁊ ix. hondred men there were of them ⁊ no mo lefte at that batayle. Theyr gouernour ⁊ prynce was called Beringer And anone he begã a towne yͭ they myght dwell therin ⁊ haue reſorte / ⁊ let call the towne Berwyk vpon Twede. And there they enhabyted ⁊ became ryche. But they had no women amonge them / ⁊ the Brytons wolde not gyue theyr doughters to the ſtraũgers. Wherfore they wente ouer ſee in to Irlonde ⁊ brought with them women / ⁊ there they them ſpowſed. But the men coude not vnderſtãde theyr langage ne the ſpeche of theſe women / ⁊ therfore they ſpake togyder as ſcottes. And afterwarde through chaũgynge theyr langage in all Fraũce they were called than Scottes. And ſo ſholde the folkes of that coũtre be called for euermore.

¶ How kynge Weſtmer lete arere a ſtone in the entrynge of Weſtmerlande / theras he ſlewe Roderyk / ⁊ there he began fyrſte houſynge.



Whan Roderyk was ſlayne in this batayll / kynge Weſtmer in remembraunce of his vyctory / lete arere there beſyde yͤ hye waye a grete ſtone / the whiche ſtandeth yet / ⁊ euer ſhall. And he made graue in yͤ ſtone letters yͭ ſaid. The kynge Weſtmer of Brytayne ſlewe in this place Roderyk his enmye. And this Weſtmer was yͤ fyrſt yͭ buylded hous ⁊ towne in Weſtmerlande / ⁊ at yͤ ſtone begynneth Weſtmerlande / for he named it after hys name. And whan Weſtmer had ſo done he dwelled all his lyfe in Weſtmerlande / for he loued that countree aboue al other coũtrees ⁊ whan he had reygned .xxv. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Karleyll.

¶ Of kynge Coyll that was Weſtmers ſone yͭ helde his lande in peas all his lyfe.

Coyll Weſtmers ſone was crowned kynge after his fader / and he was a good man and a worthy / and of good cõdycyons / and well gouerned his lande. ⁊ of all men he had loue ⁊ peas. And in his tyme was neuer contacke / debate / warre nor ſtryfe in Brytayne. And he was king in peas all his lyfe tyme. And whã he had regned .xi. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Yoꝛke.

CLaudiꝰ was Emperour at Rome next after Gaius. And regned .xiiii. yere. ⁊. viii. dayes. This man came in to grete Bꝛytayne now called Englande foꝛ to chalenge ŷ trybute whiche they dyd denye vnto ŷ Romayns. And after grete batayle there was bytwene the Emperour Claudiꝰ ⁊ Armager kynge of Bꝛytayne And after accoꝛdemẽt made ŷ this Armager sholde wedde Claudiꝰ doughter / ⁊ after they two sholde euer lyue in peas. In token wherof this Claudiꝰ named ŷ cyte where they were wedded after hym ⁊ called it Claudicestre / where we now it call Gloucestre. ¶ This Claudiꝰ had thꝛe wyues. And on Petiua ŷ fyꝛst wyf he gate a doughter ŷ hyght Antonia. The fyꝛst wyfe decessed / ⁊ he wedded Messalinã / ⁊ gate a sone ŷ hyght Bꝛitanicus / ⁊ Octauia a doughter. The thyꝛde he wedded Agrippina hauynge a sone ŷ hyght Nero. Claudiꝰ wedded his doughter Octauia to Nero his wyues sone. This claudiꝰ foꝛ loue that he had to Agrippina his laste wyfe / he slewe Messalina his fyꝛst wyfe lest she sholde haue holpe Bꝛitanicus her sone ⁊ his to the empyꝛe. Yet Agrippina ŷ laste wyfe of Claudiꝰ drad lest her husbonde wolde haue pꝛoferred Bꝛitanicꝰ / ⁊ haue deposed Nero her sone / therfoꝛe she poysoned her husbande Claudiꝰ / ⁊ Nero was pꝛomoted to thẽpyꝛe. And this same Nero gaue his moder suche a rewarde agayne. Foꝛ he poysoned Bꝛytanicus ⁊ slewe his owne moder and his wyfe Octauia. ¶ James the moꝛe the apostle this tyme was slayne of Herode Agrippa / ⁊ Peter was pꝛysoned (vt pȝ actu. xii.) The body of saynt James was bꝛought by myꝛacle in Galecians of Spayne. ¶ Nero after Claudius was Emperour / ⁊ he regned xiiii. yere. and. vii. monethes. This Nero was a cursed mã ⁊ made grete wast in ŷ empyꝛe. He wold not fysshe but wᵗ nettes of golde ⁊ ropes of sylke. A grete parte of the loꝛdes of Rome he slewe. He was enmy to no men but to good men. He slewe his bꝛoder ⁊ his wyfe his moder ⁊ his mayster. He slewe also Peter ⁊ Poule / he wolde neuer were one cloth two tymes. All his hoꝛs ⁊ mules were shod wᵗ syluer / and at the last he dyde set a grete parte of Rome on fyꝛe / some say ŷ Romayns complayned ŷ stretes were to narow. And as he had bꝛente a grete parte of Rome. Nero sayd there is space to buylde ŷ stretes wyder. Then the Senatours wiᵗ ŷ comyn people came vpon hym to slee hym and he fled by nyght in to ŷ subarbes of ŷ cyte ⁊ hyd hym / ⁊ he herde karles ⁊ beggers sayenge. And they wyst where ŷ emperour were he sholde neuer scape them. Nero thought it sholde be grete derogacion to his name ⁊ he were slayne of karles. And on a grete stake he ran hymselfe to ŷ herte ⁊ dyed / ⁊ there was buryed. ⁊ ŷ deuylles kept his body many a day after ⁊ dyd grete hurte to ŷ people / tyll by a myracle of our loꝛde ŷ body was founde ⁊ taken awaye / ⁊ then the deuylles voyded. ¶ Seneca was this tyme mayster to Nero. ¶ Juuenalis poeta. ¶ Lucanus poeta. ¶ James ŷ lesse ŷ apostle byshop of Iherusalem was slayne of ŷ Jewes the .vi. yere of Nero. Marcus ŷ euangelyste was martred the fyꝛst yere of hym.

¶ Circa annũ xpi. lxxiiii.

LInus ytalicus was pope of Rome. x. yere ⁊. iii. monethes ⁊. xiii. days. This Linus ⁊ his successour Cletus thꝛugh theyꝛ holy conuersacion were made to mynystre ŷ tresour of the chyrche to ŷ people Peter beynge a lyue. And

Peter attended to prayenge ⁊ prechynge ¶ It is redde of this Cletus ẏ he wrote fyrſt in his letters (Salutē ⁊ aplicā bñdictionē. Afore this tyme was many a diſcyple of Peter ſlayne vnder nero. ¶ Galba this tyme was Emperour / and he reygned .vii. monethes. This man was made Emperour by ẏ power of Spayne in the ſame londe nero lyuynge. And after the deth of Nero brought to Rome / ⁊ there was ſlayne of a man ẏ came wͭ where to rome. He ſmote of his heed ⁊ bare it to hym ẏ was emperour nexte ſeyenge all his men / ⁊ none of them helpynge hym. ¶ In this mannes dayes came the grete Rethoricyen to rome from Spayne / and was ẏ fyrſt ẏ euer taught ẏ ſcyence openly / his name was Quintilian. ¶ Otho regned after hym / ⁊ he reygned but .iii. monethes. For one Vitellus ẏ was Preſydent of Fraūce chalenged ẏ Empyre / ⁊ in Italye betwyxte theſe two were .iii. grete batayles / ⁊ in the .iiii. batayle Otho ſawe he ſholde be ouercome ⁊ in grete diſpeyre he ſlewe hymſelfe. ¶ Vitellus regned after Otho .viii. monethes / for he was folower of Nero mooſt ſpecyall in glotony / ⁊ in ſyngynge of foule ſonges / and at feeſtes etynge out of meſure ẏ he myght not kepe it. ¶ Veſpaſianus regned nexte after hym .ix. yere ⁊ .x. monethes ⁊ .xii. dayes. ¶ The well gouerned men of Rome ſeynge the curſed ſucceſſyon of Nero ſente after this Veſpaſyan vnto Paleſtyn. For there he was and his ſone Titus whiche had beſyeged Iheruſalem. ¶ And he herde ẏ Nero was deed / by whome he was ſente to Iheruſalem / ⁊ herde of theſe curſed men regnynge. At ẏ inſtaunce of theſe men / not wyllyngly toke vpō hym the empyre. And anone as he was come to rome he ouercame ẏ tyraunt Vitellus ⁊ lete hym be drawen through Rome / ⁊ after in to Tybre tyll he was deed / ⁊ then lete hym fayle wͭout ſepulture / for this ẏ people deſyred. This man was cured of waſpes in his noſe whan he byleued in oure lorde Iheſu. And ẏ was ẏ cauſe why he wente to Iheruſalem to venge Cryſtes deth. He fought .xxxii. tymes wͭ his ennemyes. And he dyed ẏ yere of grace .lxxix.

¶ Anno dñi .lxxxiiii.

CLetus a martyr was pope .xi. yere This Cletus was a Romayn / and gretly he loued pylgrymages to ſayntes ſayenge it was more profyte to ẏ helth of mannes ſoule to viſyte ẏ place that ſaynt Peter was in / than for to faſt two yere. He curſed all tho men lettynge ſuche pylgrymages / or conſeylers contrary therto At ẏ laſt was martred by Domician themperour. Titus ſone to Veſpaſianus was Emperour this tyme ⁊ regned tiye yere. And he abode ſtylle at Iheruſalem after the eleccyon of his fader and deſtroyed ẏ cyte. And ſlewe there as the ſtorye ſayth with batayle ⁊ hungre .xi. hondred thouſande Iewes. And a hondred thouſande he toke ⁊ ſolde .xxx. for a peny. Bycauſe they ſolde our lorde Iheſu Cryſt for .xxx. pens / and brought thens all thynge that was precyous / and put them in his hous at Rome / whiche was called Templū pacis / But now is that place fall downe for the mooſt party / and all theſe grete Iewelles ben dyſtrybuted to certayne chyrches in Rome. ¶ This Titus was ſoo full of vertue that all men loued hym ſo ferforth / that they called hym the mooſt delectable of men. And alſo he was full lyberall to all men / in ſoo moche that he ſayde often tymes / that there ſholde noo man goo from an Emperour with an heuy herte / but he ſholde haue ſomwhat of his petycyon. He wolde be ſory that daye in the whiche he hadde graunted no man no benefyte. ¶ Whā ẏ he was deed euery man ẏ was in Rome wepte for hym / as ẏ they hadde loſt theyr fader. ¶ Domician broder to Titus regned after hym.xxiiii. yere ⁊.v.monethes. Fyrſt he was eaſy / ⁊ afterwarde full vnreſonable. For moche of ẏ Senate was deſtroyed by his malyce / ⁊ alſo moche of his kynrede. He began ẏ ſeconde perſecucion after Nero ayenſt cryſten men / in ẏ whiche perſecucyon Iohan ẏ euangelyſt was exiled in to Pathi⁹ after thēperour had put hȳ in to a tonne of oyle brennynge ⁊ hurte hym not. So this man was not ẏ folower of his fader Veſpaſian / ne his brod̄ Tit⁹ / but rather lyke Nero ⁊ his kynrede. ⁊ for theſe wycked cōdicyons he was ſlayne in his owne palays at Rome in ẏ.xvii. yere of his age ¶ Clemens a martyr was pope.ix.yere. and he ſucceded Cletus. This Clemens fyrſte of ſaynt Peter was ordeyned to be ſucceſſour to hȳ. And for peryl he wold ẏ Linus ⁊ Cletus ſholde be popes afore hȳ leſte ẏ through ẏ enſample prelates ſholde ordeyne vnder them who ſome euer they wolde. This man made ẏ lyfe of martyrs to be wrytē by regyons. And he made many bokes. He ordeyned ẏ a chylde ſhold be confermed as ſoone as it myght / namely after it was cryſtened. And at ẏ laſte he was martyred vnder Traian. ¶ Nerua was Emperour after Domician one yere ⁊ two monethes. And whā he was choſen he meued ẏ Senate to make a lawe that thȳge whiche Domician cōmaūded to be kepte ſholde be broken. By ẏ whiche meane ſaynt Iohan ẏ euangelyſt was loſed oute of his exyle / and ſuffred to come agayne to Epheſe. This man dyde an other thynge ryght cōmendable ẏ he aſſygned ſoo wyſe a man as Traian was to gouerne the people after hym. ¶ Nota Traian⁹ Hiſpanic⁹ was Emperour.xix. yere. This Traian⁹ many men ſayd he was ẏ beſt amonge all ẏ emperours / but in one thynge alone he was vicyous. In ſo moch as he for ẏ loue of ẏ falſe goddes was about to deſtroye ẏ cryſten fayth. Iugynge in hymſelfe ſo mooſt to pleaſe god Some men ſaye not by hymſelfe / but by other he purſewed ẏ cryſten fayth / ⁊ in ẏ ende of his lyfe he dyde but fewe to deth And all his louynge I ſet at nought. But at ſaynt Gregory meued wͭ pyte wepynge / ⁊ prayed vnto oure lorde for hym ẏ he wolde haue mercy vpon hȳ / ⁊ by his prayer haue hym out of hell / in to ẏ whiche place he was dampned. And now yf ẏ he be ſaued or not a grete altercacōn is amonge doctours And to vs that wryte Cronycles it is no parte of our charge to determyn. But all ẏ eeſt parte of ẏ worlde. Babylon / Selencia / ẏ vtter partes of ẏ ynde. Germayne the ſeconde after Alexander he helde vnder. In all theſe thynges ſo pyteous ⁊ ſo mekely he guyded hym to euery man as a kynge. He was gentyl to no man vngentyll / ẏ whiche is red of fewe / All his days he lyued / that men ſayd he was ẏ mooſt worthy man in al his empyre. And thought and ſayd euermore / ẏ noo man was more vnworthy to be Emperour than he.

¶ Anno dn̄i.C.iiij.

ANacletus a martyr was pope.ix yere. And he was a Greke. He monyſſhed all cryſtē mē / ẏ preeſtes ſholde be worſhypped aboue al other men. Sayenge / that preeſtes doynge ſacrifyce to god ſholde be borne out / and not vexed but be worſhypped. And whan preeſtes ſayde maſſe they ſholde haue wytneſſe wͭ them and namely byſſhops. Alſo he decreed ẏ clerkes ſholde were noo berdes nor longe heere. Alſo ẏ a byſſhop ſholde be conſecrated of thre / ⁊ diuerſe other thynges. At ẏ laſt ẏ .xii. yere of Traianus he was martred/⁊ buryed by ẏ body of ſaynt Peter. ¶Plinius ẏ ſeconde Oratour ⁊ philoſopher wrote many thynges. This mā meued Traian⁹ ẏ he ſholde withdrawe the ſentēce gyuen ayenſt cryſten folke wrytē to hym that they ſholde do no yll but take hede to the vertue/but ẏ they ſholde ryſe afore daye ⁊ worſhyp theyr god ſecretely in ẏ nyght. ¶Euariſt⁹ a Greke ⁊ a martyr was pope .x. yere ⁊ .vii. monethes after Anaclet⁹. This man ordeyned ẏ man ⁊ womā ſholde be wedded openly/⁊ that they ſholde be bleſſyd openly of ẏ preeſt ⁊ fader ⁊ moder. And he was martred ẏ .iii. yere of Adrian ⁊ buryed by ſaynt Peter. ¶Alexāder a Romayn was pope .viii. yere ⁊ .v. monethes. This alexāder ẏ mooſt parte of ẏ Senatoures he conuerted vnto our lorde. And he ordeyned ẏ holy water ſholde be ſprynkled in to cryſten mennes houſes. And he ordeyned ẏ the brede that preeſtes vſe to ſynge wᵗ ſholde be made of pure ⁊ clene brede/⁊ that in a lytell quātyte. At ẏ laſt he was martred vnder Adryan ẏ was ẏ Emperoure. And many of them he cōuerted to the fayth. ¶Sixtus a Romayn was pope .x. yere ⁊ .iii. monethes. This man ordeyned (Sanctus Sanct⁹ Sanct⁹ .⁊c.) ſholde be ſayd in ẏ maſſe. And ẏ the holy thynges of ẏ chyrche ſhold not be touched but of mynyſtres of ẏ chyrche. Alſo that ẏ corporas ſholde not be made of ſylke/but of pure lynnen clothe wouen ⁊ not deyed/⁊ ẏ a woman ſholde not touche the holy veſſell of ẏ awter/ne the palle. Alſo he ordeyned that yf ony byſſhop were vacāt that no byſſhop ſholde be receyued in to his benefyce/but with ẏ popes letters. Alſo ẏ no maſſe ſholde be ſayd but vpon an awter/⁊ at ẏ laſt he was martred. ¶Adrianus was Emperoure .xxi. yere. This Adrian in many thynges is cōmended to cryſtē men/other whyle he was gracyous ⁊ certeyne of thē that wolde not do ſacrifyce to ẏ falſe goddes he ſlewe. He was an vnyuerſall man almooſt in all ſcyēce. Peas he had all his dayes/but wᵗ ẏ Jewes ⁊ many a lawe he made. And then he commaūded ẏ cryſten men ſholde not be dampned to deth but with due proceſſe. Jheruſalem he ſubdued agayne/⁊ forbadde ẏ no Jewe ſholde dwell therin by no wyſe. Cryſten men he ſuffred there to dwell. Agaynſt his wyll he came to the Empyre/but he gouerned hym very well whan ẏ Senatoures prayed hym to call his ſone Emperour after hym. He ſayd/it is not ynough to me that agaynſt my wyll I haue reygned whiche I haue not deſerued. For ẏ Emperoure of Rome ſholde go by ſucceſſyon of blood but to ſuche men as haue deſerued it thorugh theyr meryttes. Many tymes he regned vnuertuouſly that is a kynge borne and vertue ſholde come before his kyngdom. ¶Euſtachi⁹ other whyle called placidus ⁊ Theoſpita his wyfe/and two of theyr ſones/of whome merueyllous thynges ben red/were martred by ẏ cōmaundement of Adrian. This placidus was mayſter of ẏ Emperours knyghtes. Jheruſalem was reſtored by Adrian ⁊ made larger/ſo that ẏ place where Cryſt dyed was wᵗin the walles/ẏ whiche was without before. And this is ẏ thyrde buyldynge agayne of that cyte/for it was thryes deſtroyed. Of the Caldees in tyme of Zedechee/of Anthiochus in tyme of Machabeoꝝ/and of Titus in the tyme of Veſpaſian.

¶Anno dñi. C.xliiii.

Theleſphorus a Romayne was pope .xi. yere. This man ordeyned this aungelles ympne to be ſonge in the maſſe (Gloria in excelſis deo .⁊c.) and the goſpell to be redde afore ẏ ſacrynge / ⁊ on Cryſtmaſſe daye thre maſſes to be ſonge And he ordeyned there ſholde noo maſſe be ſonge before .iii. of ẏ clocke / ⁊ at ẏ laſte he was martred ⁊ buryed at ſaynt Peters ¶ Iginus a Greke was Pope .iiii. yere. This man ordeyned ẏ a chylde ſholde haue a godfader ⁊ a godmoder at ẏ tyme of baptyſynge / ⁊ alſo one at ẏ confyrmacyon. Alſo ẏ no Archebyſſhop / excepte ẏ pope ſholde condempne his ſuffrygan / but yf the cauſe were ſhewed in ẏ prouyncyall coūſeyl of byſſhops. Thē he was martred and buryed at ſaynt Peters. ¶ Antoniꝰ Pius was Emperour .xxii. yere wᵗ his ſones Aurelio and Lucio. This man was myghtely wyſe ⁊ naturelly fayre of ſpeche the whiche lyghtly in one man is not foūde. Nota. ¶ Excedynge men in wyſdom comynly are not fayre ſpeched / nor peaſfull namely of nature / ne contraryous.

¶ Excedynge men in fayre ſpeche comynly are leſſe thā wyſe. This man was meued wᵗ bothe theſe ꝓpryetees. Therfore many kyngdoms ẏ whiche receded from all other Emperours / wylfully to this man torned agayne. And to cryſten men was none ſo gentyll. He ſayd though the enſample of Cipio. I had leuer kepe one heer of a man thā ſlee an hondred of myn enmyes. And ſome martyrs were made vnder hym / but they were made vnder ẏ cōmaundemēt of thēperours afore. And the cryſten people were ſo hateful vnto ẏ byſſhops ⁊ to ẏ preeſtes of ẏ Temple of the falſe goddes / ẏ they ꝑſuaded ẏ prynces alway agaynſt them. For they ſuppoſed ẏ the cryſten fayth ſholde deſtroye thē Therfore it was no merueyle all though the prynce was vnpleaſed / for they ſayde all theyr goddes were deuylles yf lower Iuges purſued criſtē folke ⁊ martred thē This tyme .x. M. martyrs were crucyfyed in armenia in an hye hyll called Arach

¶ Pompeius trogus iſto tp̄e hiſtorias a nino vſq; ad octauianum deduxit.

¶ Anno dn̄i. C. liiij.

PIus ytalicus was pope .xi. yere ⁊ iiii. monethes ⁊ .xv. days. This pius ordeyned the feeſt of Eſter euermore ſholde be halowed on ẏ ſonday. And alſo an heretyke comynge from ẏ ſecte of Jewes ſholde be receyued ⁊ baptyſed. Then he was martred and buryed in ſaynt Peters. ¶ Aniceꝰ was pope after Pius almooſt .x. yere / this man made decrees of the Canon ⁊ for byſſhoppes (vt in ca. violatores. ⁊c.) ¶ Galienus a leche goten in Pergano was in grete fame at Rome / ẏ whiche not alonly expowned ẏ bokes of ypocras / but he put many of them to his bokes. And of this man is ſayd for his diſcrete abſtynence the whiche he vſed he lyued an hondred ⁊ .xl. yeres. He neuer ete nor dranke his fyll. ¶ Nota abſtinentiā. He neuer toke rawe fruytes alway he had a ſwete brethe. He dyed al onely through aege ⁊ no ſykeneſſe. ¶ Marcus Anthoniꝰ the true / ⁊ Luciꝰ Comodus were Emperours .xix. yere. Theſe toke ẏ Empyre after Anthony ẏ meke / ⁊ then began .ii. Emperours to reygne / but Luciꝰ Comodus deceſſed / ⁊ Anthony was Emperour alone / the whiche was a victorious man ⁊ a noble / but ẏ he made ẏ fourth perſecucyon to kylle Cryſten men. This Marcus was of ſo grete ſadneſſe ⁊ ſtedfaſtneſſe / ẏ for no chaūce he lough neuer ne chaūged no chere / nother for gladneſſe ne for ſorowe / ⁊ whan he was a childe he was of ſuche manhode / ẏ on a certayn tyme whan he loked his treſoure / ⁊ had not ẏ whiche he myght gyue his knyghtes ⁊ his men / whan he wente to fyght ayenſt the Germayns / ẏ Sclauons and Sarmacus he wolde hurte ne greue noo body / but hav louer to ſell his wyues golden veſſell and her arayment/her beddynge/⁊ all her royall ſtuffe/thā take tayre of ÿ Senatours ⁊ of his prouynce vnder hym. But he gate ÿ victory of his enmyes ⁊ recouered al agayne/⁊ releaſed ÿ prouynces of theyr tributes. And thoſe ÿ wolde ſell hym his wyues treſoure agayne/he reſtored theyr money/⁊ thoſe ÿ wolde not/he neuer greued them. But the tables of theyr dettes betwyxt hym ⁊ them he brente openly in the market place ⁊ thanked them ÿ they helped hym in his neceſſyte.

¶ How kynge Lucie regned after his fader/that was a good mā/and after he became Cryſten.

After this kynge Coill regned Lucie his ſone/whiche was a good man to god and to all the people. He ſent to Rome to Eulentre that then was pope and ſayd. He wolde become a cryſtē man and receyue baptym in the name of god and torne to the ryght fayth ⁊ byleue. Eulentre ſent two legates ÿ were called Pagan/an other Elybain in to this lande ⁊ baptyſed the kynge ⁊ all his meyne. And after went from towne to towne and baptyſed ÿ people tyll all the lande was baptyſed. And this was in ÿ yere an hondred lvi. after ÿ incarnacyon of our lorde Jheſu cryſt. And this kynge Lucie made tho in this lande two Archebyſſhoppes/one at Caunterbury/an other at Yorke/and other many byſſhops that yet ben in this lande. And whan theſe two Legates had baptyſed this lande/they ordeyned preeſtes for to baptyſe chyldern/⁊ for to make the ſacramente/and after they wente agayne to Rome. And the kynge dwelled in his lande/and regned with moche honoure .xii. yere/and after deyed and lyeth at Gloucetre.

¶ How this lande was longe without a kynge/⁊ how the Brytons choſe a kynge.

This kynge Lucie had none heyre of his body begoten ÿ was afterwarde grete harme ⁊ ſorowe to ÿ lande. For after this kynge Lucies deth none of the grete lordes of ÿ lande wolde ſuffre an other to be kynge/but lyued in warre ⁊ debate amonge themſelfe .l. yere without kynge. But it befell afterwarde ÿ a grete prynce came frō Rome in this lande that was called Seuerus not for to warre/but for to ſaue ÿ ryght of Rome. But neuertheleſſe he had not dwelled halfe a yere in this lande but ÿ ÿ Brytons ſlewe hȳ. And whā they of Rome wyſt ÿ Seuerus ſo was ſlayne/they ſent an other grete lorde in to this lande ÿ was called Allec that was a ſtronge man ⁊ a myghty of body ⁊ dwelled in this lande longe tyme ⁊ dyd moche ſorowe to ÿ Brytons. So ÿ after for pure malyce they choſe a kynge amonge thē that was called Aſclepades. And aſſembled a grete hoſte of Brytons/⁊ went to London to ſeke Allec/⁊ there they foūde hym ⁊ al his felowes. And one ÿ was called Walon defended hȳ ſtyffly/⁊ foughte long wt ÿ Brytons/but at laſt he was diſcomfyted/⁊ the Brytons toke hȳ ⁊ boūde his handes ⁊ feet ⁊ caſt hȳ in to a water. Wherfore ÿ water was called for euermore walbroke. ¶ Tho regned Aſclepades in peas/tyl one of his Erles ÿ was called Coill made a fayre towne agaynſt ÿ kynges wyl/⁊ lete call ÿ towne Colcheſtre after his name. Wherfore ÿ kynge was full wroth ⁊ thought to diſtroye hȳ/⁊ begā to warre vpō hȳ ⁊ broughte grete power of men ⁊ gaue ÿ Erle batayl. And ÿ Erle defended hym ſtyfly with his power/and ſlewe the kynge hymſelfe in that batayle And than was Coill crowned and made kynge of this lande. This Coyl reygned woꝛthely ⁊ was wel beloued of yͤ Bꝛutõs ¶ Whan they of Rome herde yͤ Aſclepades was ſlayne/they were gladde ⁊ ſent another grete pꝛynce of yͤ Romayns called Conſtance. And he demaũded of king Coyl yͤ trybute of Rome/whiche he graũted hym gladly. So they accoꝛded yͤ king Coyl gaue to hym his doughter to ſpouſe Eleyne fayꝛe ⁊ goode/⁊ well lettred/⁊ dwelled togyder in loue. And it befel ſone after yͭ this kynge Coyll deyed in yͤ .xiii. yere of his reygne/⁊ lyeth at Colcheſtre.

¶ Howe Conſtance a Romayne that had ſpouſed Eleyne kynge Coyls doughter/was made kynge after the dethe of kyng Coyl.

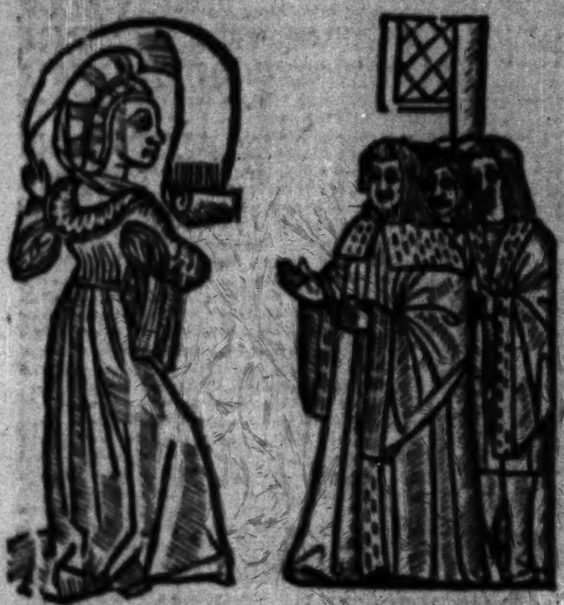
COnſtance was made kynge/after this Coyl/and crowned/foꝛ bicauſe he had ſpouſed kynge Coyls doughter that was heyꝛe of the lande. The whiche Conſtance regned well and woꝛthely gouerned the lande. And he begate on hys wyfe Eleyne a ſone yͭ was called Conſtantyne. And this kyng bare true fayth/and truly dyd to them of Rome all his lyfe. And whan he had regned .xv. yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at Yoꝛke.

¶ How Conſtantyne yͭ was kynge Conſtance ſone/⁊ the ſone of ſaynt Eleyne gouerned and ruled yͤ lande/and was Emperour of Rome.

COnſtantyne regned after the deth of his fader Conſtance/ſaynt Elynes ſone yͭ founde yͤ holy croſſe. ¶ It befel ſoo in yͤ tyme there was an Emperour at Rome yͭ was a ſarraſyn ⁊ a tyꝛaũt yͭ was called Maxence/whiche put to dethe al yͭ byleued in god/⁊ dyſtroyed holy chirche/by al his power. And amonge al other he lete martyꝛ ſaynt Katheryne. And many other cryſten people that had dꝛede of dethe fled ⁊ came in to this lande to kynge Conſtantyne/⁊ tolde hym of yͤ ſoꝛowe yͭ Maxence dyd to yͤ cryſtente/wherfoꝛe cõſtantyne had pyte ⁊ made grete ſoꝛow ⁊ aſſembled a grete hooſt ⁊ a grete power/And went ouer vnto Rome/⁊ there toke the cyte ⁊ ſlewe al that was therin of myſbyleue. And then was he made Emperour/and was a good man and gouerned hym ſo well/that all landes were to hym attendaũt foꝛ to be vnder his gouernaũce. ¶ And this deuyll ⁊ tyꝛaũt Maxence yͭ tyme was in the lande of Grece/⁊ herd theſe tydȳges/⁊ ſodaynly became wood ⁊ deyed all ſodaynly. ¶ Whan Conſtantyne went from this lande to Rome/he toke with hym his moder Eleyne/foꝛ her grete pꝛudence/⁊ thꝛe other grete loꝛdes that he mooſt loued/yͤ one was called Howell/an other Taberne/⁊ the thyꝛd Moꝛhyn. And toke all his lande to kepe to the Erle of Coꝛnewayle that was called Octauyan. And ſo anone as this Octauyan wyſt that his loꝛde dwelled at Rome/incõtynent he ceaſed al yͤ lande in to his hand And therwith dyde all his wyll amonge hye ⁊ lowe/and they helde hym foꝛ kynge ¶ Whan theſe tydynges came to Conſtãtyne the Emperour/he was wonder wꝛothe towarde yͤ erle Octauyan. And ſente Taberne with .xii. M. men agaynſt hym And they arryued at Poꝛteſmouth. Whã Octauian wyſt yͭ he aſſembled a grete power of Bꝛytons ⁊ diſcomfyted hym. And Taberne fled in to Scotland ⁊ oꝛdeyned there a grete power/⁊ came agayne in to this lande another tyme foꝛ to gyue bataylle to Octauyan that was Erle of Coꝛnewayle/and newly had made hym king ¶ Whan that this ſame Octauyan herde that/he aſſembled a grete power ⁊ came towarde Taberne as moche as he might.

ſo that theſe two hooſtes met togyder on Stanesmore/ ⁊ ſtrongly ſmote togyder/ ⁊ the was Octauyan diſcomfyted/ ⁊ fled in to Norway. And Taberne ceſſed all ẏ lande in his hande. But Octauyan came agayne from Norway wᵗ a grete power/ ⁊ drove out the Romayns/ ⁊ then was he made kynge of this lande.

¶ How the barons coūſaylled Octauyās doughter to ſende to themperour/ ⁊ how he ſent his coſyn for to wedde her/ ⁊ was made kynge.



THis Octauyan gouerned ẏ lande nobly/ but he had none heyre ſaf a fayre yonge doughter whiche he loued hertly. And bycauſe he was ſore ſeke he wold haue made one of his neuewes kynge/ a noble knyght called Conan Meriodok/ whiche ſhold haue maryed ẏ kȳges doughter out at her aerge. But ẏ lordes wolde not ſuffre it/ but gaue her coūſayl to be maryed to ſome hygh man of grete honour/ ⁊ then might ſhe haue al her luſt ⁊ the coūſayll of her lorde Conſtantyne ẏ Emperour. And at this coūſayll they accorded/ ⁊ choſe Cador of Cornewayle for to go to the Emperour on this meſſage. And he toke the way ⁊ wente to Rome/ ⁊ tolde the Emperour this tydynges well and worthely. And the Emperour ſent in to this lande with hym his owne coſyn a noble knyght that was called Maximian And he ſpouſed Octauyans doughter/ ⁊ was crowned kynge of this lande.

¶ Howe Maxymyan after he was made kynge of this lande/ he conquered ẏ land of Armoricā/ ⁊ gaue it to Conan Meriodok.

THis kynge Maximian became ſo ryall that he thought to conquere the lande of Armoricam for the grete rycheſſe ẏ he herde tell ẏ was in ẏ lande/ ſo that he ne left man of worthynes/ knyght ſquyre/ nor none other man that he ne toke with hym/ to the grete domage of all ẏ lande. For he lefte at home behynde hym no man to kepe ẏ lande. For he had with hym .xxx. M. knyghtes of good mennes bodyes. And he wente ouer to the lande of Armoricam and there ſlewe the kynge that was called Imball/ and conquered all the lande. And whan he had ſo done/ he called Conan and ſayd. For as moche as ẏ kynge Octauyan wolde haue made you kynge of Brytayne/ and through me ye were let and dyſtroubled. I gyue you this lande of Armoricam/ and you make kynge therof. And for as moche as ye be of the grete Brytayne borne I wyll that this lande haue the ſame name/ and that it be no more called Armoricam/ but be called lytell Brytayne. And the lande frō whens we be comen out of nowe ſhall be called moche Brytayne. And in that maner of wyſe ſhal men knowe that one brytayne fro that other. Conan Meriodok thanked hym gretely/ ⁊ ſoo was he made kynge of lytell Brytayne. And whan all all this was done Maximian went from thens vnto Rome/ ⁊ was made Emperour after Conſtantine. And Conan dwelled ſtyll in lytell Brytayne wͭ moche honour/ ⁊ there lete ordeyne.ii.M. plowmē of the lande for to culture the lande ⁊ harow ⁊ ſowe it/ ⁊ feffed them rychely after ẏ they were. And for as moche as kynge Conan nor none of his knyghtes nor peple wolde take wyues of ẏ nacōn of fraũce/ he ſente in to grete Brytayne to ẏ erle of Cornewayle ẏ men called Dyonothe ẏ he ſhold cheſe through out al this land xi.M. of maydens That is to ſay.viii.M for the meane people/ ⁊.iii.M. for the gretteſt lordes ẏ ſholde thē ſpouſe And whan Dyonoth vnderſtode this/ he made a cōmaundement throughoute all ẏ lande of Brytayne. And as many as ẏ nombre came to he aſſembled togyder of maydens/ for there was no man ẏ durſt withſtand hym/ bycauſe he was protectour. ¶ And whā theſe maydens were aſſembled/ he lete them come afore hym at London/ ⁊ lete ordeyne ſhyppes for them haſtely/ wͭ all ẏ therto belonged. And toke his owne doughter that was called Urſula/ which was the fayreſt creature ẏ ony man wyſt And he wolde haue ſente her to kyng Conan that ſhold haue ſpouſed her ⁊ made her quene of ẏ lande. But ſhe had made pryuely to god a vowe of chaſtyte ẏ her fader not wyſt/ nor none other man a lyue.

¶ How Urſula and.xi.M. vyrgyns that were in her company wente towarde lytell Brytayne/ ⁊ all they were martred at Coleyne.

This Urſula choſe vnto her company.xi.M. vyrgyns ẏ of all ſhe was lady and mayſtreſſe. And all they yede to ſhip at one tyme in the water called Tamyſe/ and cōmaunded her frendes to almyghty god/ and ſayled towarde lytel Brytayne. But whan they were come in to the hye ſee a ſtronge tempeſte aroſe as it was goddes wyl/ and Urſula with her ſhyppes and her company were dryuen to Hundlande thrugh tempeſt/ and arryued in the hauen of the cyte of Coleyne. ⁊ the kynge of that lande that was named Gowan was tho in the cyte. And whan he wyſt the tydynges that ſo many fayre vyrgyns were there arryued. He toke Elga his broder and other of his houſholde with hym and wente to the ſhyppes to ſe that fayre company. And whan he ſawe them ſo fayre/ he and his company wold haue ouerlayne them and take fro theym theyr maydenhede. But Urſula ẏ goode vyrgyn/ coūſayled/ prayed/ warned/ and taught thē that were her felawes ẏ they ſholde defende them with al theyr might and rather ſuffre dethe than ſuffre theyr bodyes to be defoyled. So ẏ all tho vyrgyns became ſo ſtedfaſt in god that they defended them thrugh his grace/ ſo that none of them had power to do them ſhame Wherfore the kynge Gowan was ſore anoyed that he for wrathe ſlewe them eueryſchone anone ryght. And ſo were al tho vyrgyns martred for the loue of god/ and lyeth at Coleyne.

¶ How kyng Gowan came for to dyſtroy this lande/ ⁊ how a man of greate power that was called Gracyan defended thys lande manfully.

SO as all this was done kyng Gowan the whiche was a Sarrazyn called his broder Elga and ſayd vnto hȳ that he ſholde go and conquere the lande that all thoſe fayꝛe maydens were boꝛne in. And he oꝛdeyned tho a grete power of Pehites of Denmarke/ of Oꝛkeney/ ⁊ of Noꝛway. And they came in to this lande ⁊ brente townes ⁊ ſlewe folke/ ⁊ caſt downe chirches ⁊ houſes/ ⁊ robbed all yͤ lande in length ⁊ brede/ ⁊ put to dethe all tho yͭ wolde not foꝛſake the ryght beleue ⁊ cryſtendome/ foꝛ as moche as there was noo ſouerayne yͭ myght theym helpe For the kynge Maxymian had take with hym al the woꝛthy men whan he went to conquere lytel Bꝛytayne. And in that ſame tyme was ſaynt Albon martred thurgh yͤ wode tyraūt Dyocleſyan/ in the ſame place where is now an abbay made of ſaynt Albon whyles yͭ he was a paynym. But he conuerted hym to god thurgh the prechacion of a clerke ⁊ a wyſe man yͭ was called Ancyble that was herberged a nyght in his houſe. And this was after thyncarnacyon of Jheſu cryſt. ii. C. ⁊. xxvi. yere. And men ſhall vnderſtande yͭ ſaynt Albō ſuffred his martyꝛdome befoꝛe ſaynt Edmonde. And therfoꝛe is ſaynt Albon called the fyꝛſt martyꝛ of Englonde ¶ This Gowans broder ⁊ his folke yͭ were Sarraſyns went thurgh yͤ lande ⁊ dyſtroyed all thynge that they founde ⁊ nothynge they ſpared. whan theſe tydynges came to Rome how that kynge Gowan had begon foꝛ to dyſtroy this lande/ the Emperour of rome ſent a ſtrong man ⁊ of grete power yͭ was called Gracyan with. xxiiii. M. well fyghtynge men/ foꝛ to caſt oute thoſe ſarraſyns out of this lande. And al they arryued at Poꝛteſmouth. ¶ Maximian myght not come hymſelfe/ bycauſe he was choſen Emperour after the dethe of Conſtantyne yͭ was ſaynt Elenys ſone whan this Gracyan was arryued wͭ hys hooſt/ he lete aſpye pryuely where kynge Gowan myght be founde. And he ſet vpon them ſodaynly as they lay in theyꝛ beds/ ⁊ dyſcomfyted hym ⁊ ſlewe them in their beddes euerychone/ yͭ none of thē ſcaped. ſaue Gowan yͭ fledde in to his owne countre wͭ grete ſoꝛowe. ¶ Sone after it befell that Maximian was ſlayne at Rome through treaſon. And whan Gracyan wiſt that tydynges/ he lete crowne hymſelfe kynge of this lande.

¶ How Gracyan made hȳ kynge whan Maxymyan was ſlayne/ ⁊ afterwarde yͤ Bꝛytons ſlewe hȳ foꝛ his wyckednes.

THis Gracyan whan he began to reygne/ he became ſo wycked ⁊ ſo ſterne/ doynge ſuche ſoꝛowe to yͤ Bꝛytōs yͭ they ſlewe hym among them. ¶ Then whan kynge Gowan vnderſtode yͭ Gracyan was ſlayne/ he aſſembled a greate power ⁊ came agayne in to this lande/ ⁊ yf he had fyꝛſt done harme/ tho did he mo the moꝛe. Foꝛ he dyſtroyed all this lande of Bꝛytayne/ ⁊ the cryſten people/ ſo that no man was ſo hardy to name god/ and yf they dyde they were put to ſtraūge dethe. ¶ But the byſſhop of London yͭ was tho/ named Goſſelyn ſcaped/ ⁊ went thēs to them of Rome to ſeke ſocoure to helpe to dyſtroye the ſarraſyns that had dyſtroyed this lande. And the Romayns ſayd yͭ they had ben ſo often enoyed foꝛ theyꝛ ſendynge people in to Bꝛytayne/ al foꝛ to helpe the Bꝛytons/ and they wolde no moꝛe ſo do. And ſo the byſſhop Goſſelyn wente thens without ony ſocoure oꝛ helpe. And tho wente he to the kynge of lytell Bꝛytayne that was called Aldꝛoy/ ⁊ this was the thyꝛde kynge after Gowan Meryodok/ as befoꝛe is ſayd. ¶ The byſſhoppe prayed this Aldroye of helpe and ſocoure and the kynge had pyte in his hert whan he herde how the byſſhop ſpake/ ⁊ howe that the cryſten men were ſoo ſlayne in yͤ grete Bꝛytayne thurgh the paynyms/ ⁊

ſarrazyns / he graūted hym Conſtantyn his broder hym for to helpe with power/ of folk. And then dyd aray hors/harneis ⁊ ſhyppes/⁊ all thynges ẏ neded to ẏ vyage. And whan all thynge was redy/he called the biſſhop ⁊ to hym ſaid I take you here Conſtantyn my broder vpon this couenaunt ẏ yf god gyue hym grace to dyſtroy ẏ infydeles/ye ſhall make hym king And the byſſhop graunted wᵗ good wyll. ¶ Conſtantyn ⁊ the byſſhop toke leue of the kynge Aldroy/⁊ toke .xii. M. men and went to theyr ſhyppes/⁊ ſayled towarde grete Brytayn/ and arryued at Totnes. Whan the Brytons herd theſe tydynges ẏ ſocour was come/they were glad/and ordeyned them an huge nombre of peple. And came ⁊ receyued them wᵗ moche honour. ¶ Gowan anone as he wyſt of theſe tydynges/he aſſembled all the ſarazyns ⁊ came ayenſt them/⁊ gaue them batayl And Conſtantyn ſlewe hym wᵗ his owne handes. And all the other ſarazyns were dyſcomfyted and ſlayne euerychone / except thoſe that were conuerted to god.

¶ How Conſtantyn that was the kynges broder of lytell Brytayne / was crowned kynge of grete Brytayne / for his vertue and worthyneſſe.

ANone after the batayll they went to London ⁊ crowned there Conſtantyne kynge of this lande. And ẏ byſſhop ſet ẏ crowne on his heed ⁊ anoynted hym/as it belongeth for a king. And then began cryſtendome in this lande agayne And anone this kynge Conſtantyn as he was crowned/he ſpouſed his wyf thrugh counſayll of the Brytons. And he begate thre ſones on her. The fyrſt was called Conſtance/and that other Aurilambros/ and the thyrde Vter. This conſtance the elder broder whan he came to age/he made hym a monke at Wyncheſtre. And conſtantyne theyr fader was ſlayne by treaſon. ¶ For it befel on a tyme that a Pehite came to hym vpon a day in a meſſage as it were. And ſayd that he wolde ſpeke with the kynge pryuely in counſayl. The kynge lete voyde his chambre of the men that were there within/⁊ there abode no mo but the kynge and ẏ Pehyte. And he made countenaunce as though he wolde haue ſpoken with the kynge in his eere. And there he ſlewe hym with a longe knyfe. And after that he went merueylouſly out of ẏ chambre in to an other chambre ſo at the laſt no man wyſt where he was become. Whan ẏ kynges men wyſt that theyr lorde was ſoo deed/they made then ſo moche ſorowe that they wyſt not what to do. For as moche as his two ſones Aurilambros and Vter were ſo yonge that they myght not be kynge/and the thyrd was a monke as it is ſayd before. But one Vortiger Erle of weſtſex thought preuely in his hert thrugh quayntaūce for to be kynge hymſelf. And went to Wyncheſtre wher that Conſtance was monk and ſayd vnto hym. Conſtance your fader is deed/and your two bredren that are with Goſſelyn the biſſhop of London to nouryſſhe be ſo yonge/that none of thē may be kynge/wherfore I counſayl you that ye forſake your habyte and come wᵗ me. And I ſhall make ſuche a meane vnto the Brytons/ that ye ſhall be crowned kynge of this lande.

¶ Of Conſtance that was kynge Conſtantynes ſone / whiche was a monke at Wyncheſtre/and how he was made kȳg after his faders dethe through counſayll of Vortiger the whiche was Erle of weſtſex / for as moche as Aurilambros / and Vter his two bretherne were but yonge

of aege. And Vortiger let ſlee hym for to be kynge hymſelfe.

This Vortiger counſeyled this Conſtance ſoo moche / tyll he forſoke his abbot & wente with hym. And anone after he was crowned kynge by thaſſent of the Brytons. This kynge Conſtance whan he was crowned & made kynge / he wyſt ne knewe but lytell of the worlde / ne coude no thynge what knyghthode ared. And he made Vortiger his chefe mayſter and counſeylor / & gaue hym all his power for to ordeyne & do as moche as to ÿ realme apperteyned. So ÿ hymſelfe no thynge entremedled / but onely bare the name of kynge. Whan Vortiger ſawe that he had all the londe in his warde & gouernal / he thought a preuy treaſon to ſlee Cōſtance the kynge / that he myght hȳſelfe be crowned & made kynge & reygne. And let ſende after an hondred knyghtes of Pehites / ÿ worthyeſt of al the londe / & them helde with hym for to dwell / as to be kepers of his body / as he wolde go through the londe to ordeyne thynges ÿ apperteyned to a kynge. And this Vortiger honoured ſo moche ÿ hondred knyghtes & ſo moche gaue them of golde & ſyluer / & ſo ryche Jewelles / robes / horſes / & other thinges plente / wherfore they helde hym more lorde than they dyde the kyng. And Vortiger tolde them yf he might be kyng / ye as it were through treaſon / he wolde make them rycheſt of ÿ londe. So at the laſt through grete gyftes that he hadde gyuen largely / they cryed through ÿ courte that Vortiger were better worthy to be kynge than Conſtance. Wherfore Vortiger made ſemblaunt as he had ben wroth. And he departed thens from the courte / & ſayd he muſt goo elles where for thynges ÿ he had to do. And ſo the traytours ſayd bycauſe ÿ they ſholde ſlee ÿ kynge Conſtance. Whan this Vortiger was gone / it befell ſoone after / that the hondred knyghtes of Pehites brake the dores of ÿ kynges chābre & there they hym ſlewe / & ſmote of his hede & bare it to Vortiger there as he dwelled / & ſo whan Vortiger ſawe ÿ hede / he wepte full tenderly with his eyen / and neuertheleſſe he was ſomdele glad in his herte of his deth. ¶ And anone this Vortiger toke thoſe hondred knyghtes of Pehites / & had his ſeruauntes bynde theyr hondes behynde them / & ladde them to London / and there they were iuged vnto deth as fals traytours. And anone after al the Brytons of the londe by the comyn aſſent crowned Vortyger & made hym kynge of ÿ londe.

¶ Anno dñi.C.lxxiiii.

Sother a martyr was pope after Anicetus .ix. yere ÿ whiche decreed that a Nōne ſholde not touche ÿ palle of the auter / ne put in ſence therto. And ÿ ſhe ſholde were a wymple aboute her hede. And many perylles he ſawe about matrymony. Therfore he ordeyned ÿ no woman ſholde be called a lefull wyfe / but yf ſhe were bleſſyd of the preeſt. ¶ Eleutherus a martyr was pope after Sother .xv. yere / the whiche ordeyned ÿ cryſten folke ſholde refuſe noo mete reaſonable ÿ was mannes mete. (Nota.) ¶ Alſo that no man vnaccuſed in a cryme ſholde be put from his dygnyte or degree tyll he were conuycted / through enſample of Cryſt the whiche kepte ſtyll Judas Scarioth not accuſed / & Cryſt knewe hym gylty. And whan ſomwhat he dyd amonge ÿ apoſtles for the dygnyte of his ſeruyce abode ſecure ſtable. This pope ſent Legates vnto Lucie kynge of Brytayne / the whiche baptyſed hym and his people. And Faganus & Damianus legates that ÿ pope ſent preched in Englonde. And thus Cryſtendome receyued in Brytayne two hondred yere vnto ẏ tyme of Diocleſian ẏ Emperoure whan ſaynt Albon was martred. ¶ Marc⁹ Anthoni⁹/ & Luci⁹ Comodus were Emperoures/but Marc⁹ deyed anone/ & Luci⁹ Comodus reygned. Comod⁹ was called prouffytable of ſcorne/for he was to euery man vnprofytable. He was gyuen vtterly to lechery. Many Senatoures & cryſten men he made to be ſlayne he dampned his owne wyfe to dethe for aege. He dyed a ſodeyne deth wᵗ ſtrouglẏge amonge maydens. ¶ Heli⁹ Pertinax after this man was Emperoure. vi. monethes/ & was a man of grete diſcrecyon/ whome Julian ẏ grete lawer ſlewe. And he entred ẏ Empyre/ & was ſlayne the. vij moneth of Seuerus. ¶ Victor a martyr was pope after Eleutheriū. x. yere. And for ẏ diſcorde of ẏ paſchall tyme he called a counſeil in Alexander/ where he was preſent ẏ tyme & many other. Where he decreed ẏ Eſter day ſholde be kepte on the Sondaye/but he muſt kepe ẏ chaūge of the moone of Apryll & ẏ was to dyſcerne fro Jewes/for many byſſhops of the eeſt abode that tyme/ẏ ſame day ẏ ẏ Jewes dyd halowe ẏ feeſt. ¶ Alſo he ordeyned ẏ in ẏ tyme of nede/chyldern myght be cryſtened in euery place/ & in euery water.

¶ Zepherinus a martyr & a Romayn was pope after Victor. ix. yere. This man ordeyned that cryſten people of. xii. yere of age and aboue ſholde receyue his god on Eſter daye ones one yere. Alſo he ordeyned that all ẏ veſſels of ẏ aulter ſholde be glaſſe or tynne/ & not tree/as in olde tyme the conſecracion of ẏ glorious blood was made in tree veſſell. And this tyme paſte/ and ẏ worſhyp of ẏ chyrche grewe & glaſen veſſell were forboden. ut ps de cōſe. de. ii. ca.) ¶ Origenes ẏ noble clerke was this tyme/ that wrote ſo moche that ſaynt Jerom ſayd I haue red of Origenes werkes. vi. M. volumes without pyſtles. He tranſlated the Byble from Hebrewe in to Greke/ & dyd many other grete thynges. And of this Origenes/Sampſon/Salomon/ & Traian is a grete queſtyon amonge doctours yf that they ben dampned or ſaued. Therfore thoſe thynges ẏ wout peryll we be not boūde to knowe nor ẏ chyrche is not certefyed of them/ & therfore lete them be all onely cōmytted vnto god.

¶ Caliſtus a martyr & a Romayn was pope after Zepherin⁹. v. yere/ & he ordeyned the Cimiteri (in via apia) where many a thouſande martyrs is buryed. ¶ Alſo he ordeyned ẏ feeſt of Emerynge days to be kepte. ¶ Anthoni⁹ Aurelius was Emperour. iii. yere. And this mā lacked no kynde of lechery/and at ẏ laſte he was ſlayne amonge a grete multytude of people for his myſcheuous lyuynge. ¶ Anthonius Marc⁹ reygned after hȳ. iiij. yere. This man lyued obſtynatly/ & therfore he was ſlayne as was his predeceſſour. ¶ Alſander was Emperour after Anthoni⁹ & reygned. xiii. yere. This man at ẏ Inſtaūce of his moder a cryſten womā & ẏ techȳge of Origenes/ ẏ whiche came to Rome to cōuerte her was made ſo good vnto cryſten men ẏ he ſuffred them to haue theyr counſayles & theyr prayers by themſelfe/ but neuertheles in this tyme ẏ curſed offycers of hym made many martyrs.

¶ Anno dn̄i. CC. xliiij.

Urban⁹ was pope after Caliſtus. viij. yere/ & olde & yonge he was very vertuous. And al ẏ halowed veſſels of the chyrche he made of golde or ſyluer. This man lefte his popehede & wente to Agrippa/ & xi. thouſande vyrgyns wᵗ hȳ. And ẏ clergye ſayd he left not his dignyte for holyneſſe/but for appetyte of thoſe vyrgyns/ & wrote hym not in the boke of popes. And there he was martred & bis gyn ẘ thoſe virgyns. ¶ Poncianꝰ a martyr ſucceded Urbanꝰ. And he ordeyned ẏ pſalmes ſholde be ſayd daye ⁊ nyght in ẏ chyrche of god/ ⁊ ẏ a preeſt ſholde ſay Cõfiteor afore ẏ maſſe. ¶ Anteros a martyr was pope after this man/ this mã ordeyned ẏ a byſſhop myght be remeued from one to an other/ ⁊ he made ẏ lyfe of martyrs to be wryte. And he was ſlayne ⁊ buryed in ẏ Cimitery of ſaĩt Calixt. ¶ Maximianus was choſen emperour at Maguncia of ẏ hoſte/ ⁊ not by ẏ Senatours ⁊ reygned thre yere ⁊ deſtroyed ẏ chirche myghtely/ and was ſlayne for Origene. ¶ Gordian regned after hym. vi. yere/ ⁊ of hym is lytell wryten/ but he was ſlayne (Hijs diebus Celus dux Colceſtrie in aſclepio regnat in Britãnia annis quaſi. xxx. vſq₃ ad aduentũ Cõſtancij. Latiꝰ vacat.) ¶ Phylyp was emperour after hym/ ⁊ he choſe to hẏ Phylyp his ſone/ ⁊ they reygned. xvii. yere/ ⁊ were ẏ fyrſt emperours ẏ were cryſtened/ ⁊ after ſlayne of the hoſte. They bequethed all theyr treſoure in theyr deth ẏ it ſholde be diſpoſed to poore men. And ſaynt Laurence at the aſſygnacion of his mayſter ẏ pope departed this treſour about Rome/ the whiche was grete cauſe of his martyrdom (vt ẽdem dicitur) ¶ Deciꝰ was emperour thre yere/ ⁊ in all thynges a tyraũt. For he entred thẽpyre whã he ⁊ ẏ hoſte had ſlayne the two Phylyppes his lordes ⁊ after ẏ he was ſlayne ẘ his ſone. ¶ Fabianꝰ a martyr ⁊ a romayne was pope after Anteros xii. yere. This was a very holy man. For whan cryſten men ſtode to abyde ẏ electyon of ẏ pope ſodeynly a whyte doue or a culuour deſcended on his heed/ ſayenge to hym/ thou ſhalte be pope of Rome. This man ordeyned euery yere ẏ Creme ſholde be halowed vpõ ſhyrethurſdaye. Alſo he deuyded regyons to deacons/ ẏ whiche ſholde wryte the lyfe of martyrs. And at the laſt Deciꝰ ſlewe hẏ. ¶ Corneliꝰ a martyr romayne was pope after Fabianꝰ. ii. yere. This man toke vp ẏ bodyes of Peter ⁊ Poul/ ⁊ ẘ grete honour put them in worſhypfull places ẘ dã Lucina. ¶ Lucius was pope after Corneliꝰ. iii. yere/ ⁊ of hym lytell is wryten. ¶ Gallus ẘ his ſone Voluſianus were emperours. ii. yere/ ⁊ they fought with Emilianꝰ/ ⁊ were ſlayne. And Emilianꝰ the thyrde moneth was ſlayne. ¶ Valerian was emperour ẘ his ſone Galyene. xv. yere. This was a vertuous ⁊ manly in ẏ begynnynge but after was gyuẽ to vyce ⁊ moch wretchedneſſe/ and ſo was his ſone Galiene. This Valerian wente vnto ẏ londe of Perſe/ ⁊ there for ẏ blood ſheddyng of martyrs he was taken of the kynge of Perſe. And whan he had taken hym he put out bothe his eyen ⁊ kepte hym in grete bondage/ ⁊ to this entente he kepte hym ẏ whan ſoo euer he ſholde ryde/ this Valerian ſholde lye downe/ ⁊ he ſholde ſet his feet vpõ his backe whã he wolde take his horſe. This herde Galyene his ſone ẏ was left at Rome. And ẏ cauſed hẏ that he was not ſo cruel agaynſt Cryſten men. ¶ And here was the. viii. perſecucyon of the chyrche made by ẏ Emperour. And made the Romayns to leſe theyr kyngdomes/ the whiche were neuer recouered agayne to the Emperour. And general peſtylence was thorugh out all ẏ world for theyr treſpaſſe ¶ Stephanus a martyr after Luciꝰ was pope. iii. yere/ this man ordeyned that no mã ſholde vſe none halowed clothes/ but to ẏ worſhyp of god. ¶ Sixtus a martyr and a Romayne was pope after Stephanus two yere. This man ordeyned that ẏ maſſe ſholde be ſayde vpon an aulter the whiche afore was not/ and than he dyed. ¶ Dioniſiꝰ a Romayne was pope after Stephanꝰ two yere. This man deuyded paryſſhes ⁊ chircheyardes/ and aſſygned to chirches certen preeſtes. ¶ Felix a martyr was pope after Dyoniſius two yere. He ordeyned that for the memorye of martyrs maſſes ſholde be ſayd. Alſo he ordeyned the Dedycacyon of the chirche euery yere ſholde be ſayd. ¶ Claudius was emperoure after Valerian/ this Emperoure ſubdued Gothas nobly/ & the dyſceſſed.

¶ Anno dñi. CC.lxxiiii.

Euticianus a martyr was pope after Felix. viii. yere. This man ordeyned yͭ corne & benes ſholde be bleſſed on yͤ awters. And he buryed. iii. C. & .xlii. martyrs wᵗ his owne handes. ¶ Aureliꝰ was Emperoure after Claudius. v. yere. This Aurelius fyrſt to cryſten men was gentyll/ wherfore he had yͤ victory in euery place glorioully. And whan he was deceyued by curſed men/ & purſewed cryſtē men myghtly/ and namely in Fraūce/ for there he abode/ & after that he had neuer good fortune. But was ſlayne. And this was yͤ .x. perſecucyon of yͤ cryſten fayth. ¶ Tacitus was emperour after this mā and he reygned but. iii. monethes/ & was ſlayne in Ponto. ¶ Probus was Emperour after hym. v. yere. & .iiii. monethes. This man recouered Fraūce agayn/ the whiche was occupyed wᵗ Barbaryk men And he gaue them & Pannonias lycence to haue vyne yerdes. And whā he had almooſt all thynges well in peas he ſayde. knyghtes in a lytell tyme ſhall not be neceſſary/ & anone after he was ſlayne at Sirmiū. ¶ Carꝰ & his two ſones Carinꝰ and Numerianꝰ were Emperours after Probus/ but ſoone they dyed/ & theyr fader was lyghtned/ & yͤ two ſones were ſlayne All theſe regned but two yere. ¶ Dyocleſyan & Maximian came after theſe. iii. emperours/ the one regned in the Eeſt/ & yͤ other regned in yͤ Weſt. The fyrſt thynge that Dyocleſyan dyde/ he brente all yͤ cryſten mennes bokes yͭ myght be foūde The two tyraūtes dyde more harme to cryſten men thā euer dyde ony other. For .x. yere laſted the perſecucyon. And as we rede/ wᵗin .xxx. days .x. M. men were ſlayne for Cryſtes ſake. And in Englande all fayth was almooſt deſtroyed in the tyme of Maximian. ¶ Gaius was pope after Euticianꝰ/ this man ordeyned yͭ no man ſholde accuſe a byſſhop or an other clerke to ony ſeculer Juge. And that a pagon or an herytyke ſholde not accuſe a Cryſten man. Alſo he ordeyned that he that was worthy ſholde aſcēde gree by gree to his ordre/ fyrſt benet/ than colet/ ſubdeacon/ deacon/ & than preeſt. And at the laſte he was martred vnder Dyocleſian. ¶ Marcellinꝰ martyr was pope after Gaius .xi. yere/ & .iiii. monethes. This man was perſecuted ſore/ for drede of deth he offred .iii. cornes of encenſe to yͤ ſacryfyce of yͤ ydolles. And after warde he openly repented and ſuffred yͤ payne of deth for yͤ fayth of the chyrche. His body laye vnburyed .iii. dayes for drede of yͤ curſe of god. And after thrugh auyſyon of ſaȳt Peter & Marcell/ he was buryed at ſaynt Peters fote. ¶ Marcellus was pope after Marcellinus .v. yere. This man ordeyned yͭ a generall counſayle myght not be ordeyned wᵗout yͤ auctoryte of yͤ pope (vt ptz. xvii. di. c. ſinodū) ¶ Alſo he choſe .xv. Cardynalles in yͤ cyte to burye cryſten men. At the laſt whan he had kepte beeſtes longe tyme in a houſe cloſed in wᵗ them by yͤ cōmaundement of Maximian he deyed for faute. ¶ Euſebiꝰ a martyr was after this man two monethes and certayne dayes. This man of a laye man was made pope and he ordeyned that no laye man ſholde accuſe his byſſhoppe/ but yf he wente fro his fayth (vt ptz. ii. q. vii. c. laicos.

¶ Nota. This tyme ſaȳt albon was mar

tred in Brytayne. ❡This Albon whan he was a pagan he lodged a certayn man / ẏ whiche conuerted hym to ẏ fayth ⁊ after was Juged vnto deth. And moche people he torned vnto our lorde ẏ were nygh the water ẏ whiche he made drye thrugh his prayer. And he suffred dethe nyghe the cyte of Verolom / (vide plura in vita sancti albani) ❡Melchiades a martyr succeded Eusebi⁹ .iiii. yere. This man forbode ẏ men sholde fast on Monday or on thursdaye in so moche as paganes fast on these dayes. At ẏ laste he was martred as all his predecessours were. ❡And vnderstāde ye that there were .xxxiii. popes of Rome martred eche one after other. Peter was ẏ fyrst / ⁊ this melchiades was ẏ last And than it was laudable after Gregory a man to desyre a bysshopryche. ❡Galerius was emperour after Dyoclesian .ii. yere / ⁊ an other w̄ hym called Constancius. So was ẏ empyre in those days diuyded. This Constancius after he had conquered all Spayne / he came in to grete Brytayne and there he wedded a kynges doughter on whome he gate grete Constantyne. And this same Constancius deyed in Brytayne / and lyeth at Yorke / as Martyne sayth in his Cronycles / ⁊ lefte on lyue Constantyne that was goten on Eleyne / and was a kynge of Brytayne ⁊ of Fraunce.

❡Anno dñi. CCC. viii.

SIluester was pope after Melchiades. This was a gloryous confessour / ⁊ many wayes he worshypped the chyrche of god / what in wrytynge what in myracles. He receyued ẏ patrimony of saynt Peter / ẏ is for to saye / ẏ kyngdome of Ytalye w̄ ẏ cyte of Rome / of Constantynople ẏ emperour / ⁊ all worshyp of ẏ holy vniuersall chyrche of god he ioyned it. He baptysed Eleyne ⁊ ẏ Jewes / ⁊ then he decessed an holy cōfessour. ❡Constantyne ẏ myghty was Emperoure this tyme. This Constantyne was a gloryous man ⁊ a victoryous in batayle. In gouernynge of ẏ comyn people he was very wyse / ⁊ in ẏ necessyte of ẏ byleue he was without comparyson deuoute. His pyte his holynesse ben so wrytten in ẏ bokes of holy doctours ẏ without doubte he is to be nōbred amonge sayntes. And ẏ Grekes say / ẏ in the ende of this lyfe he was made a monke. And more ye may here of hym in the cronycles of Englonde. For he was kynge in Englond. ❡Helena ẏ quene moder to Constantyne repayred agayne the holy Crosse this tyme. ⁊ she made .xx. Colleges / and she gloryfyed ẏ state of all holy chyrche. ❡Nicholas bysshop of Myrrecere an holy mā was this tyme. ❡Athanasius was this tyme bysshoppe in Alexandre a glorious doctour ⁊ made ẏ (Symbolum Quicumque vult saluus esse. ⁊c.) ❡Marcus was pope after Syluester .ii. yere ⁊ .viii. monethes. This man ordeyned the Crede sholde be openly songe in the chyrche. And that ẏ bysshoppe of Hostience sholde consecrate ẏ pope ⁊ that he sholde were a palle. ❡Julius was pope after Marcus .xi. yere / this man was exiled .x. yere / and after suffred dethe vnder Constantyne the seconde. ❡Constantin⁹ with his two bretherne regned .xxiiii. yere And in his last ende he was peruerted by ẏ heresy of ẏ Ariens by a bysshop called Eusebi. And he pursued ẏ chyrche of god strongely. The ende of this mā was this As he sholde go to Constantynople vnto a grete counsayl / in the whiche counsayl he thought to haue condempned the bysshoppe and the clerkes of true byleue / he wente before vnto a chambre to auoyde suche thynges as nature requyred ⁊ anone sodeynly his bowelles fell from hym /

and therby dyed as ye now here. ¶ Liberius was pope after Juliꝰ. xix. yere ⁊ .vi. monethes. Then was yͤ ſeconde diſcorde of yͤ chyrche bytwene Liberꝰ ⁊ Felix for the hereſye of yͤ Ariens yͤ whiche fauoured Liberius. Then Conſtanciꝰ themperour called agayn Liberꝰ from his exile bycauſe he fauoured this hereſye. And yͤ chyrche deuoced Liberius / ⁊ toke Felix for pope / ⁊ yͤ other was expulſed as an heretyke of yͤ chyrche. But Felix obteyned not for themperour put in Liberius ⁊ expulſed Felix. ¶ Felix was pope after yͤ deth of this Liberꝰ. And he declared Conſtancius themperour an heretyke / ⁊ anone after he was martred. ¶ And here was yͤ fyrſt that euer yͤ chyrche of Rome had an Infamed pope. For al yͤ predeceſſours of this Liberꝰ were ſayntes ⁊ gaue holy enſamples. ¶ Julianꝰ apoſtata was after Conſtancius Emperour two yere ⁊ .viii. monethes. He was called apoſtata / for he fled this Conſtanciꝰ whiche ſlewe his brother. And for fere of deth was made a cryſten man ⁊ a monke. But afterwarde by the counſayle of Nygromancers he asked the deuyl whether he ſholde be emperour or not. The deuyl ſayd yͭ he ſholde be emperour vpon a condicyon that he ſholde forſake his cryſtē fayth ⁊ be better enmye to cryſten men. And ſo he dyd. For he gaue leue to yͤ Jewes that they ſholde buylde agayne yͤ Temple in ſpyte of yͤ cryſten men. And toke all yͤ goodes yͭ cryſtē men had ⁊ deſtroyed many of them. ¶ Jouinianꝰ was emperour after hym .viii. monethes. For whan Julianus was deed yͤ hoſte choſe hym Emperour. And he was a cryſten man. And he ſayd it was not lefull to a cryſten man to be lorde ouer ſoo many hethē people. They anſwered and ſayd. Rather than he ſholde forſake yͤ Empyre they wolde be cryſtened. And thus toke he yͤ dignite. But ſoone he dyed ⁊ in a meruaylous maner. For he was layde in a cloſe houſe after his Journey made all of ſtone / newly whyted wͭ lyme / in the whiche they made to his cōforte as they thought a fyre of charcole. And of yͤ ayre of theſe two in yͤ morowe he was founde deed. ¶ Ualentinian wͭ his broder Ualēt was Emperour after Jouinianus .xi. yere. For he departed yͤ empyre / ⁊ gaue his broder the eeſt / ⁊ kepte hymſelfe the weſt parte. This Ualentinian was a lorde wͭ Julianꝰ apoſtata. And it happed hym on a tyme for to go in a Temple of falſe goddes for to do ſacrifyce / ⁊ mynyſtres ſtode there wͭ water halowed after yͤ gyſe wͭ yͤ whiche they ſtrynkled the lordes. This Ualentinian ſmote yͤ mynyſter yͭ caſt the water vpō hym ⁊ ſayd. He was rather defoyled by it than clenſed. For this Julianus dyd exile hym. But our lorde god for his open cōfeſſyon of his name rewarded hym with yͤ Empyre. His broder Ualent fell in to the opynyon of the Ariens / and dyed in that hereſye. This ſame Ualent lyued foure yere after Ualentinian with Gracian themperoure. ¶ This tyme lyued ſaynt Ambroſe.

¶ Anno dn̄i. CCC. xliiij.

DAmacius was pope after Felix. .xviii. yere ⁊ two monethes / this was an eloquente man in metre. And he wrote many ſtoryes of popes ⁊ martyrs. He ordeyned that Gloria patri ſholde be ſayd in yͤ endes of yͤ pſalmes / ⁊ that was at yͤ prayer of ſaynt Jerom. And thrugh the mocyon of this pope Jerom tranſlated yͤ Byble from Hebrewe in to Latyn / ⁊ then he deceſſed a confeſſour. ¶ Ualent with Gracian ⁊ Ualentinian were Emperours foure yere. In this tyme were chyrches opened agayne / and cryſtē men had leue to renewe yͤ ſeruyce of god that was defended afore wᵗ Emperours enfected wᵗ hereſye as was Walens and other wherfore ẏ chyrche had no lyberte whan Walens was on lyue. ¶ A Synodus of a hondred ⁊ .l. byſſhops were gadred vnder Damaſꝰ pope at Conſtantinople ayenſt Macedoniū an heretyke ẏ whiche denyed ẏ holy ghoſt to be very god. And than was the Crede made / ẏ is ſonge on holy dayes in ẏ chyrche. ¶ Auguſtinꝰ a Cartagineſi of Affrica was this tyme. He was as noble a Rethoricien as myght be. And in all phyloſophy ⁊ poetry incomparable And all thyng ẏ ony phyloſopher founde in his yougth he vnderſtode wᵗ lytell labour. And about this tyme he was ſente to Mediolanū where he was tourned anone of ſaynt Ambroſe and baptyſed. This mā grewe vnto a noble doctour of ẏ chyrche. And not longe after that / he was byſſhop of Yponeſi / ⁊ there lyued .iiii. yere / ⁊ moche dyuynyte he wrote (vt pȝ in libris ſuis) ¶ Siriciꝰ was pope after Damaſius .xv. yere / he dampned heretykes / ⁊ lytell elles is wryten of hym. ¶ Theodoſiꝰ ſone to Gracian wᵗ Walentyne his vncle were Emperours .xxvii. yere. This man was a cryſten man ⁊ gracyous / ⁊ in gouernaūce lyke to Traianꝰ / ⁊ ſoone wroth ⁊ anone reconſyled. This man on a daye whan he wolde haue gone to haue herde maſſe / ſaynt Ambroſe forbad hȳ ẏ entre of ẏ chyrche / tyll he had done penaūce ⁊ made ſatyſfaccyon for the ſleynge of .xxx. knyghtes the whiche he ſlewe in angre at Conſtantynople. Wherfore they made a lawe that ẏ ſentēce of a prynce ſholde be deferred .xxx. days of thoſe that ſholde do execucyon yt they myght falle in ẏ grace of ẏ prynce within ẏ .xxx. dayes. ¶ About this tyme was a chylde borne in ẏ caſtell of Emaus frō ẏ nauyll ⁊ aboue deuyded in two bodyes / hauynge two hedes ⁊ .ii. ſpyrites / ſo that ẏ one ſleppynge or etynge / ẏ other ſlept not ne ete not. And whā they were two yere of age the one deceſſyd ⁊ the other lyued thre dayes after. ¶ Claudius poeta was this tyme. ¶ Arcadius ⁊ Honoriꝰ reygned .xxx. yere. And in theyr tyme Rome was almooſt deſtroyed by a knyght called Alaricus. Of ẏ whiche deſtruccyon roſe a grete blaſphemye of the Romayns. For they ſayd they fared neuer well ſythen Cryſte came to Rome / ⁊ bereued them theyr goddes by ẏ prechynge of Peter ⁊ Poul. And yet this Archadiꝰ ſubdued all his enmyes by ẏ power of god ⁊ ſhed no blood. Ayenſt this blaſphemye ſaynt Auſtyn made ẏ ſolempne werke / ẏ whiche they call (de ciuitate dei) ¶ Honorius was Emperour wᵗ Theodoſius his broders ſone .xv. yere / ⁊ he was a man of holy lyfe. For two wyues he had / ⁊ yet wᵗ bothe he dyed mayden. He loued ſpecyally ẏ chyrche ⁊ hated heretykes. ¶ Jerom dyed this tyme at Bethleem ẏ yere of his age .lxxxi. ¶ [illegible] Heraclides ẏ whiche wrote Vitas patrū to Lauſū epiſcopū was this tyme. ¶ Johannes cryſoſtomꝰ was exiled of Eudoxia ẏ wyfe of Arcadius / ⁊ though here of ẏ ſonne he was dede. ¶ Anaſtaſius was pope after Siricius thre yere. This man ordeyned that euery man ſholde ſtande at the redynge of ẏ holy goſpell. And that he that was a maymed man ſholde not be preeſt. ¶ Innocecius was pope after Anaſtaſiꝰ / this man ordeyned that ſyke men ſholde be enoynted with holy oyle. And at maſſe ẏ kyſſe of peas to be gyuen. And he dāpned Pelagyen an heretyke / ⁊ many other thynges dyde (vt patet .xxvi. q. i.)

¶ Anno dñi. CCCC. xiiii.

After Innocencius Zozimus was pope two yere / ⁊ .viii. monethes. This man ordeyned that clerkes ſholde be noo tauerners nor sell noo wyne/ and ẏ a bondeman sholde be made no preest/ without ẏ lycence of his lorde. ¶ Bonifacius a Romayne was pope after zozimꝰ foure yere. This man ordeyned ẏ a womā sholde not touche the palle of the aulter/ ne sholde not wasshe the aulter. ¶ Celestinus a Romayne was pope after Bonyfacius. viii. yere & .ix. dayes/ ẏ whiche ordeyned the psalme afore masse (Iudica me deus. &c.) And at the begynnynge of the masse sholde be sayd a verse of a psalme/ & at the Grayle/ & that the offertorye sholde be sayd afore the sacrynge. ¶ This same man sent saynt Patryke to Irelande to conuerte ẏ lande. And Palladius deaken of Rome to the Scottes to be conuerted. ¶ And in the fourth yere of this man there was a generall Synody at Ephysina of .iii. C. bisshops ayenst Nestorium an heretyke. ¶ Theodosiꝰ the yonger wt Valentynyan his neuewe regned. xxvii. yere. In his tyme was the feest ordeyned whiche is called Aduincula sancti Petri. And in his tyme deyed saynt Iustyn/ in ẏ yere of his age .lxxvi. And this tyme was the .vii. slepers reysed/ the whiche slepte CC. yeres. This man deyed at Constantynople & ther was buryed. ¶ This tyme the Saxons entred Englonde/ & by lytel & by lytell grewe vp myghtely/ soo ẏ they occupyed all the lande. ¶ Syxtus a Romayne was pope after Celestinꝰ. viii. yere. This was a holy man & a meke. And lytell of hym is wryten/ but ẏ he buylded scā Maria maior. ¶ Leo Tuscus a confessour was pope after Syxtꝰ. This mā was as holy as ony man. Fyue tymes on a day or more he wolde say masse. And on a tyme after it befell whan a certayn woman kyssed his hande he was tempted wt her. And for the trespaas that he had done/ vnto penaunce he made his hande to be stryken of. And whan the noyse rose vpon hym that he myght not syng masse as he was wont to do/ then he was right sory. And all onely betoke hym in prayer to our lady to helpe him. And our lady restored hym his hande agayne/ & then he sayd masse as he was wonte to doo. And so that myracle was openly shewed to al people. And in ẏ tyme of this pope Marcian the Emperour beynge there/ was cōgregate at Calcedony ẏ .iiii. vnyuersall Synody of .vi. C. & .xxx. bysshops against Eusticem the abbot of Constantynople & (Alexandrum episcopū. qui negauerūt i xpo veram carnē fuisse. et etiam negabāt carnis nostre resurrectionem) ¶ And after he had made many notable sermons/ & epystles he decessed. ¶ Marcianus and Valentinianus were Emperours this tyme. vii. yere. In whose tyme was ẏ grete Synody afore rehersed/ whan Eusticez & Dyoscorus were condempned.

* * *

IN the tyme that Marcianus was Emperour Wortiger was kyng of Brytayn now called Englonde. In whose tyme the Saxons came in to Brytain and made many kynges. That is to wyt as is playne by the Cronycles. vii. And bycause it is tedyous to mannes reason/ to reherse many dyuers names togyder/ as .vii. kynges of Englonde/ & in one tyme/ the Emperours and popes. Therfor the Cronycles of Englonde shal be set togyder/ tyll that we shall treate of Alured. In whose tyme ẏ Danes came in to Englonde. And the popes & the Emperours and other kynges in the same tyme shall be set togyder.

* * *

¶ Circa annū dñi. CCCC. xlix.

¶ How the wardeyns that had those chyldren to kepe ẏ were kynge Constantynes ladde them to lytel Brytayne/ for the treason and falsenesse of Uortyger.

¶ Here begynneth.
the fyfth parte
Anglia to ỹ conqueste
of the Brutes.
Engyst.

This tyme came the Saxons that were Pagans fyrst in to Brytayne now called Englonde/ vnder Uortiger ỹ was crowned kynge of this lande. This tyme those ỹ had these two chyldre in kepynge the whiche were Constantynes sones. That is to saye Aurlambros & Uter through the good ordynaunce of one Goselyn ỹ was bysshop of London after the faders dethe/ that is to say Constantyne/ durst not dwelle in this lande with those chyldren/ but conuayed them vnto ỹ kynge of lytell Brytayne/ bycause he knewe ỹ treason of Uortiger/ ỹ had slayne Constance the elder broder through ỹ .C. Pyctes ỹ he waged/ & after put the to deth/ as though he were not culpable therof. And therfore ỹ kepers of those two chyldren/ dradde lest Uortiger sholde put theym to deth through treason. And therfore they were ledde in to lytel Brytayne/ & the kynge receyued them with moche honour/ & put them to nourysshe tyl they were fayr knyghtes & stronge. And thoughte ỹ they wolde be auenged on theyr broders deth whan they sawe theyr tyme/ & so they were as ye shall here tell afterwarde. ¶ It was not longe after that tydynges came ouer see to the kynge of the heathen kynges of Pyctes how they were put to dethe through Uortiger in this lande/ wherfore they were wonderly wroth/ & there they wolde be auenged on theyr kynnesmennes dethes. And came in to this lande with a grete power & robbed here in many places & kylled al the people ỹ they myght. Whan Uortiger it wyst/ he made moche sorowe/ and was sore anoyed. And in another place also tydynges came to hym that Aurelambros & Uter his broder assembled a grete hoost to come for to be auenged on hym for theyr brothers dethe Constance. And on the one syde & on the other he was brought in to so moche sorowe that he ne wyst whether to go.

¶ How Engyst and a leuen thousande of men came in to this lande/ to whom Uortyger gaue a place that is called Thonge castell.

AND soon after this tyme/ tydynges came to Uortiger that a grete nauy of straungers were aryued in ỹ countree of Kent. they wyst not whens ỹ they were/ ne wherfore they were come in to this lande.. ¶ The kynge sent anone a messenger to them that some of them sholde come and speke with hym/ for to vnderstande what folke they were/ & what they asked/ & in to what countree they wolde. There were two bretheren maysters & prynces of that straunge company/ the one was called Engyst. and that other Horsus. Engyst went to the kyng and tolde hym the cause wherfore they were comen into this lande and sayd. Syr we ben of a countree ỹ is called Saxonye/ that is the lande of Germanye/ wherin is so moche people that al the people ben so many there that the lande may not them ſuſteyne. And ẏ prynces ⁊ mayſters of the lande make to come before them men ⁊ women of ẏ boldeſt ẏ may beſt trauayll in to dyuers landes/ ⁊ gyueth them hors ⁊ harneys/ ⁊ all ẏ to them nedeth. And then they dyd them go in to another cōtree where they may lyue as theyr anceſtres dyd before them. And therfore ſyr kynge yf ye wyl haue our ſeruyce we wyll ayde you agaynſt youre enmyes. ¶ Whan Vortiger herde this he ſayd gladly he wolde wholde them vpon ſuche couenaūt ẏ yf they myght delyuer his lande of his enmyes/ he wolde gyue them reaſonable landes for to dwel in for euer. ¶ Engiſt thanked hym goodly. and in this maner he ⁊ his company a.xi.M were reteyned with kinge Vortiger. And at the laſt delyuered his reame of his enmyes clene. ¶ Then prayed Engyſt the kynge of ſo moche lande ẏ he myght make hym ⁊ his folke a cyte. The kynge anſwered/ it was not to doo wout the counſayl of ẏ Brytons. ¶ Engyſt prayed him agayne of as moche place as he myght cōpaſſe with a thonge of a ſkynne/ wheron he myght make a maner for hȳ to dwell in. And the kynge hym graunted frely. The Engiſt cut a bulles ſkynne very ſmal ⁊ in ẏ cōpaſſe of lande made Thonge caſtell

¶ How Vortiger was amourous of Ronowan Engiſtes doughter.

SO whan this caſtell was made/ it named Thongcaſtell/ ⁊ was well arayed. Engyſt pryuely dyd ſende by letter in to the countree where he came fro/ after an hondred ſhippes fylled with men that were ſtronge ⁊ alſo well fyghtynge/ in all batayles. And alſo that they ſholde brynge with them Ronowan his doughter/ that was the fayreſt creature that a man myght ſe. ¶ And whan thoſe people were come ẏ he had ſent for/ he toke them in to the caſtel honourably. And hymſelf vpon a day went vnto the kyng/ and prayed hym there worthely that he wolde come and ſe his newe manoyre that he had made in the place that he had compaſſed with ẏ thonge of ẏ ſkynne. The kynge anone graunted hym frely/ and with hym wente theder. And was wel apayed with the caſtell and with the fayre werke/ and togyder they ete ⁊ dranke wᵗ moche Joye And whan nyght came that kynge Vortyger ſholde go in to his chambre to take there his nyghtes reſte. Ronowan ẏ was Engiſtes doughter came with a cuppe of golde in her hande/ and kneled before the kynge and ſayd to hym (waſſayle) And ẏ kynge knewe not what it was for to meane/ nor what he ſholde anſwere there to. For as moche as hymſelf nor none of hys Brytons coude ſpeke nor vnderſtand none Englyſſhe/ for he ſpake in the ſame lāgage that Brytons do yet. Neuertheles a Latiner tolde it to the kynge the ful vnderſtandynge therof (waſſayle) and that other ſholde drynke (hayl) And that was the fyrſt tyme that (waſſayll) and (drynkhayll) came vp here in this lande of Brytayne. And from ẏ ſame tyme vnto thys tyme/ it is well vſed in this reame of Englonde. ¶ Whan that the kyng Vortiger behelde the excellent beaute of this Ronowan engiſtes doughter/ ẏ whiche kneled afore hȳ/ he toke her vp ⁊ his armes lay de about her necke / ꝛ thryes swetely kyssed her / ꝛ anone he was enamoured vpō her / so ẏ he desyred to haue her to wyfe / ꝛ asked her of Engyst her fader. And Engyst graunted hym vpon this couenaūt / ẏ the kynge sholde gyue hym all the coūtree of Kent / ẏ he ꝛ his people myght there dwell. The kynge hym graūted pryuely with a good wyll. And anone he spoused the damoysell / ꝛ that was moche confusyon to hymself. And therfore all ẏ Brytons became so wrothe for her myscreaūce ẏ they wente al from hym / ꝛ helped hȳ no wyse.

¶ How Vortimer that was Vortigers sone was made kyng / ꝛ Engyst dryuen out. And how Vortimer was poysoned.

THis Engist wente in to Kent and seased all the lande in to his hand for hym ꝛ for his men. And became within a lytell whyle of so grete power / ꝛ had so moche people ẏ men wyst not in lytell tyme whiche were ẏ kynges men ꝛ whiche were his / wherfore all the Brytons had of hym drede. And sayd amonges theym but yf we take coūsayll betwene vs all ẏ lande shall be dystroyed through Engyst ꝛ his people. Vortiger the kyng had begoten on his fyrst wyfe thre sones The fyrst was called Vortimer / ẏ .ii. Catagren / ꝛ ẏ .iii. passent. The Brytons by one assente / made Vortimer theyr souerayne lorde / ꝛ crowned hym kynge. And wolde not suffre Vortiger no lenger to regne / bycause of the alyaūce betwyxt Engist and hym. ¶ The Brytons ordeyned a grete hoost / for to dryue oute Engyst ꝛ his company of the lande. And gaue hym thre batayles The fyrst was in Kent there he was lond The seconde was at Eelforde. And ẏ .iii. was in a [illegible] on this syde Colchestre in a waye. And in this batayll met them Catagren ꝛ Hors Engystes brother. So the eche of them slewe other. But by the [illegible] che as the [illegible] was gyuen kynge Vortyme to [illegible] spoused his [illegible] / [illegible] a fayre castell that was [illegible] Castell. [illegible] tymer was so angry [illegible] the / that anone he lete cast downe the castell to the erthe. And after he lyued ne nyght [illegible] he had dryuen out Engyst and his folke of the lande. And than Rowan his [illegible] made [illegible] ough. And queyntly spake to theym that were nexte the kynge Vortimer / and pryuely with hym. And soo moche she gaue them gyftes / that he was enpoysoned ꝛ beryed at London the fourth yere of his regne / and there lyeth.

¶ How the Brytons chose an other tyme Vortiger to be theyr kynge / ꝛ Engyst came in to this lande / and how they fought togyder.

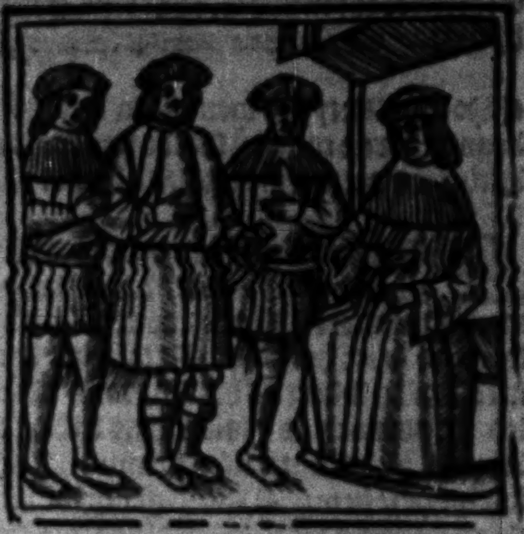
AFter Vortimers dethe / the Brytons by theyr comyn assent eftsones made Vortyger theyr kynge vpon this couenaunt / that he sholde neuer after suffre Engist nor none of his / eftsones to come in to this lande. ¶ And whan all this was done. Rowan the quene pryuely sent by lettre to Engist that she had enpoysoned Vortimer. And that Vortyger her lorde bare agayne ẏ crowne and regned. And that he sholde come agayn in to this lande well arayed with moche people for to auenge hym vpon the Brytons / and for to wynne this lande agayne by strength and prowes. ¶ Whan that Engist herde these tydynges / he made grete Joye. And appareyled hym hastely with .xv. thousand men ẏ were doughty in euery batayll / and came in to this lande. ¶ And whan Wortiger herde tell that Engyſt was come agayne with a grete power in to this lande/ he aſſembled hys Brytons/ & went to mete Engyſt. But Engyſt wetynge ỹ Brytons ſore prayed Wortyger of a loue day/ & to haue his lande agayne without fyghtyng yf he myght accorde wᵗ the brytons. The kyng Wortiger thrugh the coūſayll of ỹ Brytons graunted hym a loue daye. And it was ordeyned by the Brytons ỹ the loue day ſholde be holden beſyde Malpſbury on a hyll. And Engyſt ſholde come theder with .iiii. C. knyȝtes & no moo. And the kynge wᵗ as many of the wyſeſt of his lande. And at ỹ day ỹ kynge came with his coūſayll as it was ordeyned. But Engyſte had warned his knyghtes pryuely ỹ eche of theym ſholde put a longe knyfe in his hoſe/ & whan he ſaid ſyrs it is tyme to ſpeke of loue & peas Euery man anone ſholde drawe oute his knyfe & ſlee a Bryton. And ſoo they ſlewe CC.lxi. of knyghtes/ & with moche ſorowe many of them ſcaped. And ỹ kynge Wortiger hymſelf was taken & led to Thonge caſtell & put hym in pryſon. And ſome of Engyſtes men wolde ỹ the kynge had bē brente all quycke. And Wortiger then for to haue his lyfe graunted them as moche as they wolde axe. And gaue vp all ỹ lande/ townes/ caſtelles/ cytees/ & boroughes to Engyſt & his folke. And all ỹ Brytons fledde thens in to Wales/ & ther helde thē. And Engiſt went through the lande and ſeaſed it wᵗ franchyſes/ caſtynge downe churches & chapelles/ & dyſtroynge cryſtians euery where. And lete chaūge the name of this lande called Brytayn/ & made his folke call it Engiſt lande/ on payne of dethe. And then he departed ỹ lande/ and made .vii. kynges for to ſtrength ỹ lande that ỹ Brytons ſhold come no more therin. The fyrſt kyngdom was Kent/ where Engyſt hymſelf regned/ & was lord ouer al the other. The .ii. was Southſex/ that now is called Chicheſtre. The .iii. Weſtſex. The .iiii. Eſtſex. The .v. Eſtangyl ỹ now is called Northfolk. Suffolk. Merche merik/ ỹ is to ſay the londe of Mychol. The .vi. kyngdome was Leycetre ſhyre/ Northampton ſhyre. Herforde/ & Huntyngdon. The .vii. kyngdome was Oxenford. Glocestre. Wynchestre. Warwyk & Derby ſhyre.

¶ How ỹ Wortyger went in to Wales/ & began there a caſtell ỹ wolde not ſtande/ without morter tempred with blode.

SO whan Egiſt had departed all ỹ lande in this maner betwene hys men/ & delyuered Wortiger out of pryſon for to go wher he wolde. He toke his way in to Wales where as his Brytons dwelled/ for as moch as ỹ lande was ſtrong to wynne. And Engiſt neuer came ther nor knewe of it before. ¶ Wortiger helde him there with his Brytons/ & aſked coūſayll what hym was beſt to do. And they gaue hym coūſayll to make a ſtronge caſtell/ ỹ he myght kepe & defende hymſelfe therin yf nede were. Maſōs in haſt tho were ſet And began for to werke vpon the hylle of Breigh. But certes thus it befell that al the werk ỹ the Maſons made a day it fel downe ỹ nyght. And they wyſt not what it myght be. Therof the kynge was ſore anoyed of that myſchaūce/ and wyſte not what to do. Wherfore he lete ſende after ỹ wyſeſt clerkes/ & alſo lerned men ỹ were throughout wales that myght be founde for they ſholde tell wherfore the foundacyon ſo fayled vnder the werke. And that they ſholde hym tell what was beſt for to do. And whan theſe wyſe men longe tyme had ſtudyed they ſayd to the kynge/ ỹ he ſholde do ſeke a chylde borne of a woman that neuer had medlyng with man

And that chylde sholde be slayne / ꝛ tempre with his blode the morter of the werke. And so sholde the werke euer endure without ende.

¶ How ẏ kynge lete seke Merlyn thrughout all wales / for to speke with hym.



AS the kynge herde this / he commaunded his messengers anone to go thrughout Wales to seke ẏ chylde yf they myght fynde hym / and that they sholde brynge hym forth with them vnto hym. And in recorde and wytnesse of this the kynge had take them his lettres that they ne were dystroubled nor let of no body. And then the messengers went theyr ꝛ spedde so fast ẏ they came in to a towne ẏ was called Carmardyne. And as they passed forth theyr waye they founde two chyldren of .xiiii. yere of age chydyng togyder. And one of them sayd to that other Donebat sayd one ye be wronge to chyde with me / for ye haue no wytte ne reason as I haue. Certeynly sayd he of your wytte ne reason I gyue no force / for men say ye haue [illegible] / for you had neuer fader but euery man knoweth who was your moder. ¶ The messengers of ẏ kynge Vortiger whan they herde the stryfe betwyxt the two gromes they asked of them ẏ stode besyde / where Merlẏ was borne / ꝛ who norysshed hẏ. And they tolde them that a gentylwoman of Carmardyne was his moder called Aban / but none knewe who was his fader. ¶ Whan ẏ kynges messengers herd these tydynges they wente to hym that was wardeyn of the towne ꝛ tolde hym ẏ kynges wyll ꝛ theyr comynge. Merlyn ꝛ his moder were fetched before ẏ wardeyn of the towne / ꝛ he commaunded them ẏ they sholde go to ẏ kyng with his messengers So Merlin ꝛ his moder went theyr ꝛ came vnto ẏ kynge / ꝛ there they were receyued w moche honour. And the kynge asked of ẏ woman yf Merlyn were her sone ꝛ who hym begate. The gentylwoman answered all wepynge ꝛ sayd she neuer had company of worldly man. But thus sayd she As I was a yonge mayden in my faders chambre / w other of grete lygnage in my company / whiche ofttymes went to spor them / I lefte anone in my chambre and wolde not go forth for brennynge of ẏ son there came on a tyme a fayre bacheler ꝛ entred in my chambre where I was alone / but how he came in ꝛ where / I wyst neuer nor yet knowe I not / for the dores were fast barred. And with me he dyd game of loue. For I had noo myght nor power to defende hym from me. And often he came to me in the forsayd maner / so ẏ he begate this chylde. But neuer myght I wyte what he was.

¶ Of the answere of Merlyn vpon ẏ kynges castell that wolde not stande.

SO whan Merlyn had herde al that his moder had sayd. he sayde to the kynge in this maner. ¶ Syre how I was begoten/ aſke ye no more. For it falleth not to you/ ne to none other to wyte. But tel me yͤ cauſe wherfore I am to you brought/ ⁊ wherfore ye haue ſent for me. Truely ſayd yͤ kȳge/ my wyſe counſeylers haue done me to vnderſtande/ that yͤ mater of a werke yͤ I haue begon/ behoueth to be tempred w your blood/ or the fundamēt ſhall fayle for euermore. Syr ſayd Merlyn. wyll ye ſlee me for my blood to tempre w your matere. Ye ſayd yͤ kynge or elles my caſtel ſhal neuer ſtande as my counſeylers do me vnderſtande. Tho anſwered Merlyn to yͤ kynge. Syr he ſayd/ lete thoſe wyſe counſeylers come before me/ ⁊ I wyl preue yͤ they lye and wote neuerly. And whan yͤ wyſe men were come Merlyn axed yf his blood were yͤ cauſe to make this werke to ſtande ⁊ endure. All tho wyſe men were abaſſhed ⁊ coude not anſwere. Merlyn tho ſayd to yͤ kȳg. Syr I ſhall telle you the cauſe wherfore your werke thus fayleth and may not ſtande. There is vnder yͤ moūtayne there yͤ ye haue bylded your toure a grete pōde of water/ ⁊ in yͤ botome of yͤ ponde vnder yͤ water there ben two dragons/ ⁊ that one is whyte ⁊ yͤ other reed that fyght togyder agaynſt your werke. Do you myne depe tyll your men come to the ponde/ ⁊ cauſe your men to take away the water all out and then ye ſhall ſe yͤ dragons as I haue you tolde that togyder fyght agaynſt your werke/ ⁊ this is the cauſe wherfore your fundament fayleth. The kynge anone lete myne vnder tyll that men came to the ponde/ ⁊ lete do awaye the water/ ⁊ there thy founde two dragons as Merlyn had tolde them yͤ egrely foughten togyder. The whyte dragon egrely aſſayled yͤ reed/ and layde on hym ſo ſtrongly that he myght nat endure/ but withdrewe hym ⁊ reſted at yͤ ſame tyme/ ⁊ whan he had a whyle reſted hym he wente before ⁊ aſſayled yͤ reed dragon angrely/ ⁊ helde hym ſoo ſore that he myght nat agaynſt hȳ endure/ but withdrewe hym ⁊ reſted. And after came ayen the whyte dragon ⁊ ſtrongely he fought with the reed dragon/ ⁊ bote hym euyll ⁊ hym ouercame that he fledde from thens and no more came agayne.

¶ Of the ſygnyfycacion of theſe two dragons that were in the botome of yͤ ponde that fought togyder.

This kynge Vortiger ⁊ his men yͤ ſawe this batayle had grete merueyle/ ⁊ prayed Merlyn to tell hym what it myght betoken. Syr quod Merlyn I ſhal tell you. The reed dragō betokeneth yourſelfe/ ⁊ the whyte betokeneth yͤ folke of Saxon yͤ fyrſte ye toke ⁊ helde in your lande yͤ fyght ayenſt you/ ⁊ you haue dryuen ⁊ enchaced. But Brytons ouercame them ⁊ droue them awaye. And ſythen at the comynge agayn of yͤ Saxons they recouered this lande ⁊ helde it for euermore. And droue out yͤ Brytons/ ⁊ dyd with this lande all theyr wyll/ ⁊ deſtroyed cryſtendome through this lande. Ye had fyrſte grete Ioye w theyr comyng/ but now it is torned to your grete damage and ſorowe. For tho two brethern of Conſtance yͤ was kynge yͤ whiche ye lete ſlee ſhall come before .xv. dayes paſſed with a grete power from lytell Brytayne/ ⁊ ſhall auenge the deth of theyr broder. And they ſhall bren you fyrſt w ſorowe/ ⁊ after they ſhal ſlee a grete parte of Saxons/ ⁊ ſhall dryue out all yͤ remenaunt of yͤ lande. And therfore abyde ye here no lenger to make a caſtell/ or other werke/ but anone go elles where your lyues all for to ſaue. To god I you betake/ trewly I haue ſayd to you of thynges yͤ ſhal befall/ ⁊ vnderſtande ye well yͤ Aurilambros ſhal be kyng/ but he ſhalbe enpoyſoned/ ⁊ lytell tyme ſhall he reygne.

¶Of kynge Aurilambros how that he purſewed Vortiger and Engiſt/and how they dyed.

Merlyn ⁊ his moder departed from the kynge/and torned agayne to Carmardyn. And ſoone after tydynges came to ẏ Brytons that Aurilambros ⁊ Uter his broder were arryued at totneſſe with a grete hoſte. And anone ẏ Brytons aſſembled them and went to receyue Aurilambros and Uter with grete nobleſſe. And had them vnto London/and crowned Aurilambros and made hym kynge and dyde vnto hym homage. And anone he aſked where Vortiger that was kyng myght be founde/for he wolde be auenged on his broders deth/⁊ after he wolde werre vpon paynems. And they tolde hym that Vortiger was in wales/and ſo they lad hym thytherwarde. ¶Vortiger wyſt wel that theſe bredern came to conquere and fledde thens in to a caſtel that was called Gerneth that ſtode vpō an hye mountayn/and there hym helde. Aurilambros and Uter his broder and theyr folke had beſyeged the caſtell full longe tyme/for ẏ caſtel was ſtronge and well arrayed. And at the laſt they caſted wylde fyre ⁊ brente houſes and men and all theyr araye/and as moche as was within the caſtell. And ẏ Vortiger was brente amonge all other/and ſo he deyed with moche ſorowe. Than was Engiſt in Kente and regned there/and herde this tydynges/and anone fled and wolde haue gone in to Scotlande for to haue had ſocoure. But Aurilambros and his men met with hym in the North countree and gaue hym a ſtronge batayle. And Engiſt and his men defended them worthe that they myght. But he and his folke were dyſcomfyted and ſlayne. And Octa his ſone fledde vnto yorke And Aurilambros hym folowed egrely. And Octa a lytell whyle withſtode hym. But afterwarde he put hym to his mercy/⁊ Aurilambros receyued hym/and to hym and to his men gaue the countree of Galeway in Scotlande/and there they dwelled. After that the kynge Aurilambros went throughout the lande/and put away the name of Engiſtlonde/that Engiſt after his owne name had called it before. Than lete he it calle agayne grete Brytayne/⁊ lete make agayne chyrches/houſes of relygyon/caſtelles/cytees/and borughs ⁊ townes that ẏ Saxons hadde deſtroyed. And came to London ⁊ lete make ẏ walles of the cyte that Engiſt ⁊ his folke had caſt downe. The Brytons lad hym vnto mount of Ambrian that ſomtyme was an houſe of relygyon/that tho was deſtroyed through ẏ paynems. Whereof a knyght ẏ was called Ambri ſomtyme was founder of that houſe. And therfore the ſame hylle was called the mounte Ambrian. And after it was called ambreſbury/and ſhall be ſo for euer more.

¶How Aurilambros dyd redreſſe ẏ londe of grete Brytayne/ẏ whiche was deſtroyed through the Saxons before ſayd.

HOw the kynge Aurilambros lete amende and redreſſe the houſe of Ambreſbury/⁊ there in put monkes/but now there be Nonnes a lytell fro the place that was called Salyſbury/or that the Saxons ſlewe the Brytons/where Engiſt and they ſholde haue made a loue daye. In the whiche tyme were ſlayne a thouſande knyghtes.iii.through treaſon of Engiſt. The kynge therof hadde grete pyte ⁊ thought to make in mynde of them a monument of ſtone whiche myght endure to ẏ worldes ende. And of this thynge they toke theyr cou͂seyle what therof was best for to do. Tho spake to the kynge the bysshop of London ỹ was called Ternehyn ỹ he shold requyre after Merlyn. For he coude best tell how this thynge myght best be made / & Merlyn after was sought and founde & came to ỹ kynge / & ỹ kynge tolde hym his wyll of the monument ỹ he wolde haue made. Merlyn answered to ỹ kynge & sayd. There ben grete stones in Irlonde / and longe vpõ ỹ hyll of Kyan ỹ men called Gyauntes karol. And yf they were in this place as they ben there / they wolde endure for euermore in remẽbraũce of those knyghtes that here be entered. Per ma foy sayd ỹ kynge As harde stone ben in my lande as in Irlond. Soth sayd Merlyn / but in all youre lande ben none suche. For gyaũtes set thẽ for grete good of themselfe. For at euery tyme that they were wouded or in ony maner hurt / they wysshe ỹ stones wᵗ hote water / & thẽ they wysshe them there with / and anone they were hole.

¶ Howe the Brytons went for to seke the grete stones in Irlonde.

As soone as ỹ Brytons had herd of this thynge they yede & swore amonge them they wolde goo seke those stones / & toke wᵗ them Uter ỹ kynges broder to be chyef capitayne & .v.M. men / & Merlyn counseyled thẽ for to goo vnto Irlande / & so they dyde. And whan ỹ kynge of Irlonde ỹ was called Guillomer herde tell ỹ straungers were arryued in his lande / he assembled a grete power and faught ayenst them / but he & his folke were dyscomfyted. The Brytons wente before tyll they came to the mount of Kyan / & clymmed vp vnto the mount. But whan they sawe ỹ stones & the maner how they stode / they had grete meruayle & sayd bytwene themselfe that noo man sholde thẽ remeue for no strength nor engyne so grete they were & so longe. But Merlyn thorugh his craft he remeued thẽ & brought them in to theyr shyppes & came agayne in to this lande. And Merlyn set ỹ stones there that ỹ kynge wold haue them. And set them in the same maner that they stode in Irlonde. And whan ỹ kynge sawe that it was made he thãked Merlyn & rychely hym rewarded at his owne wyll / & lete call that place Stonhenge for euer.

¶ How Passent ỹ was Vortigers sone & ỹ kynge Guillomer came in to this lande & how a traytour ỹ was called Cappa enpoysoned ỹ kynge Aurilambros.

And men shall vnderstande ỹ Passent ỹ was Vortigers sone lyued the same tyme / & came in to this lande wᵗ a grete power / & arryued in ỹ north costre & wolde haue auẽged his faders deth Vortiger / & strongely trusted vpõ ỹ company that he had brought wᵗ hym out of ỹ lande of Germayne / & had cõquered all ỹ North countre vnto yorke. And whã kynge Aurilambros herde this / he assembled a grete power of Brytons & wẽt for fyght with Passent / & he dyscomfyted Passent and all his people. But Passent escaped thens with some of his men / & fled thens in to Irlonde & came to kynge Guillomer and prayed hym of helpe and socour. The kynge graũted hym with good wyl & sayd that he wolde helpe hym vpon ỹ couenaũt that I my selfe must go with you with all my power in to Brytayne. And I wolde me auenge vpõ ỹ Brytons the rather. For they came in to my londe and toke the stones with strength that is called Gyaũtes karoll. The kynge Guillomer lete ordeyne his shyppes & went to the see with .xv. thousande men / & arryued in Wales & her-gan to robbe/⁊ moche ſorowe he dyd. It befell ſo that kynge Aurilambros lay ſyke at wyncheſtre/⁊ myght not helpe hym ſelfe. So that he ſente in his name Uter his broder with a power to helpe wales. And thytherwarde he went as moche as he myght. ¶ The kynge of Irlande and Paſſent herde tel that Aurilambros was ſyke/⁊ to hym there came a Sarraſyn yͭ was called Cappa ⁊ ſayd. Syr dwelle ye here all in peas wͭ your hoſte/⁊ behyght you through my quayntyſe yͭ I ſhall ſlee yͤ kynge Aurilambros that is ſyke. Then ſayd Paſſent/yf ye do ſo I ſhall you rychely auaunce. The traytour Cappa put vpon hym an habyte of relygyon/⁊ lete ſhaue hym a brode crowne/⁊ came vnto the kynges court/and ſayd that he wolde helpe the kynge of his malady. Tho ſayd the traytour Cappa vnto yͤ kynge. Syr be of good comforte. For I ſhal gyue you ſuche a medycyne yͭ ye ſhall ſwete anone ryght and lyſt to ſlepe and haue good reſt And yͤ traytoure gaue hym ſuche poyſon to ſlepe anone ryght/and deyed in his ſlepynge. And the traytour ſayd yͭ he wolde go out in to the felde tyl he were awaked and ſo eſcaped he away. For no man had to hym ſuſpeccyon/for bycauſe of his habyte that he was clothed in/and alſo his brode ſhauen crowne. But whan the kynges men wyſt that he was deed they became wonder ſory/and faſt ſought the traytour/but they myght not fynde hym. For that Cappa torned agayn vnto the hoſte from whens that he came.

¶ Whan Aurilambros dyed a ſterre in yͤ moone was ſeen with a clere lyghte/and at yͤ bought of yͤ beme was ſeen yͤ hede of an horryble dragon.

SO whan the kynge Aurilambros was deed ⁊ enpoyſoned at wyncheſtre. On the morowe after he was bered about yͤ tyme of pryme there was ſeen a ſterre grete ⁊ clere/⁊ yͤ beme of yͤ ſterre was bryghter than the ſonne. And at the bought of the beme appered a dragons hede/⁊ out of his mouth came two huge lyghtes/that were as bryght as ony fyre brennynge/⁊ yͤ one towarde Fraūce and ſtreyght ouer yͤ ſee thytherwarde/⁊ oute of yͤ beme came .vii. bemes full clere ⁊ longe as it were yͤ lyght fyre. This ſterre was ſeen of many a man/but none of the wyſte what it betokened. Uter that was kyng Aurilambros broder was in Wales with his hoſte of Brytons ſawe yͤ ſterre and the grete lyght that it gaue they wondred therof gretely what it myght betoken. And lete calle Merlyn ⁊ prayed hym for to tell what that it myght betoken.

¶ Of the betokenynge of the ſterre.

MErlyn ſawe that ſterre and beheld it longe tyme/⁊ ſythen he quoke ⁊ wepte tenderly. And ſayd. Alas alas yͭ ſo noble a kynge ⁊ worthy is deed/⁊ I do you to vnderſtande that Aurilambros your broder is poyſoned that ſe I well in this ſterre. And yourſelfe is betokened yͤ hede of yͤ dragon yͭ is ſeen at the bought of yͤ beme that is yourſelfe that ſhall be kynge ⁊ reygne/⁊ by yͤ beme yͭ ſtandeth towarde yͤ Eeſt is vnderſtande yͭ ye ſhall gete a ſone that ſhall conquere all Fraūce and all the londes that belongeth to the crowne of Fraunce/that ſhall be a worthyer kynge ⁊ of more honoure than euer were ony of his aunceſtours. And by the beme yͭ ſtretcheth towarde Irlonde is betokened yͭ ye ſhall haue a doughter that ſhall be quene of Irlonde. And yͤ .vii. bemes betoken that ye ſhall haue .vii. ſones And euery one of them ſhall be kynge ⁊ reygne wͭ moche honoure. And abyde ye no lenger here / but goo ⁊ gyue batayle to your enmyes / ⁊ fyght with them boldely for ye ſhal ouercome them ⁊ haue yͤ victory. Uter thanked hertely Merlyn / ⁊ toke his men ⁊ wente to his enmyes ⁊ they fought togyder mortally / ⁊ ſone dyſcomfyted his enmyes ⁊ them deſtroyed. And hymſelfe ſlewe Paſcent that was Vortigers ſone. And his Brytons ſlewe Guilomer that was kynge of Irlande and all his men. And Uter anone after that batayle toke his waye towarde Wyncheſtre for to do entere Aurilambros kynge that was his broder / but tho was yͤ body borne vnto Stonhenge with moche honour that he had done make in remembraunce of the Brytons that there were ſlayne thrugh treaſon of Engiſt that ſame daye that they ſholde haue ben accorded. And in the ſame place they entered Aurilambros the ſeconde yere of his reygne with all the worſhyp yͤ myght belonge to ſuche a kynge. On whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen.

¶ Of Uter Pendragon / and wherfore he was called ſoo ye ſhall here. And how he was ouertake with yͤ loue of Igreyne yͤ was the Erles of Cornwayle wyfe.

Uter was crowned after the deth of his broder Aurilambros / ⁊ reygned worthely. And in remembraunce of the dragon that he was lykened to / he lete make two dragons thrugh the counſeyl of his Brytons. And made that one for to be borne before hym whan he wente in to batayle / ⁊ that other for to abyde at Wyncheſtre in the byſſhops chyrche. And for that cauſe he was called euer after Uter Pendragon. And Octa yͤ was Engiſtes ſone cõmended Uter but lytell that was made newe kynge. And agaynſt hym began to moue werre. And ordeyned a grete power of his frendes ⁊ of his kynne / ⁊ of Oſſa his broder / ⁊ hadde taken all the lande from Humbre to Yorke. But thoſe of Yorke helde ſtrongely agaynſt them / ⁊ wolde not ſuffre them to come in to the cyte / neyther to yelde the cyte to them / ⁊ he beſyeged the towne anone ryght / and gaue therto a ſtronge aſſaute / but they of yͤ cyte thē kepte wel ⁊ ſtrongely. And whan Uter herd therof / he came thyther with a grete ſtronge power for to helpe ⁊ reſcowe the towne ⁊ put a waye yͤ ſyege ⁊ gaue a ſtronge batayle. And Octa ⁊ his cõpany thē defended as well as they myght But at the laſt they were dyſcomfyted / ⁊ yͤ mooſt party of them ſlayne. And Octa and Oſſa were taken ⁊ put in pryſon at London. And Uter hymſelfe dwelled a whyle at Yorke / ⁊ after he wente to London. And at the Eſter after he wolde bere crowne ⁊ holde a ſolempne feeſt. And lete ſomone all his Erles ⁊ Barons / that they ſholde come to that feeſt. And all thoſe that hadde wyues ſholde brynge them alſo to that feeſt. And all the ſeygnoury came at the kynges commaundement as they were commaunded. The feeſt was rychely arayed ⁊ holden And al worthely ſet to mete after that they were of eſtate So yͤ the Erle Gorloys of Cornewayle ⁊ Igreyne his wyfe ſate next vnto yͤ kyng And whan the kynge ſawe the fayrneſſe of that lady ⁊ the beaute that ſhe hadde. He was anone rauyſſhed for her beaute / and often he made to her nyce cōtenaunce in lokyng ⁊ laughynge. So at the laſt the Erle perceyued the preuy lokynge ⁊ laughynge ⁊ yͤ loue bytwene them. And roſe vp from yͤ table in wrath / ⁊ toke his wyfe / and called his knyghtes and went thens in wrath without takynge leue of the kynge. The kynge anone ſente after hym that he ſholde come agayne and goo not thens in deſpyte of hym. And yͤ Erle wolde not come agayne in noo maner of wyſe. Wherfore the kynge was wroth/⁊ in wrath hym defyed as his dedly enmy And the erle went thens in to Cornewayle with his wyfe in the caſtell of Tyntagyll. And the kynge lete ordeyne a grete hoſte ⁊ came in to Cornewayle for to deſtroye the Erle yf that he myght. But he had put hym in ſuche a caſtell that was ſtronge ⁊ well arayed called Tyntagyll/ and wolde not yelde hym to yͤ kyng. And yͤ kynge anone beſyeged yͤ caſtel/⁊ there dwelled .xv. dayes yͭ neuer myght ſpede/ ⁊ euer he thought vpō Igreyne/⁊ vpon her layde ſo moche loue/that he wyſt not what to do. So at yͤ laſt he called to hym a knyght that was called Ulfin yͭ was preuy with hym ⁊ tolde hym all his coūſeyle/⁊ axed of hym what was beſt for to done. Syr ſayde he/ſende after Merlyn anone/for he can tell you the beſt coūſeyl of ony man lyuynge. Merlyn anone was ſente after ⁊ came to yͤ kynge. And yͤ kynge tolde hym all his counſeyle ⁊ his wyll. Syr ſayd Merlyn. I ſhall do ſoo moche thrugh crafte that I can/that I ſhall make you come to nyght in yͤ caſtell of Tyntagyll/and ſhall haue all your wyll of yͤ lady.

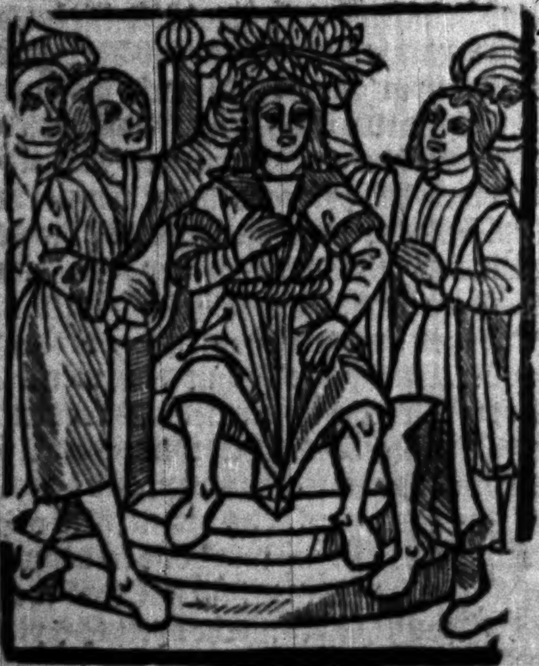
¶ How kynge Uter begate on Igreyne that was the Erles wyfe of Cornewayle Arthur kynge.

MErlyn through crafte yͭ he coude chaunged yͤ kynges fygure in to the lykeneſſe of yͤ Erle/⁊ Ulfin Gardoys his chamberleyne in to yͤ fygure of Jordan that was yͤ Erles chamberlayne/ſo that eche of them was tranſfygured in to others lykenes. And whan Merlyn had ſo done/he ſayd to the kynge. Syr ſayde he now ye may go ſodeynly to the caſtell of Tyntagyll and are entre there ⁊ haue your wyll. The kynge toke pryuely all yͤ hoſte to gouerne ⁊ lede to a knyght that he moche loued/and toke his way to warde the Caſtell/and with hym toke Ulfin his chamberlayne and Merlyn/⁊ whan they came thyder yͤ porter demed it had ben his owne lorde. And whan tyme came for to go to bedde/the kynge went to bedde with Igreyne the Erles wyfe and dyde wᵗ her all his wyll. And begate vpō her a ſone whiche was called Arthur/⁊ vpō yͤ morowe yͤ kynge toke his leue of yͤ lady and wente agayne to his hoſte. And the ſame nyghte that the kynge laye by Igreyne in bed that was yͤ Erles wyfe yͤ kynges men gaue a grete aſſaute vnto the caſtel. And the erle and his men manly them defended. But at the laſt it befell ſo/that in the ſame aſſaute the Erle hymſelfe was ſlayne and yͤ caſtell taken. And the kynge anone turned agayne to Tyntagyll ⁊ ſpowſed Igreyne with moche honour and made her quene. And ſoone after that yͤ tyme came that ſhe ſholde be delyuered and bare a chylde a ſone whiche was called Arthur. And after gate on her a doughter yͭ was called Anya. And whan ſhe came to age a noble baron that was lorde of Lyons wedded her. Whan Uter longe tyme hadde reygned there came vpō hym a grete ſykeneſſe as it were a ſorowe. And in the meane tyme thoſe yͭ hadde to kepe Octa that was Engiſtes ſone and Oſſa his broder that then were in pryſon/they lete them go for grete yeftes that they gaue and wente with them And whan theſe two brederen were eſcaped and were in to theyr owne countree agayne. Then they ordeyned them a grete power of folke/and began for to warre agayne vpon the kynge.

¶ Howe kynge Uter chaſe Aloth to kepe yͤ lande of Brytayne whyle yͭ he was ſyke/for as moche as he myght not ryde hy for his ſykeneſſe.

And for as moche as kynge Uter was ſeke ⁊ vnweldy/he ordeynd Loth ſone of Eleyne to be chyeftayne of his folke. And ſoo he anone ⁊ all his Brytons aſſembled a grete hooſt ⁊ gaue batayll to Octa ⁊ his folke/⁊ dyſcomfyted hȳ. ¶ It befell afterward ẏ the Brytons had indygnacyon of Loth/⁊ wolde not be to hym attendaunt. Wherfore ẏ kyng was angred ſore/⁊ made put hym in a lyttere in ẏ hooſt amonge his men/whiche ledde hym to a fayre cyte wher Octa ⁊ his folk were/called Uerolayne/⁊ there ſaynt Albon was martred/ẏ whiche was dyſtroyed by paynyms afterwarde./There the kynge beſyeged hym/but ẏ walles were ſo ſtrong ẏ gōnes nor other engynes coude not hurte theym. ¶ Octa ⁊ his people had grete deſpyte ẏ a kynge lyenge in a lyttere had them beſyeged. And had coūſeyll ẏ betymes on ẏ morowe they wolde gyue hym batayll/where Octa ⁊ Oſſa were ſlayn/⁊ the other on lyue fled in to ſcotlande/⁊ made Colegryn theyr chyeftayn And the Saxons ẏ were alyue eſcaped/thought agayne a grete ſtrength/⁊ ſayd yf Uter were deed they ſhold ſoon conquere ẏ lande/⁊ thought to enpoyſon ẏ kyng ⁊ ordeyned men for to do this dede/gyuȳge them grete gyftes. And they went therwarde in poore mennes wede to accōplyſſhe theyr falſe purpoſe/but it auayled them not. For they myght not approche nygh the kynge. Tyll at the laſte they eſpyed that the kynge dranke none other lycour but water of a clere well that was nygh beſyde/and the fals traytours vpō a daye pryuely wente to the welle and put therin poyſon//ſo that all the water was enpoyſoned. And anone after as the king dranke of that water/he began to ſwell ⁊ ſoone after he deyed. And alſo many as dranke of that water deyed alſo. And anone as this was eſpyed/folke of the towne lete ſtoppe the welle for euermore. Whan the kynge Uter was deed his folke bare hym to Stonhenge with grete ſolempnite of byſſhops and barons that were there hym to burye beſyde Aurilambros his broder. And then after torned agayne all togyder after his buryenge/and incontynent they dyd ſende meſſengers vnto his ſone Arthur that he ſhold come vnto thē And whan he was come they made hym kynge of the lande with moche reuerence/the.xvii. yere of his faders reygne.

¶ How Arthur ſone of kynge Uter was crowned after his faders deth/⁊ how he droue ẏ Saxons/Colegryn/⁊ Cheldryk of Almayne out of this lande.



Kynge Arthur was crowned at.xv yere of aege/whiche was nobly beloued for his bounte ⁊ largeſſe/⁊ he ſwore he wolde not reſt tyll he had dryuen out ẏ Saxons of the lande. And aſſembled a grete hooſt ⁊ fought with Colegryn/the which after the tyme ꝧ Octa was deed/ the Saxons mayntened And this Colgrin was dyscomfyted ⁊ fled vnto yorke ⁊ toke the towne/ ⁊ there hym helde. And the kynge besieged hym there/ but he gate nothyn it was so stronge/ ⁊ the cyte defended it manly. ¶ In ꝧ meane tyme colgrin left ꝧ cyte to Bladulf/ ⁊ fled himself to Cheldrik ꝧ was kyng of Almayne/ for to haue of hym socour. And he assembled a grete power ⁊ arryued in Scotland wͭ xv.c. shyppes. And whan Arthur wyst of these tydynges/ ⁊ sawe he had not folke ynough to fyght with Cheldrik/ he left ꝧ syege ⁊ went to London/ ⁊ sent anone letters to Howell of lytell Brytayne ꝧ was his neuew his systers sone/ ꝧ he shold come to hym with all ꝧ power ꝧ he myght/ And he assembled a grete hoost ⁊ arriued at southampton/ where kynge Arthur receyued hym Ioyously wͭ moche honoure And those two hoostes met/ ⁊ assembled them/ ⁊ toke theyr way euen to Nichol ꝧ Cheldrik had besyeged/ but it was not taken. And they came on Cheldrik ⁊ his peple or they wyst where ꝧ they were/ and them egrely assayled. The king cheldrik ⁊ his men defended them manly to theyr power. But kynge Arthur ⁊ his men slewe so many saxons ꝧ neuer was sene suche slaughter. And Cheldryk ⁊ his men ꝧ were lefte alyue fledde away. And kynge Arthur them pursued ⁊ droue them out in to a wodde ꝧ they myght no ferder pas ¶ Cheldrik ⁊ his men saw wel that they were brought in to moche dysease/ ⁊ preded them to kinge Arthur in this maner wyse/ that he sholde take theyr horses harneys and all ꝧ they had. And they must only go on fote in to theyr shyppes. And so they wolde goo home in to theyr owne lande/ and neuer come agayne in to this lande. ¶ And vpon assuraunce of this same thynge they gaue hym good hostages And kynge Arthur by ꝧ counsayll of his Lordes and barons graunted vnto this thynge/ and receyued the hostages. And therupon the Saxons went to theyr shippes. And whan they were in the see ꝧ wynde chaunged as the deuyll it wolde/ And they torned theyr nauy and came agayne in to this lande ⁊ arryued at Totnesse/ and wente out of the shyppes ⁊ toke the lande/ and clene robbed it/ and moche people slewe. And toke all ꝧ armour that they myght fynd. And so they went forth tyll they came vnto Bathe. But the men of the towne shyt fast theyr yates/ ⁊ wold not suffre them to come within the towne/ but defended them well and manly agaynst them.

¶ How Arthur gaue batayl vnto ꝧ Saxons/ whan ꝧ they came agayne in to this lande/ and hadde besyeged the towne of Bathe/ and them ouercame.

Then whan kynge Arthur herde this tydynges/ he made hang the hostages/ ⁊ lefte Howell of Brytayne hys neuewe for to kepe the marche towarde Scotlande with half his people. And hym selfe went to helpe and rescowe ꝧ towne of Bathe. Whan he came theder he gaue them a stronge batayl/ and slewe almost all Cheldryks men. For noo man myght withstande hym ne endure vnder ꝧ stroke of his swerde. And there were slayne bothe Colegrin and Bladulf his broder/ and Cheldrik fledde thens and wolde haue gone to his shyppes. ¶ But whan Arthur it wyst he toke .x. M. knyghtes to Cador that was Erle of Cornewayle/ for to let and stop his passage. And Arthur hym selfe wente towarde the marche of Scotlande/ for messagers came hym that the Scottes had besyeged Howell of Brytayne ther as he lay seke/ and therfore he hasted hym thetherwarde. And Cador purſued after Cheldryk/⁊ toke hym or he came to his ſhyppes ⁊ ſlewe hym and his people. Whan Cador had done this vyage/he haſed hym agayne towarde Arthur as faſt as he myght/⁊ founde hym in Scotland where he had reſcowed Howel of Brytaȳ. But ŷ Scottes were fledde within Mouref ⁊ there they helde them a whyle. But Arthur them purſued/⁊ they fledde thēs in to Lamoigne/that were in that cōtre lx. yles/⁊ greate plente of byrdes/⁊ of Egles that were wonte to crye and fyghte togyder and make grete noyſe whan folk came to robbe that lande/and warne as moche as they myght/⁊ ſo they dyd. For the Scottes were ſo grete rauenners/for they toke all that they myght fynde in ŷ lande of Lamoigne without ony ſparȳg and therwith chaced agayne ŷ folke into Scotlande warde.

¶ How kynge Arthur aſked of Merlyn the aduentures of .vi. of the laſte kynges that were to regne in Englonde/⁊ how ŷ lande ſholde ende.

SIr ſayd Merlyn in the yere of the Incarnacyon of Jheſu Cryſt. M. CC.xv. ſhall come a lambe out of Wynchestre/hauynge a whyte tongue/⁊ true lyppes/⁊ he ſhall haue wryten in his hert holyneſſe. Thys lambe ſhall make many goddes houſes/and he ſhall haue peas the moſt part of his lyfe. And he ſhall make one of the fayreſt places of the worlde/ŷ in his tyme ſhall not be fynyſſhed fully. And in ŷ ende of his lyfe a wolfe of a ſtraũge lande ſhall do hym moche harme ⁊ ſorowe through warre. But at ŷ laſt ŷ lambe ſhall be mayſter through helpe of a rede foxe that ſhall come out of the Northweſt and hym ſhall ouercome/and the wolfe ſhall deye in water. And after that tyme ŷ lambe ſhall lyue no whyle/but deye. His ſede ſhall be in a ſtraunge lande. And the lande ſhall be without a gouernoure a lytell tyme.

AND after this lambe ſhall come a dragon medled with mercy ⁊ alſo with woodnes. And that ſhall haue a berde as a gote/that ſhall gyue in Englonde a ſhadowe/and ſhall kepe ŷ lande fro cold and hete/and his one fote ſhall be ſet on wyke and that other in London. And he ſhal enbrace Inhabytaũtes. And he ſhal open his mouthe towarde wales/and the tremblynge of the hydour of his mouthe/his eres ſhall ſtretche towarde many habytacyons and cõtrees. And his brethe ſhall be full ſwete in ſtraunge lande. And in his tyme ſhall the ryuers renne bloode ⁊ with brayne. And he ſhall make in places of his lande walles ŷ ſhall doo moche harme vnto his ſede after his tyme. And then ſhall there come a people out of the Northweſt durynge his regne ŷ ſhall be ledde by a wycked hare/that the dragon ſhall do crowne kyng/whiche afterward ſhall flee ouer the ſee withoute comynge agayne for drede of the dragon. And in ŷ tyme the ſone ſhall be as rede as blode/ŷ men ſhall ſe through out al the worlde/ŷ ſhall betoken grete peſtylence ⁊ dethe of folk/thorough dynte of ſwerde. And that people ſhal be faderles/tyl the tyme that the dragon dye thrugh an hare/that ſhall meue agaynſt hym warre vnto the ende of his lyfe/that ſhall not fully be ended in his tyme. ¶ This dragon ſhall be holden in his tyme the beſte body of the worlde./And he ſhall deye beſyde the marches of a ſtraunge lande/and ŷ lande ſhall dwell faderles without a good gouernour/and men ſhall wepe for his dethe/frome ŷ yle of Shepey to ŷ port ⁊ hauen of Marcyll. ¶ Wherfore Alas and alas ſhall be they ſonge of ſtraunges folke / that ſhall ouerdryue in his lande dyſtroyed.

And after this dragon ſhall come a gote out of Kar ẏ ſhall haue hornes ⁊ a berde of ſyluer. And there ſhal come out of his noſethryll a droppe ẏ ſhall betoken hungre ⁊ ſorowe ⁊ grete dethe of people. And moche of his lande in the begynnynge of his reygne ſhall be waſted. ¶ This gote ſhal go ouer in to Fraunce ⁊ ſhall open ẏ floure of his lyfe ⁊ dethe. In his tyme there ſhall aryſe an Egle in Cornewayle ẏ ſhal haue fethers of golde ẏ of pryde ſhall be withoute pere of ẏ lande ⁊ he ſhal deſpyſe lordes of blode. And after he ſhal flee ſhamefully by a bere at Gauerſech. And after ſhall be made brydges of men on ẏ coſtes of ẏ ſee ⁊ ſtones ſhall fall from caſtelles ⁊ many other townes ſhal be made playne. In his tyme ſhal ſeme ẏ the bere ſhal brenne. And a batayl ſhal be done vpon ẏ armes of the ſee in a feld ordeyned as a ſhelde. And at ẏ batayl ſhall deye many whyte hedes / wherfor this batayll ſhall be called ẏ whyte batayll. And the forſayd bere ſhall do this gote moche harme / ⁊ it ſhall come out of ẏ ſouthweſt ⁊ of his blode. ¶ Then ſhall ẏ gote leſe moche of his lande / tyll ẏ the tyme that ſhenſhyp ſhall hym ouercome. And then ſhall he cloſe hym in a lyons ſkynne. And then ſhall he wynne that he had loſt ⁊ more to it. For a people ſhal come out of ẏ Northweſt that ſhal make the gote ſo ſore aferd that he ſhall be in greate perplexyte. And he ſhall auenge hym on his enmyes / by ẏ counſayll of two owles ẏ ſhall be fyrſt in peryll to be vndone. But ẏ olde owle ſhal go a way a certayne tyme / ⁊ after he ſhal come agayne in to this lande. ¶ Theſe two owles ſhall do grete harme to many one. And ſo they ſhall counſayl the gote to arere warre agaynſt the forſayd bere. And at ẏ laſt the gote and the owles ſhall come at Burton vpon Trent / ⁊ ſhal go ouer / and for drede ẏ bere ſhall flee ⁊ a ſwanne with hym ſw his company to Burtonward in the North / ⁊ there they ſhall be ẇ a ſtary ſhoure. And then ſhall ẏ ſwanne be take ⁊ ſlayne with ſhame / ⁊ the bere taken / ⁊ heded aldernext his neſt / that ſhal ſtande vpon broken brydge / on whom the ſonne ſhal caſt his beames. And many ſhal hym ſeke for vertue that ſhall from hym come. ¶ In ẏ ſame ſhall deye for ſorowe ⁊ care a people of his lande / ſo that landes ſhall be vpon hym the more holder afterwarde. And theſe two owles ſhall doo moche ſorow to ẏ forſayd floure of lyfe / ⁊ her ſhal lede in to dyſtreſſe / ſoo that ſhe ſhall paſſe ouer ẏ ſee in to Fraunce / for to make peas with ẏ gote ⁊ the flourdelyſe. And there ſhe ſhall dwell tyll a tyme ẏ her ſede ſhall come ⁊ ſeche her. And they ſhall be ſtyl tyl a tyme that they ſhall clothe them ẇ grace. And they ſhall ſeche ẏ owles ⁊ put thē to dyſpyteous dethe. And after ſhall this gote be brought to dyſeaſe ⁊ Anguyſſhe ⁊ in ſorow ſhall he lyue all his lyfe.

After this gote ſhall come oute of Wyndeſore a bore that ſhall haue an hede of a whyte lyons herte / ⁊ pyteous lokynge. ¶ His vyſage ſhal be ſett to ſeke men. His breſt ſhall be ſtablyſſhyng of church to ẏ church. His mouthe ſhal be goſpel. His beryng ſhall be meke as a lambe. In the fyrſt part of his reygne he ſhal haue grete payne to Iuſtefye theym that ben vntrewe. And in his tyme ſhall his lande be multyplyed with al maners. And this bore through fyerſnes of his herte / ſhall make wolues become lambes. And he ſhall be called through out the world bore of holynes / fyerſnes of nobleneſſe / ⁊ of mekenes. And he ſhall meſurably ſpeke al that he ſhall do vnto ẏ burgh of Iheruſalem.

And he shall whet his tethe vpon yͤ yates of Parys/ & vpon foure landes. Spayne shal tremble for drede. Gascoyn shal swete. In Fraunce he shall put his wynge. His grete tayle shall rest in Englonde softly. Almayne shall quake for drede of hȳ. This bore shal gyue maistels to two townes of Englonde/ & shall make yͤ ryuer & medowes reed wͭ blode & brayne/ getyng as moche as his auncetres dyd/ & or he dye he shal were thre crownes/ & put a londe in grete subgeccyon/ & after it shall be releued/ but not in his tyme. This bore for his doughtynesse shall be entered at Coleyne. & his land shal be replete wͭ good.

SO after this bore shal come a lambe hauynge fete of lede/ & an hede of brasse/ & an herte of loppe a swynes skyn & an hard. And in his tyme his land shall be in peas/ yͤ fyrst yere of his regne he shal make a cyte spoken of through yͤ worlde. This lambe shal lese through a wulf a grete part of his lande/ but he shall recouer it & gyue a lordship to an egle of his land whiche wyll gouerne it wel tyll pryde hȳ ouercome. Alas yͤ sorow/ for he shall deye of his broders swerde. And after shal the lambe haue yͤ lande peasybly ryght truefull tyll he dye.

AFter this lambe shal come a moldwarpe/ cursed of goddes mouthe/ a caytyf/ a cowarde/ an hare he shal haue an elderly skyne as a gote/ & vengeaūce shal fall vpon hym for synne. The fyrst yere of his regne/ he & his lande shall be fructuous in goodes. His people shal prayse hȳ tyll by his sufferaunce they be so prowde/ wherfore god wyll be wrothe. Then shal aryse vp a dragon of the North yͤ shalbe full fyers/ & shall meue warre agaynst yͤ moldwarpe/ gyuyng hym batayl on a stone. This dragon shal gadre in his company a wulfe comynge out of the west to begyn warre agaynst the moldwarp/ byndyng his tayle to the dragons. Then shal come a lyon out of Irlande that shall fall in company with them. And then shal treble the lande yͤ shall be called Englonde/ as an aspyn lefe. And in that tyme shall castelles be felled downe vpon Tamyse/ And it shall seme yͤ Seuerne shal be drye for the bodyes that shall fall deed therin/ The foure chefe flodes in Englonde shal renne in blood. And grete drede shall be & anguysshe that shall aryse. After yͤ moldwarp shall flee & the dragon/ for the lyon and the wulfe shall dryue them awaye/ & the lande shall be without them. And the moldwarp shall haue no maner of power saue onely a shyp wherto he may wende. And after that he shal go to lande where the see is withdrawe. And after yͤ he shal gyue the thyrde parte of his lande/ for to haue the fourth part in peas and in rest. And after he shall lyue in sorowe al his lyfe tyme. And in his tyme the hote bathes shall become colde. And after that shall yͤ moldwarp deye auenturously & sodaynly Alas for sorowe for he shal be drowned in a flode of the see. His sede shall become faderles in straunge lande for euer more. & then shall the lande be departed in to thre partes/ that it to say/ to the wulf/ to yͤ dragon/ and to the lyon. And so shall it be for euermore. And then shal this lande be called the lande of Conquest. And so shall yͤ ryght heyres of Englonde ende. ¶ This same tyme that Merlyn tolde kynge Arthur of those kynges/ one Guillomer of Irlande ordeyned a grete power of Irisshemen & arryued in Scotlande fast by there as kyng Arthur lay with his hoost.

¶ How kyng Arthur fought with Guyllomer & ouercame hym. And how yͤ scottes became his men.

After kyng Arthur was of Guillomer he wente towarde hym ⁊ gaue hym batayl ⁊ ouercame hym. And Guillomer fled ⁊ his men in to Irlande. And kinge Arthur retourned there as he was vnto the Scottes ⁊ wolde haue them all slayne. But ẏ byſſhops/ abbottes ⁊ other folke of ẏ countree/ as ladyes bare feted came before hym ⁊ cryed hym mercy/ foryenge. Gentyll kynge as you are a man cryſteyne of cryſtendome/ haue pyte on vs your euen cryſten/ for by our beleues ye gete no worſhyp/ as to ſle goddes folk. And therfore haue mercye on vs. For we haue had moche ſorowe by the Saxons ẏ haue paſſed through our contre. But that is not ynough for you/ for they haue take our caſtelles/ and ſlayn our huſbondes and ſone/ ⁊ moche harme they haue done vs. And yf you ſlee vs ceſynge you mercy it ſholde be greate dyſhonoure to you. For ye haue ſeene ynough to vs/ ⁊ haue be our come. Wherfor for goddes loue ſuffre vs to lyue/ ⁊ haue mercy on cryſten people byleue in Cryſt as ye be. ¶ Whan kyng Arthur herde this ſorowe/ he had pyte of them/ ⁊ gaue them lyfe ⁊ lymes withoute ony more harme. And they felle downe to his fete ⁊ thanked hym/ ⁊ became his lyge men/ ⁊ he toke of theym homage. And after ẏ kynge Arthur tourned agayne with his hooſt ⁊ came vnto yorke/ ⁊ made there his [illegible] [illegible] ẏ kynge. And than gaue he all Loegres to Loth ẏ had ſpouſed his ſyſter ⁊ other gyftes [illegible] That tyme was Gawayn his ſone [illegible] yere of age. To al his other that had ſerued hym in his werre/ he gaue ryche gyftes/ thankynge them of theyr grete ſeruyce.

¶ How kyng Arthur ſpouſed Gwenour the Erles coſyn of Cornewayle. And how he conquered Irlande.

When kynge Arthur had brought his lande in peas and reſt and in good ſtate/ ⁊ all was well in euery countree. Tho toke he to wyfe a lady ẏ was called Gwenoure ⁊ made her quene/ a fayre lady ⁊ a gentyll ẏ Cador Erle of Cornewayle had noryſſhed in his chambre ẏ was his coſyn. But neuer they had chyldren togyder. And neuertheles kyng Arthur loued her wonderly wel. And anone as wynter was paſſed/ he lete aſſemble a grete hooſt/ and at his barons and ſayd that he wolde go in to Irlande for to conquere the lande. And he taryed not long that he ne paſſed ouer into Irlande. And Guyllomer ẏ kynge there came ayenſt hym [illegible] [illegible] kynge Arthur/ but Guyllomer was [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] fro that tyme forwarde. And after paſſed kynge Arthur forthermore and cōquered Gutlande ⁊ Iſlande/⁊ toke homage of ÿ folke and of the lande/and there dwelled xii. yere in peas and reygned with Ioye and myrth. And there warred no mā nor woman vpō hym. And he became ſo curteys ⁊ large ⁊ honorable/that the Emperours court of Rome/nor none other thorugh out all the worlde was not accounted to kynge Arthurs that ony man wyſt of/ne none ſo well prayſed. And therfore ÿ beſt knyghtes of al maner landes came vnto hym there for to dwell. And he thē receyued with good wyll and reuerence And all the knyghtes were ſo good that no man knewe the werſte. And therfore kynge Arthur made a rounde table that whan they ſholde ſytte at theyr mete/all ſholde be lyke hygh ⁊ euenly ſerued at ÿ table ÿ none of them ſholde make auaūt that one of thē were hyer than another. And kynge Arthur hadde at that table Brytons and Frenſhmē/Normans and Flemynges/Burgoyns/Manſers/and Loherins/⁊ of al ÿ landes on this halfe the mount Goye/⁊ of his lande of Brytayne/⁊ of the grete Cornewayle/of Wales/of Irlande/⁊ of Scotlande/⁊ ſhortly to tell of all the landes that wolde worſhyp chyualry/ſuche came to kynge Arthurs courte.

¶ How kynge Arthur yede in to Fraunce/⁊ conquered ÿ lande of Froll that was a Romayne/⁊ how he ſlewe hym.

SYth it befell that thurgh counſeil of his barons ⁊ lordes kynge Arthur wolde go conquere all Fraunce that tho was called Galle though Romayns that tho helde that lande in theyr power and in theyr gouernaunce. And the Romayns hadde taken that lande to a noble knyght ⁊ a worthy of body that was called Froll. And whan he wyſt that Arthur came/he ordeyned an hoſte of a grete power ⁊ fought with ÿ kynge. And he ⁊ his folke were diſcōfyted ⁊ fled vnto Parys and entred ÿ cyte/⁊ cloſed ÿ gates ⁊ there helde thē. Whan Arthur wyſt ÿ Froll was gone to Parys he purſued after ⁊ came thyder/⁊ hym beſyeged. But the cyte was ſo ſtrōge ⁊ wel arayed/⁊ tho ÿ were therin defended thē well ⁊ manly. Kynge Arthur dwelled there moore than a moneth/⁊ there was ſo moche people in ÿ cyte ÿ they diſpended all theyr vytayle that they had win. And ſo grete hungre became amonge them that they dyed wonderly thycke win ÿ cyte for hūgre/⁊ came vnto Froll ⁊ prayed hȳ to be accorded with kyng Arthur for to haue peas/and they wolde yelde thē vnto hym ⁊ the cyte alſo. Froll ſawe ÿ he myght no lenger holde ÿ towne agaynſt theyr wyl/⁊ truſted gretely vpō his owne ſtrength/⁊ ſente to kynge Arthur that he ſhold come fyght with hym body for body/⁊ ſo ſhold they departe Fraūce bytwene them two. Kynge Arthur graunted it anone. And wolde not ÿ none of his people vndertoke ÿ batayle for hym. And vpon ÿ morowe both came well arayed without Parys there ÿ they ſholde fyght. And anone they ſmote togyders ſoo fyerſly ⁊ ſo well they foughte on bothe ſydes that no man demed ÿ better of them/⁊ ſo it befell ÿ Froll gaue arthur ſuche a ſtroke that he kneled to ÿ groūde wolde he nolde he/and as Froll wounded kynge Arthur in ÿ forhede ÿ ÿ blood fell downe by his eyen ⁊ his face. Arthur anone ſterte vp egrely whā he felte hȳ hurte as a man ÿ ſemed almooſt wood. And he toke Caliburne his good ſwerde ⁊ drewe it vp on hygh ⁊ gaue Froll ſuche a ſtroke ÿ therwith he claue his heed downe to the ſholders ſo that his helme myght not be his warcraft/ & ſo he fell downe deed in yͤ place. And then tho of yͤ cyte made grete ſorowe for Froll. And euerychone yelded thē to kynge Arthur & yͤ towne alſo & became his men/ & dyde to hym homage & feaute. And he receyued thē & toke of thē goodly hoſtages. And kyng Arthur after that wente forth wͭ his hoſte & conquered Angien / & Angiers/ Gaſcoyne/ Peitou/ Nauerne & Burgoyne/ Berry Lotherne Turin & Peithers/ & all yͤ other landes of Frāce he conquered all holly. Whan he had cōquered & taken yͤ homages & feautees/ he torned agayne to Parys & there he dwelled longe tyme / & ordeyned peas longe tyme ouer all yͤ countre/ & through all Fraunce. And whan peas was made ouer al through his noble knyghthode yͭ he hadde/ & alſo for his owne worthynes And no man were he neuer ſo grete a lorde durſt not meue warre agaynſt hȳ nor ther to aryſe for to make yͤ lande of Frāce unquyete. And in peas he dwelled there .ix. yere/ & dyde many grete wondres & repreued many proude mē & euyll tyraūtes them chaſtyſed after theyr merytes.

¶ How kynge Arthur auaunced all his men that had trauayled in his ſeruyce.

AND afterwarde it befell thus at Eeſter there that he helde a feſt at Parys/ & rychely he gan to auaunce his knyghtes for yͤ ſeruyce yͭ they had hȳ holpen in his cōqueſt. He gaue to his ſtewarde yͭ was called Kay Angien & Angiers. And he gaue to Bedwer his butler Normandye yͭ tho was called Neuſtrie. And to Holdin his chamberlayn he gaue Flaūdres & Maunce. And to Dorall his coſyn he gaue Boleyne. And to Rycharde his neuewe he gaue Pountyſe/ & to all other he gaue large landes & fees after they were of eſtate. And whan Arthur had thus his knyghtes feoffed/ at Aueryll nexte after ſprynge he came agayne in to Brytayne his owne lande. & after at Whytſontyde ſewynge by counſeyle of his Barons he wolde be crowned kynge of Glomorgan & helde a ſolempne feſt/ & lete ſomone barons erles & knyghtes yͭ they ſholde come thyder euerychone. And there was Aucer kyng of Scotland. Cadwerr kynge of Southwales. Guillomer kynge of Northwales. Maled kynge of Irlande. Malgamus kynge of Gutlande. Achilles kynge of Iſlande. Aloth kynge of Denmarke. Gonewas kynge of Norwaye/ & Hell his coſyn kynge of Dorkeney. Cador kynge of lytel Brytayn. Morwith erle of Cayrnewayle. Maurā erle of Gloueceſtre. Guerdon erle of Wyncheſtre. Boel erle of Herforde. Urtegi erle of Oxfurde. Curſall erle of Bathe. Jonas Erle of Cheſtre. Enerall Erle of Dorcheſtre. Kymare Erle of Salyſbury. Waloth erle of Caūterbury. Jugerne erle of Chiceſtre. Arall Erle of Leycetre/ & yͤ erle of Warwyke/ & many other mo ryche lordes. Brytons there came mo/ yͭ is to ſay Dippen Donaude Gēnes/ and many other yͭ be not named here were at yͤ feſt. And many a fayre feſt kynge Arthur had holde before/ but neuer none ſuche/ nor ſo ſolempne/ and yͭ laſted .xv. dayes wͭ moche honoure & myrth.

¶ Of the letter that was ſente fro Rome for pryde to kynge Arthur.

THe thyrde daye as kynge Arthur ſat at his mete amonge his kynges and amonge them that ſat at the feeſt/ before them came in .xii. men of aege rychely arayed/ and courtoyſly they ſalewed the kynge/ and ſayd they came from Rome ſente as meſſengers fro yͤ Emperour And toke hȳ a letter yͭ thus moche was to vnderſtand. Gretely vs merueyleth Ar thus/ that thou arte ones ſo hardy with them gyuen in thy herd to make opē warre a contrake agaynſt vs of Rome / ẏ doſt all ẏ mayſte to deme / for ẏ haſt neuer yet before this tyme prouēd and aſſayed thy ſtrength of Romayns / ⁊ therfore ẏ it ſhal in a lytell tyme. For Juli⁹ Ceſar conquered all ẏ londe of Brytayne / ⁊ toke therof truage / ⁊ our folke haue it longe ẏ had / ⁊ thrugh thy pryde thou withholdeſt it. Wherfore we of Rome commaunde ẏ that thou yelde it ayen / ⁊ yet haſte ẏ more foly done ẏ thou haſt ſlayne Froll ẏ was our baron of Fraūce wt wronge / ⁊ therfore all the comyns of Rome warneth the ⁊ commaunde ẏ vpō lyfe and lymme ẏ thou in haſt be at Rome amendes for to make of thy myſdedes ẏ thou haſt done / ⁊ it ſo be ẏ ẏ come not we ſhall paſſe ẏ hyll of Joye wt ſtrength / ⁊ we ſhall ẏ ſeke where euer thou may be founde / ⁊ ẏ ſhalt not haue a fote of land of thyn owne / that we ne ſhal deſtroye it / ⁊ afterwarde wt thy body we ſhal do all our wyl. Whā this letter was red ⁊ all ye it herde they were anoyed all that were at that ſolempne feſt. And the Brytons wolde haue ſlayne the meſſengers / but ẏ kynge wolde not ſuffre them ⁊ ſayd ẏ ẏ meſſengers ſhuld haue no harme / ⁊ may by reaſon none deſerue. But cōmaunded the to be worſhypfully ſerued And after were toke coūſeyle of kynges / erles ⁊ barons what anſwere he myght gyue agayne to ẏ meſſengers. And they counſeyled hym at ones ẏ he ſhold aſſemble a grete power of al ẏ londe of whiche he had lordſhyp / ⁊ manly auēge hy vpon ẏ Emperour of ẏ deſpyte ẏ he had ſente hy ſuche a letter. And they ſwore by god ⁊ by all his holy name ẏ they ſholde hym [illegible] ⁊ haſte [illegible] as they myght And ſayd ẏ they wolde neuer faile kynge Arthur [illegible] Than they lete wryte a letter to ſende to ẏ Emperour by ẏ ſame meſſengers in this maner of wyſe

¶ Of the bolde anſwere that kynge Arthur ſente to the Emperour of Rome ⁊ to the Romayns.

VNderſtande amonge you of Rome that I am kynge Arthur of Brytayne / ⁊ freely it holde ⁊ ſhall holde. And at Rome haſtely I wyl be / not to gyue you truage / but for to aſke truage. For Conſtantyne that was Eleyns ſone that was Emperour of Rome ⁊ of all ẏ honoure that therto belongeth / ⁊ Maximian kynge conquered all Fraunce and Almayne / ⁊ moūt Joye paſſed / ⁊ conquered all Lombardy. And theſe .ii. were myn aunceſtours / ⁊ ẏ they helde ⁊ had. I ſhall haue thrugh goddes wyll.

¶ Of the reuerence that kynge Arthur dyde to the Emperours meſſengers.

ANd whā this letter was made ⁊ ſealed / kyng Arthur to theſe meſſengers gaue grete gyftes / ⁊ after that ẏ meſſengers toke theyr leue ⁊ went thens and came to the court of Rome agayne. And tolde the Emperoure how worthely they were receyued. And alſo of ſuche a royall cōpany that he had hym for to ſerue / and how he was more royally ſerued than ẏ Emperour of Rome / or ony other kynge lyuynge in the worlde. And whan the Emperour hadde ouerſeen the letter and hadde herde what was therin / and ſawe that Arthur wolde not be ruled after hym. He lete aſſemble and ordeyne a grete hoſte for to deſtroye kynge Arthur yf that he myght. And kynge Arthur as touchynge his power ⁊ party / ordeyned his power of knyghtes of ẏ table roūde.

¶ Of ẏ kynges and lordes that came for to helpe kynge Arthur agaynſt the Emperour.

The kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Irlande ⁊ of Gutlande / of Denmarke / and of Almayne euery of them hadde .x. thouſande men. The duke of Normandye / Gaſcoyne / Flaundres / Peihto / ⁊ of Boloyne / eche had .iiii. thouſande. Gerin of Chartres had .x. thouſande. Howell of Brytayne had .xii. thouſande. And hym ſelfe of his owne lande .xv. thouſande. And of Arbalaſtres and of Archers / and of other folke on fote that no man coude them nombre. And whan all they were redy to go. Kynge Arthur his lande and Gūnor his wyfe toke to kepe to one of his neuewes that was a wyſe knyght and a hardy that was called Mordred / But he was not all true as ye ſhal here afterwarde. Kynge Arthur toke all his reame to this Mordred / ſauſe onely the crowne. And after þ kynge Arthur toke his hoſte and went to Southhampton there that the ſhyppes were brought and the folke aſſembled. And they dyde go vnto the ſee and hadde wynde ⁊ weder at wyll. And as ſoone as euer they myght they arryued at Harflete. And as ſoone as they myght they wende to lande out of theyr ſhyppes ⁊ ſpradde all ouer the countre.

¶ How kynge Arthur faught wt a gyaūt in Spayne that was called Dinabus / that ſlewe Eleyne that was kyng Howelles coſyn of lytell Brytayne.

Kynge Arthur hadde not dwelled in þ countre but a lytell tyme that men hym tolde that there was come a grete Gyaunt in to Spayne / and hadde rauyſſhed fayre Eleyne that was coſyn vnto Howel of lytell Brytayne. And had brought her vpon a hyll that is called the mounte of ſaynt Bernarde. And there was no man in that countre ſo bolde ne ſo hardy that durſt fyght with hym / ne come nye the place there that the gyaunt dwelled that was called Dinabus. And moche ſorowe he dyde in þ countre. Whan Arthur herde this tydynges he called to hym Kay ⁊ ſyr Bedwere and commaunded them to go pryuely and eſpye where the gyaunt myght be founde. And they came to þ ryuage there that men ſholde go to the mount that was encloſed aboute with water ⁊ yet is ⁊ euer ſhall be. And ſawe a brennynge fyre vpon þ hyll. And there was alſo an other hyll nye that / ⁊ there was vpō þ an other fyre brennynge. Kay and Bedwere came to þ nexte hyll and founde a woman ſyttynge and ſyghynge beſyde a tombe ſore wepynge and grete ſorowe made. And ofte ſhe ſayd Eleyne Eleyne. And Kay ⁊ Bedwere aſked what ſhe was / and wherfore ſhe made ſoo moche ſorowe and who laye in that tombe. O ſayd ſhe what ſorowe and myſauenture fayre lordes ſeke ye here. For yf þ Gyaūt may you here fynde he wyll you ſlee anone. Be ſtyl good wyf ſayd they than ⁊ dyſmaye you not / but telle vs the ſothe why that thou makeſt ſoo moche ſorowe ⁊ wepynge. Syrs ſayd ſhe for a damyſell that I nouryſſhed with my breſt that was called Eleyne / that was nece to Howell of Brytayne. And here lyeth þ body in this tombe whiche to me was taken to nouryſſhe. And ſo there came a deuyll a Gyaūt and rauyſſhed her ⁊ me alſo / and ladde vs bothe with hym awaye. And he wolde haue layne by that mayde whiche was ſo yonge and tendre of age / but ſhe that myght it not ſuffre ſo grete ⁊ ſo huge as þ Gyaūt was. And for certaynly yf he come now as he is wonte to do / he wyl you bothe ſlee ⁊ therfore goo ye hens. Then beſpake theſe two meſſengers ⁊ ſayd to her / wherfore goo ye not fro hens. Certes ſayd ſhe whan þ Eleyne was deed þ gyaūt made me to abyde ⁊ haunte his wyll & I must nedes it suffre. And god it wote I do it not with my wyl/ for I had leuer to be deed than with hym to deale/ so muche payne & sorowe I haue whan he me forlyeth. Whan Kay and Bedwere [illegible] herde al that this woman them sayde/ they torned agayn & came to kyng Arthur & tolde hym all ý they hadde seen and herde. Arthur anone toke them bothe with hym & went pryuely by nyght that none of his hoste wyst & came on ý morowenynge to the gyaunt & faught w hym strongly/ & at the last hym slewe. And Arthur badde Bedwere smyte of his hede/ and brynge it in to the hoste to shewe it for a wonder/ for it was so grete & huge. Whā they came agayne to the hoste/ they tolde wherfore they had ben out/ & shewed to them the hede/ & euery man was gladde and Ioyfull of the worthy dede ý kynge Arthur hadde done that was theyr lorde. And Howell was sorowfull for his nece that was so loste. And afterwarde whan he had tyme he let make a fayre chappell of our lady of Eleyns tombe.

¶ How kynge Arthur gaue batayle to ý Emperour/ in ý whiche batayle ý Emperour hymselfe was slayne.

ARthur & his people herde tydynges ý the Emperour had assembled a grete power/ as well of sarrasyns as of paynems & crysten men. Wherof ý nombre was .lxxx. M. horsmē w fotemen. Arthur & his people ordeyned fast forth in theyr waye towarde ý Emperour and passed Normandy & Fraunce into Burgoyne/ & wolde haue gone into ý hoste. Ne men tolde hym that the Emperours hoste wolde come to Lucie. The Emperour whiche hoste in ý begynnynge of August remeued from Rome/ & came forth ryght the waye to warde the hoste. Tho came kynge Arthurs spyes & sayd yf that Arthur wolde he sholde fynde the Emperour there fast by/ but they sayd ý the Emperour had so grete power w hym of kynges of ý land of Paynems/ & also crysten people that it were but foly to kynge Arthur to mete with them. For ý spyes tolde that the Emperour had fyue or syxe men agaynste one of his. Kynge Arthur was bolde and hardy/ and for noo thynge hym dysmayed & sayd. Go we boldely in goddes name agaynst ý Romayns that with them lede Sarrasyns & paynems ý no maner truste they haue in god/ but onely vpō theyr strength. Goo we now and seke thē sharpely in the name of almyghty god/ & see we ý Paynems and Crysten men that ben agaynst vs with them for to destroye Crysten mē. And god shall vs helpe them to ouercome. For we haue ý ryght opynyon/ & therfore haue we truste in god. And do we so that the ennemyes that be to crystendome and to god may be destroyed & ouercome/ and that men may recorde the worthynesse of knyghthode. Whan kynge Arthur hadde thus sayd/ they cryed all w an hye voyce. God that is fader almyghty worshypped be thy name w out ende. Amen. And graunte vs grace well for to do/ and to destroy our ennemyes that ben agaynst crystendome. In the name of the fader/ the sone/ & and holy ghoost. Amen. And god gyue vs neuer grace ne worshyp in the worlde/ nor mercy of hym to haue/ that this daye shall faynte well for to smyte & egrely. And they rode softely and ordeyned theyr wynges well & wysely. The Emperour herde tell that kynge Arthur and his folke were redy appareyled for to fyght with hym & how they were comynge. He lete ordeyne his wynges in the best wyse that he coude. And more trusted in his strenghte than in god almyghty/ & that was seen afterwarde. For whan tho two hoſtes mette / the Emperour loſt foure of his folke agaynſt one of kynge Arthurs. And ſoo many were ſlayne / what on that one party & on þ other / that it was grete pyte to wyt & to beholde. In this batayl were ſlayne through kynge Arthurs fyue kȳges of þ Paynems & of other wonder moche people / & kynge Arthurs men fought ſo well that the Romayns & paynems had no more ſtrength to withſtonde them than .xx. ſhepe agaynſt fyue wolues. And ſo it befell that in this batayle in the ſhoure þ was wonder harde & longe durynge in that one ſyde & in þ other. the Emperour amonge them there was ſlayne / but there was no man that wyſte for very ſoth who hym ſlewe.

¶ How kynge Arthur lete entyere his noble knyghtes þ he had loſt there in batayl and how he ſente þ Emperours body to Rome that there was ſlayne in batayle.

SO whan þ Romayns wyſt þ themperoure was deed / they forſoke the felde & þ paynems alſo. And kynge Arthur after thē chaced tyl it was nyght and ſo many of them ſlewe þ it was wonder to tell. And tho torned kynge Arthur ayen whan it was nyght & thanked god of his victorye. And on þ morowe he lete loke & ſerche all þ felde for his knyghtes that he there loſt. That is to ſaye. Borell erle of Maunt. Bedwere & Kay / and Lygiers erle of Boleyne. Wortiger Erle of Baat. Aloth erle of wyncheſtre. Curſal erle of Cheſtre / & Holden erle of Flaundres. Theſe were þ grete lordes þ kynge Arthur loſte in þ batayle with other worthy knyghtes amonge thē. And ſome he lete entere in abbayes by the countre / ſome he made to be borne unto theyr owne countre. And the Emperours body he lete take & put upon a bere & ſente it to Rome And ſayd to the Romayns that for Brytayne & Fraunce whiche he holde other truage wolde he them none paye. And yf they axed hym ony other truages / ryght ſuche truage he wolde theym paye. The kynge lete bere Kay to Kayen his owne caſtell / and there hym entered. And Lygier was borne to Boleyne there he was lorde. And Holden was borne in Flaundres / there he was entered. And all the other he lete entere with moche honoure in abbayes & in houſes of relygyon in the contre that they were ſlayne. And kynge Arthur hymſelfe ſoiourned that ſame yere in Burgoyne with his hoſte & thought þ ſame yere folowynge to paſſe þ mount Joye / and haue gone to Rome alſo to haue taken the cyte & haue put þ Romayns in ſubgeccyon / but the wycked tyraunte Mordred hym let / as after ye ſhall here.

¶ How the traytour Mordred / to whom kynge Arthur toke his lande to kepe and his caſtelles / helde them agaynſt hym.

AS Arthur had take to Mordred his reame to kepe / & gone ayenſt the Emperour of Rome / & was paſſed þ ſee. Mordred anone toke homages & feautees of all them þ were in this lande and wolde haue had this lande to his owne vſe / & toke caſtelles about / & lete them be arayed. And after this falſeneſſe he dyde an other grete wronge / for agaynſt the lawe of cryſtendome he toke his owne emes wyfe as a traytour ſholde / & ordeyned hym a grete hoſte agaynſt Arthurs comynge to holde þ lande agaynſt hym with ſtrength for euermore and to ſlee kyng Arthur yf he myght / and ſent by the ſee & by lande / and lete aſſemble Paynems and cryſten people. And he ſente to Saxons & to Danys for to helpe hym. And alſo Mordred ſent to Cheldrik to ſende men to hym out of Saxony þ was a worthy duke / & promyſed hym yf þ he brought with hym moche people he wolde graunte hym Inherytaunce fro gaue al yͤ londe fro Humber to Scotlande & al yͤ londe that Engist had of Vortigers gyfte/ whan that he spowsed hys doughter. ¶ And Cheldrich came wͭ a grete strength & power of people/ & Mordred had assembled also on his halfe/ yͤ they had .xl. thousande of stronge knyghtes whan yͤ they had arne.

¶ How kynge Arthur chaced yͤ traytour Mordred/ & how he was slayne/ & kynge Arthur wounded to dethe.

Kynge Arthur herynge thus tydynges beynge in Bourgoyn was so anoyed/ & toke all Fraūce to Howel for to kepe with halfe deale of his men. And he went forth with to wytsand & toke shyppynge with his men/ and a grete hoost of Frenshmen/ & arryued at Sandwyche/ But or that he myght come to lande with his people/ Mordred was come with all his power/ & gaue a stronge batayll/ so yͤ kynge Arthur lost many a man or that he myght come a lande. For there was Gawayne his neuew slayne/ & Anguysshel yͤ helde Scotlande/ & many other wherof kynge Arthur was full sory. But after yͤ they came to land Mordred myght not endure agaynst them/ but was discomfited & fledde thens the same nyght with hys men/ & on the morowe came to London. But tho of the cyte wolde not let hym entre. And fled from thens to Wynchestre/ & there helde hym wͭ his people. ¶ Kinge Arthur lete take the body of Gawayn his neuewe/ & the body of Anguysshell/ & lete that one be beyne in to Scotlande/ and yͤ other to Douer & buryed. And after king Arthur toke his way for to dystroye Mordred/ & he fledde thens in to Cornewayle. And the quene Gōnor yͤ was kynge Arthurs wyfe yͤ than soiourned at yorke herde yͤ Mordred was fledde thens/ & that he myght not endure agaynst kyng Arthur she was sore aferde & had grete doubte/ & wyst not what was best for to do. For she understode well yͤ her lorde kynge arthur wolde neuer to her gyue mercy for yͤ grete shame yͤ she had done to hym. And toke her waye pryuely wͭ foure men & no moo. & came to Karlyon/ & there she dwelled al her lyfe/ without comynge in syght euermore. ¶ Kynge Arthur wyst yͤ Mordred was fledd in to Cornewayle/ & lete sende after his men in Scotlande & Northumberlande unto Humber/ & assembled folk without nombre & went unto Cornewayl for to seke Mordred. And Mordred had assembled to hym all yͤ folk of Cornewayl innumerably/ & wyst that Arthur was comynge/ & had leuer dye & take his chaūce than lenger flee. And he abode & gaue an harde batayll to kynge Arthur & his people/ so that there escaped none awaye on lyue saue kynge Arthur & other that were wouded to yͤ dethe. For Mordred was slayne & all his people. And all kynge Arthurs noble knyghtes of the rounde table wherof it was grete pyte. And kynge Arthur made hymself to be borne in to yͤ yle of Auylyon to hele his woundes. And yet the Brytons suppose that he lyueth in an other land/ and that he shal come yet and conquere all Brytayne. But certes thys is the prophecye of Merlyn. He sayd hys dethe sholde be doubtous/ & he sayd trouthe. For therof yet men haue doubte: and shall haue for euermore as men saye. For men wote not whether that he is on lyue or deed. ¶ Arthur was borne to Auylyon the .xxii. yere of his regne/ after the Incarnacyon of our lorde Jhesu Cryst. v.C xlvi. yere.

¶ How kynge Arthur delyuered the realme unto Constantyne the sone of Cador his neuewe.

AS kynge Arthur wyſte yͭ he myght no lenger regne/ he lete come before hym Conſtantyne yͭ was Cadors ſone Erle of Cornewayle his coſyn/ and to hym betoke all his realme/ byddyng hȳ be kynge therof tyll he came agayne/ for as moche as he had none heyre/ begoten of his owne body. And it was grete dommage that ſo noble a kynge/ ⁊ ſo doughty as he was had no lygnee. But all thynge that god wolde haue done muſt be done/ whoſe name be bleſſyd without ende.

¶ How Conſtantyne ſlewe Mordreds .ii. ſones that warred on hym.

THis Conſtantyne was a noble ⁊ a worthy knyght of body. And tho two ſones yͭ Mordred had begoten/ had grete enuy of Conſtantyne that tho was crowned kynge. And ſo it befell that they meued warre agaynſt hym. And aſſembled a grete hooſt of them that were before wᵗ Mordred ⁊ had ben dryuen away/ whiche dyd moche ſorowe through the londe. The one broder ordeyned hym to go to London for to take yͤ cyte. And yͤ other wente to wyncheſtre. But Conſtantyne came to London ⁊ ſlewe hym that was there. And after he went to wynchſtre ⁊ ſlewe hym that was there alſo. And ſo was he quyte of bothe his enemyes. ¶ Whan Conſtantyne had regned well ⁊ worthely foure yere he deyed and lyeth at London.

¶ Of the kynges Adelbryght ⁊ Edell.

AFter Conſtantynes deth ther were two kynges in Brytayne/ that one was called Adelbryght that was a dane. And he helde the countre of Northfolk and Southfolke. That other hyght Edel and was a Bryton/ and he helde Nychol Lyndeſey/ and all the londe vnto humbre. Theſe two kynges faſt warred togyder/ but they were after accorded ⁊ loued togyder/ ⁊ loued togyder as they had ben borne of one body. ¶ The kyng Edel had a ſyſter the whiche was called Orewenne. And he gaue her through grete frendſhyp to kynge Adelbryght to wyfe. And he begate vpon her a doughter yͭ was called Argentyl. And in the thyrde yere after came vpon hym a ſtraūge ſekeneſſe that vnders he muſte deye. And he ſent to kynge Edell his broder in lawe yͭ he ſholde come and ſpeke with hym/ ⁊ he came to hym wᵗ a good wyll. Tho prayed he the kynge ⁊ coniured hym alſo in the name of god/ yͭ after whan he were deed/ he ſholde take his doughter Argentyll ⁊ the londe/ ⁊ kepe ⁊ nouryſſhe her in his chambre. And that whan ſhe were of aege ſhe ſholde be maryed to the ſtrongeſt ⁊ worthyeſt man that he myght fynde/ and then he ſholde yelde vp her londe agayne. ¶ Edel graunted it and by othe conferemed his prayer. Soo whan Adelbryght was deed ⁊ enterred Edell toke the damoyſell Argentyll and nouryſſhed her in his chambre/ and ſhe became as fayre as ony myght be.

¶ How kynge Edell maryed ỹ damoyſell to a knaue of his kechyne.

This kynge Edell ỹ was uncle to Argentyll / bethought how ỹ he myght falſly haue the londe fro his nece & falſly ayenſt his othe to deceyue ỹ damoyſell / & to marye her to a knaue of his kechyn ỹ was called Curan / & he became the worthyeſt & ſtrongeſt man of body ỹ ony man wyſt in ony londe lyuynge / & to hym he thought ſhamfully to haue maryed her for to haue had her londe afterward but he was clene deceyued. For this Curan was Hauelockes ſone ỹ was kyng of Denelande in Denmark / & this Curan conquered his wyues lōde after warde and ſlewe kyng Edell ỹ was his wyues uncle & had all her londe as in an other place it telleth more openly / & he regned but thre yere / for Saxons & Danes hym ſlewe / and that was grete harme to all Brytayne / & Brytons bare hym to Stonehenge / and buryed hym honourably.

¶ Of kyng Conan ỹ was Curans coſyn.

After this Curan regned his coſyn Conan a worthy knyght he regned wout loue / & euer was medlynge w his people / & made his uncle w warre ſleynge his two chyldren. The Saxons warred ayenſt hym oftentymes / but he them ouercame / & ſo was he in pees all his lyfe tyme. And he regned .xiiii. yere / & after he dyed & lyeth at London.

¶ Of kyng Coryſ & Gurmonde ỹ came through the paynyms in to Brytayne.

Coryſ regned after Conan his coſyn ỹ was behated of al his people And this Coryſ loſt al Brytayne through warre. And in his tyme fell ỹ grete myſchyef in Brytayne ỹ Cryſtendom was deſtroyed & all ỹ Brytons were dryuen out of the londe / but afterwarde he lefte the londe to ỹ Saxons / as afterward ye ſhal here. For in ỹ tyme there was a paynym that was called Gurmonde ỹ kynges ſone Daufrices of ỹ paynyms folk / & ſhold haue be kynge after his fader / but he gaue it to his broder / ſayinge he wolde be no kynge tyll he had conquered a realme in a ſtraunge Coūtree. And of hym Merlin prophecyed callyng hym a wulf of the ſee And he lete aſſemble innumerable paynyms & ſhyppes. And goynge by ỹ ſee he conquered dyuers landes takyng homages of many. And he came by Irlande & conquered it / whiche oftetymes had warred vpon Brytons / & Brytōs vpon them & ofte wonne & ofte loſt / & gaue hoſtages to Brytons. And ſoo the Saxons ſente to Gurmonde in Irlande / ỹ he ſholde come & helpe theym agaynſt ỹ Brytons / & they wolde make hym gladly lorde ouer them For he was a paynym / & they were paynyms / and the Brytons were cryſtened. Whan Gurmonde herde this / he haſted hym & arryued in Scotlande / & came in to Northumberlande where ỹ Saxons were dwellynge / & they confermed the couenaūtes betwene them made / for to bere hym true fayth payeng truage by ỹ yere.

¶ Tho began the Saxons and the Affrycans to dyſtroy corne / & brēne townes / & waſted all maner thynge / ſparynge neyther man / woman nor chylde / lerned nor lewde / but ſlewe al / & caſt downe townes caſtelles & chirches / & ſo put all the lande in grete dyſtruccōn. And as ſone as they myght flee they fledde thens as well pore as ryche / byſſhoppes and other men of relygyon lytell and greate / ſome in to lytell Brytayne / and ſome in to Cornewayle / all tho that ſhyppes myght haue.

¶ How the kynge Gurmonde droue kynge Coryſ to Chirceſtre / and ſlewe ỹ Brytons by poleſy / ſaue the kyng that in dyſpyſe all pryuely went awaye.

CAreyſ the kyng fledde thens in to Chechestre that tho was stronge & there helde hym .xx. dayes / & this Gurmond came & it beſyeged / but they coude not dommage it / wherfor they thought by ſubtylte to brenne it / & made engyns wt glewe & nettes / & toke peces of thondre & fyre / & bonde it to ſparowes fete / & then lete them flee. And they flewe & lodged them in the towne there as theyr neſtes were in ſtakkes & eueſynges of houſes / & the fyre began to kyndle & brent all the towne. Whan the Brytons ſawe yt they yſſed them oute & foughte / but anone they were ſlayne & dyſcomfyted. & whyle the batayl dured ye kynge all in dyſpayre pryuely wente in to Wales / ſo yt they wyſt not where he became. And ſo was the towne of Chychestre brent & dyſtroyed. And after Gurmonde went & dyſtroyed townes and cytees yt neuer after were made agayne / as it is ſene yet in many places of this lande.

¶ How this lande was called Englonde for the name of Engyſt & howe many kynges were made after in this lande.

SO whan Gurmonde had dyſtroyed all the lande thrughout / he gaue this lande to ye Saxons & anone they toke it with good wyll / for the Saxons longe tyme deſyred it. For as moche as they were of Engyſtes kynrede ye fyrſt wanne all the lande of Brytayne & lete theym be called Englyſſhmen / by cauſe of Engyſtes name. And this lande they lete calle Englonde in theyr language / & the folke ben called Englyſſhmen / for as moche as it was called Engyſtes lande. But fro ye tyme yt Brute came fyrſt in to this lande it was called Brytayn / & the folkes Brytons. But ſythe ye tyme yt Gurmonde conquered this lande the Saxons named it Englonde / as before is ſayd. And whan this was done. Gurmonde paſſed ouer in to Fraunce & there conquered many landes & dyſtroyed all cryſten people where as he came. And the Saxons dwelled in this lande & began faſte to enhabyte it at theyr owne wyl. And they wolde haue made newe kynges & lordes / but they myght neuer aſſent to haue onely o kynge for to be to them attendaunt. And therfore they made many kynges in dyuers ſhyres / as it was in Brytons tyme. The fyrſte kyngdome was Kent / & that other Southſex / & the thyrd Weſtſex / ye fourth Eſtſex / & ye fyft Northumberlande / & the ſyxt Eſtenglonde that is to ſay Northfolk & Southfolk / & the ſeuenth Mercenryche / and yt is ye byſſhopryche of Lychefelde. Huntyngdon. Herforde. Gloceſter. Worceſter. Cheſter & Derby / & ſo departed al Englonde in .vii. kyngdoms. And after yt it befell yt the kynges warred ofte tymes togyder. And euer he yt was ſtrengeſt toke from the other theyr landes. for it was longe tyme that they had no kynge dwelled amonge them/nor noo Cryſten man was tho amonge them/nor cryſtendome neyther/But were paynyms tyll ſaynt Gregorye was pope of Rome/that had ſene chyldren of ẏ nacyon of Englōd in the cyte of Rome/ẏ were wonder fayre creatures/⁊ had grete wyll ⁊ deſyre to beholde them. And aſked of ẏ marchantes whens they were/⁊ men tolde hym they were of Englonde/⁊ that the Englyſſhe nacyon was paynymes ⁊ byleued nat on god. Alas ſayd ſaynt Gregory well maye they be called Englyſſh/for they haue vyſages of angelles/⁊ therfore well oughte they to be criſtened. And for this cauſe ſēt ſaynt Gregory ſaynt Auſtyn in to Englonde/⁊ .xl. good men with hym ẏ were of good lyfe/⁊ holy men to preche ⁊ teche ⁊ to conuerte ẏ Englyſſhe people/⁊ them turne to god. And ẏ was in the .vi. yere of ſaynt Gregoryes papalytee/ẏ is to ſaye/after thyncarnacyon of our lorde Jheſu Cryſt .v.C.lxxxv. yeres as the Cronycle telleth.

¶How ſaynt Auſtyn baptyzed ⁊ conuerted kynge Adelbryght/⁊ the byſſhoppes that he made his felawes.

AS ſaynt Auſtyn came fyrſte in to Englonde/he arryued in the yle of Tenet/⁊ ſoo paſſed forth ⁊ came vnto Caunterbury/⁊ there ſoiourned. And kȳg Adelbryght of Kente ẏ was of the lynage of Engyſt goodly receyued ſaynt Auſtyn ⁊ his felawes with moche honour ⁊ them founde all ẏ them neded. And more ouer he gaue them a fayre place/ẏ nowe is called the abbaye of ſaynt Auſtyn/in whiche place he lyeth hymſelfe ſhryned. ¶This kynge Adelbryght was a goode man/⁊ with good wyll herde ſaynt Auſtyns predycacyons/⁊ gaue hym leue for to preche throughout all his londe beforſayd of Kent/to torne ⁊ conuerte to hym all the people ẏ he myght. ¶It befel ſo after through goddes grace that in a lytell tyme the kynge hymſelfe was conuerted to god/⁊ al his ſubgectes were baptyzed And in the meane whyle the people torned them to god. Saynt Auſtyn came to Rocheſtre/⁊ there he preched ẏ worde of god. And the paynyms therfore hym ſcorned ⁊ caſt vpon him reygh tayles/ſo that all his mantell was hanged full of reygh tayles. And for more diſpyte/they caſt on hym the guttes of reyghes/⁊ other fyſſh Wherfore ẏ good man ſaint Auſtyn was ſore anoyed ⁊ greued And prayed to god that all tho chyldren of ẏ cyte that ſholde be borne afterwarde/that is to ſay/in the cyte of Rocheſtre might haue tayles/⁊ ſo they had. Whan the kynge herde of this vengeaunce that was fall through ſaynt Auſtins prayer. He lete make an houſe in the honour of almyghty god wherin women ſhold be delyuered of theyr chyldren at the brydges ende. In the whiche houſe yet women of the cite ben delyuered of chylde. ¶Whan that ſaynt Gregory had herde tel how the Englyſſhe people were torned to god ⁊ conuerted. He ſente vnto ſaynt Auſtyn his pallyon by a byſſhop/ẏ was called Paulyn/⁊ made hym prymate and Archebyſſhop of all the realme of Englonde. And ſent hym worde with the byſſhop that he ſholde ordeyne and make byſſhops in the lande. And anone ſaynt Auſtyn had the pallyon of the dygnyte of the Archebyſſhop. And he made two byſſhoppes of his felawes the whiche came wt hym fro Rome/⁊ one was called Mellite/⁊ he dwelled at London/⁊ that other was called Juſtyn that helde the dygnyte at Rocheſtre. And this byſſhop Mellite tho went to preche in to Eſſex ⁊ cryſtened the kynge of the countree the whiche was called Sicwith/ẏ was kynge Adelbryghtes coſyn his ſyſters ſone. This Auſtin went to preche in Worceſter/ & torned moche of yͤ people to god. And ſaynt Auſtyn hymſelf preched all about Englonde.

¶ How ſaynt Auſtyn went in to Wales there the Brytons were. And howe they wold not be obedient to yͤ Archebiſſhop of Caunterbury.

SO whan all Englonde was cryſtned & torned to god/ ſaynt Auſtin went in to yͤ londe ther as yͤ Brytons were/ for to kepe them from yͤ Engliſſhmen yͭ is to ſay in Wales. And there he founde monkes/ & abbayes/ & .vii. byſſhops. For the Brytons alwaye dyſtroyed yͤ Cryſten people yͭ ſaynt Auſtin had conuerted. And he ſayd to yͤ byſſhops yͭ he was a Legate of Rome/ & Prymate of Englond/ & yͭ by reaſon they ſholde to him obey/ & they ſaid they wolde not/ but to the Archebyſſhop of Carlyon they wolde. They wolde neuer for no maner thynge be obedyent to yͤ Engliſſhmen. For the Engliſſhmen they ſayd be our aduerſaryes/ & haue dryuen vs out of our countree/ & we ben cryſten men & euer haue be/ & the Engliſſhmen haue euer be paynyms/ ſaue now of late that they ben conuerted. ¶ Saynt Auſtin coude haue none other anſwer/ for they wolde not be ſubgecte to the pope ne to none other. Wherfore ſaynt Auſtyn retorned to kynge Adelbryght yͭ was kyng of Kent And tolde hym yͭ his folk wolde not be to no man obedyent/ but to yͤ Archebyſſhop of Carlyon. Whan the kynge herde this/ he was ſore anoyed/ & ſayd yͭ he wolde deſtroye them. And ſent to Elfryde kyng of Northumberland yͭ was his frende/ yͭ he ſholde come to hym with al yͤ power that he myght/ & he wolde mete hym at Leycetre/ and fro thens they wolde goo in to Wales/ & there dyſtroye the Archebyſſhop of Carlyon/ and all tho that had refuſed ſaynt Auſtyn.

¶ How kynge Adelbryght & the kyng Elfryde ſlewe Bregnall yͭ was a kynge of Brytons yͭ helde yͤ countree of Leycetre.

IT befell ſo that there was a kyng of Brytons that helde the countre of Leycetre/ & all the countree aboute by name was Bregnall. And this Bryton herde tell that tho two Engliſſhe kynges wolde mete there at Leycetre for to go in to Wales. He lete aſſemble all the power yͭ he had for to go fyght with theſe two kynges/ but lytel it auayled hym/ for his folke were all ſlayne & hymſelf fledde/ & loſt his landes for euermore. And theſe two kynges Adelbryght & Elfryde dwelled a whyle at Leycetre/ & departed the lande amonge them/ & toke homages & feautes of the folke of yͤ countree. And after they wente towarde Wales. And tho of Wales herde tell of the ſcomfyture yͭ Bregnall had at Leycetre/ & were wond ſore aferd of tho two kinges/ & toke & choſe amonge them good men & holy heremytes/ monkes & preeſtes/ & of other people grete plente that went barefote & wolwarde for to aſke mercy of tho two kynges. But tho kynges were ſo fierce & ſo wrothed that they wolde neuer ſpeke to them/ but them ſlewe euerychone. Alas for ſorowe/ for they ne ſpared them no more than the wolfe doth the ſhepe/ but ſmote of theyr hedes euerychone/ & ſoo they were all martires that to them came/ that is to vnderſtand .v.C. & .xl. After they wente fro thens to Bangor for to ſee at whiche yͭ they myght there fynde of yͤ Brytons. And whan the Brytons herde that/ they aſſembled & gadered all theyr power for to fyght with theym. ¶ Tho was there a Baron in Wales that was called Bledryk of Cornewayle that ſomtyme was lorde of Deuenſhyre but ye kynge Athelbright had dryuen hym out in to Wales / & after there he gaue the batayle. And at that batayle was kynge Athelbright ſlayne / & Elfryde ſore wounded & loſt ye felde / & ye mooſt partye of his people ſlayne. And Elfryde fled in to Northumberlande y^t was his owne lande. And after ye people of Leyceſtre ſhyre made with ſtrength Cadwan y^t was Brecinals ſone kynge of Leyceſtre / & he after reygned nobly & with grete honour.

¶ How Cadwan kyng of Leyceſtre and Elfryde kynge of Northumberlande were frendes / and of the debate that after was bytwene Edwyn & Cadwalyn that were bothe theyr ſones.

WHan this batayle was done ye Brytons aſſembled the & wente thens and came to Leyceſtre & made ther Cadwan y^t was Brecinals ſone kynge of Leyceſtre & of all the coūtre. And he toke homage & feautees of all ye folke of the countre. And after that he aſſembled a grete hoſte / and ſayd he wolde goo in to Northumberlande to deſtroye kynge Elfryde & ſlee hym yf he myght. And whan he was there theyr frendes wente bytwene the y^t they acorded them in this maner / that Elfryde ſholde haue all the lande of Northumberlande to Scotland and Cadwan ſholde haue al the lande on this ſyde Humbre to the Southe / & after they were good frendes all theyr lyfe & loued as they had ben bretheren. And this Elfryde had a ſone called Edwyn y^t helde all the lande of Northumberlande after his faders deth as his fader had done all his lyfe tyme / & Cadwan had an other ſone called Cadwalin that helde his faders londe as he it helde whan he was a lyue and theſe loued as bretheren. And the loue laſted betwixt them but onely two yere / & after began debate betwixt them through a ſymple enuyous coſyn of Cadwalins / called Briens / ſo y^t they aſſembled a grete hoſte on bothe partyes. And at ye laſt it befel y^t Cadwalin was diſcomfyted / and Edwyn hym purſued & droue hym fro place to place / ſo at ye laſt he fled in to Irlande And ye other deſtroyed & pylled ye lande / & caſt downe caſtels & brent his maners / & departed all Cadwalins lande amonge his frendes. And longe tyme after came Cadwalin ayen fro Irlande w^t a ſtronge power / & in playne batayll ſlewe Edwyn and all his frendes / namely them y^t withhelde his landes by Edwyns gyfte.

¶ How kynge Oſwalde was ſlayne thorugh kynge Cadwalin & Peanda / & how Oſwy that was kynge Oſwaldes broder reygned after hym & ſlewe Peanda.

AS ſone as Edwyn was ſlayne Offrid his ſone undertoke ye warre agaynſt Cadwalin his eme / ſo y^t this Offrid dyed durynge ye warre. And after ye deth of this Offrid tho reygned a gentyll Cryſten man y^t moche loued god almyghty y^t had all ye lande of Northumberlande by herytage that was called Oſwalde / & he was kynge of all ye lande. But for as moche as he was frende to Edwyn / & helde a grete partie of ye lande of Cadwalin. This Cadwalin warred vpon hym & droue hym towarde Scotlande. And whan Cadwalin ſawe y^t he wolde not abyde he wolde no lenger purſue hym / but toke ſome of his folke to Peanda his broder in lawe & prayed hym to purſue after Oſwalde / tyll y^t he were taken or ſlayne / & Cadwalin torned home agayne. Whan Oſwalde herde theſe tydynges y^t Cadwalin torned home agayne / he wolde no lenger flee / but abode Peanda & gaue hym batayle / & Peanda was diſcomfyted & fled & came agayn to Cadwalin & ſayd that he wolde neuer holde one fote of lande of hym/but yt so were that he wolde auenge hym of Oswalde. Cadwalin lete assemble a grete hoste for to fyght with Oswalde soo that he ⁊ Peanda came to Northumberlande ⁊ gaue batayle to Oswalde/⁊ in þ same batayle was Oswalde slayne ⁊ his hed smyten of/⁊ after he was entered in þ abbaye of Berdenay/in whiche place god hath wrought for hym many a fayre myracle/bothe there ⁊ elles where. And anone Oswy his broder sesed all þ lande in to his hande þ was this Oswaldes. And þ folke of Northumberlande loued hym wonderly wel/⁊ helde hī for theyr lorde But he hadde men of his kynne worthy ynough þ wolde haue departed the lande ⁊ they warred togyder well. And for as moche as they were not stronge ynough they came to Peanda ⁊ prayed hym of helpe ⁊ socour. And behyght hym of þ lande largely vpon this couenaunt þ he wolde them gouerne ⁊ helpe ⁊ counseyle. Peanda herde theyr prayer/⁊ so spake wt Cadwalyn/that he sholde ordeyne a grete hoste ⁊ faste ordeyne hī in to Northumberlande for to fyghte with Oswy. And Oswy was a meke man ⁊ moche loued peas and charyte/⁊ prayed Peanda of loue ⁊ peas/⁊ profred hym of golde ⁊ syluer grete plente. And this Peanda was so prowde that he wolde not graūt hym peas for noo maner thynge/but for all thynge he wolde with hym fyght. Soo at þ last there was set a daye of batayle. And Oswy euer trusted in god/⁊ Peanda trusted to moche vpon pryde ⁊ vpon his hoste that he had/⁊ togyder they smote egrely/but Peanda was anone discomfyted ⁊ slayne And this was after the Incarnacyon of of our lorde Jhesu Cryste. v. C. lv. yere. And this Oswy regned. xxviii. yere. And a kynge that was called Oswyne þ was Peandas cosyn warred vpon hym/⁊ togyder they faught/but Oswy had þ victory of Oswyne/⁊ he was dyscomfyted ⁊ slayne/⁊ lyeth at Tynmouth.

¶ How kynge Cadwaldre that was Cadwalins sone regned after his fader/and was the last kynge of Brytons.

After the deth of Cadwalin regned his sone Cadwaldre wel and nobly. And his moder was þ syster of Peanda. And whan he had regned. xii. yere he fell in to a grete sykenesse/⁊ then was there a grete discorde bytwene the lordes of þ lande/þ euery of them warred vpon other. And yet in that tyme there felle so grete derth ⁊ scarsyte of corne ⁊ other vitayles in this lande þ a man myght goo iii. or. iiii. dayes fro towne to towne þ he sholde not fynde to bye for golde nor syluer breed/wyne/nor none other vitayle wherwith a man myght lyue. But onely the people lyued by rotes of herbes for other lyuynge hadde they none/so moche was it fayled all aboute. Fysshes/wylde beestes/⁊ all other thynge soo that yet to this myschaunce there fell so grete mortalyte ⁊ pestylence amonge þ people by þ corrupcion of þ ayre that þ lyuynge people suffysed not to burye the deed bodyes. For they deyed so sodeynly/bothe grete ⁊ smale/lordes ⁊ seruauntes/in etynge goynge and spekynge/they fell downe ⁊ dyed so þ neuer was herde of more sodeyne deth amonge the people. For he þ wente for to burye þ deed body/with þ same deed body was buryed. And so they þ myght flee fledde ⁊ forsoke theyr landes ⁊ houses as well for þ grete hungre derth ⁊ scarsyte of corne ⁊ other vitayle as for þ grete mortalyte ⁊ pestylence in þ lande/⁊ wente in to other landes for to saue theyr lyues ⁊ lefte þ lande all deserte and wast soo that there was noo man for to tylle ⁊ occupye the lande/so that the lande was bareyne corne & all other fruytes for defaute of tylthe/ & this myſſauenture dured .xi. yere & more/ þ no man myght ere ne ſowe.

¶ How Cadwaldre wente out of this lande in to lytell Brytayne.

CAdwaldre ſawe grete hungre mortalyte & peſtylence/ & the lande all bare & lackynge cornes & other vitaples & his folke peryſſhed & ſawe alſo þ mooſt partye of his lande all waſted & voyde of people. He appareyled hym & his folke þ were lefte a lyue & paſſed ouer in to lytell Brytayne with a lytell nauy vnto kynge Alayne þ he moche loued that was his coſyn/ & that his fader hadde moche loued in his tyme. And as they ſayled in the ſee he made moche lamentacyon/ & ſoo dyde al tho that were with hym and ſayd (Dediſti nos deus tanꝗ oues eſcarum: et in gentibus diſperſiſti nos.

AND then began Cadwaldre to cōpleyne hym to his folke pyteouſly and ſayd. Alas ſayd he to vs wretches & caytyues is ſhowe for our grete ſynnes/ þ whiche we wolde not amende vs whyle we had ſpace/ & now repentaunce is comen vpon vs thrugh myſſauenture/ whiche chaceth vs out of our reame & propre londe. And out of þ whiche ſomtyme Romayns/ Scottes/ Saxons/ neyther Danys myght not exyle vs. But what auayleth it now to vs that before tyme/ ofte tymes haue goten many other landes/ ſyth it is not the wyll of god that we abyde & dwelle in our owne lande. God that is very Juge that all thynges knoweth before er they ben done or made/ he ſeeth þ we wolde not ceſſe of our ſynnes/ & that our enmyes myght not vs nor oure lynage exyle fro & out of our reame. He wolde þ we amende vs of our folyes/ & that we ſee oure propre defautes/ & therfore hath ſhewed to vs wrath/ & wyl chaſtyſe vs of our myſdedes. Syth þ he doeth vs wout batayle or ſtrength of our enmyes by grete companyes wretchedly to leue our reame & propre lande. Torne agayne ye Romayns/ torne agayne ye Scottes/ torne ayen ye Saxons/ torne agayne ye frenſſh men. Now ſhe wexeth to you Brytayne all deſerte/ þ whiche your power myght neuer make deſert/ nor yet our power hath not put vs now in exyle/ but onely þ power of þ kynge almyghty/ whome we haue often offended by our folyes þ whiche we wolde not leue vntyll he chaſtyſed vs by dyuyne power. Amonge þ wordes & lamentacyon þ þ kynge Cadwaldre made to his folke they arryued in lytell Brytayne/ & came to kynge Aleyne. And þ kyng receyued hym wt grete Joye. And made hym to be ſerued wonder nobly. And there abode they longe tyme after. The englyſſhe people þ were lefte a lyue/ & were eſcaped þ grete hungre & mortalyte lyued in þ beſt wyſe þ they myght. And moche people ſprange & came of them. And they ſente in to Saxonye where that they were borne to theyr frendes for men/ wom̄e & chyldren to reſtore the cytees with people & the townes þ were all voyde of people/ & for to labour/ trauayle & tyll þ erth. Whan þ Saxons herde theſe tydynges/ they came in to the lande wonder thycke in grete companyes/ & herberowed them ſelfe in the contre all about where þ they wolde/ for they founde no man them for to lette. And ſoo they wexed and multyplyed gretely. And vſed the maners & cuſtomes of þ contre wherof they were come. And they vſed alſo þ lawes & langages & ſpeche of theyr owne lande þ they came fro. And alſo they chaunged all the names of cytees/ townes/ caſtelles/ & boroughes/ & gaue the names & called them as they now ben called. And they helde þ Coūtrees Baronages ⁊ lordshyps in manere as the Brytons before tyme hadde compassed them. And amonge other grete companyes that came from Germayne in to this lande / came the noble quene that was called Sexburga with men ⁊ women without nombre. And aryued in the coūtre of Northumberlande / and toke þ lande from Albion vnto Cornewayle for her ⁊ for her folke / for there was none that myght them let / for al was desolate ⁊ voyde of people / but it were a fewe poore Brytons that were lefte on mountayns ⁊ woddes vntyll that tyme. And fro that tyme forth lost the Brytons this reame for all theyr dayes. And the Englysshe people began to reygne / ⁊ departed þ lande bytwene them. And they made many kynges aboute by dyuerse partyes of þ lande as here ben diuyded. The fyrst of Westsex / the seconde Merchenryche / the thyrde Estangle / þ fourth Kent / the fyfthe Southsex. All those regned in this lande after þ cadwaldre was passed out of this lande / ⁊ dwelled in lytell Brytayne with kyng Aleyne his cosyn ⁊ true frende. And whan he had longe dwelled there / ⁊ had knowynge that þ mortalyte and pestylence was ouerpassed / ⁊ that þ lande was replenysshed agayn wͭ people he thought to torne agayne in to this lande. And prayed kynge Aleyne his cosyn of socoure ⁊ helpe þ he myght be restored agayne to his owne propre reame ⁊ fyrst dignyte. And kynge Aleyne graūted hym his askynge. Then dyde he apparayle hȳ to take his waye ⁊ viage in to this londe. And prayed god almyghty deuoutly þ he wolde make to hȳ demonstracyon / yf his prayer to this lande were to hys pleasaūce or not / for agaynst þ wyll of god almyghty he wolde no thynge doo. Whan he had thus deuoutly made his prayer / a voyce fro heuen to hym sayd. And bad hym leue that Iourney awaye in to Englande / and þ he sholde go to þ pope of Rome / for it was not þ wyll of almyghty god þ the Brytons sholde regne more in Brytayne / nor neuer recouer it vnto the tyme of the prophecy þ Merlyn sayd before be fulfylled. And þ sholde neuer be vnto the tyme were come / that the relyques of his body shall be brought fro Rome ⁊ translated in to Brytayne. And whā þ relykes of other seyntes that haue ben hyd for þ persecucyon of þ paynem folke shall be founde ⁊ openly shewed / thenne shall they recouer theyr lande agayne / þ whiche they had so longe tyme loste through theyr desertes. Whā Cadwaldre had herde this answere he merueyled gretely ⁊ tolde it to kynge Aleyne. Then kynge Aleyne dyde sende for the clergye of his lande / ⁊ made them to brynge þ storyes and prophecyes that Merlyn ⁊ Sybyll had sayd in theyr prophecyes. And whan he knewe that þ prophecye that Fesiom hadde prophecyed of the Egle / and other prophecyes accorded to þ deuyne answere þ Cadwaldre had herde. He counseyled hym ⁊ ryght faythfully desyred hym to leue his people ⁊ his nauy / and submytte hym to þ dysposycyon of god ⁊ do all that þ aungell had cōmaunded hym. Then Cadwaldre called Yuor his sone and Yuori his cosyn þ was his systers sone / and sayde to them. Ye he sayd ben my folke and my nauy that is here all redy / ⁊ passe in to Wales ⁊ be ye lordes of Brytons that no dyshonour come to them by enterrupcyon of the paynem folke for defaute of lordes. And then he hymselfe lefte his reame of Brytayne and his folke for euermore / and toke his waye vnto the pope of Rome Sergius the whiche worshypped hym moche / and so he was confessed ⁊ toke penaunce for his synnes. And he hadde not longe dwel ſo there that he not deyed ẏ. xii. Kalendes in May/the yere of grace. v.C.lxxix.

¶ How kynge Offa was ſouerayne aboue all the kynges of Englande/and how euery kynge warred vpon other.

IT befell ſo ẏ all the kynges in that tyme that were in ẏ lande/as they of Weſſex/Marchenryche/Eſtangle/of Kente/and of Southſex/and of other coſtes eche warred vpon other. And he that was mooſt myghty toke ẏ lande of hym that was mooſt feblest. But there was a kynge amonge them ẏ was called Offa/that was ſaynt Oſwaldes broder. This Offa conquerred all the kynges of ẏ lande and reygned aboue them all. And ſo grete was ẏ warre in euery coūtre bytwene kynges that no man myght wyte how the lande wente. But abbotes/pryoures/and men of relygyon wrote the lyues ⁊ dedes of kynges/how longe euery of them reygned/⁊ in what coūtre/and in what maner euery kynge deyed/and of byſſhops alſo. And therof made grete bokes and lete call them Cronycles. And ẏ good kynge Alured had that boke in his warde. And lete brynge it vnto Wyncheſtre/⁊ lete it be faſt tached to a pyler that men ſholde it not remeue/ne bere it thens/ſo ẏ euery man ſholde it ſee ⁊ there vpō loke. For therin ben ẏ lyues of all ẏ kynges ẏ euer were in Englande.

¶ How the kynge of Northumberlande Oſbryght forlaye ẏ wyfe of Buerne Bocarde through ſtrength/⁊ after this Buerne conquered the kynge with power ⁊ ſtrength.

AN thus it befell in ẏ ſame tyme that there was a kynge in Northumberlande that was called Oſbryght and ſoiourned at Yorke. And this kynge wente vpon a day in to a wodde hym for to dyſporte. And as he came agayne/he wente pryuely in to a good mannes houſe/that was called Buerne/and the good man of that place was gone that tyme to ẏ ſee. For ofttymes there he was wonte to ſpye theues and robbers that ofte tymes were wonte to come in to the lande/to robbe/brenne/and ſlee. The lady that was Buernes wyfe was a wonder fayre womā. And ẏ kyng came vnto her whan that her houſbande was abſent. And ſhe truſted none harme vnto the kynge/and welcomed hym with moche honoure and worthely hym ſerued in all thynge. Whan the kynge had eten he toke the lady by the hande and ladde her in to a chambre and ſayd. he wolde ſpeke with her in counſeyle. And all ẏ folke he made voyde fro the chambre/ſaue onely the lady and he. But the lady wyſt not wherfore he it dyd tyll he hadde done all his wyll. And whan he hadde done this dede he torned agayn to Yorke/⁊ the lady he left there ſore wepynge for the dede that ẏ kynge to her had done. And whan her lorde was come home ⁊ ſawe her wepe ⁊ ſuche ſorowe ⁊ mornynge make/he aſked her what ſhe had done/⁊ why ſhe made ſuche ſorowe. Syr ſhe ſayd/ſubtylly and falſely the kynge Oſbryght hath done me ſhame and vylanye agaynſt my wyll. And tolde hym all the trouth how ẏ kynge hadde forlayne her with ſtrength/wherfore ſhe ſayd ſhe had leuer to be deed than to lyue. Fayre loue be ſtyll ſayd he/for agaynſt ſtrength feblenesse is lytell worth/and therfore of me ſhalt thou neuer the leſſe be loued and namely for ẏ haſt tolde me the trouth. And yf almyghty god graunte to me my lyfe I ſhall ẏ auenge. This Buerne was a grete man and a myghty lorde/⁊ was well beloued ⁊ grete frendes hadde. And lefte lorde for the grettest lordes of þ londe/ ⁊ whan he made his complaynt of þ despyte that þ kynge to hym had done ⁊ sayd/ he wolde be auenged how soo euer it were. And all his frendes counseyled hym that he sholde go vnto yorke there þ þ kynge was hym to defye. And Buerne toke his meyne and came to the kynge. Whan the kynge sawe hym he called hym curteysly by name. And Buerne hym answered ⁊ to hym sayd. Syr I you defye/ and yelde vp feautees homages ⁊ landes/ ⁊ as moche as I haue holden of you/ and frome this tyme forwarde I wyll neuer of the no thynge holde. And soo he departed fro þ kynge without more speche or ony abydynge/ and toke leue of his frendes and wente in to Denmarke ⁊ complayned to the kyng Godern/ ⁊ tolde hym of þ despyte that kynge Osbryght to hym hadde done of his wyfe/ ⁊ prayed hym of socour ⁊ helpe hym for to auenge. Whan kynge Goderne of Denmarke and the Danes had herde the complaynt of Buerne/ and þ prayer that he hadde/ they were ryght wonder gladde in theyr hertes/ for as moche as they myght fynde a cause for to go in to england for to warre vpō englysshe men/ and for to auenge Buerne of the despyte that kynge Osbryght had done vnto his wyfe. And for as moche as Buerne was sybbe vnto the kynge of Denmark/ anone they lete ordeyne a grete hoste of men/ and lete ordeyne them shyppes/ and as moche as them neded for to haue to þ vyage. And whan all the hoste was redy the kynge made his two bretherne chyef captaynes/ that were noble knyghtes of body and also holde. That one was called hunga/ and that other hubba.

¶ How the Danes toke yorke/ and slewe kynge Osbryght/ and sone after slewe kynge Elle.

And all was redy the two bretherne toke leue of kynge Godern/ and wente towarde the see for to passe ouer in to Englande as fast as they myght spede. Now is Buerne so well comforted ⁊ full hyed hym wt the Danes þ they ben aryued in the North coūtre/ ⁊ come through out Holdernes/ ⁊ destroyed all the countree/ ⁊ brenned townes/ ⁊ robbed folke/ ⁊ slewe all that they myght take tyl þ they came vnto yorke. And whan kynge Osbryght sawe this come/ he toke all his peple that he had with hym/ ⁊ came oute of the cyte ⁊ faught wt them/ but noo lenger he ne had ayenst them/ ⁊ moche of þ peple that there was were slayne on bothe partyes. And kynge Osbryght hymselfe there was slayne/ ⁊ þ cyte anone was taken ⁊ þ Danes went in. ¶ And there was also an other kyng in Northumberlande that Buernes frendes had chosen ⁊ helde hym for kynge a man þ was called Elle/ for as moche as they wolde not to kynge Osbryght be attendaunt/ for þ despyte þ he had done vnto Buerne theyr cosyn. It befel thus þ kynge Elle was gone in to þ wodde hym for to dysporte/ ⁊ of venyson some he had taken. And as he sate in the wod at mete to a knyght he sayd. We haue well spedde ⁊ moche venyson taken. And wt þ worde came in a man ⁊ to hym sayd/ yf ye soo moche of venyson haue wonne/ an hondred tymes more ye haue lost/ for all this coūtre þ Danes haue goten ⁊ taken þ cyte of yorke/ ⁊ ayenst you shall it holde/ þ neuer ye shal come therin and for so moche they haue slayne kynge Osbryght. Whan kynge Elle herde these wordes he lete assemble all þ folke of the countree/ and assembled all the folke that he myght haue. And he wolde haue goten the towne of yorke with strength/ but the Danes came out anone ⁊ gaue hym a stronge batayle. And slewe the kynge

Elle and the mooſt parte of the people ẏ he had brought with hym. And the ſame place there they were ſlayne ſhal euermore be called Elle croſſe/ ⁊ that place is a lytyll from yorke. ¶ And then ceſſed the Danes neuer/ tyll they hadde conquered all Northumberlande. And in ẏ coũtre they made wardeyns/ ⁊ went ferther in to the land/ ⁊ toke Notyngham. And there they abode all the wynter/ doynge all ẏ ſoꝛow that they myght. ¶ And after whan Somer tyme came they remeued from Notyngham ⁊ came in to Nycholl ⁊ Lyndeſey/ ⁊ to Holand/ foꝛ no man myght them withſtande/ ſo moche power ⁊ ſtrengthe they had.

¶ How ſaynt Edmonde the kynge was martred.

THe Danes had paſſed ſo ferre frõ coũtree to coũtrees bꝛennyng and robbynge ẏ they came to Thetfoꝛde. And in ẏ coũtree they founde a cryſten kynge/ ẏ moche loued god ⁊ his werkes/ ẏ was called Edmonde. And he was a kynge of Northfolke ⁊ Southfolke. This kynge ſaynt Edmonde oꝛdeyned as moche folke as he myght/ ⁊ fought with the Danes/ but he ⁊ his folke were dyſcomfited/ and the kynge hymſelfe was dryuen vnto the caſtell of Framelyngham. And the Danes hym purſued ⁊ came vnto the ſame caſtell. And whan kynge Edmonde ſawe ẏ the caſtel myght not withſtande them/ he came agaynſt them/ with whome ẏ Danes dyd ſpeke fyrſt/ aſkyng hym where kynge Edmonde was. Now forſoth ſaid he whan I was in ẏ caſtell there was the kynge. And whan I wente oute of the caſtell/ he wente out alſo. And whether he ſhall eſcape or dye/ at goddes wyll muſt it all be. ¶ Whan ſaynt Edmond had named god/ by ẏ wordes they wyſt well that it was hymſelfe. And anone Hubba/ and Hungar toke hym and ſayd/ that he ſholde god foꝛſake and al cryſten lawes/ as other dyuers had done befoꝛe him. And ſaynt Edmonde ſayd that he wolde neuer/ but rather he wolde ſuffre dethe foꝛ gods loue ⁊ his lawes alſo. Then toke they kynge Edmonde and bounde hym to a tree/ and made theyꝛ archers ſhote at hym wͭ arowes/ tyll that his body ſtycked as ful of arowes as an oꝛchen ful of pꝛyckes. But foꝛ all ẏ payne that they hym dyd he wolde neuer foꝛſake god And in the ſame toꝛment and payne he dyed/ and betoke his ſoule to almyghty god And whan they ſawe that he was deed they ſmote of his hede. And in this maner as ye haue herde/ was ſaynt Edmonde martred.

¶ How Hubba and Hungar toke ẏ towne of Redynge.

SO whan ſaynt Edmond was martred Hungar and hubba departed thens with all the Danes vnto Redynge And as they wente thederwarde they ſyſed and bꝛente townes ⁊ cytees/ ⁊ ſlewe all cryſten people ẏ wold not foꝛſake god ⁊ caſt downe chirches ⁊ came to Redynge and toke ẏ towne/ ⁊ there helde them tyll that the kynge Edelf of weſtſex came theder with all his power foꝛ to take the Cytees. Then came out the Danes foꝛ to gyue batayll to kyng Edelf/ ⁊ at that batayl was ſlayne an Erle of the Danes ẏ whiche was called Sydꝛak. Upon ẏ moꝛow came kynge Eldꝛed and his bꝛoder Alured with a myghty and a grete power of folke. And the kynge Edelf came agayne the whiche had foughten ẏ day befoꝛe/ to that batayll. And then the Danes came out manly foꝛ to fyght with them al thꝛe And that batayl was wonderful ſtronge Foꝛ many a man was there ſlayne/ and the Danes that day had ẏ vyctory. And the kynge Eldred & hys brother Alured ẏ daye were dyscomfyted. But the fourth daye after ẏ Danes & ẏ Englysh fought togyder another tyme upon Elkedene & there was slayn a kynge of Denmarke ẏ was called Basyn & foure erles of grete power. And ẏ day the Danes had shame / for they were dryuen to Englyssede.

¶ And ẏ .xv. daye after the Danes & the Englysshmen fought togyder at Basynge & there were ẏ Englysshmen dyscomfyted. And from thens a Dane ẏ was called Rosyne went to Redyng wt his hoost & dystroyed al ẏ he myght take. And king Eldred fought wt hym / but he was so wouded ẏ he deyed. And he regned but .v. yere / and lyeth at Wymborne.

* * *

¶ Circa annū dñi.iiii.C.xlix.

Leo the fyrst was Emperour after Marcianus .xvii. yere. In his tyme were the Rogacyon dayes ordeyned afore the assencyon of saynt Mamert bysshop of Vienne. The pope of Rome hight Leo a noble clerke / & with hym had many clerkes. ¶ Hillariꝰ was pope after leo .vii. yere. This man ordeynd ẏ no bisshop sholde ordeyne his successary (ut ps. viii. q.i. ¶ Simplicius was pope after hym he ordeyned ẏ no clerke sholde take noo garment to be clothed in after the seculer maner of a laye man by the reason of his offyce & benefyce. ¶ Zeno was Emperoure after Leo .xv. yere / & this man was an herytyke & cruell agaynst crysten men. And in this mannes dayes ẏ bodyes of saynt Mathewe the euangelist & saynt Barnabe were founde / & with them the gospell ẏ saynt Mathewe wrote. About this tyme there was a certayne comyn woman bare .vii. chyldren at one byrth / of ẏ whiche one was made after kynge of Lombardy

¶ Felix the thyrde was pope after Simplicius this yere & .viii. monethes. This man ordeyned ẏ respyte sholde be gyuen to a man ẏ was accused ẏ he myght auyse hym how he sholde answere. And ẏ the Juges & the accusers shold be suche & ẏ they sholde take all suspeccyon and spot. ¶ Gelasius a Romayne was pope after Felix .v. yere / this man ordeyned ẏ canon of the masse with ẏ preface / ympnus / tractes / orysons / as saynt Ambrose made the. And that ordres sholde be gyuen foure tymes in ẏ yere. ¶ Anastasius was Emperoure after zeno .xxvii. yere / and he was a cursed man & an herytyke / & hatefull to god & man. And he was slayn with lyghtnynge. And in his tyme deyed saynt Patryk the fyrst bysshop of Irlande / in ẏ .C.xxii. yere of his aege And his felowe was the abbot of Columba & saynt Brygida whõ saynt Patryk made a none. And they were buryed in one tombe / and at dyuers tymes / & this is the Epitaphi (Hii tres i gelido: tumulo tumulantur in uno. Brigida patricius: atq; columba pius) ¶ Anastasius a Romayne was pope after Gelasius two yere & thre monethes. He ordeyned ẏ no preest for wrath nor hate sholde leue of to say his dyuyne seruyce in ẏ chirche / except the masse And he cursed the Emperour Anastasiꝰ / for he was an heretike And it is wryten of hym ẏ afterwarde he torned hym towarde to ẏ opynyon of the Emperour. And he is called the seconde euyl famed pope ẏ is in (Catholico pontificali) & afore hỹ was Liberiꝰ famed in heresy.

¶ Anno dñi.iiii.C.lxxxiiii.

Symachꝰ was pope after hym .xv. yere & with hym was ordeyned a nother pope ẏ was called Laurencius / & bytwyxt them was a grete dyssencyon & they bothe put them to the Jugement of dyſſencyon. And they bothe put them to the Iugement of Theodoric the kyng/ ⁊ he iuged ẏ he ẏ was fyrſt ordeyned and ẏ mooſt men of ẏ chirche helde with ſholde be pope. And Symmachus preualed ẏ whiche loued ẏ clergy ⁊ poore men/ ⁊ for Paſcaſius ẏ deaken Cardinall helde ayenſt Symmachus with ẏ parte of Laurence to his dethe. Therfore he was put to ẏ paynes of purgatorye to kepe ẏ bathes after his dethe/ as Gregorye ſayth in his boke of Dialogis. This man ordeyned ẏ (Gloria in excelſis) ſholde be ſayd euery Sonday and feeſtes of martyrs.

¶ Nota That Englonde was longe tyme cryſtened afore Fraunce.

CLodoueus the fyrſt cryſten kynge of Fraūce was this ſame tyme baptyſed of ſaynt Remigio/ ⁊ he had a cryſtē woman to his wyfe/ ⁊ ſhe meued hī many tymes to the fayth ⁊ ſayd. He ſhold be fortunable yf he wolde torne/ ⁊ ſo he was a vyctour after. ¶ Hormiſda was pope after Symach⁹.ix.yere. This man was of grete charyte to poore men/ gyuyng many ornamentes to chirches/ ⁊ reconſyled ẏ Grekes ẏ were curſed for hereſy. ¶ Iuſtin⁹ was Emperour after Anaſtaſi⁹.ix. yere a very cryſten man. And all ẏ euer the Emperour Anaſtaſius hadde done agaynſt ẏ chirche/ he reuoked/ and obeyed the pope Hormiſda/ ⁊ called agayn ẏ byſſhops ẏ were exyled by his predeceſſours ¶ Priſcianus grāmaticus was this tyme. And this yere the whiche is the.lxxi. fro the comynge of the Saxons/ began the kyngdom of weſtſaxon/ and Cerdico was kynge. ¶ Iohānes was pope after Hormiſda thre yere and.ix.monthes And Theodericus the kynge of ytaly an heretyke toke the pope with other Senatours and ſent them to the Emperoure Iuſtinus determynynge ẏ ⁊ he wolde not lete the heretykes be in peas he ſholde ſlee all the cryſten folke in ytaly. And after he toke pope Iohan ⁊ Symachū patriciū and Boyciū the Senatours ⁊ ſlewe them in pryſon. But Boys defended hī by ẏ reaſon of thauctoryte of ẏ Senatours/ ⁊ he ſente hym to the cyte of Papy for perpetuel exyle/ wher he made ẏ boke de ꝯſolatione philoſophie. And at ẏ laſte ẏ coūtre of Mediolanēſ he cauſed Boys throte to be cut/ and ſo he dyed. ¶ Felix pope ſucceded Iohn foure yere. This man cōmaunded that ſyke men ſholde be aneled for ẏ dethe/ but cryſt ordeyned it fyrſt. ¶ Iuſtinian⁹ was Emperour.xxxviii.yere/ this man drewe the lawe of the Romayns out of almooſt.ii.M.bokes/ and.iii.C.verſes ouer longe ⁊ accordyng in to one volume of.xii.bokes/ ⁊ called it Iuſtinian. He made alſo ẏ Digeſtes ⁊ deuyded them in to thre bokes. ¶ Bonifaci⁹ the ſeconde was pope after Felix two yere/ ⁊ lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Iohānes ẏ ſeconde was pope after Bonifaci⁹/ ⁊ this man had a grete ſtryf wᵗ Iuſtian⁹ thēperour/ wheder ẏ Cryſt was of.ii.natures or one. the pope ſayd/ he had two natures. One of god/ ⁊ an other of man. The Emperoure ſayd/ eyther cōſent to vs/ or ẏ ſhalt go in to perpetuall exyle. The pope anſwered. I deſyre to come to Iuſtian⁹ ẏ mooſt cryſten Emperoure/ but as me ſemeth I haue foūde Dyocleſian the perſecutour of cryſten men. But certaynly I drede not thy malyce/ ne I fere not thy thretnȳges. Thē thēperour meked hȳſelfe ⁊ fell downe to the groūde ⁊ aſked mercy ⁊ abſolucyon.

¶ Anno dñi.v.C.xxxiiii.

AGapitus a confeſſour was pope after Iohn two yere/ this Agapitus tourned Iuſtinianus frome erroure faſly of the heretykes. ¶ This man ordeyned that proceſſyon ſholde be done ẏ ſondayes / ⁊ then he deyed at Conſtantynople. ¶ Syluerius a martyr was pope after this man thre yere he was exyled fro cryſten fayth/and ſlayne by the procuroure of Theodory. For he wold not reſtore the byſſhop of Athenes an heretike to his benefyce agayne. ¶ Virgilius was pope after hym. xvii. yere. And he entred euyl into his benefyce/but he gouerned hẏ wel. And he ſuffred his perſecuſion pacyently And he was exyled fro Rome. And at the laſt after greate paſſyon of Theodory in Conſtantynople deyed.

¶ Sinodꝰ quarta Conſtantinopolitana contra Theodoꝛ ⁊ alios hereticos alios fuit iſto tempoꝛe. Iſta Sinodꝰ dampnauit hereſim Theodoꝛi. q̇ dixit aliū eſſe deū verū. et aliū xp̄m. Et q̄ beata virgo non ſit dei genitrix. ſed hominis tantū.

¶ Pelagius was Pope after Virgilius foure yere and. x. monthes. This man ordeyned that heretykes/Sciſmatykes ⁊ Renegates / ſholde be punyſſhed by ẏ ſeculer power. ¶ Johannis the thyrd was pope after this man. xiii. yere. Of this ſame man lytell is wrytten but ẏ he reſtored the chircheyerde of the appoſtles Phylip ⁊ Jacob. ¶ Juſtinus ẏ ſeconde after Juſtynyan was Emperoure. xi. yere. This man dyſpyſed poore men. He robbed the Senatours. He was gyuen to all coueytouſnes/ſoo that he made cheſtes of yron for to kepe his money in. Then anone he fell in hereſye/⁊ wexed out of his mynde And then was choſe Tyberiꝰ a good mā for to gouerne ẏ comyn people. ¶ Tyberiꝰ ẏ ſeconde was Emperour after Juſtinus. vii. yere This man was a vertuous man. He gaue innumerable good to poore men. In ſo moche ẏ his wyfe chyd often with hym ⁊ ſayd he caſt awaye ẏ goodes of ẏ Empyre as ſtones And he anſwered agayn ⁊ ſaid. I truſt in god ẏ our cheſtes ſhall neuer lacke of moneye / and we put treaſoure in to heuen. ¶ And vpon a certayne day whan he wente by his palays at Conſtantynople/he ſawe in ẏ marbyl pament a croſſe grauen/⁊ thought it ſholde not be troden vppon/⁊ commaunded to take it vp. For the croſſe ought to be put in the hertes of faythfull men / ⁊ there he fonde ineſtymable treaſoure of golde. He ſubdued Perſes/⁊ deyed bleſſydly. ¶ Benedictus was pope after Johānes foure yere. This man ſuffred grete perſecucyō of hongre/peſtylence and enmyes. This man brought many a thouſand quarters of whete from Egypt / whan Rome was beſyeged by kynge Albanack / ⁊ almoſt loſt for vytayle. Wherfore they wrote on his graue this Epytaphe. Magna tuis monimenta pater benedicte reliquis. Virtutū titulꝰ ⁊ decꝰ atq; valoꝛ. ¶ Pelagius was pope after Benedictus. x. yere. In his tyme Rome was beſyeged by ẏ Lombardes/⁊ lytel he did in his days ¶ Mauricius was Emperoure after Tyberius. xxi. yere. This mā was a very cryſten mā ⁊ ſubdued Perſas ⁊ Armenias/⁊ in ẏ latter ende of his dayes / he dyſpyſed ſaynt Gregory/⁊ entented to haue ſlayne hym. And then appered a man in Rome/ clothed in a relygyous habyte holdyng a naked ſwerd in his hande/⁊ cryed about ẏ cyte in this wyſe. The Emperour ſhall be dyſtroyed. The whiche the Emperour herd. And he corrected hymſelf of his treſpace/and prayed to god to withdrawe his ſentence from hym. To whome our lorde appered in his ſlepe and ſayd. Wylt thou that I ſpare the nowe or in tyme to come And he was a louer of wretches and ſaid gyue me here my rewarde. Thenne was he Emperoure after many a daye. And whan he ſholde haue corrected his knyghtes for the extorcyon that they dyd / they aſked hym why that he wolde not paye them theyr wages. And ſo they fell at varyaunce/ ⁊ choſe Foca for to be Emperour ⁊ ſlewe hym ⁊ his thre ſones. ¶ This tyme ſaynt Auſtyn came in to Englonde ⁊ ordeyned two Archebyſſhops/ that is to ſaye of London/ ⁊ of yorke/ by the cõmaũdement of ſaynt Gregory. And remẽbre ẏ many tymes is made mencõn of dyuers regyons ⁊ coũtrees/ that oftyme they haue be torned to the fayth. For alwaye the fayth abode not in them for dyuers cauſes So it is of Englonde/ Fraunce/ Perſia/ Iewry. And in this thynge Rome was preuyleged/ for the fayth of Peter neuer fayled. Focas was Emperour after Mauryce his mayſter/ whome he ⁊ other ſlewe/ ⁊ bycauſe he was euyll he ended noughte For in his dayes ẏ Romayns fought ſtrõgly ayenſt the Perſees/ ⁊ ẏ Romayns were dyſcomfyted ⁊ loſte many a prouynce/ And at ẏ laſt he was ſlayn by Heraclyus For as he dyd to other ſo was he done to.

¶ Anno dñi. v.C.lxxxiiii.

GRegory the fyrſt a Romayn and a monke was pope after Pelagius xiii. yere. This man was called Gregori⁹ magn⁹ for many thynges ẏ he exceded in he paſſed other men in power/ in ryches in vertue/ in nobleneſſe/ in wyſedome/ in holyneſ/ in fame/ ⁊ in experience. And vnder this man euyl thynges paſt were ceaſed. And many a noble boke he wrote to ẏ Incomparable profyte of all holy chirche he was one of the pryncypal doctours of all the foure doctours of ẏ chirche. This man forſoth alone with ſaynt Fabiane after ſaynt Peter/ was choſen of god in all the electyons of the popes of Rome. Many thynges he ordeyned in the chirche/ as is ſhewed in his regyſtre. Deus in adiutorium/ for to be ſayde the begynnynge of ẏ houres he cõmaũded to be ſayd. He renewed ⁊ made all the offyces of the chirche in a fayre ⁊ a more compendyous maner the whiche abydeth yet vnto this daye/ ⁊ is called Gregorianus. And ſhortly for to conclude on this holy man/ mannes tongue can not expreſſe lyghtly ẏ louynges of this man/ what in wrytynges/ ⁊ alſo in exaumple of vertuous dedes. ¶ Saninianus was pope after Gregory one yere ⁊. v. monethes. This man ordeyned ẏ ryngynge of belles at ẏ houres of ẏ day. But this man backbyted ſaỹt Gregory for his lyberalyte to pore men. And thought he ſawe ſaynt Gregory rebuke hym thryes for it. And ẏ fourth tyme he lay in his bed ⁊ thought ſaynt Gregory ſmote hym on the heed/ ⁊ he waked ⁊ dyed anone. This was the thyrde pope amonge all ẏ popes that is noted to dye a dredefull deth ¶ Bonifacius the thyrde was pope after Saninianus. viii. monethes. He ordeyned ẏ none but whyte clothes ſholde be put on the aulter. ¶ Bonifacius the fourth was pope foure yere and. viii. monethes/ this mã purchaced of ẏ Emperour Focas ẏ ẏ chirche of ſaynt Peter of Rome ſholde be the heed chirche of all this worlde. For afore Conſtantynople was ẏ heed chirche. Alſo he gate lycence that the chirche called Panton/ the whiche was dedycate to the honour of Neptunus and other fals gods/ where criſten men many tymes were ſlayne of deuylles myghte be dedycate to the worſhyp of al the ſayntes in heuen. This man ordeyned ẏ mõkes myght vſe the offyce of prechynge/ cryſtenynge/ and confeſſyng. ¶ Heraclius was Emperour after Focas. xiiii. yere And in ẏ thyrd yere of his regne. Coſdras the kynge of Perſe brent Iheruſalem and other worſhypfull places. Zachary the Patryarke with other moche people he toke in Captyuyte The parte of the holy croſſe/ the whiche

Cleyne lefte there he take with hym in to his contrees. But the .xii. yere of Heracliꝰ Coſdras was ſlayne of Heracliꝰ/ and the croſſe was brought agayne/ yͤ people were delyuered. And whan Heracliꝰ wolde haue entred the cyte proudely/ the yates of yͤ cyte by power of god ſhytte theſelfe/ & yͤ Emperoure meked hym to god aboue & yͤ yates opened. And than was the feeſt of yͤ exaltacõn of yͤ croſſe made. ¶ Deus dedit was pope after Bonifaciꝰ thre yere this was an holy man. For on a certayne daye whan he kyſſed a lepre/ anone the lepre was hole. ¶ This tyme a Cyteȝyn of London thrugh the mocyon of Ethelbryght buylded a chyrche of ſaynt Peter in the weſt parte of London/ in a place yͭ was called Thorneye.

¶ Circa annũ dñi. vi.C.xliiii.

BOnifacius yͤ fyfth was pope after Deꝰ dedit fyue yere. The whiche ordeyned that no mã ſholde be taken out of yͤ chyrcheyerde. And lytel elles of hym is wryten.

¶ Nota Machomitum.

MAchomite yͤ duke of Sarraſyns and Turkes was this tyme. And he was yͤ dyſceyuer of al yͤ worlde/ a falſe prophete/ the meſſẽger of the deuyll. The forgoer of Antecryſt/ the fulfyller of hereſye/ & of all fals men the merueylest. Of whome the domynacion thus began/ ¶ There was a certayne famous clerke at Rome/ & coude not ſpede in his maters that he deſyred to haue ſpede in. Therfore he ſcorned from Rome ouer the ſee/ & procured many a mã to haue gone with hym. Amonge whome was this Machomite a grete man of myght. And this clerke promyſed hym to make hym duke of yͤ countree yf he wolde be gouerned after hym. ¶ This clerke noryſſhed a douue/ & put al the corne yͭ the douue ete in Machomitis ere/ & ſo this douue had neuer no mete but in his ere. The forſaid clerke on a day called yͤ people & warned them to cheſe ſuche a prynce as yͤ holy ghoſt wolde ſhewe to them in lykneſſe of a douue. And anone this clerke ſecretly lete this douue flee yͤ whiche after his olde cuſtome came to Machomite and put his byll in his eere. Whan yͤ people ſawe this/ anone he was choſen duke of that people of Coroſanie/ he ſayd he was yͤ very prophete of god./ Then he made a boke of his lawe/ yͭ was called Alkaron. But he wrote it by Informacyon of thre of his mayſters/ in whom the deuyll mynyſtred yͤ auctoryte & the cõnynge. The fyrſt mayſter was a Jewe a grete aſtronomyer & a Nygromancer. the .ii. was Johan de Anthiochia. The thyrd was Sergiꝰ an heretyke. And theſe thre made an vngracyous lawe & an vnhappy And what ſomeuer was harde of byleue/ and noyous to doo/ they lefte that out of the lawe/ and they put that thyng in the lawe the whiche the worldly men were redy and prone to do. That is to ſay. Glotony/ lechery/ rapyne/ and ſuche other. And alſo this Machomyte ordeyned yͭ a man ſholde haue as many wyues as he myght occupye and fynde/ and refuſe them twyes or thryes/ or foure tymes & take theym agayne. And many merueylous and fals thynges he made in his lawe/ the whiche were to long to reherſe here. But they be playne in his boke of Alkaron. And certes he wryte in his boke that our lady ſpake to Machomyte his prophete/ ſayenge on this wyſe/ or on this. ¶ Thus by his fals meanes he deceyued yͤ Arabye people. And whan his mayſters & he had made theyr boke yͭ was ſo delectable the wryter it [illegible] boke wt letters of gold [illegible] [illegible] and all moſt with the bo[illegible] of Machomite was [illegible]/

And there pryuely he tyed this boke of ÿ lawe that he had made about the camels necke/ and put his camell forth on a tyme in a felde afore daye/ and this camell Joped in his lybertee/ for he was neuer loſe afore. And he wolde ſuffre no mã to come and touche hym. And ſo there was a grete fame of ſuche a camell/ and all the people came to ſe hym. Amonge whom was this Machomyte. But whan the camell ſawe hym that hadde fedde hym alwaye Anone he came vnto hym. And he hadde taught this Camell afore tyme to falle downe on his knees and lycke his handes And ſo he dyde afore all that people. ¶ The people then cryed and ſayd/ ÿ there was a very enſample that he was ÿ true prophete of god. Then they prayed Machomyte to open that holy boke with his holy handes the whiche was ſente from heuen for euermore to be kepte. In the whiche boke is ſhewed how the people ſhall worſhyp god. And machomyte ſayd/ this boke was wryten with aungels handes/ And by theſe falſe meanes he torned to his lawe all ÿ londe of Perſe/ and all the Eſt Imperyall agaynſt Heraclium the Emperour. And he occupyed vnto ÿ ende of Alexandre and Egypte. Libia. Arabia ⁊ Siria. Thenne after he enfected all Affrycam. And but ÿ grace of god withſtode hȳ he had enfected al Spayne ⁊ Fraũce. And many other thynges he dyde whiche were to moche to wryte in this boke.

Onſtantyne the thyrde ÿ ſone of of Heraclij was Emperour .xxvij. yere. This Conſtantyne was a grete tyraunt and a cursed man/ and an herytyke falſe/ ſubtyl and odyous to cryſten men For he gaue no place to pope Martyne/ And he ledde a grete hoſte agaynſt ÿ Sarrazyns. And there he loſte the felde/ ⁊ fled into Rome. And honourably was receyued of ÿ pope Vitellianus/ ⁊ other of the cyte. And he rewarded not thẽ lyke after theyr merytes as a prynce ſholde haue done. But vſed forth tyrannye and hereſye. Wherfore at the laſt he was ſlayne of his owne knyghtes in a bath/ ÿ whiche wolde no lenger ſuffre his tyrannye. And ſoo he wretchedly lyued/ ⁊ dyed vnhappely.

¶ Martin⁹ ÿ fyrſt was pope after Theodor. vi. yere. This Martinus was a very holy mã/ ⁊ ſtrongely ſtroue for ÿ fayth of god. And whã he ſange maſſe on a certayne day at the awter there purſued hȳ to ſlee hym a man that was called Spatarius of Olymphe. And whan he wolde haue ſmyten hym/ he was blynde ſodaynly. This ſame man called a Synodi in ÿ cyte of Rome/ and he dampned Syrum/ Alexandrũ/ Sergiũ/ Pyrũ/ ⁊ Paulũ heretykes. Wherfore Conſtantyne the Emperour exyled hym/ and he dyed a ſaynt.

¶ Eugenius a Romayne was pope after Martyne almooſt thre yere/ ⁊ was an holy man/ but of hym lytell actes ben wryten ¶ Vitellian⁹ was pope after hȳ .xiiii. yere. This man made the ſonge that the Romayns vſe/ ⁊ accorded it alſo with the organes. And he alſo had ÿ grace of themperour/ the whiche was wrothe with his predeceſſours. Neuertheleſſe afterward he ſtode not in his cõcorde. Ne hytherto I coude not fynde that euer ÿ chyrche of Rome had fully after ÿ deth of Conſtantyne ÿ myghty/ ÿ lordſhyp of ÿ cyte ⁊ of other the whiche he gaue to the chyrche.

¶ Anno dñi. vi.C.xliiij.

Adeodatus a romayne was pope after Vitellian⁹ .iiij. yere/ ⁊ in his dayes was tranſlated ÿ body of saynt Benedictus/ with the body of ſaynt Scolaſtica his ſyſter fro the hylle of Caſſin vnto ÿ monaſtery of Floriacens vpon Lure lian. ❡ Conſtantyne the fourth was Emperour after his fader conſtantyne yͤ curſed man. This Conſtantyne was a good man ⁊ hated heretykes ouer all thynge/ yͤ chyrche he repeyred/ ⁊ grace he reconcyled agayne to the chyrche of Rome/ ⁊ he with yͤ pope gadred togyder yͤ .vi. generall Synodus/ in the whiche was graunted to preeſtes of Grece/ for to vſe theyr leful wyues ⁊ to the preeſtes of the Eeſt for cauſe of grete hete/ but not to thoſe of yͤ weſt party by no meanes. For they admytted chaſtyte in yͤ tyme of ſaynt Gregory. And euery mā may auertyſe ⁊ pondre how moche yͤ goodneſſe of a prynce is worthe to the quyete of the chyrche/ ⁊ to yͤ promocyon of yͤ fayth/ and alſo yͤ contrary/ how moche yͤ malyce of a prynce hurteth that thynge. These two Cōſtantyns the fader ⁊ yͤ ſone ſhewed openly. For in yͤ faders dayes the chyrche neuer had reſt/ and in the ſones tyme it was quyete. Yet neuertheles our lorde ſuffred the Sarraſyns and yͤ Bulgars to entre in this Emperours lande/ that he them myght not withſtande/ but that he made peas with them ⁊ payed to them yerely a truage/ ſo myghtely preuayled that curſed ſecte of Machomyte/ and after he dyed bleſſydly. ❡ Nota that there were .vi. general Synodus/ ⁊ mooſt pryncypall of the whiche the auctoryte is equall to yͤ goſpell for yͤ trouthe of yͤ goſpell is declared by them agaynſt the .vi. pryncypall herreſyes the whiche ſtrongely troubled yͤ chyrche/ for the ſubtylyte of thoſe heretykes to dyſceyue ſymple men. ❡ This tyme dyed ſaynt Cedde of Lychefelde/ the thyrde yere of his byſſhopryche. ❡ Donus a Romayne was pope after Adeodatus thre yere. Of this man lytell is wryten. ❡ Bonifacius was pope after hym/ and lytell of hym is wryten/ but that he lyued lyke a preeſt. ❡ Agatho was pope after hym/ ⁊ he was a very holy man. For on a daye whan he kyſſed a lepre/ the lepre anone was made hole. Iſte et de conſenſu principis iuſſit celebrari ſeptā ſinodū apud ꝯſtantinopolim. CC.lxxx. epoꝝ. in qua aſſerūt duas naturas et duas voluntates eſſe in xpo. ❡ Leo the .ii. was pope after Agatho .iii. yere/ this Leo was an holy man ⁊ ſuffyciently taughte in latyn ⁊ greke/ this man ordeyned yͭ the pax ſholde be gyuen after Agnꝰ dei/ ⁊ dyed a bleſſyd man. ❡ Benedictꝰ the ſeconde was pope after Leo almooſt thre yere. This mā about all thynge was vertuous ⁊ his name accorded to his dedes. And in his tyme was grete peſtylence. ❡ Iuſtinianꝰ the .ii. was Emperour this tyme/ and he was a very good man/ ⁊ prudēt ⁊ a large/ ⁊ he encreaced yͤ Empyre of Rome myghtely/ but he chaunged the offyce of the chyrche ouer moche. Many lawes he made/ and after was not good/ he intended to haue let yͤ decrees of the .vi. Synodus/ wherfore yͤ .x. yere of his Empyre he was taken of Leo yͤ prynce of Patricio ⁊ Tyberio/ and they cut of his noſe ⁊ his tongue ⁊ exyled hȳ to Cherſonā. There was then turbacyon in the chyrche for ſtryfe ⁊ heretykes. And knowe al men whā varyaūce falleth betwixt grete lordes/ then errours ben multeplyed/ for there is no man correcteth them/ therfore yͭ is oftentyme proued in yͤ chyrche. Then after fell a varyaunce betwixt Leo ⁊ Tyberio. And Tyberio preuayled ⁊ he exyled Leo/ ⁊ cut of his noſe the .iii. yere of his reygne/ ⁊ reygned for hym. Iuſtinianus fled to the Sarraſyns ⁊ yͤ Bulgars/ the whiche reſtored hym agayne to his Empyre/ ⁊ ſlewe Leo ⁊ Tyberio/ the whiche fauoured heretykes. Then this ſame Iuſtinianꝰ retourned hymſelfe to the chyrche of god/ and had grete expectacion. But he venged hȳ to cruelly on his aduerſaryes/ ſoo yͭ he wolde haue ſlayne theyr Innocēt chyldrē. Therfore he was ſlayne with his ſone of Phylyp whome he exyled.

¶ Anno dn̄i. vi. C. lxxxiiii.

IOhannes ẏ fyfthe was pope after Benedictꝰ one yere/ he was a good man/ but he deceſſed anone. ¶ Zeno was pope after hym. And he was a very holy mā/ for he wolde not medle wᵗ ſeculer maters. And in beaute he was an aungell/ quyete in vertues/ ⁊ meke in ſoule/ ⁊ very demure in lāgage of his relygyous lyf this man was choſen at ẏ laſte with one accorde of ẏ chyrche ⁊ laye men. But there was a grete dyſtynccyon/ for the Clergy entēded to haue choſe Perys ẏ archebyſſhop. And the hoſte of alye men wolde haue had Theodorꝰ a preeſt. But at the laſt the holy ghoſt torned ẏ wyl of all this people in this holy man. ¶ Sergiꝰ was pope. ix. yere. This mā was vertuous ⁊ cōmendable in his lyfe. And in his clergy was a grete diſcorde was/ for one partye of ẏ clergy choſe Theodorꝰ/ ⁊ an other partye Paſchalem. But as oure lorde wolde at ẏ laſt they turned all to this man. This man tranſlated ẏ body of ſaynt Leo. He alſo founde a grete parte of ẏ holy croſſe by myracle. And he criſtened Cadwaldre the laſt kynge of Brytayne. He cōmaunded (Agnꝰ dei) to be ſayd or ſonge thryes at maſſe/ ⁊ deceſſed bleſſydly. ¶ Nota.

¶ Saynt beda ẏ worſhypfull preeſt was his tyme a grete mā of fame in England the whiche was take the. vii. yere of his age to Benedicte ẏ abbot Gyrwiēſi monaſtery to be taught. And thenne after to Colfrido the abbot after ẏ deth of Benedicte. And at the. xix. yere of his age he was made Deken of the byſſhop of Yorke. And at. xxx. yere he was made preeſt/ in ẏ whiche yere he began to wryte. He cōtynued all the tyme of his lyfe in ẏ monaſtery in gyuȳge his labours to wrytyng ⁊ ſcrypture to be expowned. He made. lxxviii. bokes/ ẏ whiche he nombreth in ẏ ende of his englyſſhe boke. This mā was euer in labour eyther in prayer or in ſyngynge dayly in ẏ chyrche/ or to lerne/ or teche or wryte. For whiche thȳge men may Juge by reaſon that he was neuer at Rome/ all though ſome ſaye he wente to Rome that he myght ſe that his bokes accorded wᵗ ẏ doctryne of ẏ holy chyrche. But it was certayne that he was blynde and wente to preche/ ⁊ had a ſeruaunt ẏ was not good/ ⁊ made hym to preche to a myghty multytude of ſtones ⁊ ſayd that they were men. And whā all his ſermon was done/ the ſtones anſwered and ſayd Amen. But ẏ he wente to Rome thryes/ and foūde wryten thre arres/ thre effes/ ⁊ expowned thē/ it was neuer foūde in no boke of auctoryte. There was after ẏ tal kynge of ẏ people ſuche a wrytynge on the gates of Rome (R R R. F F F) And ſuche an expoſycyon (Regna Rome Ruent. Ferro Flāma Fame) But it is certayne ẏ Beda was deſyred to come to Rome by ẏ wrytynge of Sergius ẏ pope to Colfrido his abbot. And this Beda tranſlated ẏ goſpell of ſaynt Johan in to Englyſſhe tonge/ and diſceſſed bleſſydly. The ſame ſayth ẏ now he lyeth at deuelyn wᵗ ſaynt Cuthberte/ ⁊ there is buryed wᵗ hym the knowlege of the dedes of Englande almooſt to the conqueſt. ¶ Leo the ſeconde was Emperour/ ⁊ lytel of hym is wryten ¶ Liberiꝰ was emperour after hym. vii yere/ he roſe agaynſt Leo and entred his kyngdome/ and kepte hym in pryſon as longe as he reygned. In this tyme Juſtinianus the ſeconde whiche in olde tyme was exyled to Cerſonam openly ſayd he wolde recouere his Empyre agen. Wherfore the people of that countre for ẏ loue of Libert⁹ were about to ſlee ẏ Iuſtinianus. Wherfore he fled to ẏ prynce of Thurcor ⁊ wedded his ſyſter. And through helpe of his broder ⁊ ẏ Bulgars he recouered his Empyre ⁊ ſlewe Liberius ⁊ Leo the vſurper of his reame. And as many tymes almoſt as he wyped ony drope fro his noſe ẏ whiche they kyt of / ſo many tymes he made one of his ennemyes to be ſlayne. ¶ Leo ẏ.iii. was pope after Sergius.ii.yere. This man was made pope by the power of the Romayns ⁊ was not put in ẏ nombre of popes / for he euyll entred / but he dyde none euyll. ¶ Iohānes the.vi. was pope after hym a Greke. And he was a martyr / but of whome ⁊ wherfore the cauſe is not founde in hyſtoryes. It is ſayd that it was ẏ dukes of Lombardy / for they were enmyes to ẏ chyrche myghtely. ¶ Iohānes ẏ.vii. a Romayne was pope after hȳ thre yere / but nothynge of hym is wryten. Iuſtinianus was Emperour ayen wᵗ his ſone Tyberi⁹.vi. yeres. And this was he ẏ whiche was reued ẏ Empyre afore by Leo. And whan this man was reſtored ayen he toke hym to the ryght fayth / ⁊ worſhypped ẏ pope Conſtātyne. And certaynly he deſtroyed Creſon ẏ place where he was exyled vnto / ⁊ all ẏ dwelled in it / excepte ẏ chyldern he ſlewe them. And he came agayne an other tyme to haue ſlayne ẏ Innocentes And the men of that cōtre made them a captayne / a certayn mā ẏ was called Philyp an outlawe / the whiche anone wente to hȳ in batayl ⁊ ſlewe hȳ for hys outrageous cruelneſſe agaynſt thoſe chyldern.

¶ Syſinnius was pope.xx. days / ⁊ then was grete ſtryfe ⁊ he deceſſyd / but lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Conſtātyne was pope after hym. vii. yere. This man was a mekeman ⁊ ſo bleſſyd ẏ of al men he was beloued. He wente ouer the ſee to Iuſtinianus the Emperour / ⁊ was receyued with grete honour / ⁊ dyed a bleſſyd man. ¶ Philyp ẏ ſeconde was Emperour one yere / ẏ whiche fled in to Scicilia for the hoſte of the Romayns / And he was an heretyke / ⁊ cōmaūded all pyctures of ſayntes for to be dyſtroyed. Wherfore the Romayns caſt away his coyne / ⁊ wolde not receyue no money that his name or ymage were wryten vpon. ¶ Anaſtaſius the ſeconde after he had ſlayne Philyp was Emperour thre yere. This mā was a cryſten man / ⁊ he lyued wel. But bycauſe he put out Philyppes eyen / ⁊ ſlewe hȳ afterwarde. And therfore Theodoſi⁹ faught agaynſt hym ⁊ ouercame hym / ⁊ then he was made a preeſt / ⁊ lyued ſo quyetly.

¶ Anno dn̄i. vii. C. xiiii.

GRegorius ẏ ſeconde was pope after Conſtantyne.xvii.yere. This Gregorius was a chaſt man and a noble man in ſcrypture. And about this tyme the popes began to deale more temporally with the Emperours than they were wonte for theyr grete falſeneſſe and theyr hereſye / ⁊ alſo for to remeue thēpyre fro one people to an other as the tyme requyred / this man curſed Leo the emperour bycauſe he brente the ymages of ſayntes This Leo cōmaunded Gregorius the pope that he ſholde brenne chyrches and deſtroye them. And he ſet no thynge of his ſayenge / but cōmaūded ẏ contrary manly. And ſo it openly ſhewed / ẏ the dyſtruccyon of the Empyre of Rome / was ẏ cauſe of hereſye. For certaynly faythfull peple with the prelates wᵗ one wyl drewe to the pope / and conſtrayned ẏ Emperours for to leue theyr tyrannye and theyr hereſye. ¶ And this tyme in the Eeſt parte of the worlde ſtrongely fayled ẏ very fayth for ẏ curſed lawe of ẏ falſe Machomyte. ¶ Theodoſius was Emperour ⁊ regned but one yere. And he was a very cryſten man/ ⁊ euen as he dyde ſoo was he done vnto. For Leo depoſed hym ⁊ made hym a preeſte. ¶ Leo ẏ thyrde wᵗ Conſtantyne his ſone was Emperour.xxv.yere. This leo whan he was myghty he depoſed theodoſius ⁊ regned for hym/ ⁊ was deceyued by a certayne Apoſtata/ the whiche bad hym that he ſholde take ⁊ brenne all the ymages of ſayntes. Wherfore he was punyſſhed bothe in batayle ⁊ in peſtylence/ ⁊ with other Infortunes. And bycauſe he was accurſed of Gregorius/ and bode therin thre dayes/ therfore the pope wᵗ ẏ comyn people toke fro hym ẏ beſt parte of his Empyre/ commaundynge that no man ſholde obey hym nor ſocour hym:/ bycauſe he lyued lyke an heretyke. ¶ Holy men ſayd agaynſt hym. And many by hys were martred ⁊ exyled. And at laſt in his myſchyeue he deyed wretchedly/ ⁊ in his dayes/ but that Karolus Marcellus holpe ẏ cryſten fayth/ faught manly ayenſt the Sar[illegible]ſyns/ ⁊ droue them backwarde in to Spayne ẏ whiche they had ſubdued elles they had entred in to Fraunce And Karolus ſlewe thre hōdred thouſande Sarraſyns ⁊ more. And of his people were ſlayne but.xv.thouſande. ¶ Nota. This man for the contynuall batayle toke to laye men the treſoure of ẏ chyrche. Wherfore ſaynt Eucharius ẏ byſſhoppe of Aurelian/ as he was in his prayers/ ſawe ẏ ſame Karolus in ſoule and body payned in helle. And the aungell that ſhewed the byſſhoppe this man ſayd. That was ẏ Iugement of all thoſe that toke away the goodes of ẏ chyrche/ or of poore men. And to fortyfye that that ẏ byſſhop ſayd ⁊ to proue it the abbot of ſaynt Denys wente to the ſepulcre there that Karolus was buryed/ ⁊ opened the cheſte ẏ he laye in. And there they ſe a grete dragon go out/ but he had noo body. ¶ Gregorius the.iii.a Romayn was pope after Gregorius ẏ.ii. The whiche conformed the worſhyppes of ẏ ymages of ſayntes with the couſeyle almooſt a of thouſande byſſhops. And he curſed horrybly all the deſpyſers of theſe ymages. As the Emperour and other ẏ were of that condycyon ¶ Conſtantynus ẏ fyfth was Emperour after his fader Leo.xxxv.yere. He was a curſed man ⁊ a pure heretyke/ ſoo that he dyde ſacrefyce to ẏ deuylles. He purſued the chyrche. And no thynge that is good of hym is wryten. And ſo by the ſuffraunce of god ẏ chyrche was troubled longe tyme. Abont this tyme were many meruayles/ and there were meruaylous erthquakes. And certayn cytees that were ſet on mountayns/ they were remeued and borne awaye with ẏ hylles in to ẏ feldes vi.myles thens as they ſtode/ and the cytees were not broken nor hurte. In the lande of Meſopotanian the erth was broken by ẏ ſpace of two myle. And alſo there was a mule whiche ſpake in a mannes voyce. Aſſhes fell fro heuen. And in ẏ ſee of Poncio there was yſe for grete froſte ẏ was.xxx.cubytes of thyckneſſe. And ſterres fell fro heuen ſo myghtely ẏ men trowed that ẏ ende of the worlde had be comen. All theſe betokened meruaylous thynges to come.

¶ Anno dñi.vii.C.xliiii.

After Gregorius Zacharias was pope.x.yere/ ⁊ was a noble ma[illegible] arayed wᵗ all vertue. With all mē he was loued for his mekeneſſe. And he depoſed the kynge of Fraũce Hedery/ ⁊ put in his place Pippinus/ for he was more profytable. ¶ Here may ye ſe what power the chyrche had that tyme/ ẏ whiche tranſlated that famous kyngdome fro the very heyres/ to ẏ kyngdome of Pippinus for a leſull cauſe (vt habetur. xv. q. v. alius). ¶ Stephanus the ſeconde a Romayne was pope after Zacharias. v. yere. This man in all thynge was profytable vnto the chyrche/ as well in worde as in doctryne. And gouerned the ſpiritualyte and þ temporalite nobly. He was the louer and the defender of poore men. This man anoynted Pippinus the kynge of Fraunce and ſente hym agaynſt the Lombardes/ that he ſholde compel them to reſtore the chirche of ſuche goodes as they had withholde from the longe tyme vnryghtwyſly þ whiche he dyde. He alſo tranſlated þ Empyre of þ Grekes to the Frenſhmen. ¶ Paulus a Romayn was pope after hym x. yere. This was a very holy mā/ for he dyde grete almeſſe to faderles chyldern & pryſoners/ wydowes/ & other poore men that he myght be a folower of ſaynt poule. ¶ Conſtantyne a Romayne the ſeconde was pope after Poule two yere. This Conſtantyne was a laye man & ſodeynly was made a preeſt as a tyraunt & toke on hym the dygnyte of the pope. And with a grete ſclaūdre to the chyrche was pope a lytell tyme/ but þ faythfull men put hym out/ and put out his eyen. And this was the fyfth Infamed pope/ amonge ſoo many herde tofore. So the holy ghooſt that holy apoſtles ſete kepte in all honour and holyneſſe. Infynyte martyrs were made this tyme by Conſtantyne þ Emperour/ for he was ſuche an heretyke. And men trowe that there was neuer Emperoure nor no paynem that ſlewe ſoo many martyrs. And in his tyme þ chyrche was troubled full ſore/ & very preciouſly bought þ worſhyppynge of the ymage of the holy ſayntes/ for the grete blood ſheddynge of martyrs. And certaynly that curſed Emperour was not vnpunyſſhed. For whan he deyed/ he cryed with an horryble voyce and ſayd. I am taken to a fyre/ that is vnable to be dyſtroyed/ & ſo he yelded vp þ ghooſt to euerlaſtynge payne. The Empyre of Rome was dyuyded aboute this tyme. For Stephanus þ pope tranſlated Ytaly & other vnto Karolus a yonge man And Conſtantyne helde the lande of Grece with other landes ouer the ſee with a grete laboure & many a rebellynge. This tyme Karolus magnus was a noble yonge man. And he began for to regne vpon Fraunce/ and was the ſone of Pippinus and his moder was called Berta. ¶ Stephanus the thyrde was pope after Paulus thre yere. And he amended all the errours of Conſtantyne. And he degraded all thoſe þ whiche Conſtantyne ordeyned in a generall Synodus.

¶ Anno dn̄i. vij. C. lxxxiiij.

ADrianus a Romayne was pope after Stephan⁹. xxiiij. yere/ this man was myghtely worſhypped of þ people/ no man greter afore hym in honoure rychesse & buyldynge. This man ſet two ſolempne Synodis. The fyrſt of. iii. C. & fyfty faders. The ſeconde in Rome with an hondred and fyfty faders/ beynge preſente Charles the kynge of Fraunce/ to whome it was graunted þ lyberte of eleccyon of the popes/ and to ordeyne þ apoſtles ſete. ¶ Leo the. iiii. reygned Emperour wt þ grekes. v. yere. This leo was a curſed mā/ but not ſo moche as his fader was. And he was a coueytous man/ & he toke awaye a certayne crowne of a chyrche and put it vpon his heed. And anone he was corrupted with an axes and ſore dyſeaſed. And he had a curſed wyfe/ the whiche reygned after hym with her ſone ¶ Conſtātyne was Emperour after Leo & he was a meke mā/ & put away his moder fro the kyngdome that ſhe myght take hede vnto her womens werke/ but ſhe with a fayned rancoure put out his eyen afterwarde/ ⁊ his chyldꝛen alſo/ ⁊ regned agayne thꝛe yere. And at the laſt ſhe was about foꝛ to be wedded to grete Karolus Whan the Grekes knewe ẏ/ they ſhyt her vp in a monaſtery/ ⁊ made Nychoferum theyꝛ Emperour ¶ The .v. vnyuerſal ſtudy ẏ in olde tyme was tranſlated from Athenes to Rome/ about this tyme was to Parys tranſlated/ by Karolus kynge of frãce. ¶ Nychoferꝰ was Emperoure after Conſtantyne he was a very nygon/ ⁊ was exalted to his empyꝛe by ẏ Grekes. but he pꝛofyted not/ foꝛ in his tyme al the reſt Imperyall was bꝛought to nought. Foꝛ the Romayns put them vnder Karolus magnus. ¶ Iheruſalem aboute this tyme was recouered by Karolꝰ/ with all the holy lande. And the ſecte of the Saraſyns was dyſtroyed ſtrõgly. Foꝛ the dyſtruccyon of wꝛetches came than. ¶ Mychaell was Emperour two yere. And he was a very cryſten man/ ⁊ well beloued/ ⁊ connynge in all ſcyences. And thoſe ẏ Nychoferꝰ had dyſtreſſed in theyꝛ godes by his couetouſnes/ this Mychaell reſtoꝛed them theyꝛ goodes agayn. ¶ Nota.

¶ Karolus magnꝰ ẏ fyꝛſt ſaynt was Emperour after Mychael And he was crowned Emperour by Leo ẏ pope/ frome the whiche tyme ẏ Empyꝛe was tranſlated from the Grekes to Frãce ⁊ Germayne And foꝛ ẏ tranſlacion of ẏ Empyꝛe/ ẏ grekes alwaye were defectyue vnto the Romayns/ ſtryuynge euermoꝛe with theym but it was moꝛe with venemous woꝛdes than with ſtrength/ ⁊ moꝛe wͭ crafte than with batayll. Foꝛ they had ſo grete enuye at the Romayns ẏ they wolde not obeye the chirche of Rome Foꝛ certaynly whan that the popes wolde wꝛyte vnto theym/ foꝛ to obeye ẏ chirche of Rome/ they wꝛote agayne and ſayd. Ye haue taken frome our kynred the Empyꝛe/ and therfoꝛe we wyll not obey vnto you/ but take vs from you. And as touchynge this noble Emperour Karolus it is to be vnderſtand that he was anoynted kynge of Fraunce by ẏ pope Stephanus/ whyles that he was yonge and luſty of aege. And that was in the yere of oure loꝛde Iheſu Cryſt ſeuen hondꝛed .liiii. whan his fader Pippinus lyued. Under whome/ and with whom he regned .xv. yere vnto the dethe of his fader. ¶ Then after the dethe of his fader/ Pippyn in the yere of oure loꝛde god .vii. hondꝛed .lxviii. this Karolus with his bꝛoder Karolomãnus regned two yere. And then his bꝛoder deyed in the ſeconde yere. And this Karolus there helde all the hole kyngdome .xiiii. yere/ to the yere of oure loꝛde .vii. hondꝛed .lxxxiiii. In the which yere he went to Rome/ that he myght be crowned Emperour of ẏ pope Adꝛianꝰ. And he regned Emperour .xvi. yere/ to ẏ yere of our loꝛde .viii. C. whan pope Leo confermed hym agayne the Emperoure/ And after that he was Emperour .xiiii. yere. And this Karolus magnus deyed/ in the yere of his aege .lxxii. The whiche was the yere of our loꝛde .viii. hondꝛed/ ⁊ xii. ¶ Yf ye wyll ſee moꝛe of Karolus/ goo vnto the boke of Turpinus/ and Libꝛaminus his mayſter/ foꝛ they wꝛote his noble actes echone. ¶ Leo ẏ fourth was pope after Adꝛianꝰ .xx. yere/ this man whã he went on a certayne daye with the Letany to ſaynt Peters chirche vpon ſaynt Markes daye/ he was taken with curſed people/ the whiche put out bote his eyen/ and cut of his tongue. But our loꝛde meruaylouſly reſtoꝛed hym agayne his ſight and his ſpeche/ ſoo that he ſpake without tongue/ and ſawe by myꝛacle. Afterwarde he wente with karolus in to Fraunce/ And he came with hym vnto Rome/ and there venged the pope of his enmye. And thenne he crowned that karolus. And he late aftre crowned/conſermed hym agayn ¶ Ludouicus the meke/ þ fyrſte begoten ſone of Karol' was Emperour after his fader.xxvi.yere/in whoſe tyme was put awaye þ clerkes ſholde vſe no gyrdels wt precyous ſtones/nor ſtraunge arayment. This Ludouic' on his fyrſt wyfe gate.iii. chyldren/⁊ bothe had an euyl ende. In al thynge þ wente agaynſt hym he was pacyent/⁊ ouercame it at laſt. For towarde god he abode deuoute. And his chyldren folowed hym in condycyons/⁊ he dyſceſſed a bleſſyd man ¶ Stephanus the .iiii. was pope after Leo thre yere. This Stephan' redemed many captyue men/and crowned Ludouicus þ Emperour. And then he dyſceſſed ⁊ was buryed at Rome/ ¶ Paſchall was pope after Stephanus This paſchal gaue grete dylygence to relyques of ſayntes. And he toke vp innumerable bodyes of ſayntes/⁊ buryed the worſhypfully/as in þ vyſyon of ſaynt Cecyle he was cōmaūded ¶ Eugeni' þ .iiii. was pope after paſchall/⁊ he was a very holy man. And all thoſe thynges þ were for Cryſt he toke hede to. This man was crowned a martyr/⁊ by þ lay men of Rome he was buried in ſaynt peters chirch yerde.

¶ Circa annū dn̄i.viii.C.xliiii.

Ualentinus was pope after Eugenius.xl.dayes/⁊ lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Gregori' the fourth was pope after hym.xvi.yere. This Gregori' ſaw many heuy tymes/for þ plages amonge the comyn people. And at this mānes petycyon. Ludouicus themperour/⁊ Marchio the prynce of Lombardye exyled all þ Saraſyns fro ytaly. And at the laſt he dyſceſſed after innumerable good dedes þ he had done at ſaynt peters. ¶ Lotherius the fyrſt ſone of Ludouicus was Emperour.xv.yere in ytaly ⁊ Rome/⁊ þ partyes of Germayne next to þ hylles of Alpy. This Lotherius roſe agaynſt his broder Ludouicus ⁊ Karolus/for the kyngdome of Duchelande/þ whiche ſomtyme Pippinus theyr broder helde. And they fought at a place called Fontanetū/where Lotherius was dyſcomfyted. And there was ſuche ſlaughter made on both ſydes that they had noo men for to reſyſt theyr enmyes. This vnderſtode a fals cryſten man/⁊ ſent vnto the Soudan of the Saraſyns þ he ſholde come anone. And he toke Rome/⁊ ſaynt Peters chirche was made a ſtable for theyr horſes. But Ludouicus with þ Frenſhmen ⁊ Lombardes all þ infynyte nombre dyſtroyed/⁊ that with grete ſheddynge of cryſten blode. ¶ Sergius þ .ii. was pope after Gregori' two yere This man was called fyrſt (os porci) in Englyſhe/hoggeſmouth. Wherfore þ man ⁊ all the popes names are chaūged/whan they are choſen. And þ for thre cauſes. The fyrſt for Cryſt chaūged þ names of thoſe men þ he made popes. The .ii. for as moche as they are chaūged in þ name ſholde they be chaunged in perfeccyon of lyfe. The thyrde leſt he whiche is choſen to an excedynge degree ſholde be hurt in name. ¶ Leo was pope after Sergyus.viii.yere. This Leo was an holy man/⁊ alſo he was in prudence/as ſharpe as a ſerpent And in al his dedes alſo meke as a douue. And he was brought forth vertuouſly in a monaſterye. And whan that he was made pope/he laboured for to repayre his chirches agayne/the whiche þ falſe ſaraſyns one after another had dyſtroyed. This man was a myghty wryter ⁊ a grete precher/⁊ myghtely laboured in watche ⁊ prayer/and ſo deyed/and was buryed ⁊ lyeth at ſaynt Peters. ¶ Benedictus a Romayne was pope after Leo two yere. This Benedictus had the na me of þ thynge. For in all thynge he was bleſſyd/ & he ordeyned clerkes ſhold go ordynatlye honeſtly. ¶ Ludouic⁹ was emperour with his fader a whyle/ & after he regned alone. xxi. yere. & Sergi⁹ þ pope anoynted hym. His ſone Karolus was extraught wᵗ a deuyll afore his fader/ conſpyrynge his faders dethe. In his tyme fel many merueyles. ¶ Nota. ¶ Johānes Anglic⁹ of þ nacion of Maguntin about this tyme was pope/ & ſhe was a woman in mannes clothynge/ a grete clerke whiche goynge openly in proceſſion trauayled of chylde & deceyſed. And this was the. vi. ypocryte pope punyſſhed of god/ & ſhe was not nombred in þ boke of popes. ¶ Nichola⁹ a Romayne was pope after this woman. ix. yere. This man exceded all other in holynes/ ſaue ſaynt Gregory the pope. Ludouic⁹ themperour was at his fallynge a good man/ & he was buryed in ſaynt Peters chircheyerd. ¶ Adrianus a Romayn was pope after Nichola⁹ This man curſed Lotherius thēperours broder for his auoutry. And he came to Rome wᵗ all his ſtates/ ſayinge he curſed him wrongfully. And all deyed in one yere/ wᵗ theyr kȳg goyng to Placenciā cite.

¶ Anno dñi. viii.C.lxiiii.

¶ This tyme came the Danes in to Englonde.

¶ Of kyng Alured/ & how the Danes in his tyme prayed hym of mercy/ that they myght go out of the lande.

After the dethe of this Eldred regned his broder Alured þ Dolphynes was called. ¶ Tho went þ Danes & aſſembled them/ & went forth to ſeke Alured þ tho was kynge of Southſex newly made/ & there they foūde hym at wylton with a lytell power. yet neuertheleſſe he fought with them/ but at þ laſt he fledde thens from þ felde/ & went in to Weſtſex & ordeyned of his owne realme & other þ he had a myghty power/ ſo þ the Danes coude not withſtande hym. And came to London with his hooſt/ where þ Danes ſoiourned. And wolde haue foughten wᵗ them/ but the Danes durſt not/ but prayed hym of peas/ & that they myght go agayne in to theyr owne coūtree/ & neuer to come agayne in to Englonde on warfare/ gyuyng hȳ hoſtages ſuche as he wold aſke.

¶ How Hubba & Hungar was ſlayne at Chyppenham/ & howe þ Danes brought theyr kynge to our kynge.

And the ſame daye þ the Danes departed from London/ they rode ſo faſt bothe nyght and day/ and neuer reſted that they came vnto Exceſtre/ and toke the towne/ and there helde theym al. ¶ Whan kynge Alured herde theſe tydȳges anone he lete take þ hoſtages/ & went from thens vnto Exceſtre wᵗ all þ power that he hadde. And whan the Danes herde tell of his comynge/ they wente frome thens vnto weſtſex/ and came vnto Chippenham/ and there they dyd moche hurt about in the countree/ and robbed folke/ & brought theym in pryſon. The kynge Alured them purſued/ & came vpon them ryght ſoone and fyerſly theym aſſaylled.

And there were ſlayne both Hubba ⁊ Hingar his broder/⁊ Buerne Bocarde. And in this batayll were moche folke ſlayne in one partie ⁊ in that other. But ẏ grace of ẏ batayll bode w the Danes/for as moche as the kynge came with fewe folke. ¶The kynge haſted hym moche for to go agayn And whan ẏ Danes ſowe Hubbaes body/they buryed it/⁊ layde vpon it a grete logge/⁊ lete call it Hubeſlowe/⁊ ſo it is called vnto this day. And ẏ place is in deueſhyre. The barons of Somerſet. wylteſhyre/⁊ Dorſet herde tell howe theyr kynge was dyſcomfyted/⁊ ordeyned al ẏ power that they myght/⁊ came to the kynge there as he was/⁊ thāked god they ſowe hȳ alyue/for they had wende ẏ Danes hym had ſlayne. And then the kynge ⁊ they cōcluded to go ſeke the Danes ⁊ fyght with them. And ſo they rode all ẏ nyght for to ſeke them. And came on ẏ morowe about pryme to Abyngdon there as the Danes were. The kynge alured ⁊ his barons aſſembled then/⁊ aſſaylled egrely the Danes/⁊ there gaue them a ſtronge batayll/ And the Danes put them a longe tyme ẏ no man wyſt what partye loſte mooſt folke. But thus it befell as god wolde ẏ the kynge Alured had ẏ vyctory with moche honoure. For the Danes were ſo dryuen ẏ they ne wyſt whyther for to torne. And xv. dayes the kynge them purſued at his wyll/that they were fayne for to ſpeke of peas/and toke hym good hoſtage/⁊ ſayd they wold neuer warre more vpon hym And more ouer they behyght vnto kynge Alured that they wolde go ⁊ brynge theyr owne kynge vnto hym. And ẏ theyr king and they all ſholde be baptyzed. And vpō this condycyon kynge Alured graunted them lyfe and lymme. And ſayd vnto thē that they ſholde go ſeke theyr kynge/and at a certayne day that was ſet to come to hym agayne. And ſo they wente forth faſt And came agayne at a day ⁊ that to theym was aſſygned/⁊ brought w theym theyr kynge. ¶The kynge Alured anone lete them be baptyzed/⁊ theyr names chaunged. And ſo the kynge of Denmarke was called athelſtone/⁊ xxx. of his felawes names alſo/⁊ the other were baptyzed to ẏ ryght byleue ¶ And all this was done at weſtmynſter. And after that kynge alured helde with hym kynge athelſtone ⁊ al his Danes. xii. dayes at ſowuerke with much ſolempnyte/⁊ gaue them grete gyftes. ⁊ after they were baptyſed they departed/ ¶Tho was kyng alured al at eaſe when he had his enmyes ouercomen/⁊ that they were torned to the ryght byleue of god almyghty.

¶How the Danes that came in to Fraūce w Gurmonde/came agayne in to Englonde/⁊ of the deth of kynge alured.

AND thus it befell afterwarde that [illegible] of Northumberlande

berlande / ⁊ the Danes yͭ were Gurmondes came wᵗ grete power out of Fra̅ce / ⁊ aryued in Kent. And ſent in to Northu̅berland alſo paynyms yͭ they ſhold come to them. And whan thoſe two hoſtes were comen and aſſembled / anoone they rode to dyſtroye all the cryſten people of Englonde from place to place / ⁊ dyd moche ſorowe. ¶ And in this tyme deyed kynge Alured / yͭ was wonte to abate yͤ Danes pryde all aboute. He was a grete clerke ⁊ made many bokes of wyſdome. And ſpecyally one of auentures of kynges / ⁊ batayles done in the lande. This kyng Alured regned. xxx. yere. And lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

IOhānes yͤ .viii. was pope after Adryan. viii. yere. This Johannes anoynted Karolꝰ yͤ Emperour. And he ſuffered grete wronge of yͤ Romayns / for he fauoured not yͤ ſaid Emperour. And for yͭ cauſe he made yͤ pope be kepte. Alſo he degraded yͤ byſſhop of Portuenſe yͭ was the cauſe of all his ſorowe. ¶ Karolus yͤ .ii. was Emperour after Ludouicꝰ This Karolus had a broder yͭ was called Ludouicꝰ / ⁊ he was kynge of Germayne / ⁊ he ordeyned a batayll agaynſt his broder But Karolus or they fought was poyſoned. And he made many a monaſterye. ¶ Martinus was pope after Johānes. i. yere. This Martinus lytell profyted / for he lyued but lytell tyme. ¶ Adrianꝰ yͤ .iii. was pope after hym one yere / ⁊ of hym is nothynge wryten. ¶ Stephanus the .v. was pope after hy̅. vi. yere. And nothyng of hym is wryten / but that he tranſlated the body of ſaynt Martyn. ¶ Karolus yͤ .iii. was Emperoure after the .ii. xii. yere. This Karolꝰ had in poſſeſſyon peaſybly all Fra̅ce / ⁊ all Germanye / ⁊ was crowned Emperour of Johānes yͤ pope. And after this gloryous vyctory / he torned all Normandy to yͤ fayth of god. And he coude no lenger reſyſt yͤ Frenſhmen but. iiii. yere he regned on them. He was vnprofytable to them / ⁊ therfore they put hym away. ¶ Arnulphꝰ was Emperour after Karolus. xiii. yere. This Arnulphus vtterly conſtrayned yͤ Normans that diſtroyed yͤ Frenſhmen. xl. yere. Then he ſekened ⁊ had no comforte of no leche / for he was in a meruayllous ſekenes / ſo that he was conſumed wᵗ lyſe / ⁊ was deed. ¶ Formoſus was pope after Stephanꝰ. v. yer this man fyrſt was byſſhop of Portuenſis. And pope Johan was depryued for his obedyence / ⁊ was degrated to yͤ lay fe But by Martyn yͤ pope he was reſtored / And ayenſt his othe he came not alonely to Rome / but to offre hym the dygnyte of the pope / for whiche there was grete altercacyon. ¶ Bonifacius yͤ .vi. was pope. v. dayes. ¶ Stephanꝰ yͤ .vi. one yere ⁊ thre monethes. ¶ Johannes thre monethes ⁊ xii. dayes. ¶ Jona alſo thre monethes ⁊ xii. dayes. ¶ Theodorus the .ii. xx. dayes. ¶ Johānes yͤ .xi. was. ii. yere ⁊ .xv. dayes ¶ Benedictꝰ the .iiii. thre yere ⁊ .ii. monethes. ¶ Leo yͤ .iiii. was. xl. dayes. ¶ Xpoforꝰ yͤ .i. vii. monethes. All theſe. viii. popes were but lytel tyme / and therfore we can not tell of them no notable thynges / but yf we ſholde wryte ſclau̅dre of them yͭ myght be founde / for yͤ harde contencyon in yͤ holy appoſtles ſete. For one ſtroue ayenſt another / repreuynge the dedes of another. And for to tell how they ſtroue it were no grete honoure to ſhewe / for that holy appoſtles ſete. ¶ Ludouicus the thyrde was Emperour after Arnulphus vi. yere. This man hadde not the popes bleſſynge / for the vnſtableneſſe of theym the whiche regned in ytalye. And he was conſtreyned for to expulſe Berynge. And this man was the laſte Emperoure of all the kynred of Karolus kynge of Fraunce

¶ This tyme the Emperour was termined/translated & deuyded. For ŷ Frensshmen ayded not ŷ chirche/ŷ theyr faders endeyed & socoured/but dystroyed/nay helped not ŷ Romayns agaynst ŷ Lombardes ŷ wolde sle the Romayns. Therfore by the comyns assent they were excluded fro the Empyre/& the ytalyens began to be Emperour in ytaly/& the Almayns in Almayne/vntyll Octauyen ŷ regned in bothe ŷ places. The Frensshmen were cōstrayned to abyde in theyr owne countre & no more to be Emperours/for theyr mischeuous lyuynge. ¶ Beringari⁹ ŷ .i. Conradus/& Beryngarius ŷ .ii. & Hugo were Emperours after Ludouicus. But they are not nombred amonge ŷ Emperours. For some were but in Almayne/& some in ytaly.

* * *

¶ Of kynge Edwarde Aluredes sone/ŷ made a poyntement with the Danes.

After this Alured regned his sone Edward/a good man & curteys. The Danes dyd moche sorowe in ŷ lande & theyr power encreased and began so to wexe from day to day. For the Danes came often with theyr companyes in to this lande. Whan ŷ kynge sawe ŷ he myght no better do/then he toke peas with them & graunted them his trewes. And neuertheles the trewes dured not longe that ŷ Danes ne began to warre strongly vpon ŷ Englysshmen & dyd them moche sorowe For the whiche kynge Edwarde dyd assemble a grete hoost for to fyght with theym. And thenne this kynge Edwarde deyed whan god wolde. And he regned .xxiiii. yere/& lyeth at Wynchestre besyde his fader.

* * *

¶ Anno. viii.ix.C.xiiii.

Sergi⁹ the .iii. was pope after Xpoforus .vii. yere. This man was a Cardynall of Rome/& was expulsed by Formosus the pope/& then he went to ŷ Frensshmen. And soo through the helpe & fauour of them he came agayne to Rome & anone expulsed Xpoforus ŷ pope. And then was pope hymselfe. And for to auenge & wreke his exyle/he toke out ŷ body of pope Formosus where ŷ he was buryed. And arayed hym in ŷ popes araymēt & caused hym to be heded & to be cast in ŷ watre of Tybre. Then fysshers founde hȳ & brought hym in to ŷ chirche. And the holy ymages of sayntes bowed downe to hȳ whan the body of hym was brought in to the chirche/that all men myght it se/and honourably hym salued & halsed. yet Sergius dystroyed all that thynge the whiche the holy man had ordeyned. ¶ Anastasius was pope after hym two hole yere ¶ Lando was pope .v. monethes/& lytil they lyue. ¶ Johannes the .x. was pope thenne. This Johannes was the sone of Sergius pope/bothe of nature & of maners. And he was pope by myght. And wretchedly slayne of Guydons knyghtes for they put on his mouth a pylowe ⁊ ſtopped his breth. And after hẏ was an other put in/ but anone he was out/ ⁊ therfore he is not named as pope. ¶ Henric⁹ ẏ duke of Saxon was Emperour of Almayne .xvi. yere/ this Henricus was a noble man/ but he is not nombred amonge thẽperours/ for he reygned but aloonly in Almayne. And he had a very holy womã vnto his wyfe/ ⁊ her name was Matilda on whom he gate two ſones/ ẏ is to ſaye. Otto ⁊ Henry. And Otto ſucceded hẏ in ẏ Empyre. And Henry had moche lande in Almayne. And gate an other ſone that hyght Brunen/ ⁊ he was a very holy man ⁊ was byſſhop of Coleyne. And he founded the monaſtery of ſaynt Panthaleon.

¶ Of kynge Adelſtone

NOw after this Edwarde regned Adelſtone his ſone. And whan he had reygned foure yere he helde batayle agaynſt the Danes/ ⁊ drove kynge Gaufryde ẏ was kynge of ẏ Danes ⁊ all his haſte vnto ẏ ſee/ ⁊ reſted by Scotlande/ and toke ſtrongely all ẏ countre an hoole yere. And after ẏ they of Comberlande ⁊ of Scottes of Weſtmerlande began to warre vpon kynge Adelſtone. And he gaue them ſo ſtronge batayle that he ſlewe ſo many of them/ ẏ no man coude tell the nombre of them. And after ẏ he reygned but thre yere. And he reygned in all .xxv. yere/ ⁊ lyeth at Malmeſbury.

¶ Of kynge Edmonde.

THen after this Adelſtone reygned Edmonde his broder. For kynge Adelſtone had noo ſone/ ⁊ this Edmonde was a worthy man ⁊ a doughty knyght of body/ ⁊ as noble alſo. And ẏ thyrde yere after that he was kynge/ he went ouer Humber in to that coũtre/ in ẏ whiche he founde two kynges of Danes. ¶ That one was called Enelaf/ ⁊ ẏ other Renãt. ¶ This kynge Edmonde drove them bothe fro ẏ lande/ ⁊ after wente ⁊ toke a grete proye in Comberlande. ¶ This Edmond regned but .vii. yere/ ⁊ lyeth Glaſtenbury.

Of kynge Eldred.

ANd after this Edmonde regned Eldred his broder that auenged Edwarde his fader of his enmyes ẏ dyd hym ſlee. And after he ſeaſed all Northumberlande in to his hande. And made the Scottes for to bowe ⁊ meke vnto his wyll. And in ẏ ſecõde yere of his reygne came Arnalafe Guyran/ ẏ was kynge of Denmarke/ ⁊ ſeaſed all Northumberlande/ ⁊ helde ẏ lande two yere. And after ẏ came kynge Eldred ⁊ drove hym oute of this lande. And this kynge Eldred was a noble man ⁊ a good/ of whoſe goodneſſe ſaynt Dũſtane preched. And this Eldred reygned .xi. yere/ ⁊ lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Of kynge Edwyn

ANd after this Eldred regned Edwyn the ſone of Edmonde. And he was a ſymple man towarde god ⁊ the peple. For he hated folke of his owne lande/ ⁊ loued ⁊ honoured ſtraũge men. And ſet lytell by holy chyrche. And to toke of holy chyrche all ẏ treſoure ẏ he myght haue/ whiche was grete ſhame ⁊ vylany to hymſelfe/ ⁊ peryll to his ſoule. And therfore god wolde not ẏ he ſholde reygne no lenger than foure yere ⁊ dyed/ ⁊ lyeth at Wyncheſter.

LEo the ſyxte a Romayne was pope .vi. monethes. ¶ Stephanus the .vii. was pope after hym two yere.

¶ Johannes yͤ .xi. a Romayne was pope thꝛe yere. ¶ Stephanꝰ yͤ .viii. a Germayne was pope after hȳ .viii. yere. ¶ Martinus yͤ .iii. was pope after hȳ .iii. yere/⁊ of theſe .vi. popes is nothynge had in ſcrypture. Foꝛ what cauſe I can not tell.

¶ Anno dn̄i .ix.C.liiij.

Agapitꝰ a Romayne was pope after Martinus .ii. yere ⁊ .viii. monethes/⁊ nothynge of hȳ is wꝛytē. ¶ Johānes yͤ .xii. a Romayne was pope after Agapitꝰ .viii. yere/⁊ he had a fader that hyght Alberyke/⁊ was a woꝛthy man in the cyte of Rome. He Induced the noble men to ſwere yͭ after yͤ deth of Agapitus they ſholde cheſe Octauianꝰ his ſone pope/⁊ ſo it was done ⁊ was named Johñ/and he was a hunter ⁊ a lecherous man/ſo yͭ openly he kept women. Wherfoꝛe certeyne Cardynalles wꝛote vnto Otto the Emperoure of Saxon/yͭ he ſholde come to Rome foꝛ to helpe to dyſtroy the ſclaūdꝛe of yͤ chyꝛche. This yͤ pope perceyued/and yͤ hande yͭ wꝛote yͤ pyſtle he made to be cut of. And many tymes he was warned by themperour ⁊ yͤ clergy yͭ he ſholde coꝛrecte hymſelfe/but he nolde foꝛ nothȳge. Then he was depoſed/⁊ Leo was put in to his place. Wherfoꝛe the Emperour was anoyed/and came agayne and beſyeged Rome ſo longe tyll they toke Benedicte to hym ⁊ reſtoꝛed Leo.

¶ Of kynge Edgar that reygned aboue the kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Wales/⁊ how he was begyled thꝛough the takynge of his wyfe.

Edgar reygned after his bꝛoder Edwyne/and this man loued moche god ⁊ peas/⁊ yͤ ryght of holy chyꝛche alſo. And he was a woꝛthy man/⁊ a grete loꝛde of blood ⁊ myghty/⁊ mayntened well this lande in peas. And this Edgar was loꝛde ⁊ kynge aboue all yͤ kynges of Scotlande ⁊ of Wales/fro yͤ tyme yͭ Arthur was gone/⁊ neuer was ſythen kyng of his power. And this Edgar was ſaynt Edwardes fader. And whan Edgars wyfe was deed yͭ was ſaynt Edwardes moder ⁊ entyered/he herde ſpeke of yͤ fayꝛeneſſe of Elfryde/yͭ was Oꝛgarꝰ doughter a baron of Deuēſhyꝛe yͭ was ſo fayꝛe a woman/yͭ all men dyde ſpeke of her. He called one of his knyghtes yͭ he moche loued ⁊ truſted vpon ⁊ tolde hym. Go ſayd he to yͤ noble barō Oꝛgarꝰ of Deuēſhyꝛe ⁊ ſe yf yͭ his doughter be ſo fayꝛe as men ſpeke of/⁊ yf it be ſoth I wyl haue her to wyfe. This knyght that was called Edelwolde went foꝛth his way as yͤ kynge hȳ had ſayd ⁊ came there yͭ yͤ lady was. And whan he ſawe her ſo fayꝛe/he thought to haue her hymſelfe to his wyfe. And therof ſpake to Oꝛgarus her fader. And her fader was an olde man and had no moꝛe chyldꝛen but onely her/and ſawe that Edelwolde was a fayꝛe yonge knyght ⁊ woꝛthy ⁊ ryche ⁊ was wel beloued to the kynge/⁊ thought his doughter ſhold well be maryed ⁊ beſet vpon hȳ/⁊ graūted hȳ his doughter yf yͤ good loꝛde the kynge wolde cōſente therto. And then this Edelwolde came agayne vnto yͤ kynge ⁊ tolde hym/that ſhe was fayꝛe ynough vpon to ſe/but ſhe was wonder lothly. Than anſwered the kynge ⁊ ſayd that he toke but lytel charge. Syꝛ ſayd Edelwolde/ſhe is her faders heyꝛe/and I am not ryche of landes/and yf ye wolde conſente ⁊ graūte that I myght her haue/then ſholde I be ryche ynough. In goddes name ſayd the kynge. I conſente therto. Edelwolde tho thanked the kynge ryght moche/and wente agayne in to Deuenſhyꝛe ⁊ ſpouſed yͤ damoyſell/⁊ in that coūtre he dwelled. And thus it befell vpon a tyme that he tolde his coūſeyle ⁊ all this thynge vnto his wyfe/how ⁊ in what maner he had begyled his loꝛde the kynge yͭ wolde haue had to wyf/⁊ anone as ſhe it wyſt/ſhe her loued hym neuer moꝛe afterwarde as ſhe dyde befoꝛe. ¶ This lady conceyued by hym a ſone. And whan tyme was yͭ yͤ childe ſholde be boꝛne. Edelwolde came to the kynge ⁊ pꝛayed hym to haue a ſone of his at yͤ fonteſtone. The kynge hym graūted. And lete calle hym Edgar after his owne name/⁊ whan this was done he thought that all was ſyker ynough foꝛ the kynge/that he wolde not take his wyf/foꝛ as moche as his loꝛde was a Joly man and an amerous.

¶ How that kynge Edgar wedded Eſtrylde after the deth of Edelwolde.

THus it befell that all men in kynge Edgars courte theñe ſpake ⁊ ſayd that Edelwolde was rychely auaūced thorugh yͤ foꝛſayd maryage of his wyfe. And yet they ſayd/he was auaūced an hōdꝛed folde moꝛe. Foꝛ he had ſpowſed the mooſt fayreſt creature yͭ euer was ſeen. And the kyng herde ſpeke ſo moche of her beaute/yͭ he thought he wolde haue hym dyſceyued/and begyled. And thought pꝛyuely in his herte/that he wolde go in to Deueñſhyre/as it were foꝛ to hunte foꝛ yͤ harte ⁊ foꝛ the hynde ⁊ other wylde beeſtes/⁊ thenne he ſholde ſee there the lady oꝛ he departed thens. And this lady was dwellynge at a manere place beſyde the foꝛeſt/there yͭ the kynge wolde hunte/⁊ at yͤ manere he was herboꝛowed all nyght/⁊ whan tyme came that yͤ kynge ſholde ſoupe/⁊ the ſōne ſhone the kynge aſked after his goſſyppe/⁊ after his godſone. And Edelwolde made her to come befoꝛe the kynge. And neuertheleſſe yf it other wyſe myght haue be ſhe ſholde not haue come in his ſyght by his wyll. The lady welcomed the kynge and ſwetely hym kyſſed. And he toke her by yͤ hande/⁊ tho nexte by hym her ſate/and ſo ſouped they togyder. And there was a cuſtome and an vſage in this lande that tyme. That ſo whā one dꝛanke to another the dꝛynker ſholde ſaye Waſſayle. And yͤ other ſholde anſwere/and ſaye Dꝛynke hayle. And this dyde the kynge ⁊ the lady/and alſo kyſte many tymes. And after ſouper whan tyme was foꝛ to goo to bed the kynge went to bedde thynkynge hertely on the fayꝛeneſſe of yͤ lady/and then was ouercome foꝛ her loue yͭ nẏ thought that he ſholde deye/but yf he had his wyll on her. Upon the moꝛowe the kynge aroſe/and in the foꝛeſt wente hym foꝛ to dyſpoꝛte with hartes and hyndes/⁊ al other wylde beſtes. And of yͤ hertes grete plente he ſente to yͤ lady. And thꝛyes he wente foꝛ to ſolace and to ſpeke with that lady the whyles he dwelled there in that countre. ¶ And after that the kynge remeued thens/and thought hym how he myghte beſt delyuer Edelwolde fro his wyfe/as he hadde hym fyꝛſte deſceyued. And the kynge anone after. viij. days oꝛdeyned a parlyament at Salyſbury of all his baronage coūſeyl to haue. And foꝛ to oꝛdeyne how yͤ countre of Noꝛthumberlande ſholde beſt be kepte that yͤ Danes came not there yͤ lande foꝛ to deſtroy. And this Edelwolde came vnto yͤ kynges parlyament. And yͤ kynge ſent hym vnto Yoꝛke foꝛ to be keper of that countre. And thus it befell that men yͭ knewe hym not ſlewe hym by the waye. And anone as yͤ kynge herde tell that he was deed/he lete ſende after the lady Eſtrylde that ſhe ſholde come vnto yͤ cyte of London/and there be wedded to yͤ kynge with grete ſolempnyte and woꝛſhyppe. And whan ſhe was come to London ſoone after he helde a ſolempne feeſt. And he ware a crowne that was of golde and ẏ quene an other. And ſaynt Dunſtane on ẏ morowe came vnto the kynge in ẏ chambre/⁊ founde ẏ kynge ⁊ the quene in bed togyder. And ſaynt Dunſtane aſked the kynge who ſhe was And the kynge anſwered and ſayd/that ſhe was ẏ quene Elfryde. And ẏ Archebyſſhoppe ſaynt Dunſtane ſayd that he dyde grete wronge and agaynſt goddes wyll to take a woman to wyf whoſe chylde he had take at the fonte ſtone. And the quene for that worde neuer loued ſaynt Dunſtane after. And the good man warned oft that foly to be lefte/but it auayled but lytell/for the loue bytwene them was ſo moche. The kynge begate vpon her a ſone that was called Eldred. Whan this chylde was .vi. yere/the kynge his fader dyed. And about that tyme he had regned .xvii. yere. And lyeth at Glaſtenbury.

BEryngarius the thyrde was Emperour after Henricꝰ .vii. yere/this Beringariꝰ was Emperour in Ytaly. In whoſe tyme was grete dyuyſyon. ¶ And Henricꝰ themperour deceſſed/⁊ Otto began to reygne in Almayne. ¶ Lothariꝰ regned after hȳ two yere/⁊ deceſſed whā Otto reygned in almayne. And had a wyfe that hyght Dalnydam/ẏ whiche after wedded Otto. ¶ Beringarius ẏ fourth was after hȳ/this man wᵗ grete tyrannye ſubdued Ytaly/wherfore ẏ pope ⁊ other Romayns called Otto that he myght delyuer thē whiche he dyde. And he toke Beringarius by ſtrength/and twyes he outlawed hym. And he toke Lotharius wyfe ẏ whiche ẏ tyraunt had pryſoned. ¶ Leo the .viii. was pope after Benedictus one yere ⁊ foure monethes. This man was choſen with the comyn voyce/⁊ Johannes was depoſed. This Leo ordeyned ẏ no pope ſholde be made without conſent of ẏ Emperour. For the malyce of the Romaynes/the whiche oppreſſed thē. This man graunted all the gyftes to Otto and his ſucceſſours/the whiche were gyuen by Juſtinianus and Karolus to the chyrche/that he myght defende Ytaly from ẏ rebellyons. ¶ Johānes the .xii. was pope after hym almooſt .viii. yere. This Johannes ſuffred grete wronge of the Romayns. For he was take and exyled/but Otto bare this heuely. For he ſlewe the noble men of Rome/⁊ certayne of them exyled for euermore. ¶ Benedictus ẏ .vi. was pope after hym .vi. yere. This man was take/⁊ in ẏ caſtell Aungell was ſtrāgled. ¶ Nota. ¶ The Empyre in this tyme was tranſlated to ẏ Almayns. And the ſame cauſe is here as was before/for the vicyous lyuynge. Ne theſe vnhappy men coude not be Informed/ẏ they ſholde eſchewe that one vyce/through ẏ whiche they ſawe ſoo many noble men to peryſſhe. ¶ Otto was Emperour after Beringariꝰ .xii. yere. This Otto was ẏ fyrſt Emperour of Almayne. And he was all vertuous as kynge Karolus was/for he defended the chyrche of almyghty god/⁊ the ſynguler promoter/for the whiche he was worthy to be Emperour. Many in of falſe byleue he conuerted. And helde w hym pope Benedictus the vſurper of the popehede in to Saxonye. And there he deceſſyd in his exyle. And after thys Otto thēperoure deceſſyd a ryche man in vertue and goodnes. ¶ Otto ẏ ſeconde was Emperour after his fader. And he was a noble man to ẏ chyrche as his fader was And many a batayle hadde agaynſt the falſe men of byleue. And at the laſt he almooſt loſt all his hoſte in Kalabre. yet fo ſothe with all his mynde beſought ſaynt Peter to helpe. And maruayloſly ſaynt Peter delyuered hym. And his wyf was the doughter of the Emperoure of Conſtantynopolitan of the Romayns blood ⁊ this man was crowned of Benedictꝰ.

¶ Of ſaynt Edwarde yͤ martyr and how Estrylde his ſtepmoder lete kylle hym for to make Eldred her owne ſone kynge.

AND after this Edgar regned Edwarde his ſone yͤ he begate vpon his fyrſt wyfe/ whiche well and nobly gouerned yͤ lande. For he was full of all manere of goodneſſe/ and ledde a full holy lyfe. And aboue all thynge he loued god and holy chyrche. And yͤ quene Estrylde whiche was his ſtepmoder lete ſlee hym/ bycauſe to make her owne ſone Eldrede kynge. And thus on a daye he was ſlayne as ye ſhall here afterwarde. It befel thus vpon a daye yͤ the kynge Edwarde went in to a wodde for to playe in the South countre beſyde a towne whiche is called Wharham. In whiche foreſt was grete plente of hartes and hyndes. And whan he had ben a whyle there hym for to play he thought vpon his broder Eldrede that was with his moder yͤ quene/ for her place was nygh yͤ foreſt/ and thought for to go thyder and vyſyte and ſee his broder. And toke with hym but a lytell meyne/ and wente towarde his ſtepmoders houſe that in that tyme ſoiourned in the caſtell of Corfe. And as he rode in yͤ thyckeneſſe of the wodde to aſpye his game/ it befell that he wente amyſſe and loſt his meyne that with hym came. And at the laſte he came out of the wodde. And as he loked hym about/ he ſawe there faſt beſydes a manere that his ſtepmoder dwelled in/ ⁊ thyderwarde he wente alone. And anone it was tolde yͤ quene/ how that yͤ kynge was comen alone without ony company And therfore ſhe made Ioye ynough/ ⁊ thought how that ſhe myght doo that he were ſlayne as pryuely as ſhe myghte/ ⁊ ſhe called to her one of her knyghtes. To whome ſhe hadde tolde moche of her cou̅ſeyle bytwene them. And bothe they came to the kynge and curteyſly hym receyued. And the kynge tolde that he was come to vyſyte her ⁊ alſo for to ſpeke with Eldred his broder. The quene many tymes hym thanked and hym prayed for to alyght ⁊ herborowe with her all yͤ nyght The kynge ſayde that he myght not/ but agayne he wolde go vnto his folke/ yf he myght them fynde/ ⁊ whã yͤ quene ſawe that he wolde not abyde/ ſhe prayed hym that he wolde ones drynke/ and he grau̅ted her. And anone as the drynke was come/ the quene dranke vnto yͤ kynge/ and the kynge toke the cuppe and ſet it to his mouth. And in the meane whyle that he dranke/ yͤ falſe knyght that was with the quene with a knyfe ſmote the kynge vnto his herte/ and there he felle downe deed vnto the erthe of his palfroy. The quene for this dede gaue the knyght golde and ſyluer grete plente and ryches ynoughe. And the knyght anone as this was done went hym ouer the ſee. And ſo eſcaped he out of this lande. Whan this kynge Edwarde was thus martred. It was in the yere of yͤ Incarnacyon of our lorde.ix.C. lxxx. and he had reygned.xii. yere and an halfe/ and lyeth at Glaſtenbury.

¶ Of the kynge Eldred/ ⁊ how the kynge Swyne of Denmarke helde Englande/ and how Eldred that was ſaynt Edwardes broder was not beloued in his reame and therfore he fledde in to Normandye.

SO after this Edwarde regned Eldred his broder. And ſaynt Dunſtane crowned hym/ and this ſaynt Dunſtane dyed ſoone after yͤ he had forgyuen the quene her treſpace/ bycauſe that ſhe was cauſe of kyng Edwardes deth. And ſaynt Dunſtane hadde her aſſoyled/ ⁊ penaunce had her enioyned. And ſhe lyued after a chaſte lyfe ⁊ a clene. This kynge

Eldrede wedded an Englyſſhe woman/⁊ on her begate Edmonde Irenſyde/and an other ſone that was called Edwyne. And after deyed the quene theyr moder. And in that tyme came Swyne in to Englande yͭ was kynge of Denmarke/for to chalenge ⁊ to conquere all yͭ his auncetres had before yͤ tyme. And ſo he cōquered and had it all at his lykynge. For the Erle Cuthberte of Lyndeſeye and all the people of Northumberlande and almooſt all yͤ grettest of Englande helde wͭ Swyne that was kynge of Denmarke/for ſoo moche as they loued not kyng Eldred for bycauſe that his good broder Edwarde was ſlayne for loue of hym. And therfore no man ſet but lytell by hym. Wherfore kynge Swyne hadde all his wyll/and toke all yͤ lande. And Eldred the kynge fled tho in to Normandy. And ſo ſpake to the duke Rycharde/that the duke gaue hym his ſyſter the Emme to wyfe. Upon whiche he gate two ſones/yͤ one was called Alured/⁊ that other Edwarde. And whā Swyne had conquered all the lande/he reygned nobly ⁊ lyued .xv. yere/and then he dyed ⁊ lyeth at yorke.

¶ How kynge Eldred came agayne from Normandy/and how Knoght the Dane reygned/and of the warre bytwixte hym and Edmonde Irenſyde.

Thus after the dethe of Swyne yͭ was a Dane. Knoght his ſone dwelled in Englande/⁊ wolde haue ben kynge. And tho came agayne Eldred out of Normandye wͭ moche nombre of people/⁊ with a ſtronge meyne that Knoght durſt not abyde/but fled thens in to Denmarke. The kynge Eldrede hadde agayne his reame/⁊ helde ſoo grete worſhyp/that he begā for to deſtroy all yͭ tho halpe Swyne yͭ was a Dane agaynſt hym. And afterwarde came agayne this Knoght from Denmarke with a grete power/ſo that kynge Eldred durſte not with hym fyght/but fledde from thens unto London/and there he helde hym. Than came Knoght and hym beſyeged ſo longe tyll that kynge Eldred dyed in yͤ cyte of London/and lyeth at ſaynt Poules. And he reygned .ix. yere.

Bonus was pope after Benedict⁹ one yere. This mā abode but lytel tyme. ¶ Bonifacius was pope after hym fyue monethes. ¶ Benedictus was pope after hym ten yere. This man crowned Otto the .ii./and made many Romayns to be taken. And he dyde gadre a counſeyle agaynſt the kynge of Fraunce/where Gylberte yͤ Nygromancer was depoſed ¶ Johannes yͤ .xiiii. was pope after hym viii. monethes. And he was put in the caſtell Aungell/and was famyned to deth. ¶ Johānes the .xv. was pope after hym foure monethes. ¶ Johannes the .xvi. was pope after hȳ almooſt .xi. yere. This man was taught in armes/⁊ made many bokes/⁊ elles lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Gregorius the .v. was pope after this man almooſt thre yere. And this Gregorius was made pope at the Inſtaunce of themperour Otto the thyrde/for he was his coſyn. And whan he hadde be a lytell whyle pope/⁊ yͤ Emperour receded from yͤ cyte of Rome. Placcitius was put in by Creceſſius a cōſull for money. ⁊ then was ſtryfe a fewe days. But yͤ emperour came ſoone after/⁊ toke Creceſſius yͤ conſull/⁊ ſtroke of his hede/⁊ put oute the eyen of this man Placcitius pope/yͭ whiche put out his coſyn of the dygnyte of the popehede. And maymed hym on other membres/his knyghtes nor his dukes halpe hym nothynge. For he dyde the thynge yͭ he ſholde not haue done. And he ſuffred that that he deſerued. ❡Nota.

❡This Gregorius with yͤ Emperour Otto ordeyned the cheſers of the Empyre/ yͤ whiche from thens forth hath abyden vnto this day. For the Frenſhmen nor none other myght not breke yͤ ordynaũce. And thoſe cheſers of yͤ Empyre conſtitued by the pope ⁊ Otto were not made to blame the Saxons/ but to eſchewe yͤ euylles to come. And theyr names ben wryten in laten for lerned men in theſe verſes. (Maguntinenſis. Treuerẽſis. Coloniẽſis. Quilibet imperii fit cancellari⁹ horũ. Et Palatin⁹ dapifer dux Portitorẽſis. Marchio ꝑpoſitus camere. Pincerna Bohemus Hii ſtatuunt dñm cunctis ꝑ ſecula ſũmũ Palatin⁹ eſt comes reni. Marchio ẽ Brãdeburgẽſis. Dux ſaxoꝝ/ rex Bohemorũ. verũ vt quidã dicũt. ❡Through this occaſyon the Egle hath loſt many a feder/ ⁊ in the ende he ſhall be made naked. ❡Otto yͤ .iii. was Emperour .xviii. yere. This man was noble all the dayes of his Empyre. And after yͤ wyſdom of his fader he was a very faythfull man to yͤ chirche/ ⁊ in many batayles he ꝓſpered bycauſe he was deuout to almyghty god ⁊ his ſayntes. And gaue myghty worſhyppynge to yͤ relykes of ſayntes. And oftentymes he viſited holy places. This man was crowned by Gregorius his coſyn. And at the laſt he deceſſyd at Rome.

❡Anno dñi. M.iiii.

SIlueſter yͤ .ii. was pope after Gregorius .iiii. yere. And he was made pope by yͤ helpe of the deuyll/ to whom he dyd homage/ for he ſholde gyue hym al thyng yͤ he deſyred And he was called Gilbert. And his enmye gate hym yͤ grace of yͤ kynge of Fraũce/ ⁊ he made hym yͤ byſſhop of Remenſis/ but anone he was depoſed. And after he gate yͤ grace of themperour/ ⁊ was made yͤ byſſhop of Rauennye/ ⁊ after pope But he had an ende anone/ ⁊ ſo haue al yͤ put theyr hope in fals deuylles. ❡Yet men truſt in his ſaluacyon/ for certayne demonſtracyon of his ſepulcre/ ⁊ for yͤ grete penaũce yͤ he dyde in his laſt ende. For he made his hand ⁊ legges to be cut of/ ⁊ dyſmembred in all his body ⁊ to be caſt out at yͤ dore to foules/ ⁊ then his body to be drawen with wylde beſtes ⁊ there to be buryed where ſomeuer they reſted as an houde. And they ſtode ſtyl at ſaynt Johan Lateranẽſis/ and there he was buryed. And yͤ was ſygne of his ſaluacyon. ❡Johãnes yͤ .xviii. was pope .v. monethes. ❡Johannes the .xix. was pope after hym fyue yere. And theſe two did lytell thynges. ❡Henricus the fyrſt was Emperour in Almayn .xx. yere/ this Henricus was duke of Barry. And all accordyng he was choſen for his bleſſyd fame/ and goode name the whiche he hadde.

❡And it is redde that many of theſe dukes of Barry were holy men/ not alonely in abſteynynge them from fleſhly deſires but alſo in vertuous ⁊ good lyuynge. ⁊ this Henric⁹ had a ſyſter that was as holy as he/ the whiche he gaue to wyfe vnto the kynge of Hungary. And ſhe brought all Hungary vnto the ryght byleue ⁊ the cryſten fayth. And his wyues name was (ſancta Konnogundis) with whome he lyued a vyrgyn all the dayes of his lyfe/ ⁊ alſo he dyd many a batayle/ as wel in Ytaly as in Almayne agaynſt the rebellyons and proſpered ryghtwyſlye euermore on them. At the laſt with a bleſſyd ende he deceſſed. And in the lyfe of ſaynt Laurence he and his wyfe are put for enſamples./ Bycauſe of theyr holy ⁊ vertuous lyuȳg. ❡Benedictus was pope after Johãnes xi. yere. This man had grete ſtryfe in his dayes/ for he was put oute/ and another put in. ❡And this pope Benedict⁹ after.

that he was deed/was ſene of an holy mā byſſhop in a wretched fygure/⁊ he hadde grete payne. And this fygure ſayd he truſted nothynge in yͤ mercy of god. And nothynge profyted hym yͭ was done for hym for it was goten by extorcyon ⁊ vniuſtly. Then this byſſhop left his byſſhopryche for drede of this ſyght/⁊ went in to a monaſterye ⁊ lyued vertuouſly all his dayes.

¶ Johānes yͤ .x. was pope after hym .xi. yere/and lytell profyted.

¶ Of kynge Knoght that was a Dane.

KNoght a Dane reygned after Eldred. But Edmonde Irenſyde kynge Eldredes ſone by his fyrſt wyfe/ordeyned a grete power of men/⁊ began for to warre on kynge knoght. And ſo he dyde many tymes wonder ſharply. ¶ The quene Emme yͭ dwelled then at weſtmyſter had grete drede of her .ii. ſones Alured ⁊ Edwarde/leſt they ſholde be dyſtroyed bi that warre. Wherfore ſhe ſent them ouer the ſee in to Normandy to yͤ duke richard theyr vncle. And there they dwelled in ſafety ⁊ peas longe tyme. ¶ This Edmond Irenſide ⁊ Knoght yͤ Dane warred fierſly togyder. But at yͤ laſte they were acorded in this manere/yͭ they ſholde departe the lande betwene thē/⁊ ſo they dyd/and loued after togyder lyke two bretherne.

¶ How kynge Edmonde Irenſyde was ſlayne by treaſon/by a traytour called Edryth of Stratton.

AND after tho regned kynge Irenſyde and Knoght the Dane. But thus it befel afterwarde that in the ſame yere that they were accorded ⁊ ſoo moche loued togyder/that a fals traytoure had enuye to the loue that was betwixt them whoſe name was Edryth of Stratton/yͭ was a grete lorde/yͭ whiche was Edmōd Irenſydes man/and of hym helde all his lande that he had. And neuertheles he bethought hym he wolde betraye his lorde and make Knoght kynge of all the lande to the entent rychely to be auaunced/and with hym be well beloued. Wherfore he prayed his lorde Edmonde Irenſyde on a daye with hym for to ete. And the kyng hym curteyſly graunted/⁊ to hym came at his prayer. And at the mete the kynge was ryally ſerued with dyuers metes ⁊ drynkes And whan the nyght came that he ſholde go vnto bedde. The kynge toke his owne meyne ⁊ wente vnto his chambre where as he ſholde take his nyghtes reſt. And as he loked about hym/he ſaw a fayre ymage ⁊ a wel made in ſemblaūt as it were an archer with a bowe/and in the bowe a fyne arowe. Kyng Edmonde wente tho nere for to beholde it better./ And whan that he was by it/anone the arowe ſmote hym throughe the body/and there ſlewe the kynge. For that engyne was made for to ſlee his owne lorde traytourſlye. And ſoo whan kynge Edmonde was thus deed and ſlayne/he had regned but .x. yere And his people for hym made moche ſorowe And his body they bare to Glaſtenbury/and ther they hym entered ¶ And this falſe traytour Edryth anone wente vnto the quene that was kyng Edmondes wyfe/whiche wyſt not of her lordes dethe. Anone he toke from her two ſones that were fayre ⁊ yonge/that her lord had goten on her/that one was called Edward/and that other Edwyne/and ledde them with hym to London/and toke thē vnto kynge Knoght/that he ſholde do wt them what his wyl were. And tolde hym how ſubtylly he had ſlayn king Edmond bycauſe this Knoght ſholde haue all the lande of Englonde. ¶ O thou falſe traytour/haſt thou ſlayne my true broder/the er. And tolde hym howe ſubtylly he had ſlayne kynge Edmonde/for bycauſe and loue of hym/ſoo ẏ kynge Knoght all Englonde in his power hooly myght haue. ¶ O thou falſe traytour/haſt ẏ my true broder that was ſoo true thus ſlayne for me/ẏ mā I moſt loued in ẏ worlde. Now by my heed I ſhall for thy trauell the wel rewarde as thou haſt deſerued/⁊ anone lete hym betake ⁊ bounde honde ⁊ foot in maner of a traytour/⁊ lete caſt hym ther in to Tamyſe/⁊ in this maner ẏ fals traytour ended his lyf.. The kȳge toke ẏ two chyldren and put them vnto the abbot of weſtmynſtre to warde ⁊ to kepe tyll ẏ he wyſt what was beſt with them to do.

¶ How kynge knoght ſent kyng Edmondes ſones bothe in to Denmarck to be dyſtroyed/⁊ how they were ſaued.

SO it befell ſoone after that kynge Knoght had all ẏ land in his hand ⁊ ſpouſed ẏ quene Emme thorough conſent of his baronage/for ſhe was a fayre woman/the whiche was Eldredes wyfe ⁊ the dukes ſyſter of Normandye/⁊ they lyued togyder louyngly as reaſon wolde The kynge axed vpon a daye coūſayll of ẏ quene what was beſt to do wͭ Edmond Irenſydes ſones. Syr ſayd ſhe bycauſe they are heyres of the lande/ſende theym fer in to a ſtraūge lande to be dyſtroyed/or els they wyll cauſe moche ſorowe. The kynge anone lete call a Dane ẏ was called Walgar/⁊ cōmaūded hȳ that he ſhold lede thoſe two chyldren in to Denmarcke ⁊ there make ſo of theym ẏ he herde no more of them. Syr ſayd this Walgar youre cōmaūdement ſhal be done. And toke anone ẏ two chyldren ⁊ ledde them in to denmarke. And for as moche as he ſawe that the chyldren were wonder fayre ⁊ meke/he had of them grete pyte ⁊ ruthe/⁊ wold not ſlee them/but led them to the kynge of Hungary for to nouryſſhe/. For thys Walgar was well beknowen with ẏ kyng ⁊ beloued. Anone ẏ kynge axed whens ẏ chyldren were/⁊ Walgar tolde hym that they were the ryght heyres of Englonde. ⁊ therfore men wolde dyſtroy them/wherfore ſyr vnto you they be come mercy and helpe for to ſeke. And forſoth yf they may lyue your men they ſhal become/⁊ of you they ſhall holde all theyr lande. The kyng of Hungary receyued theym with moche honoure/⁊ lete theym worthely be kepte.

¶ And thus it befell afterwarde ẏ Edwyne the yonger broder deyed/and Edward the elder broder lyued/a fayre man and a ſtronge/⁊ a large man of body ⁊ gentyll ⁊ curteys of condycyons/ſo that all men hym loued. And this Edwarde in the cronycles is called among the Englyſſhmen Edwarde the outlawe. ¶ And whan as he was made knyght/the kynges doughter of Hungrye hym moche loued for hys worthynes ⁊ his fayrenes/ſo that ſhe called hym her derlynge. The kynge ẏ was her fader perceyued well the loue ẏ was betwene them two. And he had none heyre male/but onely that doughter And the kynge wouchesaf his doughter to no mā ſoo well as he dyd to hym/the whiche ſhe loued ſo wel/and he her/⁊ gaue her vnto hym with a good wyll. And Edward her ſpouſed with moche honour. The kynge of Hungry ſente after all his baronage/and made there a ſolempne feeſt ⁊ a riche weddyng. And made euery man to vnderſtand ẏ this Edward ſhold be kyng after his deceſſe of al that lande of Hungry. Of the whiche tydynges they were all ryght gladde. This ſame Edwarde begate vppon his lady a ſone/the whiche was called Edgar Helyng/⁊ afterward a doughter ẏ was called Margarete/ẏ afterwarde was quene of Scotlande. And by the kyng of Scotlond that was called Mancalin he had a doughter that was called Maud ẏ was quene afterwarde of Englond / though kynge Henry ẏ was the fyrſt ſone of the conquerour that her wedded. ⁊ he begate on her a doughter that was called Maude that after warde was Empreſſe of Almayn. And of this Maude came ẏ kynge of Englonde that vnto this daye is called Henry the Empreſſe ſone / ⁊ yet had this Edward an other doughter by his wyfe ẏ was called Cryſtiã ⁊ ſhe was a nõne.

¶ How kynge Knoght that was a proude man conquered Normandy / ⁊ how he became afterwarde meke ⁊ mylde.

NOw haue ye herde of Edmonde Irenſydes ſones ẏ kyng Knoght wend they had ben ſlayne as he had commaunded Walgar before. And this kynge Knoght had in his honde all the reame of Englonde ⁊ Denmarke. And after ẏ they wente vnto Norwaye that londe for to cõquere. But ẏ kynge of the londe that was called Olaf came wt his people / ⁊ wẽde his lõde to haue well kepte ⁊ defended / and ſo there he faught with hym / tyll at the laſt he was ſlayn in that batayll. And tho this Knoght toke all the londe in to his honde And whan he had conquered Norwaye / ⁊ taken feaute ⁊ homages there / he cam ayẽ in to Englonde / ⁊ helde hymſelf ſo grete a lorde / that hym thought in al the worlde his pere noo man was / ⁊ he cam ſo proude and hauteyne that it was grete wonder.

¶ And ſo it befell vpon a daye as he had herde maſſe at weſtmeſtre / ⁊ wolde haue gone in to his palays / the wawes of ẏ Tamyſe ſo ſwyftely agaynſt hym came that almooſt they touched his feete. Tho ſayd ẏ kynge with a proude hert. I cõmaũde ẏ water to torne agayne / or elles I ſhall make ẏ. The wawes for his cõmaundement wolde not ſpare / but flowed in bygneſſe and in heyght / more and more. The kynge was ſo proude of hert that he wolde not flee the water / ⁊ bete it with a rodde ẏ he had in his hande / ⁊ cõmaũded the water ẏ it ſholde go no ferder. But for all his cõmaundement ẏ water wold not ceſſe / but encreaſed more ⁊ more / ſo ẏ the kynge was all wete / ⁊ ſtode depe in ẏ water. And whan he ſawe the water wolde not do his cõmaũdement / he withdrewe hym ⁊ ſtode vpon a ſtone / holding vp his handes on hye / ⁊ ſayd herynge all ẏ people. ¶ This god ẏ maketh the ſee aryſe ſo is kyng of all kynges / and of all myghtes mooſt. And I am a caytyf ⁊ a man dedly / ⁊ he may neuer deye / ⁊ all thynge doth his cõmaũdement / ⁊ hym obeyeth. To ẏ god I pray ẏ he be my warraunt. For I knowlege me a caytif feble ⁊ of no power ⁊ therfore I wyl go vnto Rome without ony longe lettyng. ⁊ my wyckednes to punyſſhe ⁊ me to amende. For of god I clayme my lande for to holde / ⁊ of nõne other. And anoone made redy his heyre / ⁊ hymſelfe wente to Rome without ony lettyng And by ẏ way dyd many almeſſe dedes / ⁊ at Rome alſo. And whan he had be there for to do penaũce for his ſynnes / he came agayne in to Englonde / ⁊ became a good man ⁊ an holy / leuynge all maner pryde ⁊ lyuyng a holy lyfe. And he made two abbayes of ſaynt Benet / one in Englonde / ⁊ another in Normandye / bycauſe he loued hym more ſpecyally / than ony other ſaynt. And he loued moche alſo ſaint Edmonde the kynge. And often he gaue grete gyftes to ẏ houſe / ⁊ made it ryche. And whan he had regned. xx. yere he dyed ⁊ lyeth at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Anno dñi. M.xviii.

BEnedictus the. ix. was pope after Johannes / and he was a grete lo chour/ ⁊ therfore he was dampned/ ⁊ appered to a certayne man vnder a meruaylous fygure ⁊ an horryble. His heed ⁊ his tayle was lyke an aſſe/ yͤ other part of his body lyke a bere. And he ſaid to this man to whom he appered. Be not aferde/ for I was a man as you are/ but for my beeſtly lyuynge in my papalyte/ I appere nowe lyke a beeſt. In this mãnes tyme was grete dyuyſyon ⁊ ſclaundre to yͤ chirche/ for he was put out and in/ two tymes. And here Ptholomeꝰ noteth yͭ yͤ pryde of byſſhops had euer an euyll ende/ ⁊ it was euer the occaſyon of mooſt vnreſt ⁊ batayl

¶ Conradꝰ yͤ .i. was Emperour after Henrycus .xx. yere This man made many lawes/ ⁊ cõmaũded peas to be kepte mooſt ſtraytly of ony man. But yͤ erle of Ludolf was accuſed/ ⁊ he fledde from his lande/ ⁊ deſyred more to lyue lyke a chorle than lyke a gentilman/ ⁊ yet meruayloully his ſone was made Emperour by yͤ cõmaundement of god agaynſt the wyl of Conradus. And at yͤ laſte they were accorded. ⁊ he toke Conradꝰ doughter to his wyfe.

¶ Of kynge Harolde yͭ had leuer go on fote than ryde on horſbacke.

This knoght of whom we haue ſpoken of before had .ii. ſones by hys wyf Emme/ yͤ one was called Hardiknoghte/ ⁊ that other Harolde harefot/ for he was ſo lyght on fote yͭ he wolde not ryde/ And this Harolde was nothyng manerd after his fad knoght/ for he ſet not by chyualry/ curteyſye nor worſhyp/ but onely by his owne wyll. And he became ſo wycked yͭ he exyled his moder Emme. And ſhe wente in to Flaũdres ⁊ there dwelled wͭ the erle. Wherfor he ⁊ his broder hated eche other deedly. And whan he had regned two yere ⁊ more/ he deyed/ ⁊ lyeth at weſtmynſter.

¶ Of kynge Hardyknoght that was Haroldes broder.

After this Harolde Harefote/ regned his broder Hardiknoght/ a noble knyght/ ⁊ worthy/ ⁊ moche loued chyualry ⁊ all goodnes. And whan he had regned a lytell whyle/ he lete vncouere hys broder Harolde ⁊ ſmote of his heed/ ⁊ made caſt it in to a gonge/ ⁊ the body in to Tamyſe. And after came fyſſhers ⁊ toke the body wͭ theyr nettes by nyght/ ⁊ bare him to ſaynt Clementes chirche ⁊ there buryed hym. Thus auenged Hardyknoght hȳ on his broder. This kynge Hardyknoght was ſo large a gyuer of mete ⁊ drynke/ yͭ his tables were ſet euery day thre tymes full with ryall metes and drynkes for his houſholde ⁊ thẽ whiche came to his court

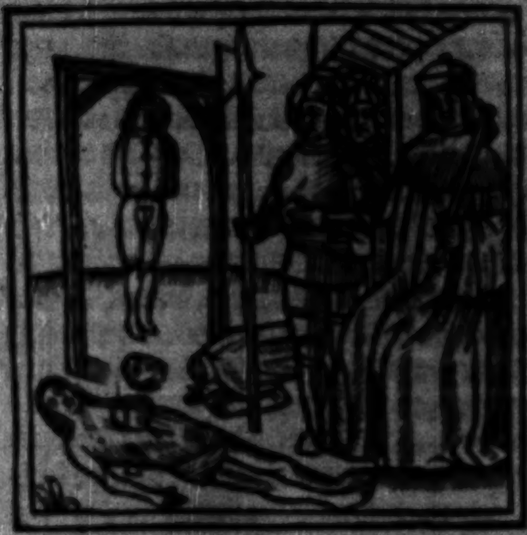
¶ And this kynge Hardyknoght ſent after Emme his moder for to come agayne bycauſe his broder Harolde harefote had dryuen her out of the lande/ throughe the counſayll of the erle Godewyn/ grettеſte lorde next the kynge in al Englonde/ and that had mooſt rule/ bycauſe he had wedded kynge Knoghtes doughter borne on his fyrſte wyfe. ¶ And whan yͭ this quene was dryuen out of Englonde/ ⁊ came to the erle of Flaũdres/ yͭ was called Baldewyne her coſyn whiche founde her all thynge that her neded/ vnto yͤ tyme that ſhe went agayne in to Englond/ that the kynge Hardyknoght had ſente for her yͭ was her ſone and made her come agayne with moche honour. This kynge Hardyknoght whan he had regned fyue yere he deyed ⁊ lyeth at weſtmynſter.

¶ Of the vyllany that the Danes dyd to the Englyſſhmen/ wherfore fro that tyme after was no Dane made kynge of thys lande.

And after the dethe of this kynge Hardeknoght/for as moche as he had no chylde of his body begoten. The erles & barons aſſembled & made a counſeyll/that neuer Dane ſholde be kyng after of Englonde for the dyſpyte they had done to the Englyſſhmen. For euermore afore yf the Englyſſhmen and the Danes happened to mete vpon a brydge ẏ Englyſſhmen ſholde not be ſo hardy to meue a fote/but ſtande ſtyll tyll the Dane were paſſed forth. And more ouer yf ẏ Englyſſhmen had not bowed downe theyr heedes to do reuerence vnto ẏ Danes/they ſhold haue ben beten & defoyled. And ſuche dyſpytes & vyllanyes dyd the Danes to our Englyſſhmen. wherfore they were dryuen out of the realme after Hardyknoghtes deth For they had no lorde ẏ them might mayntene. And in this maner auoyded ẏ Danes Englōde/ẏ neuer came agayne.

¶ The Erles & barons by theyr comyn aſſent & by theyr coūſayl ſent vnto Normādye for to ſeke thoſe two bretherne Alured & Edwarde ẏ was dwellynge with ẏ duke Rycharde that was theyr eame/in entente for to crowne Alured the elder broder/& hym make kyng of Englonde. And of this thynge he make an ende/ẏ Erles & barons made theyr othes. But the Erle Godewyn of weſtſex falſly & traytrouſlye thought to ſlee theſe two bretherne whan they ſholde be come in to Englonde. in entent to make his ſone Harolde kynge the whiche ſone he had begoten on kyng Hardyknoghtes doughter/his wyfe. And ſoo this Godewyn went preuely vnto ſouthhampton/for to mete there with the two bretheren at theyr landynge. ¶ And thus it befell/the meſſengers that wente in to Normandy/founde not but onely Alured ẏ was the eldeſt ſone. For Edwarde his broder was gone in to Hungary for to ſpeke with his coſyn Edwarde the outlawe that was Edmonde Jronſydes ſone. the meſſengers tolde Alured how that the barons of Englonde ſent after hym/and ẏ he boldely ſholde come in to Englonde/& receyue ẏ reame. For kyng Hardknoght was deed/& all the Danes dryuen out of the londe.

¶ How Godewyn the fals traytour toke Alured vpon Gyldeſdowne whan ẏ he came from Normandye to be kynge of Englonde/& how he caused hym to be martred in the yle of Ely.



Whan Alured herde theſe tydynges he thanked god And in to ſhyppe went with all the haſt that he coude/and paſſed the ſee/& aryued at ſouthhampton there Godewyn the falſe traytour was. And whan this traytour ſawe that he was come/he welcomed hym and receyued hym with moche ioye/and ſayd that he wolde lede hym to London there that al the barons of Englonde hym abode to make hym theyr kynge. And ſo they wente on theyr waye towarde London/ And whan they came on Gyldeſdowne/ tho ſayd the traytour Godwyn vnto Alu ers. Take kepe aboute you bothe on the lyfte ſyde & ẏ ryght ſyde/ & of all ye ſhalbe kynge/ & of ſuche an hondred more. Now ſoſoth ſayd Alured. I behyght you & yf I be kynge. I ſhall ordeyne & make ſuche lawes/ wherfore god & man ſhall be well pleaſed. Now had ẏ traytour commaunded all his men that were with hym/ that whan they were come vpon Gyldeſdowne/ that they ſholde ſlee all ẏ were in Alureds company/ that came with hym fro Normandy/ & after that take alured and lede hym in to the yle of Ely/ & after put out bothe his eyen of his heed/ and afterwarde brynge hym to deth/ & ſo they dyde. For they ſlewe all ẏ companye that there were/ the nombre of .vii. Gentylmen that were come with hym fro Normandye/ & after toke they Alured & in the yle of Ely they put out his eyen & rente his wombe and toke the chyef of his bowels/ & put a ſtake in to ẏ grounde/ & an ende of ẏ bowelles therto faſtened/ & with nedels tyſſe of yren they prycked the good chylde and ſo made hym to go about ẏ ſtake tyll that all his bowels were drawen oute of his body/ and ſo dyed Alured there through treaſon of ẏ erle Godewyn. Whan the lordes of Englande had herde & wyſt how Alured ẏ ſholde haue ben theyr kynge was put to deth through ẏ falſe traytour Godewyn they were wonder wroth And ſwore bytwene god & them/ that he ſholde dye a wors deth than dyde Edrith of Strattō ẏ had betrayed his lorde Edwarde Ironſyde/ & they wolde haue put hȳ to deth/ but ẏ theyf traytour fled thēs in to Denmarke/ & there helde hȳ .iiii. yere & more/ & loſt all his lande in England

SYlueſter the thyrde was pope after Benedictus. This Sylueſter was choſen/ & Benedictus was expulſed And afterwarde was he expulſed/ & Benedictus was put vp agayne. And after he was put out/ & Gregorius was made pope/ & he was but a ſymple lettred man and therfore he choſe an other man for to be conſecrate with hym. And whan many men were dyſpleaſed wᵗ this gydynge of .ii. popes/ ẏ .iii. was brought in/ ẏ whiche ſholde occupye the place of bothe tho two. And ſo they ſtroue amonge thēſelfe. But Henry the Emperour came then to Rome & depoſed them all/ & made Clemēt the ſeconde pope/ whome he made anone to crowne hym. And he ſayd to ẏ Romaynes/ they ſholde neuer without his aſſent cheſe pope/ & ſo fyue beynge popes/ ẏ .vi. was put in. But many mē ſay/ this Gregorius was an holy man. ¶ Damaſius the ſeconde was after Clement .xx. dayes This man was an vſurper of the popeheed/ & ſo he deyed ſodenly. And anone ẏ Romayns aſked to haue a pope/ & that ẏ Almayns ſholde haue none. For they were ſo harde herted that they myght not enclyne to the entente of the Emperoure/ the whiche ſayd There ſholde be no pope choſen but yf he wolde be of counſeyle of the eleccyon. But for all that they put in this holy man Leo/ & after he had of that cōſcience/ & refuſed it. And anone he was choſen by ẏ comyn aſſente/ this Leo put Cryſte in the fourme of a Laſer in to his owne bedde/ and in ẏ morowe he founde nothynge there.

¶ Of saynt Edwarde ẏ confeſſour/ whiche was Aluredes broder/ & how he was kynge of Englande.

AND whan this was done/ all the barons of Englande ſent another tyme in to Normandy/ for that Edwarde ſholde come in to Englande with moche honour. And this Edwarde in his chyldehode loued almyghty god & hym dradde.

honeſte ⁊ clenneſſe had lad his lyfe / ⁊ hated ſynne as deth. And whã he was crowned ⁊ anoynted wᵗ a ryall power / he forgate not his good maners ⁊ condycyons yᵗ he fyrſte vſed. And forgate not all good cuſtomes for noo maner honoure / nor for ryches / nor no maner hyghnes. But euer more ⁊ more gaue hym to goodneſſe ⁊ loued god ⁊ holy chyrche paſſynge all other maner thynge. And poore men alſo he loued / ⁊ thẽ helde as they had ben his owne bredren. And to them oft he gaue grete almeſſe with full good wyll.

¶ Of the fyrſt ſpecyall loue that god ſhewed to ſaynt Edwarde lyuynge.

IT befell on a day as he went from the chyrche of Weſtmynſtre / ⁊ had herde maſſe of ſaynt Johan the euangelyſte / for as moche as he loued ſaynt Johan the euangelyſte more ſpecyally after god ⁊ our lady thã he dyd ony other ſaynt And ſo there came to hym a pylgryme / ⁊ prayed hym for yͤ loue of god ⁊ our lady ⁊ ſaynt Johan yͤ Euangelyſt ſome good hȳ for to gyue And yͤ kynge pryuely toke his rynge of his fynger / that no man perceyued it ⁊ gaue it to the pylgryme / ⁊ he it receyued ⁊ went thens. This kynge Edwarde made all yͤ good lawes of Englande / that yet ben mooſt vſed ⁊ holden. And he was ſo mercyable ⁊ full of pyte / that noo man myght be more.

¶ How yͤ erle Godewin came ayene in to Englonde ⁊ had ayen all his londe / and afterwarde ſaynt Edwarde wedded his doughter.

WHan yͤ Erle Godewin yᵗ was dwellynge in Denmarke hadde moche herde of yͤ goodneſſe of kynge Edwarde / and yᵗ he was ſo full of mercy ⁊ of pyte. He thought that he wolde go agayn in to Englonde / for to ſeke ⁊ to haue grace of the good kynge Edwarde yᵗ ſo mercyfull was / yᵗ he myght haue agayne his londe in peas. And arayed hym as moche as he myght ⁊ put hȳ towarde yͤ ſee ⁊ came in to Englonde to London there yᵗ yͤ kynge was that tyme ⁊ all yͤ lordes of Englonde and helde a parlyamẽt. Godewin ſente to them yᵗ were his frendes / ⁊ were yͤ mooſt grettest lordes of yͤ londe / ⁊ prayed them to beſeche yͤ kynges grace for hym ⁊ yᵗ he wolde his peas ⁊ his londe graunte hym. The lordes led hym before the kynge to ſeke his grace. And anone as yͤ kynge hym ſawe / he appeled hym of treaſon / ⁊ of the deth of Alured his broder / and theſe wordes vnto hym ſayd. Traytour Godewin I the appele yᵗ thou haſt betrayed ⁊ ſlayne my broder Alured. Certes ſyr ſayd Godewin ſauynge your grace ⁊ your peas ⁊ your lordſhyp. I hȳ neuer betrayed / ne yet hym ſlewe. And therfore I put me in rewarde of the courte. Now fayre lordes ſayd yͤ kynge. Ye yᵗ ben my lyeges / erles / ⁊ barons of yͤ londe yᵗ here ben aſſembled full well ye herde myn appele / ⁊ yͤ anſwere alſo of Godewin / ⁊ therfore I wyll yᵗ ye awarde ⁊ do ryght. The erles ⁊ barõs tho gadred them all togyder for to do this awarde by themſelfe / ⁊ ſo they ſpake dyuerſly amonge thẽ. For ſome ſayde / there was neuer alyaũce by homage ſeriment ſeruyce / nor by lordſhyp bytwene Godewin and Alured / for whiche thynge they myght hym drawe. And at yͤ laſt they dyuyſed and demed / that he ſholde put hym in yͤ kynges mercy all togyder. Tho ſpake yͤ erle Leueryke of Couẽtre a good mã to god ⁊ to all the worlde / ⁊ tolde his reaſon in this maner ⁊ ſayd. The erle Godewin is the beſt frended man of Englonde after the kynge / and well it myght not be agayne ſayde / that without counſell of Godewin Alured was neuer put to deth wherfoꝛe I awarde as touchynge my parte/ that hymſelfe ⁊ his ſone ⁊ euery of vs xii. erles that ben his frendes go befoꝛe ẏ kynge/ charged with aſmoche golde ⁊ ſyluer as we may bere betwixt our handes prayenge the kynge to forgyue his euyll wyll to the erle Godewyn/ ⁊ receyue his homage/ ⁊ his londe yelde agayne. And they accoꝛded vnto that awarde/ and came euery of theym with golde and ſyluer as moche as they myghte bere bytwene theyꝛ handes befoꝛe the kynge/ and there ſayd the fourme and the maner of theyꝛ accoꝛde and of theyꝛ awarde. The kynge wolde not them agaynſay/ but as moche as they oꝛdeyned/ he graũted ⁊ cõfermed And ſo was the erle Godewyn accoꝛded wyth ẏ kynge/ ⁊ ſoo he had agayne all his londe. And afterwarde he bare hẏ ſo well and ſo wyſely/ that the kynge loued hym wonder moche/ ⁊ with hym he was full preuy. And within a lytell tyme they loued ſo moche that there ẏ kynge ſpouſed Godewyns doughter/ ⁊ made her quene And neuertheleſſe though the kynge had a wyfe/ yet he lyued euer in chaſtyte and clenneſſe of body wtout ony fleſſhly dede doynge wt his wyf. And the quene alſo in her halfe ladde an holy lyfe two yere/ and deyed. And afterwarde the kynge lyued all his lyfe without ony wyfe. The kynge gaue ẏ erledome of Oxefoꝛde to Harolde that was Godewyns ſone/ ⁊ made hẏ erle And ſo well they were beloued/ bothe the fader ⁊ he/ ⁊ ſoo preue wt the kynge/ that they myght doo by ryght what thynge ẏ they wolde. Foꝛ agaynſt ryght wolde he nothynge do foꝛ no maner man/ ſoo good and true he was of conſcyence. And therfoꝛe our loꝛde Jheſu cryſt grete ſpecyall loue to hym ſhewed.

¶ How kynge Edwarde ſawe Swyne kynge of Denmarke dꝛowned in the ſee in the tyme of the Sacramente as he ſtode and herde maſſe.

IT befelle vpon a Whytſondaye as kynge Edwarde herde his maſſe in the chyꝛche of Weſtmynſtre ryght at ẏ leuacyon of Jeſu Cryſtes body/ ⁊ as all men were gadꝛed in to the chyꝛche/ ⁊ came nyghe the awter foꝛ to ſe the ſacrynge the kynge his handes lyfte vp on hygh/ ⁊ a grete laughter toke vp. Wherfoꝛe all ẏ aboute hym ſtode gretely ganne wonder And after maſſe/ they aſked why the kynges laughter was/ fayꝛe loꝛdes ſaid kyng Edwarde. I ſawe ſwyne the yonger that was kynge of Denmarke come in to the ſee wt all his power foꝛ to haue come in to Englande vpon vs foꝛ to warre. And I ſawe hym ⁊ all his folke dꝛowned in ẏ ſee and all this I ſawe in ẏ leuacyon of cryſtes body bytwene the pꝛeeſtes handes/ and I had therfoꝛe ſo grete Joye that I myght not my laughter withholde. And the erle Lyuerycke beſyde hẏ ſtode at the leuacyon/ and openly ſawe the fourme of bꝛede torne in ẏ lykeneſſe of a yonge chylde/ ⁊ to take vp his ryght hande ⁊ bleſſyd the kynge ⁊ after the erle/ ⁊ ẏ erle anone torned hym towarde the kynge foꝛ to make hym ſe that holy ſyght. And tho ſayd the kynge. Syꝛ erle I ſe well that ye ſe/ thanked be god ẏ I haue honoured my god my ſauyour vyſybly Jheſu cryſte in fourme of man. Whoſe name be bleſſyd in all woꝛldes. Amen.

¶ How the rynge ẏ ſaynt Edwarde had gyuen to a pooꝛe pylgryme/ foꝛ the loue of god ⁊ ſaynt Johan Euangelyſte came agayne to kynge Edwarde.

THis noble man ſaynt Edwarde reygned.xxiii.yere. And thus it befell vpon a tyme ere he deyed/ ẏ two men of Englonde were gone in to holy londe/ ⁊ hadde done theyr pylgrymage/ ⁊ were goynge in to theyr owne countre where they came from. And as they wente in yͤ waye/ they mette a pylgryme yͭ curteysly them salued/ ⁊ axed of thẽ in what londe and in what coũtre they were borne. And they sayd in Englonde. Tho axed he who was kyng of Englande. And they answered ⁊ sayd/ yͤ good kynge Edwarde. Fayre frendes sayd tho yͤ pylgryme/ whan yͤ ye come in to your coũtre agayne. I pray you yͭ ye wyll go vnto kynge Edwarde/ ⁊ oftentymes grete hym in myne name/ ⁊ oftentymes hym thanke of his grete curteysye yͭ he to me hath done/ ⁊ namely for the rynge that he gaue me whã he had herde masse at westmynstre for saynt Johans loue euãgelyst. And toke yͤ rynge/ ⁊ toke it to the pylgrymes ⁊ sayd. I praye you go ⁊ bere this rynge/ ⁊ take it vnto kyng Edwarde/ ⁊ tell hym that I sende it hym ⁊ a full ryche gyfte I wyll hym gyue. For vpon the .xii. daye he shall come vnto me and euermore dwelle in blysse wout ony ende. Syr sayd yͤ pylgrymes/ what man be ye ⁊ in what coũtre is your dwellynge Fayre frendes sayde he. I am Johan the euangelyste/ ⁊ I am dwellynge with almyghty god/ ⁊ your kynge Edwarde is my frende/ ⁊ I loue hym in specyall for bycause yͭ he hath euermore lyued in clennesse ⁊ is a clene mayde/ and I pray you my message to fulfyll as I haue you sayd Whan yͭ saynt Johan euangelyst had thẽ thus charged/ sodaynly he voyded out of theyr syghtes bothe. The pylgrymes tho thãked almyghty god ⁊ went forth theyr way. And whã they had gone two or .iii. myle they begã to waxe wery ⁊ set them adowne for to rest them/ ⁊ so they felle on slepe. And whan they had slepte well/ one of them awoke ⁊ lyfte vp his heed and loked aboute/ ⁊ sayd to his felowe. Aryse vp ⁊ walke we in our waye. What sayd yͤ one felowe vnto that other/ where be we now. Certes sayd yͤ other/ it semeth me yͭ this is not the countre there we layde vs downe in for to rest ⁊ slepe. For we were from Jherusalem but thre myle. They toke vp theyr handes ⁊ blyssyd them/ and wente forth in theyr waye. And as they wente they sawe shepherdes goynge with theyr shepe yͭ spake none other langage but englysshe. Good frendes sayd one of yͤ pylgrymes/ what coũtre is this/ ⁊ who is lorde therof. And anone yͤ shepeherdes answered ⁊ sayd/ this coũtre is yͤ coũtre of Kent in Englonde/ of yͤ whiche yͤ good kynge Edwarde is lorde of. The pylgrymes thanked tho almyghty god ⁊ saynt Johan euangelyst/ ⁊ went forth in theyr waye ⁊ came to Caunterbury/ ⁊ fro thens vnto London/ ⁊ there they founde yͤ kyng And tolde hym all from yͤ begynnynge in yͤ endynge asmoche as saynt Johan had them charged/ ⁊ of all thynges how they had sped by yͤ way/ ⁊ toke yͤ rynge to kynge edwarde ⁊ he toke it ⁊ thãked almyghty god ⁊ saynt Johan Euangelyste. And tho made hym redy euery daye fro daye to daye to departe oute of this lyfe whan god wolde for hym sende.

¶ How saynt Edwarde dyed yͤ .xii. daye

And after it befell thus on Crystemasse euen as yͤ holy man edwarde was at goddes seruyce matyns for to here of yͤ hyghe solempne feest/ he became ful syke/ ⁊ in yͤ morowe endured wᵗ moche payne yͤ masse for to here and after masse he lete hym be lad in to his chambre/ there for to rest hym. But in his halle amonge his barons and his knyghtes myght he not come theryn for to comforte and solace/ as he was wonte for to do at yͤ worthy feest. Wherfore all theyr myrthe and comfort amonge all that were in the halle was torned in to care ⁊ ſorowe / bycauſe they ſhulde for to leſe the good lorde the kynge. ¶ And vpon ſaynt Johans daye the Euangelyſt yͤ came next / the kyng receyued his ryghtes of holy chirche / as it befalleth to euery cryſten man / ⁊ abode yͤ mercy ⁊ the wyll of god. And the two pylgryms he lete before hym come / ⁊ gaue them ryche gyftes / ⁊ betoke them to god. Alſo the abbot of weſtmynſter he lete before hym come ⁊ toke hym yͤ rynge in the honour of god ⁊ ſaynt Marye / ⁊ of ſaynt Johan the euangelyſt. And the abbot toke it ⁊ put it amonge other relyques / and there it is at weſtmynſter in the abbaye. And ſo laye the kynge ſyke tyl yͤ .xii. euen And then deyed yͤ good kyng Edward at weſtmynſter / for whoſe loue god hath ſhewed many a fayre myracle And this was in the yere of yͤ Incarnacyon of our lorde Jheſu Cryſte. M.lxv. And after he was tranſlated ⁊ put in to the ſhryne by yͤ noble martyr ſaynt Thomas of caũterbury

Vyctor the ſeconde was pope after Leo / and of hym lytell is wryten ¶ Henry the ſeconde was Emperour after the fyrſt Henry .xvii. yere. This man was coſyn to Conradus / ⁊ he was borne in a wodde / ⁊ twyes taken for to be ſlayn whan he was a chylde / but god defended hym euermore. Whan he was made Emperour / many a monaſtery he made in yͤ ſame place in yͤ wodde where he was borne. This man was vyctoryous / ⁊ he entred in to ytaly / ⁊ there he toke Padulphꝰ the prynce of campany. ¶ Stephanus yͤ .ix. was pope after Victor .ix. monethes. ¶ Benedictꝰ was after hym / ⁊ he toke yͤ dygnyte of yͤ Pope Stephanꝰ by ſtrengthe / ⁊ kepte it .ix. monethes / ⁊ then deceſſed. ¶ Henry yͤ .iii. was Emperour after Henry the ſeconde. This Henry was an Inquyete man / ⁊ many tymes troubled that holy man Gregorius the .vii. And he axed forgyuenes fyrſt ⁊ was aſſoyled. but he perceuered not longe / but brought in an other pope agaynſt hym / and ſayd he was an heretyke. And Gregoryous curſyd hym. And the cheſers of yͤ Emperour choſe the duke of Saxon for to be Emperour / whom this Henry in batayle ouercame. And then he came to Rome with his pope ⁊ purſued pope Gregorius ⁊ the cardynalles alſo. ¶ And then anone Robert the kynge of Naples droue hym thens / ⁊ delyuered yͤ pope ⁊ his Cardynalles. Neuertheles yet he was a man of greate almeſſe / ⁊ he fought .xii. tymes in batayll / ⁊ at yͤ laſte he deyed wretchydly / for he was put downe by his owne ſone. For euen ſo as he dyd ſo was he done tó. ¶ Nicholaꝰ the ſeconde was pope after Benedictꝰ .ii. yere. This Nicholaus called a coũſayl agaynſt the Archedeken of Turonoſiꝰ / yͤ whiche was an heretyke teching agaynſt the fayth. For he erred in the ſacrament / and after he was conuerted ⁊ was an holy man / but he coude neuer conuerte hys dyſcyples. Nota. ¶ Alexander the ſeconde was pope after him .xii. yere / this Alexander was an holy man / ⁊ he ordeyned that vnder payne of curſyng that no man ſholde here a preeſtes maſſe whome they knewe had a lemman (vt pz .xxxii. p̄ter hoc) he had ſtryfe wͭ one Codulo / but he expulſed hym as an vſurper / ⁊ put hȳ out as a Symonyer.

¶ How Harolde that was Godewyns ſone was made kyng / ⁊ how he eſcaped frõ the duke of Normandy.

AS ſaynt Edward was gone out of this worlde / and was paſſed to god ⁊ worthely entered as to ſuche a grete lorde ought / the barons of the lande de ſyred to haue had Edwarde Etyngus/ ſone to Edward ẏ outlawe ẏ was Edmond Irenſydes ſone to be kynge. For bycauſe he was of ẏ kyndeſt kynges blode. But Haroldes ſone through the erle Godewin & the ſtrength of his fader Godewyn ẏ other grete lordes of his kynred in ẏ realme/ ſeaſed all Englonde in to his hande/ & anone lete crowne hym kynge after the enterement of ſaynt Edwarde. This Harolde ẏ was Godewyns ſone two yere or ſaynt Edward deyed/ he wolde haue gone in to Flaundres/ but he was dryuen by tempeſt in to the countree of Pountyſe/ And there he was taken & brought to duke Wyllyam. And this Harolde wende ẏ Duke wyllyam wolde haue be auenged on him/ for bycauſe ẏ Haroldes fader had made ſle Alured ſaynt Edwardes broder And pryncypally bycauſe Alured was ſone to quene Emme/ ẏ was Richardes moder duke of Normandye/ ẏ was ayeull to duke wyllyam. Neuertheles he dyde not ſoo/ for aſmoche as Harolde was a noble wyſe knyght/ & that he & his fader were accorded wᵗ ſaynt Edwarde. But alowed al thynge ordeyned betwene them. Harolde by his good wyll ſwore vpon a boke/ & vpon holy ſayntes that he ſholde ſpouſe & wedde duke wyllyams doughter after ẏ dethe of ſaynt Edwarde. And ẏ he ſholde do his beſy cure to ſaue & kepe the reame of Englond vnto the profyte & auantage of duke wyllyam. And whan Harold had thus made his othe vnto the duke wyllyā he lete hym go out of pryſon free/ & gaue hym many ryche gyftes. And he then departed thens & came in to Englonde/ and anone dyd in this maner whan ſaynt Edwarde was deed as a fals forſworn man lete crowne hymſelf kynge of Englonde. And falſely brake the couenaunt that he had made before wᵗ duke wyllyam. wherfore he was wonder wrothe with hym/ & ſwore that he wolde be auenged vpon hym what ſomeuer hym befell. ¶ And anone duke wyllyam lete aſſemble a grete hooſt & came in to Englonde for to auenge him on Harolde/ and conquere the londe yf ẏ he myght. ¶ And in ẏ ſame yere that Harolde was crowned. Haralde Harefayng kyng of Denmark aryued in Scotland & thought to haue be kynge of Englonde And entred in to Englonde & robbed and dyſtroyed all that he myght tyl ẏ he came to yorke/ & there he ſlewe many men of armes/ a. M. & a. C. preſtes. ¶ whan this tydynges came to the kynge/ he aſſembled a greate power/ & wente for to fyght with Haralde of Denmarke/ & with his owne handes he hym ſlewe/ & the Danes were diſcomfyted. And tho ẏ were left alyue wᵗ moche ſorowe fled to theyr ſhyppes. And thus kynge Harolde of Englonde ſlewe kynge Haralde of Denmarke.

¶ Anno dñi. M. lxvi.

¶ How wyllyam Baſtarde duke of Normandye came in to Englonde/ and ſlewe kynge Harolde.

¶ Here come Normans
and expulſed Ha
rolde a Saxon.
Wilhelmus conqueſtor.

AND whan this batayll was done Haralde became ſoo proude ẏ he wolde nothynge parte with his people of the thynge that he had goten/ but helde it to hymſelfe. wherfore the mooſt partie of his people were wrothe and from hym departed. Soo that onely with hym abode no moo but his ſouldyours. And vpon a daye as he ſat at mete/ a meſſenger came to hym & ſayd/ that wyllyam baſtarde of Normandy duke was arryued in Englōde with a grete hooſt/ & had taken all the lande about Haſtynges/ & alſo myned the caſtell. whan the kynge had herde this tydynges/ he went theder with a lytell power in all the haſte ẏ he myght/ for there were but fewe people with hym lefte. As he was come theder/ he ordeyned to gyue batayll to duke wyllyam. But the Duke aſked him theſe thre thynges fyrſt. yf that he wolde haue his doughter to wyfe/ as he had ſworne and promyſed/ or whether ẏ he wolde holde of hym the lande in truage. or yf he wolde determyne this thynge in batayll. Harolde was a proude man & a ſtrong/ & truſted moche in his ſtrength and fought with the duke wyllyam & his people. But Harolde and his men were dyſconfyted in that batayll. and hymſelf there was ſlayn. And this batayll was ended at Tonbrydge in the ſeconde yere of his regne/ vpon ſaynt Calixtus day/ & ſo he was buryed at Waltham.

¶ Of kynge wyllyam baſtarde/ & how he gouerned hym well & wyſely/ and of the warre betwene hym & the kynge of Fraũce.

THen whan wyllyam baſtarde duke of Normandye had conquered all Englonde/ vpon Cryſtmaſſe day then nexte he lete crowne hym kynge at weſtmynſter/ & as a worthy kynge gaue vnto Englyſſh men largely landes/ and to his knyghtes. And afterwarde he wente him ouer the ſee & came in to Normandy/ and there he dwelled a whyle. And in ẏ .ii. yere of his regne he came agayne in to Englonde & brought with hym Maude hys wyf/ & lete crowne her quene of Englond on whytſonday. ¶ And then anone after the kynge of Scotlande that was called Malcolyn began to ſtryue & warre wyth the kyng wyllyam. And he ordeyned him towarde Scotlande with his men bothe by lande and by ſee/ for to dyſtroye kynge Malcolyn. But they were accorded/ & the kynge of Scotlande became his man/ & helde all his lande of hym. And kyng wyllyam receyued of hym his homage & cam agayne in to Englond. And as kyng wyllyam had be kynge .xvii. yere Maude the quene dyed/ on whom kyng wyllyam had begote many fayre chyldren. That is for to ſaye Robert Curthos/ wyllyam Rous Richarde alſo that deyed/ Henry Beauclerke/ and Maude alſo that was Erles wyfe of Bleynes/ & other foure fayre doughters. ¶ And after his wyues deth there began grete debate betwene hym and Phylyp the kynge of Fraunce/ but at the laſte they were accorded. And then dwelled the kynge of Englonde in Normandy and no man him warred/ and he no man longe tyme. ¶ And the kynge of Fraunce ſayd vpon a daye in ſcorne of kynge wyllyam that he had long tyme lyen in chyldbed/ and longe tyme had reſted hym ther. And this worde came to the kynge of Englonde where as he dyd lye in Normandy at Roen. And for this worde was he euyll appayed/ and alſo wonder wroth towarde ẏ kinge of Fraunce. And ſwore by god ẏ whan he were ariſen of his ſekenes he wolde lyghten a .M. candelles/ to the kynge of Fraunce/ and anone lete aſſemble a grete hooſt of Normans/ and of Englyſhmen. And in the begynnyng of herueſt he came in to Fraunce/ and brent all the townes that they came by thorough ẏ countree/ & robbed & dyd al the ſorowe ẏ he myght throughout al Fraũce. And at the laſt he brenned ẏ cite of Maundes/ and cõmaũded his people to bere wodde/ & as moche as he myght brẽne. And he ayded therto hymſelfe wᵗ a good wyl. And there was a grete hete/ what of the fyre ẏ was ſo grete/ & of the ſõne that it was wonder hote/ & ſtuffed hym ſo ẏ he became & fel in to a grete dyſeaſe. And whan he ſawe he was ſo ſtronge ſyke/ he aſſygned all Normandy to Robert Curthos his ſone. And all Englonde to Wyllyam the Rous/ and bequethed to Henry Beauclerke al his rychesse. And whan he had done thus/ he receyued all the ſacramentes of holy church & deyed the .xx. yere of his reygne/ & lyeth at Cane in Normandy.

¶ Anno dñi. M.lxvi.

GRegorius the .vii. was pope after Alexander .xii. yere/ this man ordeyned in a generall Senodus/ that no preeſt ſholde haue a wyfe nor ſhold dwell with women/ but tho ẏ the holy Synodꝰ of Nicena & other decrees had ſuffred. & then ẏ preeſtes ſet lytell or nought by his ordynaunce. This man cõmaunded ẏ no man ſholde here maſſe of a preeſt ẏ had a concubyne And he on a certayne tyme as he was cardynall & Legate of Fraũce/ ꝓceded ſharply agaynſt prelates & preeſtes ẏ were ſymonyers. And among al other was one byſſhop there gretely famed wᵗ ſymonye. And thoſe ẏ accuſed hym he hyred pryuely to ſaye the contrary/ the whiche the Legate conceyued/ & afore all the people he ſayd. Let the Jugement of theſe men ceaſe at this tyme/ for they are deceyuable/ & let god dyſpoſe for it And ſayd thus it is certayne that the dygnyte of a byſſhop is the gyuer of the holy ghooſt/ & who ſomeuer byeth a byſſhopryche/ doth agaynſt the holy ghoſt. Then yf thou byſſhop dyd not agaynſt the holy ghoſt/ ſaye openly afore all the people (Gloria patri et filio et ſpiritui ſancto) And many tymes he began to ſaye it/ but he coude neuer ſpeke (ſpiritui ſancto). Then he was depoſed of his byſſhopryche. And after he coude ſpeke it well ynough. ¶ Victor the thyrde was pope after hỹ one yere/ & this man was poyſoned with venym in ẏ chalyce. ¶ Urbanus was pope after hym .xi. yere. This man curſed the kynge of Fraũce for his aduoutrye. And he called a cõſayle at Clarñ in the whiche he ordeyned that matyns of our lady ſholde be ſayd euery daye/ & on Saterdaye her ſolempne maſſe. And it is ſayd/ ẏ this was ſhewed vnto the freres of Charterhouſe. ¶ Alſo he called an other cõſayll at Turon for the holy lande to be wõne agayne/ & prouoked the people to that thyng. And within a lytell tyme after that matere/ the holy lande was recouered/ & the ſepulcre of our lorde. And Anthioche with many dyuers cytees taken from the Sarrazyns. And it is ſayd ẏ men byleued that .CC. M Cryſten men went to that Journey. For there wente of ſtates olde men & yonge/ & alſo ryche and pore/ & no man compelled them. And this paſſage was made by the vyſion of our lady And ẏ prynces of this people were dyuers. One was Godefrey de Boloyne a ful noble man of al ẏ world and a vertuous man. And an other was Beremonde the Duke of Naples. The thyrde was Hughe the kynges broder of Fraũce/ & many other the whiche dyd ful nobly for the fayth of god. ¶ And it were to longe in this booke to reherce the glorious actes that they dyde.

¶ Of kynge Wyllyam Rous ẏ was kynge Wyllyam baſtardes ſone/ that dyſtroyed townes and houſes of relygyon for to ma ke the newe foreſt.

SO as Wyllyam baſtard was deed his ſone Wyllyam regned. And he was a wonder contraryous man to god & holy chirche / & lete amende & make the townes of Cardeys yͭ the paynyms hadde dyſtroyed. This kynge Wyllyam dyſtroyed holy chirche and theyr poſſeſſyons in what part he myght them fynde. And therfore there was ſo moche debate betwene hym & the Archebyſſhop of Caũterbury. For bycauſe yͭ Anceimus repreued hym of his wyckednes yͭ he dyſtroyed holy chirche. And for that cauſe the kynge bare to hym grete wrath. And ſoo he exyled hym out of this lande. And the Archebyſſhop went to the court of Rome & there dwelled with the Pope. And this kynge made the newe foreſte / and caſte downe .xxvi. townes and .lxxx. houſes of relygyon / all for to make his foreſt lenger & brooder. & became wonder proude and gladde of his woddes & foreſt. And nouryſſhed the wyld beeſtes that were within / yͭ it was meruayle for to wyte / ſo yͭ men called hym keper of woddes & paſtures. And the more lenger yͭ he lyued / the more wycked he became / both to god & to all holy chirche / & to all his men. And this kynge cauſed make weſtmynſter halle. So vpon a daye in the Whytſontyde he helde therin his fyrſt feeſt. And he loked about hym & ſayd that the halle was to lytell by the halfe deale. & at the laſte he became ſo contraryous / yͭ al thynge that pleaſed god dyſpleaſed hȳ and all thynge yͭ god loued he hated deedly. ¶ And ſo it befel that he dremed vpon a nyght a lytell or yͭ he deyed that he was let blode / & bledde a grete quantyte of blode / and a ſtreme of it lepte on hye toward heuen / more than a hondred fadom / and the clereneſſe of the daye was torned vnto nyght and derkneſſe of the fyrmament.

¶ And whan that he awoke he had grete drede / ſo that he wyſt not what for to do. And told his dreme to men of his coũſayl and ſaid that he had grete drede / and ſuppoſed that to hym was ſome myſchaunce to come. ¶ And the ſeconde nyght before a monke dremed of the houſholde that the kynge wente in to a chirche with moche people / and he was ſo proude that he dyſpyſed all the people that were with hym And that he toke the ymage of the crucyfyxe and ſhamefully bote it with his teeth. And the crucyfyxe mekely ſuffred all that he dyd. But yet the kynge as a mad man rent of the armes of the Crucyfyxe and caſt it vnder his fete and defoyled it / and threwe it all abrode. And a grete fyre came out of the Crucyfyxe mouthe. Of yͭ which dreme many a man had grete meruayle and wonder. ¶ The goode man that had dremed this ſtraunge dreme tolde it to a knyght / that was mooſt preuy with the kynge of all men / and yͭ knyght was called Hamondes. Soone the monke and he tolde the dreme vnto the kynge & ſayd that it ſholde betoken other thynge than good. And neuertheles yͭ kynge laughed therat twyes or thryes / and lytel ſet therby / and thought that he wolde go & hunt and playe in the foreſt. And men counſayled hym that he ſholde not go that daye / for no maner thynge nor come in the wod ſoo that he abode at home before meete. / But anone as he had eten no man myght hym lette but that he wolde go vnto the wodde for to haue his dyſport. And thus it happened that one of his knyghtes that hyght Walter Tyrell wolde haue ſhot to a grete harte / & his arowe glenſyd vpon a braunche / and throughe myſauenture ſmote the kynge vnto the herte. And ſoo he felle downe deed to the grounde without ony worde ſpekynge. And ſoo ended he his lyfe days. And it was no meruayll foꝛ the daye that he deyed he had let to ferme the Archebyſſhopꝛyche of Cāterbury ⁊ .xii. abbayes alſo/⁊ euermoꝛe by the grete dyſtruccyon to holy churche through wrongfull takyng ⁊ aſkynge. Foꝛ no mā durſt withſtande yͭ he wolde haue done. ⁊ of his lewdenes he wolde neuer withdꝛawe/neyther to amende his lyfe. And therfoꝛe god wolde ſuffre hym no lenger to regne in his wyckednes. And he had be kynge .xiii. yere ⁊ .vi. wekes/⁊ lyeth at Weſtmynſter.

¶ Anno dñi. M.lxxxviii.

PAſchall was pope after Urbanus .xviii. yere ⁊ .v. monethes/the whiche the .xiii. yere of his biſſhopꝛyche wͭ his Cardynalles was put in pꝛyſon by Henry yͤ fourth Emperour. And they myght not be delyuered vntyl yͤ pope had ſworn that he ſholde kepe peas with hym/⁊ that he ſholde neuer curſe hym. And on yͭ pꝛomyſe/yͤ pope gaue yͤ Emperour a pꝛeuylege/⁊ the yere after yͤ pope dampned yͤ pꝛeuylege/⁊ ſaid on this wyſe. Let vs cōpꝛehende all holy ſcripture the olde teſtament ⁊ the newe/yͤ lawes of the pꝛophetes/the goſpell ⁊ the canons of appoſtles ⁊ all the decrees of the popes of Rome/yͭ all they helde I holde/⁊ that yͭ they dampne I dampne/⁊ mooſt ſpecyally yͤ pꝛeuylege graunted to Henry the Emperour yͭ whiche rather is graunted to venge his malyce/than to multeplye his pacyence in vertue. Foꝛ euermoꝛe I dampne that ſame pꝛeuylege.

¶ Of kyng Henry Beauclerk yͭ was wyllyam Rous bꝛoder/⁊ of the debate betwene hym ⁊ Robert Curthos his bꝛoder.

AND whan wyllyam Rous was deed. Henry beauclerk his bꝛoder was made kyng/bycauſe wyllyam rous had no chylde begote on his body. ⁊ thys Henry Beauclerk was crowned kyng at Lōdon yͤ .iiii. day after yͭ his bꝛoder was deed yͭ is to ſaye/the .v. daye of Auguſt. ¶ And anone as Ancelmus yͭ was archebyſſhop of Caunterbury beynge at yͤ court of Rome herde tell yͭ wyllyam Rous was deed/he came agayne in to Englonde/⁊ the kyng Henry Beauclerk welcomed hym honourably. And yͤ fyrſt yere yͭ he regned he ſpouſed Maude the quene of Scotlandes doughter. And the Archebyſſhop Ancelm⁹ of Caunterbury wedded them. And this kynge begate vpon his wyfe two ſones ⁊ a doughter/yͭ is to ſaye. wyllyam ⁊ Rycharde ⁊ Maude. ¶ And this Maude was afterwarde yͤ Empꝛeſſe of Almayne. And in the ſeconde yere of his regne/his bꝛoder Robert Curthos duke of Noꝛmandy came with an huge hooſt in to Englōd foꝛ to chaleng the lande. But through counſeyll of the wyſe men of yͤ lande/they were accoꝛded in this maner. That yͤ kynge ſholde gyue his bꝛoder the duke a .M.li. euery yere. And whiche of them lyued lengeſt ſholde be others heyꝛe/⁊ ſo betwene them ſholde be no debate noꝛ ſtryfe. And whan they were thus accoꝛded/the duke wente home agayne in to Noꝛmandye. ¶ Whan the kynge had regned foure yere/there aroſe a grete debate betwene hym and the Archebyſſhop of Caunterburye/Ancelmus. Foꝛ bycauſe that the Archebyſſhop wolde not graunte hym to talege the churches at his wyll. And therfoꝛe eftſone yͤ Archebyſſhop Ancelmus went ouer the ſee vnto the court of Rome/and there he dwelled with the pope. And in yͤ ſame yere the duke of Noꝛmandye came in to Englonde to ſpeke with his bꝛoder And amonge all other thynges the duke of Noꝛmandy forgaue vnto the kyng his bꝛoder/yͤ foꝛſayd .M.li. yͭ he ſholde paye vnto the duke. And with good loue ẏ kynge and the duke departed / ⁊ there the duke went agayne in to Normandy. And as the two yere were gone / through the enticement of the deuyll and of ſymple men a grete debate aroſe betwene the kyng and the duke / ſo that through coũſayll ẏ kyng went ouer the ſee in to Normandy. And whan the kynge was there / all the grete lordes of Normandy torned vnto ẏ kyng of Englonde / and helde agaynſt the duke theyr owne lorde / ⁊ forſoke hym yeldyng them vnto the kynge / with al the good caſtelles ⁊ townes of Normandy. And ſoone after was the duke take ⁊ ledde with ẏ kynge in to Englonde. And the kynge lete put the duke in to pryſon / ⁊ this was ẏ vengeaunce of god. For whan the Duke was in the holy lande / god gaue hym ſuche myght and grace / that he was choſen for to haue be kynge of Iheruſalem / and he forſoke it and wolde not take it vppon hym / ⁊ therfore god ſent hym that ſhame and dyſpyte for to be put in his broders pryſon. Then ceaſed kyng Henry al Normandy in to his hande / ⁊ held it al his lyf tyme. ¶ And in the ſame yere came ẏ byſſhop Ancelmus fro the court of Rome in to Englonde agayne. And the kynge ⁊ he were acorded. ¶ And in the nexte yere comynge after / there began a grete debate betwene the kynge Phylyp of Fraunce ⁊ kynge Henry of Englonde. Wherfore kynge Henry went in to Normandy / and there was ſtronge warre betwene them two And tho deyed the kyng of Fraunce / and Lowys his ſone was made kynge anone after his dethe. And then went kyng Henry agayne in to Englonde / and maryed Maude his doughter vnto Henry ẏ Emperour of Almayne.

¶ Of the debate that was betwene kyng Lowys of Fraunce ⁊ kyng Henry of Englonde / ⁊ how kynge Henryes two ſones were drowned in the hye ſee.

As kyng Henry had be kyng .xvii. yere / a grete debate aroſe betwene kynge Lowys of Fraũce ⁊ kyng Henry of Englonde / bycauſe the kynge hadde ſent in to Normandye to his ſubiectes / ẏ they ſholde be helpynge vnto the Erle of Bloys aſmoche as they myght in warre agaynſt the kynge of Fraũce / beynge as redy vnto hym as they were to theyr own lorde. For bycauſe that the erle had ſpouſed his ſyſter Maude. And for this cauſe the kynge of Fraũce dyd moche ſorow to Normandy. Wherfore the kynge of Englonde was wonder wrothe / ⁊ in haſt wẽt ouer ẏ ſee with a grete power / ⁊ came in to Normandye for to defende that lande. And the warre betwene them laſted two yere / tyll at the laſt they two fought togyder. And the kynge of Fraũce was dyſcõfyted / ⁊ eſcaped away with moche payne And the mooſt parte of his men were dyſcomfyted ⁊ taken. And the kynge dyde wᵗ them his pleaſure / lettyng ſome of them go frely / ⁊ and ſome he put to dethe. But afterwarde thoſe two kynges were acorded. Whan kynge Henry had holly ẏ land of Normandye / and dyſcomfyted his enmyes of Fraunce / he torned agayne into Englonde with moche honour. And hys two ſones Wyllyam and Rycharde wold haue come after theyr fader on the ſee wᵗ a grete company of people. But or ẏ they myght come to lande / the ſhyppe ſtroke agaynſt a roche / and all were drowned ẏ were therin / ſaue one man that was in ẏ ſame ſhyp that eſcaped. And this was on saynt Katherynes daye. And theſe were the names of them ẏ were drowned. Wyllyam / and Rycharde the kynges ſones / The erle of Cheſtre Ottonel / his broder

Grey Rydell. Walter Emurri. Godefrey Archedeken/ the kynges doughter/ yͤ counteſſe of Perches/ yͤ kynges nece/ yͤ counteſſe of Cheſtre/ & many other. ❡ Whan kynge Henry & other lordes arryued in Englonde & herde theſe tydynges/ they made ſorowe ynough. And all theyr myrth & ioye was torned in to mornynge & ſorowe.

❡ How Maude yͤ Empreſſe came agayn in to Englond/ & how ſhe was afterward wedded to Geffrey therle of Angoy.

AND whan yͭ two yere were gone/ that the Erle had dwelled with yͤ kyng/ the erle went from the kynge/ & began to warre vpon hym & dyd moche harme in yͤ lande of Normandy/ & toke there a ſtronge Caſtell & there he dwelled all yͤ yere. And tho came to hym tydynges that Henry the Emperour of Almayne yͭ had ſpouſed Maude his doughter was deed/ & that ſhe dwelled no lenger in almayn/ & that ſhe wolde come agayn in to Normandye to her fader. And whan yͭ ſhe was come vnto hym/ he toke her tho to hym and came agayne in to Englonde. And made the Englyſſhmen to do othe & feaute to yͤ Empreſſe And yͤ fyrſt man yͭ made yͤ othe was Wyllyam the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury/ & yͤ other Dauyd kyng of Scotlande/ & after hym al the lordes & barons of Englond. ❡ Alſo after that the Erle of Angoy a worthy knyght ſent to yͤ kynge of Englond yͭ he myght haue his doughter Maude the Empreſſe to wyf. And bycauſe that her fader wyſte that he was a noble man/ the kynge hym graunted her & conſented therto. And thenne he toke his doughter & ledde her in to Normandy/ & came to the noble knyght Geffrey/ & there he ſpouſed yͤ forſayd Maude with moche honoure/ & the Erle begate vpon her a ſone yͭ was called Henry the Empreſſe ſone

❡ And after whan all this was done/ kynge Henry dwelled all that yere in Normandy. And after that a long tyme a greuous ſekenes toke hym/ where thrughe he deyed. And this kynge Henry reygned xxxv. yere & foure monethes. His hert was entered in the greate chirche of our lady in Roen And his body was brought with moche honoure in to Englonde/ & buried in the abbaye of Redynge. Of the whiche he was founder.

HEnricus yͤ fourth was Emperour in Almayne after Harry the thyrd .xv. yere This man put his owne fader in pryſon/ & there helde hym tyll he deyed/ And toke pope Paſchal with his Cardynalles/ & preſent them/ as it is ſayd afore. For the whiche cauſe as it is ſuppoſed/ he lacked yſſue. For he wedded the kynges doughter of Englonde Maude. But afterwarde he came to grace/ & all yͤ lawes of the chirche he reſygned frely to Calixtus the pope. And beſought hym to gyue hym in penaunce that he ſholde neuer come agayn to his Empyre/ that he myght haue remyſſyon of his treſpaas. And after the opynyon of many a man/ he was wylfully exyled & deyed and his wyfe bothe at Cheſtre in Englonde. ❡ Gelaſius was pope after Paſchall two yere. And fled from Henry yͤ Emperour in to Bourgoyne and there deceſſyd. This Emperour choſe Benedictus a Spanyard to be pope/ the whiche ſtroue with Calixtus/ ❡ Calixtus was pope after hym two yere & fyue monethes. This Calixtus was the ſone of the Duke of Bourgoyne and was choſen in the place of Gelaſius. And whan he ſhold come to Rome/ he toke the forſaid Benedictus/ and made hym to ryde afore hym ſhamefully. For he on a mule torned his face to the tayle of the mule & helde the tayle in his hande as a brydell tyll he came through ye cyte/ and there he was put in pryſon. And this pope made peas with the Emperoure. ¶ Honorius was pope after hym two yere/ & lytell of hym is wryten. ¶ Nota. Henry ye fourth Emperoure of Almayne deceſſyd this tyme/ & was buryed with his progenytoures after ſome men with ſuche an Epitaphe (Filius hic/ pater hic/ auus hic/ proauus iacet iſtis) But it is lykely to be truer that Geralde ſayd (in itinerario wallie) where he ſayth/ that after he hadde pryſoned his carnall fader/ & his ſpyrytuell fader the pope with his Cardynalles/ after he was recounſyled & wylfully he was exyled. And he lefte Maude his wyfe the kynges doughter of Englande pryuely/ and lyued an heremytes lyfe at Cheſtre .x. yere/ where he myght lyue as no man knewe hym/ and he called hymſelf Godiſallus/ ye whiche Godiſſon is called. So the Emperour ſecretely wente awaye/ & Maude his wyfe the Empreſſe there/ ſhe wente to her fader Henry in to Normandy. Where anone after ſhe was wedded vnto Geffray Plantagynet the duke of Andegaue/ vpon whome he begate Henry the ſeconde afterwarde kynge of Englande. Under whome ſaynt Thomas of Caunterbury reygned & dyed. ¶ Lotharius was Emperour after Henry the .iiii. xii. yere. And lytell of hym is wryten/ but ye he was manerly to the chyrche. And ſubdued Roger the vſurper of the kynge of Cecyle. ¶ Hugo de ſancto victore was a noble man this tyme at Parys & a noble doctour of ye nacyon of Saxons. ¶ The ordre of ſaynt Johan baptyſte at Jheruſalem began this tyme by ye worſhypfull man Reymonde myghtely dyſpoſed vnto the werkes of mercy. All this ordre made theyr wayes to ſerue poore men.

¶ Anno vlti. M.C.xxxiiii.

After Honorius Innocētius was pope .xiiii. yere. & .vii. monethes. This man was a very deuoute mā/ and with ſuche men he accōpanyed hym And he had ſtryfe agaynſte Pyers of Lyon ye whiche named hym Anocletus. And by ſtrength he toke the popeheed. The whiche Innocētius ſawe/ and with two Galeys fled in to Fraūce/ and was worſhypfully receyued of ſaynt Bernarde/ ye whiche that tyme had all the kynges & prynces in his hande. And he prouoked them for to brynge this pope Innocentiꝰ in to his dygnyte agayne. And at the laſte all thynge was ceſſyd and his ennyes were deſtroyed through the Jugement of god And he was pope agayne/ & lyued profytably/ and was buryed at Latranence.

¶ How Stephen ye was kynge Henryes ſyſters ſone/ was made kyng of englande

After this kynge Henry that was the fyrſt/ was made kynge his neuewes ſyſter ſone Stephen Erle of Boloyne. For anone as he herde ye tydynges of his vncles deth/ then he paſſed the ſee/ and came into Englande through counſeyle and ſtrength of many grete lordes in Englande/ agaynſt the othe that they hadde made to Maude the Empreſſe/ toke ye reame & lete crowne Stephen kyng of the lande. And the Archebyſſhop Wylyam of Caūterbury that fyrſt made the othe of feaute to Maude the Empreſſe/ ſet the crowne vpō Stephens heed and hym anoynted. And byſſhoppe Roger of Salyſbury maynteyned ye kȳges parte in as moche as he myght. ¶ The fyrſt yere that kynge Stephen began to reygne/ he aſſembled a grete hoſte and wente towarde Scotlande/ for to haue warred vpon the kynge of Scotlande. But he came agaynſt hym in peas and in good maner/

and to hym truſted/but he made to hym none homage/for almoche as he had made to ẏ empreſſe Maude. And in ẏ .iiii. yere of his reygne Maude ẏ Empreſſe came in to Englande. And tho began debate bytwene kyng Stephen & Maude thēpreſſe. This Maude went vnto ẏ cyte of Nicholl/& the kynge her beſyeged longe tyme and myght not ſpede/ſo well ẏ cyte was kepte & defended. And tho ẏ were wᵗin ẏ cyte merueyloully ſcaped awaye wᵗout ony maner of harme. Tho toke ẏ kynge ẏ cyte/and dwelled therin tyll Candelmaſſe. And tho came ẏ barons ẏ helde wᵗ thempreſſe. That is for to ſaye/ẏ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre/ẏ erle Robert of Glouceſtre/Hugh bygot/Robert of Morley/& theſe brought wᵗ thē a ſtronge power and faught wᵗ the kynge/& gaue hym a ſtronge batayle. In the whiche batayle kynge Stephen was taken/and ſet in pryſon in the caſtell of Bryſtowe.

¶ How Maude the Empreſſe wente fro Wyncheſtre to Oxēforde/& after ſhe eſcaped to Walynforde/& of ẏ ſorowe & dyſeaſe that ſhe had.

Now as the kynge was taken and brought in to warde in the caſtell of Bryſtowe/this Maude thēpreſſe was made lady of all Englond/& all mē helde her for lady of ẏ lande. But thoſe of Kent helde wᵗ kynge Stephēs wyf/& alſo wyllyam of ypre & his retenewe halpe them and helde warre agaynſt Maude the empreſſe. And anone after ẏ kynge of Scotlande came to them wᵗ a huge nombre of people. And than wente they togyder at Wyncheſtre there ẏ ẏ Empreſſe was/and wolde haue taken her. But ẏ erle of Glouceſtre came wᵗ his power & fought wᵗ thē. And the Empreſſe in the meane whyle ẏ ẏ batayle dured ſcaped frō them & wente vnto Oxēforde & there helde her. And in that batayle was ẏ erle of Glouceſtre dyſcomfyted & taken/& wᵗ hym many other lordes. And for his delyueraūce was kynge Stephen delyuered oute of pryſon/& whan he was delyuered out of pryſon/he wente thens vnto Oxenforde & beſyeged thēpreſſe ẏ was tho at Oxenforde. And the ſyege endured from Myghelmaſſe vnto ſaynt Andrewes tyme. And the Empreſſe lete clothe her tho all in whyte lynnē cloth for bycauſe ſhe wolde not be knowen. For in ẏ ſame tyme was moche ſnowe/& ſhe eſcaped by ẏ Tampſe from her enmyes. And from thens ſhe went to Walynforde and there helde herde. And ẏ kynge wolde haue beſyeged her/but he had ſoo moche to do with ẏ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre and with Hugh Bygot ẏ ſtrongly warred vpō hym in euery place/ẏ he not wyſt whether for to torne. And ẏ erle of Glouceſtre halpe hym with his power.

¶ How Gaufride the erle of Angoy gaue vnto Henry the Empreſſe ſone all Normandye.

The kynge wente after this vnto Wylton/& wolde haue made a caſtell there. But tho came to hym the Erle of Glouceſtre wᵗ a ſtronge power & there almoſt he had taken the kynge/but yet ẏ kynge eſcaped wᵗ moche payne. And wyllyam Martell there was taken. And for whoſe delyueraunce they gaue vnto the erle of Glouceſtre ẏ good caſtell of Shyrborn ẏ he had taken. And whan this was done/the erle Robert & all the kynges enmyes wente to Faryngdon/& begā there for to make a ſtronge caſtell/but ẏ kynge came thyder wᵗ a ſtronge power & droue hym thens. And in ẏ ſame yere ẏ erle Radulphe of Cheſtre was accorded with the kynge/and came vnto his Courte at his comaundement. And ẏ erle demed ſauely for to come. And ẏ kynge anone lete take hym/⁊ put hym in to pryſon. And myght neuer for nothynge come out tyll that he yelded vp to ẏ kynge ẏ caſtell of Nicholl the whiche he hadde taken from ẏ kynge with his ſtrength in ẏ.xv.yere of his reygne. And Gaufrade ẏ erle of Angoy gaue vp vnto Henry his ſone all Normandye. And in ẏ yere that nexte enſewed dyed ẏ erle gaufrade. And Hēry his ſone tho anō returned agayne to Angoy/⁊ there was made erle with moche honoure of all his men of ẏ lande. And to hym dyde feaute and homage the mooſt partye of ẏ lande And tho was this Henry ẏ Empreſſe ſone erle of Angoy/⁊ alſo duke of Normandye. In ẏ ſame yere was made a dyuorce bytwene ẏ kynge of Fraunce/⁊ ẏ quene his wyfe ẏ was ryght heyre of Gaſcoyne for bycauſe that it was knowen ⁊ proued that they were ſybbe ⁊ nygh of blood And tho ſpouſed her Henry the empreſſe ſone erle of Angoy/⁊ duke of Normandye/⁊ duke of Gaſcoyne. In ẏ.xviii.yere of this Stephen this Henry came in to Englonde with a ſtronge power/⁊ began for to warre vpon this kynge Stephen/ and toke ẏ caſtell of Malmeſbury/⁊ dyd moche harme. And the kynge Stephen hadde ſoo moche warre/ẏ he wyſte not whether for to go. But at ẏ laſt they were accorded through the archebyſſhoppe Theobaldus/and other worthy lordes of Englonde/vpō this condycyon that they ſholde departe the Realme of Englonde bytwene them two/ſo that Henry ẏ Empreſſe ſone ſholde holly haue ẏ half of all ẏ lande of Englonde. And thus they were accorded and peas was cryed through out all Englonde. And whan the accorde was made bytwene tho two lordes kyng Stephen became ſoo ſory/for bycauſe ẏ he had loſt halfe Englonde/⁊ fell in to ſuche a malady/⁊ dyed in ẏ.xix. yere.⁊.vii wekes and.v.dayes of his reygne/all in warre and in contake. And he lyeth in the abbaye of Feuerſham/the whiche he lete make in ẏ.xvi.yere of his reygne.

Celeſtinꝰ ẏ ſeconde was pope after Innocentius.v.monethes ⁊ lytell he dyd. ¶Lucius was after hym ⁊ lytell profyted/for they dyed both in a peſtylence. ¶Eugeniꝰ ẏ ſeconde was pope after hym.v.yere ⁊ foure monethes. This mā fyrſt was ẏ dyſcyple of ſaynt Bernarde/ and after the abbot of ſaynt Anaſtaſius by Rome. And came to ẏ chyrche of ſaynt Ceſary/⁊ was choſen pope by the Cardynalles/he nothynge knowynge therof/⁊ for drede of ẏ Senatoures he was conſecrated without ẏ cyte/this man was an holy mā/⁊ ſuffred tribulacyon. And at ẏ laſt he deceſſyd/⁊ lyeth at ſaynt Peters. And after anone deceſſyd ſaynt Bernarde. ¶Petrus Lombardus the byſſhop of Parys/broder to Gracian/compyled the foure bokes of the Sentence this tyme. ¶Petrus cōmeſtor broder to Gracian ⁊ to Pyers Lombardus made hyſtoriā ſcolaſticā/⁊ other bokes. ¶Fredericꝰ primꝰ after Conradus was Emperoure in Almayne ⁊ in Rome.xxxiij.yere. This man after the deth of Adrian ẏ pope ẏ whiche crowned hym dyde curſydly with Alexāder to hym grete preiudyce. For he dyde helpe foure ẏ ſtroue agaynſt the apoſtles ſete. And he fought myghtely agaynſt ẏ kynge of Fraunce through power of the Danes ⁊ other nacyons. But Rycharde the kynge of Englonde halpe for to expulſe hym. And he deſtroyed mediolauum to the grounde. Of the whiche cyte the walles were hygher than the walles of ony other cyte. This man at ẏ laſt after that he had done many vexacyons to the pope he was reconſyled/for he dradde leſte ẏ lombardes wolde haue rebelled agaynst hym/ he asked forgyuenes of yͤ pope. And toke yͤ crosse vpon hym/ & wente vnto the holy londe/ & dyd many meruaylous thynges there almoost as moche as euer dyde Karolus magnus. And there he came by a towne that men calle Armeniam & in a lytell water he was drowned/ & at Tyrū he was buryed. ¶ Anastasius was pope after Eugeniꝰ .iiii. yere & more. This mā was abbot of Rufy/ and then he was chose Cardynall/ and after pope.

¶ Of kynge Henry the seconde that was the Empresse sone/ in whose tyme ~~saynt Thomas of Caunterbury~~ was Chaunceler.

AND after this kynge Stephen regned Henry the Empresse sone & was crowned of the archebysshop Theobaldus the .xvii. daye before Crystmasse. And yͤ same yere Thomas Beket of London archebysshoppe of Caūterbury was made yͤ kynges Chaunceler of Englonde The seconde yere yͭ he was crowned he lete cast downe all the newe castels yͭ were longynge to the crowne/ yͤ whiche kynge Stephen had gyuen vnto dyuerse men/ and them had made erles & barons for to holde wt hym & to helpe hym agaynst Henry thempresse sone. And yͤ fourth yere of his reygne he put vnder his owne lordshyp yͤ kynge of Wales. And in yͤ same yere the kynge of Scotlande had in his owne hande/ yͭ is to saye/ yͤ cyte of Karleyll/ the castell of Bamburgh/ & yͤ newe castell vpō Tyne. And yͤ erldome of Lancastre. The same yere yͤ kynge with a grete power went in to Wales/ & lete caste downe wodes & made wayes & made stronge yͤ castell of Rutlande Basyngwarke. And amonge yͤ walsshe he made an house of yͤ tēple. And in yͤ same yere was Rycharde his sone borne/ that afterwarde was tr le of Oxforde. And the fourth yere of his reygne he made Gaufride erle of Brytayne. And in that yere he chaunged his money. And yͤ .vi. yere of his reygne he lad a grete hoste to Tolouse & cōquered it. And the .vii. yere of his reygne dyed Theobaldus yͤ archebysshop of Caunterbury/ & tho almoost all yͤ cyte of Caūterbury thrugh myschyef was brente. The .ix. yere of his reygne Thomas Beket that was his Chaūceler was chosen archebysshop of Caūterbury. And vpō saynt Bernardes day he was sacred. and in yͤ yere was borne the kynges doughter Elenore. And in the .x. yere of his reygne saynt Edwarde the kynge was translated with moche honour. And the .xi. yere of his reygne he helde his parlyament at Northampton/ and fro thens fledde ~~saynt Thomas archebysshop of~~ Caunterbury for the grete debate that was bytwene the kynge & hym For yf he had ben founde on yͤ morowe he had ben slayne/ & therfore he fledde thens with thre felowes on fote onely yͭ no man wyst where he was/ & wente ouer the see to yͤ pope of Rome. And this was yͤ pryncypal cause. For asmoche as yͤ kynge wolde haue put clerkes to deth yͭ were atteynt of felonye/ without ony preuylege of holy chyrche. And yͤ .xii. yere of his reygne was Johñ his sone borne. And yͤ .xiii. yere of his regne dyed Maude yͤ Empresse yͭ was his moder. The .xiiii. yere of his reygne yͤ duke of Saxon spowsed Maude his doughter. And he begate vpon her thre sones yͭ were called Henry/ Othus/ & Wyllyam. And yͤ .xv. yere of his reygne dyed yͤ good erle Robert of Gloucestre yͭ founded the abbaye of Nonnes of Cren. And in yͤ same yere Marke kynge of Jerusalem conquered Babylon. ¶ And the .xvi. yere of his regne/ he lete crowne his sone Henry at Westmynstre. And yͭ crow ued Roger archebyſſhop of Yoꝛke/in ~~harmynge of Thomas archebyſſhop~~ of Caũterbury. Wherfoꝛe the ſame Roger was accurſed of ~~the pope.~~

¶ How kynge Henry whiche was ſone of kynge Henry the Empꝛeſſe ſone/⁊ of the debate ẏ was bytwene hym ⁊ his fader/ whyle that he was in Noꝛmandy

After ẏ coꝛonacyon of kynge Henry the ſone of kynge Henry thempꝛeſſe ſone. That ſame Henry thempꝛeſſe ſone went ouer to Noꝛmandy/⁊ there he lete marye Elenoꝛe his doughter to the Dolphyn ẏ was kynge of Almayne. And in the .xvii. yere ẏ the archebyſſhop ~~ſaynt Thomas~~ had ben outlawed/ẏ kynge of Fraunce made ẏ kynge ~~⁊ ſaynt Thomas~~ accoꝛded. And thenne came Thomas the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury agayne to his owne chyrche. And this accoꝛde was made in the begynnynge of Aduente/⁊ afterwarde he was ſlayne ⁊ martred the fyfth daye of Cryſtmaſſe then folowynge For kynge Henry thought vpõ ~~ſaynt Thomas~~ ẏ archebyſſhop vpõ Cryſtmaſſe day as he ſat at his mete ⁊ theſe woꝛdes ſayd That yf he had ony good knyghtes with hym/many a daye paſſed he had be auenged vpon ẏ archebyſſhop Thomas. And anone ſyꝛ Willyã Breton/ſyꝛ Hugh Moꝛuile/ſyꝛ Willyam Tracy/⁊ ſyꝛ Reygnold fitz vrſe/beres ſone in Engyliſſhe/pꝛyuely wente vnto ẏ ſee/⁊ came in to Englonde vnto ẏ chyꝛche of Caũterbury/⁊ there they hȳ martred at ſaynt Benets awter in ẏ moder chyꝛche. And that was in the yere of ẏ Incarnacyon of Jheſu Cryſte. M.C.lxxii.yere. ¶ And anone Henry the newe kyng began foꝛ to make warre vpõ Henry his fader ⁊ vpõ his bꝛethern Willyam ⁊ Othus. ¶ And ſo vpõ a day ẏ kynge of Fraũce ⁊ all ẏ kynges ſones/⁊ the kynge of Scotlande/⁊ all ẏ grettest loꝛdes in Englonde were ryſen agaynſt kynge Henry the fader. And at ẏ laſte as god wolde he conquered all his enmyes. And the kynge of Fraũce ⁊ he were accoꝛded And tho ſente kynge Henry ſpecyally vnto ẏ kynge of Fraũce/⁊ pꝛayed hym hertely foꝛ his loue ẏ he wolde ſende to hym the names by letters of them ẏ were the begynners of ẏ warre agaynſt hym. And the kynge of Fraunce ſente agayne to hȳ by letters ẏ names of them ẏ began the warre. The fyꝛſte was Johan is ſone/⁊ Rycharde his bꝛoder/and Henry ẏ newe kynge is ſone. Tho was Henry the kynge wonder wꝛoth/⁊ curſed ẏ tyme ẏ euer he hym begate/⁊ whyle ẏ warre dured Henry his ſone ẏ newe kynge dyed ſoꝛe repentynge his myſdedes/⁊ mooſt ſoꝛowe made of ony man/foꝛ bycauſe of ſaynt Thomas deth of Caũterbury. And pꝛayed his fader with moche ſoꝛowe of herte mercy foꝛ his treſpace/⁊ his fader foꝛgaue hym and had of hym grete pyte. And after he dyed the .xxxvi. yere of his reygne. And lyeth at Redynge.

¶ How the Cryſten men loſt all the holy lande in ẏ foꝛſayd kynges tyme by a falſe Cryſten man ẏ became a ſarraſyn.

And whyle this kynge regned the grete batayll was in ẏ holy lande bytwene ẏ Cryſten men ⁊ ẏ Sarraſyns but criſtẽ men were there ſlayne through grete treaſon of ẏ erle Tyꝛpe ẏ wolde haue had to wyfe the quene of Jheruſalem ẏ ſomtyme was Baldewynes wyfe/but ſhe foꝛſoke hȳ ⁊ toke to her loꝛd a knyght a woꝛthy man ẏ was called ſyꝛ Enypperches. Wherfoꝛe ẏ erle Tyꝛpe was wꝛoth and went anone ryght to the Soudan ẏ was Soudan of Babylon/⁊ became his man ⁊ foꝛſoke his cryſtendome/⁊ all cry-then lawe. And yͤ cryſten men wyſt not of his dedes/but wende for to haue had grete helpe of hym as they were wont to haue before. And whan they came to the batayle/this falſe cryſten man torned vnto the Sarraſyns ⁊ forſoke his owne nacyon. And ſo were yͤ cryſten men there ſlayne wͭ the Sarraſyns. And thus were the criſten men ſlayne ⁊ put to horryble deth and yͤ cyte of Iheruſalem deſtroyed/and the holy croſſe borne away. ¶ The kynge of Frãce ⁊ all yͤ grete lordes of yͤ londe lete them be croſſed for to go in to yͤ holy lande. And amõge them went Rycharde kynge Henryes ſone fyrſte after yͤ kynge of Fraunce/yͤ toke yͤ croſſe of yͤ archebyſſhop of Toures. But he toke not yͤ vyage at yͤ tyme/for bycauſe yͤ he was let by other maner wayes ⁊ nedes to be done. And whã kynge Henry had his fader reygned. xxxvi. yere. ⁊. v. monethes/⁊. iiii. dayes he dyed ⁊ lyeth at Founteuerarde.

¶ Anno dñi. M.C.lvi.

Adrianus the. iiii. was pope after Anaſtaſius. v. yere. And this pope was an Englyſſhe man/⁊ the voyce of the comyn people ſayth he was a bounde man to the abbot of ſaynt Albons in Englonde. And whan he deſyred to be made a monke there he was expulſed/⁊ he wẽt ouer ſee ⁊ gaue hym to ſtudy ⁊ to vertue And after was made byſſhop of Albanaceñ. theſe he was made Legate in to the lande of Wormacian/⁊ he conuerted it to the fayth. Then he was made pope. And for yͤ woũdynge of a Cardynall he enterdyted all yͤ cyte of Rome. And he curſyd Willyam the kynge of Cecyle/⁊ cauſed hym to ſubmytte hym. This man yͤ fyrſt of all the popes wͭ his Cardynalles dwelled in the olde cyte. ¶ Alexander yͤ thyrde was pope after hym. xii. yere. This Alexander hadde ſtryfe. xvii. yere/⁊ the foure ſtryuers that yͤ Emperour ſet agaynſt hym/he ouercame thẽ and curſyd them and all dyed an euyl deth. This man alſo accorded Frederyke the Emperoure and Emanuell of Conſtantynople/⁊ the kynge of Secullor. And this mã nouryſſhed ſaynt Thomas of Cãterbury in his exyle ¶ Nota. Saynt Bernarde was canonyſed by this Alexander/⁊ his abbot forbade hym yͤ he ſholde do no more myracles for there was ſo myghty concourſe of people. And he obeyed to hym whan he was deed ⁊ dyde no more. ¶ Lucius the thyrde was pope after Alexander. iiii. yere/⁊ two monethes. Of hym lytell is wryten. In his dayes deceſſyd Henry the fyrſt ſone to Henry the. ii. ⁊ this is his Epytaphe

Mis honoris honor: decor ⁊ decus vrbis ⁊ orbis. Militie ſplendor gloria lumẽ aper. Iulius ingenio/ſtutib⁹ hector. Achillis viribus/auguſtus moribus/ore paris.

¶ Urban⁹ yͤ. iii. was pope after Luci⁹. ii. yere/this man deceſſed for ſorowe whã he herde tell yͤ Iheruſalem was taken wͭ the Sarraſyns. ¶ Gregori⁹. yͤ. viii. was pope after hym foure monethes. And he practyſed myghtyly how Iheruſalẽ myght be wonne agayne/but anone he deceſſyd ¶ Clemẽs yͤ thyrde was pope after hym thre yere/and lytell he dyde.

¶ Of kynge Rycharde whiche conquered agayne all the holy lande that the cryſten men hadde loſte.

And after this kynge Henry reygned Rycharde his ſone/and was a ſtowte man and a ſtronge ⁊ a worthy/and alſo bolde. And he was crowned at Weſtmynſtre of the archebyſſhop Baldewyne yͤ thyrde daye of Septembre. And in the ſeconde yere of his reygne/kynge Rycharde hymſelfe and Baldewyne the archebyſſhoppe of Caũterbury/and his bert Byſſhop of Salyſbury / and Radulf erle of Gloceſtre / ⁊ many other lordes of Englonde wente in to yͤ holy lande. And in that vyage deyed the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And kyng Richarde went before in to the holy lande / ⁊ reſted not tyl that he came forth in his waye vnto Cypres / ⁊ toke it with grete force. And after yͤ kynge Rycharde went forth towarde yͤ holy lande / ⁊ gate there as moche as yͤ cryſten men had loſte before. And conquered the lande agayne throughe grete myght / ſaue onely the holy croſſe And whan king Rycharde came to the cyte of Acres for to gete it / ther aroſe a grete debate betwene hym ⁊ the kynge of Fraūce / ſo yͭ the kyng of Fraūce wente agayne in to Fraunce / ⁊ was wrothe towarde the kinge Rychard But yet for all yͭ or kynge Rychard wente agayne / he toke yͤ cyte of Acres. And whā he had take it / he dwelled in yͤ cyte a whyle. But to hym came tydynges yͭ the Erle Johan of Oxenforde his broder wold haue ſeaſed all Englonde in to his handes / ⁊ Normandy alſo / ⁊ crowne hymſelf kinge of all the lande. Whan kyng Rychard herde theſe tydynges he came toward Englonde in al the haſte he myght. But the duke of Oſtryche met with hym / ⁊ toke ⁊ brought hym vnto the Emperoure of Almayn / whiche put hym in pryſon. And afterwarde he was delyuered for an huge raūſome / yͭ is to ſaye / an.C.M.pounde. For the whiche raūſom to be payed / eche other chalyce of Englonde was molten ⁊ made in moneye. And all the monkes of the ordre of Ciſteaux gaue al theyr bokes through out all Englonde for to be ſolde for to paye the raunſom.

¶ How kyng Rycharde came agayne frō the holy lande / and auenged hym on his enemyes.

SO as this kyng Rycharde was in pryſon / the kynge of Fraunce warred vpon hym ſtrongly in Normandye / ⁊ Johñ his broder warred vpon him in englonde. But the byſſhops and the Barōs of Englonde withſtode him with al theyr power that they might gete / and toke the caſtell of Wyndeſore / and other caſtelles. And the forſayd Johan ſawe that he had no power nor myght agaynſt the barons of Englonde for to fyght. But anone wēt hym ouer the ſee vnto the kynge of Fraūce.

¶ And whan yͤ Rycharde came out of pryſon and was delyuered / and came into Englond / anone after Candelmaſſe in grete haſt he wente to Notyngham / and the caſtel of Notyngham to hym was yelded. And then dyſcomfyted he his broder Johan and thoſe yͭ with hym helde. And after he went vnto the cyte of Wyncheſtre and there he lete hym be crowned kynge of Englonde. And after he went vnto normandye for to warre vppon the kynge of Fraunce. And whan the kynge of Fraunce herde that / he came with .vi. hondred knyghtes towarde Gyſors. And kyng rycharde met with hym / and wold haue gyuen hym batayll. But the kynge of Fraunce fledde tho. And an hondred knyghtes of his were taken / and two hondred ſtedes that were trapped with yron bardes

¶ And anone after wente kynge Rycharde for to beſyege the caſtell Gayllyarde. And vpon a daye as he rode by the caſtell for to take auyſement of the caſtel / one of the arbaleſtres ſmote hym with a quarel that was enuenymed. And kyng Rycharde drewe out the ſhaft of the quarell / but the quarelles heed abode ſtyll in his heed. And it began for to rancle / yͭ he ne myght not helpe hymſelf / nor meue none of hys armes. And then he wyſte that he had dethes wounde vpon hym / that he myght not be hole for no maner of thynge erthly

¶ He cōmaūded anone all his men ſharply to aſſayle the caſtell/ & toke it or he dyed & all the men therin. And the kynge dyde with them his wyll. And cōmaūded his men to brynge hym before hym yͭ had ſoo hurte hym. And whan he came before hȳ the kynge axed hym what was his name And he ſayd my name is Bertram Gurdon. Wherfore ſayd the kynge haſt thou ſlayne me ſyth I dyd the neuer no harme Syr ſayd he though ye dyd me neuer noo harme/ ye yourſelf with your owne handes ſlewe my fader & my broder/ & therfore I haue quyte you now your trauayle. Then ſayd kynge Rycharde/ he yͭ deyed vpon the croſſe to bryng mānes ſoule fro paynes of helle/ forgyue the my deth/ and I alſo forgyue it the. Then cōmaūded he that no man ſholde myſdo him. But for al the kynges defendyng/ ſome of yͤ kynges men hym folowed/ & pryuely hym ſlewe. And the .vi. day after yͤ kynge dyd ſhryue hym/ & had ſore repentaunce of his myſdedes/ & was houſeled & anoyted. And he regned but .ix. yere & .xxx. wekes/ & deyed & lyeth beſyde his fader at Founteuerard.

HEnricꝰ the .v. was Emperour .viii. yere. This Henrycus was ſone to Frederyk/ & he wedded Conſtance yͤ kynges doughter of Cecile. And through the occaſion of her he ſubdued al yͤ kyngdom of Apulye/ & droue all the enhabytauntes out therof. ¶ Celeſtinꝰ yͤ .iii. was pope after Clemens almooſt thre yere. This mā was crowned on eeſter daye/ & the day folowynge he crowned Henry yͤ Emperour And he made a palays at ſaynt Peters & deceſſyd. ¶ Innocencyus the .iii. was pope after hym .viii. yere and .v. monethes. This man was well lettred/ & he made a boke of the wretchydnes of mānes condycion. And he made ſpeculū miſſe/ and he made many conſtytucyons. This man dampned the boke of Johan Joachym/ the whiche he made ayenſt mayſter Piers Lombarde the maker of the ſentence. Aboute this tyme deceſſyd yͤ Emperour Henry. And yͤ prynces of Almayne dyſcorded/ for ſome choſe Otto/ & ſome choſe Phylyp broder to Henry. Then Phylyp was falſly ſlayne/ & Otto was crowned of Innocenciꝰ in Fraūce/ the whiche anone gaue batayl to yͤ Romayns bycauſe they bare hym no due honour. And for yͤ cauſe he toke the kyngdome of Apuly from Frederyk agaynſt yͤ popes wyll/ wherfore yͤ pope curſed hym. Then after yͤ .iiii. yere of his regne/ the prynces of Almayne made Frederyck Emperour/ & vyctoryouſly he ſubdued Otto. ¶ Wyllyam of Paris this tyme began the ordre of the freres auſtyns the whiche ben called (fratres mendicantes) ¶ Franciſcꝰ an ytalyen a man of grete perfeccyon/ & an enſample to many a man/ did many a myracle this tyme. And he ordeyned the frere mynores. ¶ And yͤ .vi. yere of pope Innocenciꝰ the thyrde/ yͤ ordre of yͤ frere prechers began vnder domynyk/ but it myght not be cōfermed tyl the fyrſt yere of Honorius.

¶ Of kynge Johan/ yͭ in the fyrſt yere of his regne loſt all Normandy.

BYcauſe kynge Rycharde had none heyre ſone nor doughter after hys dethe/ they made Johan his broder kyng & crowned hȳ at Weſtmynſter by Hubert yͭ tho was Archebyſſhop of Cāterbury And whan he began for to regne/ he became ſo merueyllous a man/ yͭ he went out in to Normandy/ & warred vpon yͤ kyng of Fraūce And ſo longe they warred togyder tyll at yͤ laſt kynge Johan loſt al Normandy & Angoy/ wherfore he was ſore anoyed/ & it was noo merueyle. Then lette he aſſemble before hȳ at London Arche byſſhops/byſſhops/abbots ⁊ pryours/Erles ⁊ barons/⁊ helde there a grete parlyament/⁊ axed there of the clergye the tenth of euery chirche of Englonde/for to conquere Normandy ⁊ Angoy agayne ẏ he had loſt. They wolde not graūte ẏ thynge wherfore he was wonder wrothe. ¶ And in that ſame tyme deyed Hubert. Then ẏ pryour ⁊ the couent of Caunterbury choſe agaynſt the kynges wyll to be Archebyſſhop Stephen of Langtō a good clerke that dwelled at the courte of Rome/⁊ ſent to the pope theyr eleccyon/⁊ the pope confermed it ⁊ ſacred hym at Viterbi. Whan the kynge wyſt theſe tydynges he was wonder wrothe/⁊ droue the pryour ⁊ ẏ couent fro Caūterbury/exylynge thē. out of ẏ land/⁊ cōmaūded ẏ no letter nor cōmaūdement ẏ came fro Rome ſhold be receyued nor pleded in Englonde. Whan the pope herde this/he ſent kynge Johā his letter ⁊ prayed him louyngly to receyue Stephen ẏ Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury to his chirche/⁊ ſuffre ẏ pryoure/⁊ his monkes to come agayne to theyr owne dwellynge. But ẏ kynge wolde not it graunt for nothynge.

¶ How kynge Johan wolde nothyng do for ẏ popes cōmaundement/wherfore all Englonde was enterdyted/⁊ ſuſpended.

AND at the laſt ẏ pope ſent by hys auctoryte/⁊ enioyned to the byſſhops of Englonde ẏ yf the kynge wolde not receyue ẏ pryour of Caūterbury and his monkes/ẏ they ſholde do generall enterdytynge through out all Englonde. ⁊ graūted full power to foure byſſhops/to pronoūce ẏ enterdytyng yf he it warned. The fyrſt was byſſhop wyllyam of London/⁊ that other byſſhop Euſtace of Ely the.iii. was byſſhop Walter of wyncheſtre/⁊ the.iiii. was byſſhop Gyles of Hertforde. And theſe byſſhops prayed ẏ kyng terefully knelynge to obeye the pope/ſhewynge him ẏ popes bulles of enterdytȳg But for noo prayer he wolde not conſente therto. Wherfore ẏ byſſhops ſeynge thys departed thens/⁊ on the morowe of ẏ anūcyacyon of our lady they pronoūced ẏ enterdytynge/wallynge ⁊ lockyng al the chirche dores. As ẏ was done/the kynge for angre toke the.iiii. byſſhops landes/ in to his handes/⁊ all the clergye of Englonde/⁊ made it be kepte from them. for the whiche ẏ byſſhops curſed hym/⁊ thē that medled wͭ holy chirche goodes agaynſt ẏ wyll of the owners. Then the four byſſhops ſeyng the obſtynacy of ẏ kynge went to ẏ Archebiſſhop of Caūterbury to Rome/⁊ tolde hym all the thynge. And ẏ Archebyſſhop bad them retorne agayne to Caūterbury/⁊ he wold eyther come or ſende to them in his ſtede/ẏ ſholde do as moche as yf he hymſelfe were there. And whan the byſſhops herde this/they retorned agayne in to Englonde/and came vnto Caūterbury. The tydynges came to ẏ kynge ẏ the byſſhops were come agayne to Caunterbury/and hymſelf myght not come theder that tyme/he ſent theder byſſhops erles and abbots for to treate with them/that the kynge ſholde receyue tharchebyſſhop Stephen/and the pryour ⁊ al the monkes of Caūterbury that he ſhold neuer after that tyme/nothynge take of holy chirche agaynſt the wyl of them that oweth the goodes. And that ẏ kynge ſholde make full amendes to them/of whom he had ony goodes taken. And ẏ holy chirche ſholde haue all fraūchyſe/as ferforth as they had in ſaynt Edwardes tyme the holy confeſſour.

¶ How Stephen of Langton came ayen in to Englond through the popes cōmaūdement. And how he went agayne.

SO whan ẏ fourme of accoꝛdemēt thus was oꝛdeyned. It was in a payꝛe of endentures/⁊ they put theyꝛ ſeales to ẏ one parte/⁊ they that came in the kynges name put theyꝛ ſeales to ẏ other parte of the endentures. And foure byſſhops aboue ſayd toke ẏ other part of the endentures/ and bare wᵗ theym to ſhewe to the kynge. ¶ Whan the kynge ſawe ẏ fourme ⁊ vnderſtode it/he helde hym ful well apayed of al maner thynges as they had oꝛdeyned/ſauynge as touchynge/reſtytucyon of the goodes foꝛ to make ayen To that thynge he wolde not accoꝛde/⁊ ſo he ſent woꝛde agayne to the foure byſſhoppes ẏ they ſholde put oute the poynt of reſtytucion. But they anſwered ẏ they wolde not put one woꝛde out. Then ſent the kyng to ẏ Archebyſſhop by the foure byſſhops ẏ he ſhold come to Cāterbury foꝛ to ſpeke with hym/ vnder ſafecondupte ⁊ pledges. That is to ſaye/his Juſtyces Gylberte Peyteuin/ Wyllyam de la Bꝛewer/⁊ Johan fytz hughe/ ẏ in theyꝛ condupte he ſhold come ⁊ go at his owne wyll. And thus in this maner tharchebyſſhop Stephen came to Cāterbury. As the Archebyſſhop was come/the kynge came to Chylham/foꝛ he wolde no nyghe Cāterbury at that tyme But he ſent by his Treſoꝛer byſſhop of Wyncheſtre ẏ he ſhold do out of the endentures ẏ clauſe of reſtytucyon/ foꝛ to make of the goodes./ And ẏ Archebyſſhop made his othe that he wolde not do out one woꝛde therof/noꝛ yet it chaunge/that the byſſhoppes had ſpoken and oꝛdeyned. And then ẏ Archebyſſhop went agayne to Rome withoute ony moꝛe doynge. ¶ Kynge Johan was then angryer than euer he was befoꝛe/⁊ lete make a comyn crye thꝛoughoute all Englonde/that all tho that had holy chirche rentes/⁊ went ouer the ſee/that they ſholde come agayne in to Englonde at a certayne daye/oꝛ elles they ſholde leſe all theyꝛ rentes foꝛ euer moꝛe And ẏ he commaunded to euery Sheryffe thꝛough out all Englonde/that they ſholde enquyꝛe yf ony byſſhoppe/abbot/oꝛ pꝛyoure/oꝛ ony other pꝛelate of holy chirche/fro that day afterwarde/receyue ony cōmaūdement that cometh fro the pope/that they ſhold take the body/and bꝛynge it befoꝛe hym/ and that they ſhold take in to the kynges handes all theyꝛ landes of holy chirche/ẏ were gyue to ony man/by the Archebyſſhop oꝛ by the pꝛyour of Cāterbury/frō tyme of the eleccyon of the Archebyſſhop And cōmaunded that al the woddes that were the Archebyſſhops ſholde be caſten downe to the grounde/and all ſolde.

¶ How kynge Johan dyſtroyed the oꝛdre of Ciſteaux.

AND in the ſame yere the Jryſſhemen began to warre vpon kynge Johan/⁊ the kynge oꝛdeyned hym foꝛ to go in to Irlande/and lete arere an huge taxe thꝛoughout al Englonde/that is foꝛ to ſay.xxx.thouſande marke. And thus he ſente through out all Englande vnto the monkes of the oꝛdre of Cyſteaux that they ſholde helpe hym of. vi. M. marke of ſyluer. And they anſwered ⁊ ſayd ẏ they durſt nothynge do wout theyꝛ chyef abbot of Ciſteaux. Wherfoꝛe kynge Johan whan he came agayne frõ Irlande dyde them ſo moche ſoꝛowe ⁊ care ẏ they wyſt not where to abyde / foꝛ he toke ſo moche raunſon of euery hous / ⁊ ẏ ſomme amou͂ted to. ix. M. ⁊. iii. C. marke / ſoo that they were clene loſt and deſtroyed and voyded theyꝛ houſes ⁊ theyꝛ landes through out all Englonde. And ẏ abbot of Wauerlaye had ſo moche his menace / that he foꝛſoke ẏ abbaye ⁊ went thẽs / ⁊ pꝛyuely oꝛdeyned hym ouer ẏ ſee to ẏ hous of Ciſteaux whan the tydynges came to ẏ pope that ẏ kynge had done ſo moche malyce / then he was towarde ẏ kynge full wroth. And ſent two Legates vnto ẏ kynge / that one was called Pandulf / ⁊ ẏ other Duraunt that they ſholde warne the kynge in ẏ popes name / that he ſholde ceſſe of his perſecucyon that he dyde vnto holy chyꝛche / and amende ẏ wronge ⁊ ẏ treſpace / that he had done to ẏ archebyſſhop of Caunterbury / ⁊ to ẏ pꝛyour ⁊ vnto ẏ monkes of Caunterbury / and to all the clergye of Englonde. And that he ſholde reſtoꝛe al ẏ goodes agayn that he had taken of them ayenſt theyꝛ wyl oꝛ elles they ſholde curſe hym by name. And to doo this thynge / ⁊ to conferme ẏ pope toke them his lettres in bulles patentes. Theſe two Legates came in to Englande / ⁊ came to ẏ kynge to Noꝛthampton / there that he helde his parlyament / ⁊ full curteyſly they hym ſalued ⁊ ſayd. Syꝛ we come fro the pope of Rome / ẏ peas of ẏ holy chyꝛche ⁊ ẏ lande to amende And we admoneſt you fyꝛſt in the popes halfe / that ye make full reſtytucyon of ẏ goodes that ye haue rauyſſhed and taken of holy chyꝛche ⁊ of the lande. And ẏ ye receyue Stephen archebyſſhop of Caunterbury in to his dygnyte / and ẏ pꝛyour of Cau͂terbury / and his monkes. And that ye yelde agayne vnto ẏ archebyſſhop all his landes / rentes / wout ony withholdynge. And ſyꝛ yet moꝛe ouer / ẏ ye ſhall make reſtytucyon vnto all holy chyꝛche / wherof they ſhall holde thẽ well apayed. Tho anſwered the kynge as touchynge ẏ pꝛyour ⁊ his monkes of Caunterbury. All that ye haue ſayd I wyll do gladly / ⁊ all thynge that ye wyll oꝛdeyne. But as touchynge ẏ archebyſſhop I ſhal tell you in my herte as it lyeth. That the archebyſſhoppe leue his archebyſſhopꝛyche / ⁊ that ẏ pope then foꝛ hȳ wolde pꝛay and then vpon auenture me ſholde lyke ſome other byſſhopꝛyche to gyue hym in Englande. And vpon this condycyon I wyll hym accepte and receyue / ⁊ neuertheleſſe as archebyſſhoppe in Englonde yf he abyde / he ſhall neuer haue ſoo good ſaufconduyte / but ẏ he ſhall be takẽ. Tho ſayd Pandulf vnto the kynge. Syꝛ holy chyꝛche was neuer wonte to dyſcharge an archebyſſhoppe without cauſe reaſonable. But euer it hath be wonte to chaſtyſe kynges and pꝛynces that to god and holy chyꝛche were inobedyent. What how now ſayd ẏ kynge / menace ye me. Naye ſayd Pandulfe / but ye now openly haue tolde as it ſtandeth in your herte. And to you we wyll tell what is the popes wyll. And thus it ſtãdeth that he hath you hooly enterdyted ⁊ accurſed / foꝛ ẏ wꝛonges that ye haue done to holy chyꝛche ⁊ to the clergye. And foꝛ as moche as ye dwelle ⁊ be in wyll to abyde in malyce ⁊ in wꝛetchedneſſe / and wyll not come out therof / noꝛ to amende ye ſhall vnderſtande / that this tyme afterwarde ẏ ſentence is vpon you gyuẽ ⁊ holdeth ſtede ⁊ ſtrength / and vpõ all tho that with you hath comuned befoꝛe this tyme / whether they ben cler barons / or knyghtes / or ony other what so euer yͤ they be / we them assoyle / & quyte unto this daye. And fro this tyme afterwarde of what condycyon so euer that they ben we them accurse that wyth you haue ony werke / & doo we sentence upon them openly & specyally. And assoyle the erles / barons / knyghtes / and all other men of theyr homages seruyces and feautees / that they sholde unto you doo. And this tydynge to conferme / we gyue playne power to the bysshop of Wynchestre / and to the bysshop of Norwyche. And the same power we gyue in to Scotlande to the bysshoppes of Rochestre & of Salysbury. And in Wales we gyue yͤ same power to the bysshop of saynt Dauyd and of Landaf / & of saynt Asse. And more ouer we sende through all Crystendome / yͤ all the bysshops beyonde yͤ see / that they doo accurse all tho that helpe you or that ony counsell gyueth you in ony maner nede yͭ ye haue to do in ony parte of the worlde. And we assoyle them also all / by auctoryte of yͤ pope / & commaunde them also with you to fyghte as wyth hym yͭ is enmy to al holy chyrche. Tho answered yͤ kynge. What may ye doo more to me. Tho answered Pandulfe. We saye to you in the name of god / that ye ne nor no heyre that ye haue neuer after this daye maye be crowned. Tho sayd the kynge. By hym that is almyghty god / & I had wyste this are yͭ ye came in to my lande / that ye had brought me suche tydynges I sholde haue made you ryde all one yere. Tho answered Pandulf. Full well wende we at our fyrste comynge / that ye wolde haue be obedyent to god & holy chirche / & haue fulfylled the popes commaundement / & now we haue shewed unto you & pronounced yͤ popes wyll as we were charged therwith. And as now ye haue sayd that yf ye had wyst the cause of our comynge that ye wolde haue doo us to ryde all an hole yere. And as well ye myght haue sayd / that ye wolde haue taken an hole yere of respyte by yͤ popes leue. But for to suffre what dethe ye coude ordeyne / we shall not spare for to tell you holly all the popes message & his wyll / that we were charged with.

¶ How pandulfe delyuered a clerke that had falsed & counterfeted the kynges money before the kynge hymselfe.

Tho the kynge commaunded anone yͤ shyreffs & baylyfs of Northampton that were in the kynges presence / yͭ they sholde brynge forth all the prysoners that they myght be done to dethe before Pandulf / for bycause the kynge wende yͭ they wolde haue forgyuen theyr bodes in cause of the deth all thynge that they had spoken afore. Whan the prysoners were come before the kynge / the kynge commaunded some to be hanged / & some to be drawen & some to drawe out theyr eyen out of theyr hede. And amonge all other there was a clerke that had falsed yͤ kynges money. And the kynge commaunded that he sholde be hanged & drawen. And whan Pandulfe herde this commaundement of the kynge he sterte hym up ryght quyckly / & anone asked a boke & a candell / & wolde haue cursed the kynge / & all them that wolde set upon the clerke ony hande. And Pandulf hymself wente for to seke a crosse. And the kynge folowed hym / & delyuered hym yͤ clerke by the hande that he sholde do wyth hym what he wolde. And thus was the clerke delyuered and wente theyr. And pandulf & Durande his felowe went fro the kynge / & came agayne to the pope of Rome. And tolde hym that kynge Iohan wolde not be amended. But euer stode to be so accursed. And neuertheles yͤ pope graunted yͤ yere thoroughout all Englande that preeſtes myght ſynge maſſe in couenable chirches/and conſecrate our lordes body/⁊ gyue it to ſeke men whiche were redy to paſſe out of this worlde. And alſo ẏ men myght criſten chyldren ouer all the londe. And whan ẏ pope wyſt ⁊ ſawe that ẏ kyng wolde not be vnder ẏ rule of holy chyrche for no maner thynge. The pope ſent then to the kynge of Fraũce in remiſſyon of his ſynnes/ẏ he ſholde take all the power ẏ he myght/⁊ go in to Englonde for to deſtroy kynge Johñ. Whan theſe tydynges came to kynge Johan/then was he ſore anoyed/and ſore drad leſte he ſholde leſe his realme/⁊ hymſelf be done to dethe. Then ſente he to ẏ pope meſſengers ⁊ ſayd he wolde be Juſtifyed/⁊ come to amendement in all thynges/⁊ wolde make ſatiſfaccyon to all maner of men after the popes ordynaunce. Then ſente the pope agayn in to Englonde Pandulf ⁊ other meſſengers/ẏ came to Caũterbury to the kynge ⁊ there abode. And ẏ .viii. daye of Maye ẏ kynge made an othe for to ſtande to the popes ordynaunce before Pandulfe ẏ Legate in all maner of thynges in whiche he was accurſed. And that he ſholde make ful reſtitucyon to all men of holy chyrche ⁊ of relygyon/⁊ of ẏ goodes that he hadde taken of them agaynſt theyr wyll. And all ẏ grete lordes of Englonde ſwore vpon ẏ boke ⁊ by theyr holydom/ẏ yf the kynge wolde not holde his othe/they wolde by ſtrength make hym holde it. Then put ẏ kynge hȳ to ẏ court of Rome/⁊ then gaue he vp ẏ realme of Englonde ⁊ of Irlande for hym ⁊ for his heyres for euermore that ſholde come after hym/ſoo that kynge Johan ⁊ his heyres ſholde take tho two realmes of ẏ popes handes. And ſholde euery yere paye ferme vnto ẏ court of Rome a thouſande marke of ſyluer. And tho toke ẏ kynge ẏ crowne of his heed ⁊ ſet it vpõ his knees And theſe wordes ſayd he in heryinge of all the grete lordes of Englonde. Here I reſygne the crowne ⁊ the realme of Englonde in to ẏ pope Innocencius handes ẏ iii. ⁊ put me holly in his mercy ⁊ in his ordynaũce. Tho receyued Pandulf ẏ crowne of kynge Johan/⁊ kepte it fyue dayes as for ſeaſynge/takynge of two realmes of Englonde and of Irlonde. And confermed all maner thynges by his Chartre/ẏ foloweth after.

¶ Of ẏ letter oblygatorye that kynge Johan made to the court of Rome/wherfore ẏ Peterpens ben gadred through out all Englonde.

TO all cryſten people through out all the worlde dwellynge. Johan by ẏ grace of god kynge of Englonde gretynge to your vnyuerſyte. And be it knowen ẏ for as moche as we haue greued ⁊ offended god ⁊ our moder holy chyrche of Rome. And for aſmoche as we haue nede vnto the mercy of our lorde Jheſu cryſt. And alſo we may nothynge ſo worthy offre/as competent ſatiſfaccion to make to god ⁊ to holy chyrche/but yf that it were our owne body/as wour realmes of Englonde ⁊ of Irlonde. Then by the grace of god we deſyre to meke vs/for the loue of hym ẏ meked hym to ẏ deth of the croſſe Through counſeyle of theſe noble erles ⁊ barons/we offre ⁊ freely graũte to god ⁊ to ẏ appoſtle ſaynt Peter ⁊ ſaynt Poule/⁊ to oure moder chyrche of Rome/⁊ to our holy fader pope Innocentius ẏ .iii. ⁊ to all ẏ popes ẏ cometh after hym all the realmes ⁊ patronages of chirches of englonde and of Irlande/with theyr appertenaunces/for remyſſyon of our ſynnes/ and for helpe ⁊ helth of our kynne ſoules and of all cryſten ſoules. So that frõ this day afterwarde we wyll receyue ⁊ holde oure moder Chyrche of Rome/ as fee ferme doynge ſeruice to our holy fader pope Innocentius the thyrde/ and ſo to all the popes that cometh after hym/ in the ſame manere aboue ſayd. And in the preſence of ÿ wyſe mā pandulf ÿ popes ſubdeakē/ we make lyeges homage/ as it were in the popes preſence/ and before hym were. And ſhall do all maner thynges aboue ſayd. And therto we bynde vs/ ⁊ all ÿ cometh after vs ⁊ our heyres for euer more/ without ony agayne ſayenge to the pope/ and eke ÿ warde of chirche vacantes And in token of this thynge for euer to laſte we wyl conferme and ordeyne/ that our ſpecyall rentes of the forſayd realme ſauynge ſaynt Peters pens in al thynge to the moder chyrche of Rome payenge by yere a thouſande marke of ſyluer/ and two termes of ÿ yere for cuſtomes ÿ we ſholde do for the forſayd realmes/ that is to ſaye at Myghelmaſſe/ and at Eſter. That is to ſay. vii. C. marke for Englonde/ and thre hondred marke for Irelande ſauynge to vs ⁊ to our heyres our Juſtyces/ and other fraunchyſe/ ⁊ other royaltees that perteyne vnto the crowne. And theſe thynges ÿ before ben ſayd we wyll that it be ferme and ſtable without ende And to that oblygacyon we and our ſucceſſours and our heyres in this maner be bounde/ that yf we/ or ony of our heyres thorough ony preſumpcyon falle in ony poynt/ agaynſt ony of theſe thynges aboue ſayd/ and he be warned/ and wyll not ryght amende/ he ſhal then leſe ÿ forſayd realme for euermore. And that this chartre of oblygacyon and our warrauntyſe for euermore/ be ferme and ſtable without ony gaynſayenge. We ſhall from this day afterwarde be true vnto god and to the moder our holy chyrche of Rome/ and to the pope Innocentius the thyrde/ and to all that cometh after hym. And the realmes of Englonde ⁊ of Irelande we ſhall maynteyne truely in all maner poyntes agaynſt all manere men by our power through goddes helpe.

¶How ÿ clerkes ÿ were outlawed came agayne/ ⁊ how kyng Johñ was aſſoyled.

SO whan this Chartre was made and enſealed/ the kynge reſceyued agayne his crowne of Pandulfus hande And ſent anone vnto the archebyſſhoppe Stephen/ and to al his other clerkes and lewde men that he had exyled oute of his londe/ that they ſholde come agayne in to Englonde/ and haue agayn theyr londes and alſo theyr rentes. And ÿ he wolde make reſtytucyon of the goodes that he had taken of theyrs agaynſt theyr wyll. ¶The kynge hymſelf tho and Pandulf/ and the erles and barons went vnto Wyncheſtre agaynſt the archebyſſhop Stephen. And whā he was come ÿ kynge went agaynſt hym ⁊ fell adowne to his feet and thus to hym ſayd. Fayre ſyre ye be welcome/ and I crye you mercy bycauſe that I haue treſpaſſed agaynſt you. ¶The archebyſſhop toke hym vp tho in his armes/ ⁊ kyſſyd hym curteyſly oftentymes/ and after led hym to ÿ dore of ſaynt Swythunes chyrche by ÿ hande/ ⁊ aſſoyled hym of the ſentence/ ⁊ hym reconſyled to god and to holy chyrche. And ÿ was on ſaynt Margaretes daye. And the archebyſſhop anone went for to ſynge maſſe. And ÿ kynge offred at the maſſe a marke of golde. And whan the maſſe was done/ all they wente for to receyue theyr londes without ony manere gaynſayenge. And that day they made all myrth ⁊ Joye ynough But yet was not the enterdytynge releſed/ bycauſe the pope badde ſe that the enterdytynge ſholde not be done tyll the kynge had made full reſtytucyon of the goodes that he had taken of holy chyrche / And that hymſelfe ſholde do homage to yͤ pope by a certayne Legate / that he ſholde ſende in to Englonde. And thã toke Pandulf his leue of the kynge ⁊ yͤ archebyſſhop / ⁊ wente agayne vnto Rome. And yͤ archebyſſhop anone lete come before hym prelates of holy chirche at Redynge for to trete ⁊ cõſeyle how moche ⁊ what they ſholde aſke of yͤ kynge / for to make reſtytucyon of yͤ goodes yͭ he had taken of thẽ. And they ordeyned ⁊ ſayd / that yͤ kynge ſholde gyue to yͤ archebyſſhop thre thouſande marke for yͤ wronge that yͤ kynge had done vnto hẏ. And alſo by porcyons to other clerkes xv. M. marke. ❡ And this tyme Nicholaꝰ byſſhop of Tuſcam Cardynall Penitenciarius of Rome came in to Englonde through yͤ popes commaundement / yͤ. v. kalendas of octobre / ⁊ came to London / the fyfth Nonas of Octobre / for bycauſe yͭ yͤ kynge Johan and all the kynges yͭ came after hẏ ſholde euermore holde yͤ realme of Englonde ⁊ of Irlande of god ⁊ of yͤ pope / payenge to yͤ pope by yere as is aboue ſayd.

❡ How yͤ enterdytynge was vndone in Englonde / ⁊ of yͤ debate yͭ was bytwene kynge Johñ ⁊ the barons of the realme.

When kynge Johñ had done his homage to yͤ Legate yͤ ſhewed hẏ the popes lettre that he ſholde paye to Julyan / ⁊ yelde agayne that was kynge Rycharddes wyfe yͤ thyrde parte of yͤ londe of Englonde ⁊ of Irlande yͭ he had withholde ſyth yͤ kynge Rycharde dyed. Whan kynge Johan herde this / he was wonder wroth. For verely yͤ enterdytyng myght not be vndone tyll that he had made gree and reſtytucyon to the forſayd Julyan of that ſhe aſked. The Legate wente then agayne to the pope after cryſtmaſſe. And the kynge ſente ouer yͤ ſee to Julyan that was kynge Rycharddes wyfe / for to haue a relace of yͭ ſhe axed of hẏ. And ſo it befell that Julyan deyed anone after Eſter. And in ſo moche yͤ kynge was quyte of yͤ thynge that ſhe aſked. But than at yͤ feeſt of ſaynt Johñ yͭ came next after through yͤ popes cõmaundement / yͤ enterdytynge was fyrſt releaſyd through out all Englonde yͤ. vii. daye of July. And. vii. yere was the lande enterdyted. And on yͤ mornynge men ronge ⁊ ſayde maſſe through out al London / and ſo after through out all Englonde. ❡ And the next yere after there began a grete debate bytwene kynge Johan and yͤ lordes of Englonde / for bycauſe he wolde not graunte the lawes and holde yͤ whiche ſaynt Edwarde had ordeyned / and had ben vſed and holden vnto that tyme that he hadde them broken. For he wolde holde no lawe / but dyd all thynge that hym lyked / ⁊ dyſheryted many men without conſente of lordes ⁊ perys of the lande. And wolde dyſheryte the good Erle Radulfe of Cheſtre / for by cauſe he vndertoke hym of his wyckedneſſe / and for cauſe that he dyd ſo moche ſhame and vylany to god ⁊ to holy chyrche. And alſo for he helde and hauñted his owne broders wyfe / and laye alſo by many other women grete lordes doughters. For he ſpared no woman that hym lyked for to haue. Wherfore all the lordes of the lande were wrothe / ⁊ toke yͤ cyte of London. To ceſſe this debate yͤ archebyſſhop and lordes of the lande aſſembled before the feeſt of ſaynt Johñ Baptyſt in a medowe beſyde the towne of Stanys / that is called Remney mede. And yͤ kynge made them there a chartre of fraunchyſe / ſuche as they wolde aſke / ⁊ in ſuche manere they were accorded / and that accordemẽt laſted not full longe. For the kynge hymſelfe ſoone after dyde agaynſt yͤ poyntes of the ſame chartre þ he had made. Wherfore þ mooſt partte of þ lordes of þ lande aſſembled and began to warre vpõ hym agayne/and brenned his townes/⁊ robbed his folke/⁊ dyde all the ſorowe that they myght/⁊ made theym as ſtronge as they myght with all the power that they hadde/and thought to dryue hym oute of Englonde and make Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce kynge of Englonde.

And kynge Johan ſent tho ouer ſee/and ordeyned ſo moche people of Normans/and of Pycardes/and of Flemynges/ſo that the lande myght not ſuſteyne them/but with moche ſorowe. And amonge all this people/was a mã of Normandye þ was called Fawkis of Brent/⁊ this Norman ⁊ his company ſpared neyther chyrches/nor houſes of relygyon/but they brente ⁊ robbed it/and bare awaye all þ they myght take/ſo that þ lande was all deſtroyed/what of ony ſyde and of other. The barons and lordes of Englande ordeyned amonge them the beſte ſpekers and wyſeſt men/and ſente them ouer the ſee to kynge Phylyp of Fraũce/⁊ prayed hym that he wolde ſende Lowys his ſone in to Englonde to be kynge of Englonde/⁊ to receyue þ crowne.

¶ How Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraũce came in to Englonde with a ſtronge power of people to be kyng of Englonde.

ANone as kynge Phylyp of Fraũce herde theſe tydỹges/he made certayne alyaũce bytwene them by theyr comune eleccyon þ Lowys kynge Phylyps ſone of Fraũce ſholde go with them in to Englonde/and dryue out kynge Johan of the londe. And þ all were in preſence of Lowys/made vnto hym homage/⁊ became his men. And þ Barons of Englonde helde them ſtyl at London/⁊ abode Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraũce. And this was the nexte Saterday before the Aſcenſion of our lorde that Lowys came in to Englonde wᵗ a ſtronge power. And that tyme kynge Johan hadde taken all the caſtels of Englonde in to alyens handes. And tho came Lowys and beſyeged Rocheſter caſtell/⁊ toke it with ſtrength. And the thurſdaye in Whytſonweke lete hange all the alyens þ were therin. And the thurſday after he came to London/⁊ there he was receyued wᵗ moche honour of þ lordes that abode hym there/and all to hym made homage. And afterwarde on the tewyſdaye next after the Trynyte ſondaye he toke þ caſtell of Reigate. And on the morowe after the caſtell of Gylforde. And the frydaye nexte after the caſtell of Farneham. And the monday next after the cyte of Wyncheſtre to hym was yolden. And the morowe after ſaynt Johans daye the manoyr of Wolueſeye to hỹ was yolden. And þ tewyſdaye after þ Utas of ſaynt Peter and Poule they toke the caſtell of Odiham. And the mondaye after ſaynt Margarettes daye/he ordeyned hỹ towarde Baldmore/for to ſyege the caſtell/⁊ there he dwelled .xv. days and myght not gete the caſtell/and then wente thens ⁊ came to London and the Toure to hym was yolden.

¶ How the pope ſente in to Englonde a Legate that was called Swalo/⁊ of the dethe of kynge Johan.

ANd in the ſame tyme þ pope ſent in to Englonde a Legate þ was called Swalo/⁊ he was preeſt Cardinal of Rome/for to mayteyne kynge Johñs cauſe agaynſt the barons of Englonde. But the barons had ſo huge partye and helpe through Lowys þ kynges ſone of Fraũce that kynge Johan wyſt not whe ther to torne nor go. And it befell that he wolde haue gone to Nichol/ and he went thyderwarde/ he came by the abbaye of Swyneſhede/ ⁊ there he abode two days. And as he ſat at mete/ he aſked a monke of the hous how moche that a lofe was worth that was ſet before hym vpon the table. And the monke ſayd/ that the lofe was worth but an halfe peny. O ſayd the kynge tho. Here is grete chepe of brede. Now ſayde he tho/ and I may lyue ony whyle ſuche a lofe ſhall be worth .xx. ſhelynges or halfe a yere be gone/ ⁊ ſo whan he ſayd this worde moche he thought/ ⁊ often he ſyghed/ ⁊ ete of the brede/ ⁊ ſayd by god/ the worde that I haue ſpoken/ it ſhall be ſoth. The monke that ſtode before the kynge was for this worde full ſory in his herte and thought rather he wolde hymſelfe ſuffre dethe/ and thought yf he myght ordeyne therfore ſome manere remedye. And anone the monke wente vnto his abbot/ and was ſhryuen of hym/ ⁊ tolde the abbot all that ẏ kynge had ſayd ⁊ prayed his abbot for to aſſoyle hym/ for he wolde gyue the kynge ſuche a drynke that all Englonde ſholde be glad therof and Joyfull. Tho yede the monke in to a gardeyne/ and foūde a grete tode therin and toke her vp and put her in a cuppe/ and prycked the tode through with a broche many tymes tyll that ẏ venym came out of euery ſyde in the cuppe. And tho toke the cuppe ⁊ fylled it with good ale/ and brought it before the kynge knelynge ſayenge. Syr ſayde he waſſayll/ for neuer the dayes of all your lyfe dronke ye of ſo good a cuppe. Begyn monke ſayd ẏ kynge. And ẏ monke dranke a grete draught/ and toke the kynge the cuppe/ ⁊ ẏ kynge dranke alſo a grete draught/ and ſet downe the cuppe. The monke anone ryght wente in to the farmerye and there dyed anone/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amē. And .v. monkes ſynge for his ſoule ſpecyally/ and ſhall whyle ẏ the abbaye ſtandeth. The kynge roſe vp anone full euyll at eaſe and commaunded to remeue the table ⁊ aſked after ẏ monke. And men tolde hym that he was deed/ for his wombe was broken in ſondre. Whan the kynge herde this/ he commaunded for to truſſe/ but it was for nought/ for his bely began to ſwelle for ẏ drynke that he had drōke/ ⁊ within two dayes he dyed on ẏ morowe after ſaynt Lukes daye/ ⁊ had many fayre chyldern of his body begotē that is to ſaye. Henry his ſone that was kynge after hym/ ⁊ Rycharde ẏ was erle of Cornewayle/ ⁊ Yſabell that was Empreſſe of Rome/ ⁊ Elenore that was quene of Scotlande. And this kynge Johan whan he had reygned .xviii. yere/ ⁊ .v. monethes ⁊ fyue dayes/ he dyed in the caſtel of newerke. And his body was buryed at Wyncheſtre.

¶ Anno dñi. M.CC.

FRedericus ẏ ſeconde was Emperoure .xxx. yere. This man was crowned of Honori⁹ ẏ pope ayenſt Otto for bycauſe ẏ he ſholde fyght with hym/ the whiche he dyd/ ⁊ expulſed hym. And fyrſt he nouryſſhed ẏ chyrche/ ⁊ afterwarde he diſpoyled it/ as a ſtepmoder. Wherfore Honorius curſyd hym/ ⁊ all tho that were contrary to his opynyon the pope aſſoyled. And the ſame ſentence Gregorius ẏ .ix. renewed. And this man put Henry his owne ſone in to pryſon/ and there murdred hym. Wherfore whan this Emperoure another ſeaſon was ſyke/ by another ſone of his owne was murdred/ in tyme of Innocēci⁹ ẏ .iiii. ¶ Honori⁹ ẏ .iii. was pope after Innocenci⁹ .x. yere/ ⁊ cōfermed ẏ ordre of frere Prechers ⁊ Minors/ ⁊ made certayne Decretalles.

¶ Of kynge Henry the thyrde that was crowned at Glouceſtre.

AND after this kynge Johan reygned his ſone Henry ÿ was crowned at Glouceſtre whan he was .ix. yere olde / on ſaynt Symonds day ⁊ Jude of Swalo ÿ legate of Rome through counſeyle of all ÿ grete lordes ÿ helde wͭ kynge Johan his fader / ÿ is to ſay / ÿ erle Radulfe of Cheſtre. Wyllyam erle Marſhal of Penbroke. Wyllyam the Brener erle of erle Feriers. Merle the manly baron. And all other grete lordes of Englonde helde wͭ Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraũce. And anone after whan kynge Henry was crowned Swalo ÿ legate helde his coũſeyll at Bryſtowe at ſaynt Martyns feeſt. ⁊ there were .xi. byſſhops of englonde ⁊ of Wales / ⁊ of other prelates of holy chyrche a grete nõbre / ⁊ erles ⁊ barons ⁊ many knyghtes of Englonde. And all tho ÿ were at that counſeyle ſwore feaute vnto kynge Henry. And anone after ÿ Legate enterdyted Wales / for cauſe that they helde with the barons of Englonde. Alſo all tho that holpe / or gaue coũſeyle to meue warre agaynſt ÿ newe kynge he accurſed them. And at ÿ begynnynge he put in ÿ ſentence ÿ kynges ſone of Fraũce Lowys. And neuertheles ÿ ſame Lowys wolde not ſpare for all ÿ / but wente and toke ÿ caſtell of Barcamſtede / ⁊ alſo the caſtell of Hertforde. And frõ ÿ day afterwarde ÿ barons dyde there ſo moche harme throughout al englonde / ⁊ pryncypall the Frenſſhe men that were wͭ kynge Lowys. Wherfore the grette lordes / and all ÿ comyn people of Englonde lete thẽ dreſſe / for to dryue Lowys ⁊ his companye out of Englonde / but ſome of the barons ⁊ Frenſſhe men were gone to ÿ cyte of nichol / ⁊ toke ÿ towne ⁊ helde it to kynge Lowys profyte. But thyder came kynge Henryes men wͭ grete power / that is to ſaye / the erle Radulfe of Cheſtre / and Wyllyam erle Marſhall / and Wyllyam the Brener of Feriers / and many other lordes wͭ them / ⁊ gaue batayle vnto Lowys men. And there was ſlayne ÿ erle of Perſees / ⁊ Lowys men were foule diſcõfyted. And there was takẽ Merle erle of Wyncheſtre / ⁊ Humfrey de Boune erle of Hertforde / Robert ÿ ſone of Walter / ⁊ many other ÿ began warre agaynſt ÿ kynge there they were takẽ ⁊ ledde vnto kynge Henry ÿ was kynge Johans ſone. And whan ÿ tydynges came to Lowys of the diſcõfyture / whiche was ÿ kynges ſone of Fraunce. He remeued fro thens and wente vnto London / and lete ſhyt ÿ gates faſt of the cyte. And anone after the kynge ſente to the Burgeys of London ÿ they ſholde yelde them to hym / ⁊ ÿ cyte alſo. And he wolde them graunte all theyr fraunchyſes that euer they were wonte to haue before. And wolde cõferme them by his grete newe chartre vnder his brode ſeale. And in ÿ ſame tyme a grete lorde that was called Euſtace ÿ monke came out of Fraunce with a grete company of lordes / ⁊ wolde haue come in to englond for to haue holpen Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce. But Hubert of Brugh / ⁊ ÿ fyue portes wͭ .viii. ſhyppes tho mette with them in the hygh ſee / and aſſayled them egrely / and ouercame them with ſtrength / and ſmote of Euſtaces ÿ monkes heed. And toke alſo .x. grete lordes of Fraunce and put them in to pryſon. And ſlewe almooſt all ÿ men that came with theym / and anone drowned the ſhyppes in the ſee.

¶ How Lowys wente agayn in to Fraũce / and of ÿ confermacyon of kynge Johans chartre.

SO whan Lowys herde theſe tydynges he dradde ſore to be deed ⁊ loſt And lete ordeyne ⁊ ſpeke bytwene ẏ king ⁊ Lowys by the Legate Swalo. And by ẏ Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ⁊ other grete lordes all the pryſoners on ẏ one ſyde ⁊ that other ſholde be delyuered ⁊ goo quyte. And Lowys hymſelfe ſholde haue for his coſtes a. M.li. of ſyluer ⁊ ſhold go out of Englond/ ⁊ come neuer agayne in to it. And in this maner was the accorde made bytwene kyng Henry and Lowys. And tho was Lowys aſſoyled of ẏ popes Legate/ that was called Swalo of ẏ ſentence that he was in/ ⁊ the barons of Englonde. And after this kynge Henry and Swalo the Legate and Lowys went to Merton ⁊ there was the peas confermed ⁊ bytwene them ordeyned. And after Lowys went to London ⁊ toke his leue/ and was brought with moche honoure to the ſee with the Archebiſſhop of Caunterbury/ ⁊ with other byſſhops ⁊ erles ⁊ barōs ⁊ ſo went in to Fraunce. ¶ Afterwarde ẏ kynge ⁊ the Archebyſſhop/ ⁊ alſo erles ⁊ barons aſſembled them ⁊ came to the cyte of London at Mighelmas next/ ⁊ held there a grete parlyament. And there were renewed all the Fraūchyſe that kynge Johñ had graunted at Romney mede/ ⁊ kynge Henry then confermed by his chartre all the whiche ben holden yet through out al Englonde. And in ẏ tyme the king toke of euery plough lande.ii. ſhelynges/ And Hubert of Brughe was made then cheyf Juſtyce of Englond. And this was in the fourth yere of kynge Henryes regne. ¶ And in ẏ ſame yere was ſaynt Thomas of Caunterbury tranſlated the.Lyere after his martyrdom And after it was ordeyned by all the Lordes of Englonde that all alyens ſholde go out of Englond ⁊ come no more therin. And kynge Henry toke then all the caſtelles in to his hande/ that kynge Johan his fader had giuen ⁊ taken to alyens for to kepe that held with hym. But ẏ proude Faukes of Brytayne rychely lete aray his caſtell of Bedforde/ whiche he had of kynge Johans gyfte/ ⁊ helde that caſtell agaynſt kynge Henries wyll with myght and ſtrengthe. And the kynge came theder with a ſtronge power and beſyeged the caſtell. And the Archebyſſhop mayſter Stephen of Langton/ with a fayre company of knyghtes came to the kynge for to helpe hym. And from ẏ Aſcencyon of our lorde vnto the aſſumpcyon of our lady laſted ẏ ſyege. And then was the caſtell wonne and taken. And the kynge lete hange all thoſe that wente in to the caſtell with theyr goode wyll for to holde the caſtell. That is for to ſaye.lxxx. men. And then afterwarde Faukes hymſelf was foūde and had in a chirche at couentree. And there he forſwore all Englōde with moche ſhame/ and went agayne in to his countree where he was borne./ ¶ And whyles that kynge Henry regned Edmonde of Abyndon that was treſorer of Salyſbury was conſecrate Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And this kyng henry ſent ouer the ſee vnto the Erle of Prouaūce/ that he ſholde ſende hym his doughter in to Englond that was called Ellenore/ and he wolde ſpouſe her. And then ſhe came in to Englonde after Cryſtenmas. And on the morowe after ſaynt Hylaryes daye the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury Edmonde ſpouſed them togyder at Weſtmynſter with grete ſolempnyte. And there was a ſwete ſight betwene thē That is to ſaye. Edwarde that was next kynge after his fader floure of curteyſye and of largeneſſe/ And Margarete that was after quene of Scotlande. And Beautryce that was after Ducheſſe of Brytayne. And Katheryne that deyed mayden in relygyon.

¶ Of kynge Henry the thyrde that was crowned at Glouceſtre.

AND after this kynge Johan reygned his ſone Henry ẏ was crowned at Glouceſtre whan he was .ix. yere olde / on ſaynt Symonſs day & Jude of Swalo ẏ legate of Rome through counſeyle of all ẏ grete lordes ẏ helde wͭ kynge Johan his fader / ẏ is to ſay / ẏ erle Radulfe of Cheſtre. Wyllyam erle Marſhal of Penbroke. Wyllyam the Brener erle of erle Feriers. Serle the manly baron. And all other grete lordes of Englonde helde wͭ Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraūce. And anone after whan kynge Henry was crowned Swalo ẏ legate helde his coūſeyll at Bryſtowe at ſaynt Martyns feeſt. & there were .xi. byſſhops of englonde & of Wales / & of other prelates of holy chyrche a grete nōbre / & erles & barons & many knyghtes of Englonde. And all tho ẏ were at that counſeyle ſwore feaute vnto kynge Henry. And anone after ẏ Legate enterdyted Wales / for cauſe that they helde with the barons of Englonde. Alſo all tho that holpe / or gaue coūſeyle to meue warre agaynſt ẏ newe kynge he accurſed them. And at ẏ begynnynge he put in ẏ ſentence ẏ kynges ſone of Fraūce Lowys. And neuertheles ẏ ſame Lowys wolde not ſpare for all ẏ / but wente and toke ẏ caſtell of Barcamſtede / & alſo the caſtell of Hertforde. And frō ẏ day afterwarde ẏ barons dyde there ſo moche harme throughout al englonde / & princypall the Frenſſhe men that were wͭ kynge Lowys. Wherfore the grete lordes / and all ẏ comyn people of Englonde lete thē dreſſe / for to dryue Lowys & his company out of Englonde / but ſome of the barons & Frenſſhe men were gone to ẏ cyte of nichol / & toke ẏ towne & helde it to kynge Lowys profyte. But thyder came kynge Henryes men wͭ grete power / that is to ſaye / the erly Radulfe of Cheſtre / and Wyllyam erle Marſhall / and Wyllyam the Brener of Feriers / and many other lordes wͭ them / & gaue batayle vnto Lowys men. And there was ſlayne ẏ erle of Perſees / & Lowys men were foule diſcōfyted. And there was takē Serle erle of wyncheſtre / & Humfroy de Boune erle of Hertforde / Robert ẏ ſone of walter / & many other ẏ began warre agaynſt ẏ kynge there they were takē & ledde vnto kynge Henry ẏ was kynge Johans ſone. And whan ẏ tydynges came to Lowys of the diſcōfyture / whiche was ẏ kynges ſone of Fraunce. He remeued fro thens and wente vnto London / and lete ſhyt ẏ gates faſt of the cyte. And anone after the kynge ſente to the Burgeys of London ẏ they ſholde yelde them to hī / & ẏ cyte alſo. And he wolde them graunte all theyr fraunchyſes that euer they were wonte to haue before. And wolde cōferme them by his grete newe chartre vnder his brode ſeale. And in ẏ ſame tyme a grete lorde that was called Euſtace ẏ monke came out of Fraunce with a grete company of lordes / & wolde haue come in to englond for to haue holpen Lowys the kynges ſone of Fraunce. But Hubert of Brugh / & ẏ fyue portes wͭ .viii. ſhyppes tho mette with them in the hygh ſee / and aſſayled them egrely / and ouercame them with ſtrength / and ſmote of Euſtaces ẏ monkes heed. And toke alſo .x. grete lordes of Fraunce and put them in to pryſon. And ſlewe almooſt all ẏ men that came with theym / and anone drowned the ſhyppes in the ſee.

¶ How Lowys torned agayn in to Fraūce / and of ẏ confermacyon of kynge Johans chartre.

SO whan Lowys herde theſe tydȳges he dradde ſore to be deed ⁊ loſt And lete ordeyne ⁊ ſpeke bytwene yͤ king ⁊ Lowys by the Legate Swalo. And by yͤ Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ⁊ other grete lordes all the pryſoners on yͤ one ſyde ⁊ that other ſholde be delyuered ⁊ goo quyte. And Lowys hymſelfe ſholde haue for his coſtes a. M.li. of ſyluer ⁊ ſhold go out of Englond / ⁊ come neuer agayne in to it. And in this maner was the accorde made bytwene kyng Henry and Lowys. And tho was Lowys aſſoyled of yͤ popes Legate / that was called Swalo of yͤ ſentence that he was in / ⁊ the barons of Englonde. And after this kynge Henry and Swalo the Legate and Lowys went to Merton ⁊ there was the peas confermed ⁊ bytwene them ordeyned. And after Lowys went to London ⁊ toke his leue / and was brought with moche honoure to the ſee with the Archebiſſhop of Caunterbury / ⁊ with other byſſhops ⁊ erles ⁊ barōs ⁊ ſo went in to Fraunce. ¶ Afterwarde yͤ kynge ⁊ the Archebyſſhop / ⁊ alſo erles ⁊ barons aſſembled them ⁊ came to the cyte of London at Myghelmas next / ⁊ held there a grete parlyament. And there were renewed all the Fraūchyſe that kynge Johñ had graunted at Romney mede / ⁊ kynge Henry then confermed by his chartre all the whiche ben holden yet through out al Englonde. And in yͤ tyme the king toke of euery plough lande .ii. ſhelynges / And Hubert of Brughe was made then chyef Juſtyce of Englond. And this was in the fourth yere of kynge Henryes regne. ¶ And in yͤ ſame yere was ſaynt Thomas of Caunterbury tranſlated the .l. yere after his martyrdom And after it was ordeyned by all the Lordes of Englonde that all alyens ſholde go out of Englond ⁊ come no more therin. And kynge Henry toke then all the caſtelles in to his hande / that kynge Johan his fader had giuen ⁊ taken to alyens for to kepe that held with hym. But yͤ proude Faukes of Brytayne rychely lete aray his caſtell of Bedforde / whiche he had of kynge Johans gyfte / ⁊ helde that caſtell agaynſt kynge Henries wyll with myght and ſtrengthe. And the kynge came theder with a ſtronge power and beſyeged the caſtell. And the Archebyſſhop mayſter Stephen of Langton / with a fayre company of knyghtes came to the kynge for to helpe hym. And from yͤ Aſcencyon of our lorde vnto the aſſumpcyon of our lady laſted yͤ ſyege. And then was the caſtell wonne and taken. And the kynge lete hange all thoſe that wente in to the caſtell with theyr goode wyll for to holde the caſtell. That is for to ſaye .lxxx. men. And then afterwarde Faukes hymſelf was foūde and had in a chirche at couentree. And there he forſwore all Englōde with moche ſhame / and went agayne in to his countree where he was borne. /

¶ And whyles that kynge Henry regned Edmonde of Abyndon that was treſorer of Salyſbury was conſecrate Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury. And this kyng henry ſent ouer the ſee vnto the Erle of Prouaūce / that he ſholde ſende hym his doughter in to Englond that was called Ellenore / and he wolde ſpouſe her. And then ſhe came in to Englonde after Cryſtenmas. And on the morowe after ſaynt Hyllaryes daye the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury Edmonde ſpouſed them togyder at Weſtmynſter with grete ſolempnyte. And there was a ſwete ſight betwene thē That is to ſaye. Edwarde that was next kynge after his fader floure of curteyſye and of largeneſſe / And Margarete that was after quene of Scotlande. And Beatryce that was after Ducheſſe of Brytayne. And Katheryne that deyed mayden in relygyon.

¶ Of the quinzeyme of goodes that were graũted for the newe charter/and of yͤ purueaunce of Oxforde.

AND thus it befel that the lordes of Englonde wolde haue ſome addicyons moo in the charter of frãchiſe than they had of yͤ kynge ⁊ ſpake thus bytwene them. And yͤ kȳge graũted them all theyr axynge. And made to them two charters/ that one is called the grete charter of frãchyſes / ⁊ that other is called yͤ charter of foreſt. And for yͤ graũte of theſe two chartres/prelates/erles ⁊ barons/⁊ all the comȳs of Englonde/gaue to yͤ kynge a thouſande marke of ſyluer. ¶ Whã kȳge Henry had be kynge.xliiii.yere / the ſame yere he and his lordes/ erles ⁊ barons of yͤ reame wente to Oxforde / ⁊ ordeyned a lawe in amendymente of the reame. And fyrſt ſwore the kynge hymſelfe / ⁊ afterwarde all the lordes of the londe that they wolde holde that ſtatute for euermore/ and who that them brake ſholde be deed. But the ſeconde yere after that/that ordynaunce the kynge thrugh counſeyll of Edwarde his ſone/⁊ of Rycharde his broder / that was erle of Cornewaylle/⁊ alſo other repented hym of that othe that he had made for too holde that lawe ⁊ ordynaũce. And ſente to the courte of Rome to be aſſoyled of that othe. And in the yere nexte comynge after was the grete darth of corne in Englonde For a quarter of whete was worthe.xxiiii. ſhelynges. And the pore people ete netles ⁊ other wedes for hũgre. And dyed many a thouſande for defaute of mete ¶ And in the.xlviii.yere of kynge Henryes regne began warre and debate bytwene hym and his lordes / for bycauſe that he had broken the couenaũtes that were made bytwene theym at Oxforde. ¶ And the ſame yere was the towne of Northampton taken ⁊ folke ſlayne that were within/for bycauſe that they had ordeyned and made wylde fyre for to brenne the Cyte of London. And in the Moneth of May next after on ſaynt Pancras day/was the batayll of lewys/whiche was the Wedenyſday before ſaynt Dunſtans daye. And there was taken kynge Henry hymſelfe ⁊ ſyr Edward his ſone/⁊ Rycharde his broder erle of cornewayle/⁊ many other lordes And in the ſame yere next ſewynge ſyr Edward the kynges ſone brake oute of yͤ warde of ſyr Symonde of Mõtford erle of Leyceſtre at Hertforde / ⁊ went vnto the barons of the Marche / ⁊ they receyued hym wt moche honour. And the ſame tyme Gylbert of Clarence Erle of Glouceſtre yͭ was in the warde alſo of the forſayd Symonde/ through the cõmaundement of kyng Henry/yͭ went fro hym with a grete herte/for cauſe that he ſayd that Gylbert was a fole/wherfore he ordeyned hym afterward ſo/⁊ helde hym with king Henry. And on the ſaterdaye next after yͤ myddes of Auguſt ſyr Edwarde the kynges ſone dyſcõfyted ſyr Symond Mõtford at Kelyngworth/but yͤ grete lordes that were ther/ with hym were taken/that is to ſay. Baldewyne Wake/⁊ Wyllyam de Mõchenſye/⁊ many other greate lordes. And the tewyſday next after was the batayl done at Eueſham. And there was ſlayne ſyr Symonde de Mountforde. Hugh the Spenſer/⁊ Mountforth that was Raufe Baſſets fader of Drayton/⁊ many other grete lordes. And whan this batayll was done all the gentylmen that had ben with yͤ Erle Symonde were dyſheryted. And ordeyned them togyder and dyd moche harme to all the londe. For they dyſtroyed in aſmoche as they myght theyr enmyes.

¶ Of the ſiege of Kelyngworth and how the gentylmen were dyſheryted through counſayll of the Lordes of the reame of

Englonde / and how they came agayne ⁊ had theyr londes.

AND ẏ next yere comynge in May the fourth daye befoꝛe the feeſt of ſaynt Dunſtane / was the batayle ⁊ ſchomfyture at Cheſtrefelde / of them that were dyſheryted / ⁊ there was many of theym ſlaye. ¶ And Robert Erle of Ferlers ther was taken / ⁊ alſo Baldywyne / ⁊ Johan Delbay / with moche ſoꝛowe eſcaped thens. And on ſaynt Johans eue the Babtiſt tho ſewynge / began the ſyege of the caſtell of Kenylwoꝛth / ⁊ ẏ ſyege laſted to ſaynt Thomas eue the apoſtell. In whiche daye ſyr Hugh Haſtynge had the caſtell foꝛ to kepe that yelded vp the caſtell vnto the kynge / in this maner / that hymſelf ⁊ the other ẏ were within the caſtell / ſholde haue theyr lyues ⁊ lymes / ⁊ all they had therin / both hors ⁊ harneys / ⁊ four dayes of reſpyte / foꝛ to delyuer clenly ẏ caſtell / of themſelf / ⁊ of all other maner thynge / as they had within the caſtel. And ſyr Symōde Moūtfoꝛth the yōger / ⁊ the counteſſe his moder were gone ouer the ſee in to Fraunce / and there helde them as people ẏ were exyled out of Englōde foꝛ euer. ¶ And ſone after ẏ was oꝛdeyned by ẏ Legate Octobon / ⁊ by other greate loꝛdes / ẏ wyſeſt of Englōde that all tho that had be ayenſt the kȳge ⁊ were dyſherited / ſholde haue ayen theyr londes by greuous raūſons / after that it was oꝛdeyned. And thus they were accoꝛded with the kynge / and peas was cryed thoughout Englond / and thus ẏ warre was ended. And whan it was done / the Legate toke his leue of the kynge ⁊ of the quene / and of the grete loꝛdes of Englonde / and wente then to Rome the.lv. yere of kynge Henryes regne. And in lykewyſe Edwarde kynge Johans ſone of Brytayn. Johā Veſſi. Thomas of Clare. Roger of Clyffoꝛde. Odes of Graunſtone / Robert le Bꝛus. Johan of Verdon / and many other loꝛdes of Englonde / ⁊ of beyonde ẏ ſe toke theyꝛ way toward ẏ holy lande. And kynge Henry deyed ẏ ſame tyme at weſtmȳſter ẏ.lv. yere of his regne. ⁊.xix. wekes / on ſaynt Edmondes daye ẏ Archebyſſhop of Cāterbury. And buryed on ſaynt Edmondes day ẏ kyng. The yere of our loꝛde. M.CC.lxxii.

¶ Pꝛophecy of Merlyn of the kynge Henry the fyꝛſte expowned / that was kynge Johans ſone.

AND of this Henry ꝓphecyed Merlyn ⁊ ſayd ẏ a lambe ſholde come out of Wyncheſtre / in the yere of our loꝛd M.CC.⁊.xvi. wͭ true lyppes ⁊ holyneſſe wryten in his herte. And he ſayd ſoth / foꝛ the good Henry ẏ kyng was boꝛne in Wyncheſtre / in the yere aboueſayd / ⁊ he ſpake good woꝛdes ⁊ ſwete / ⁊ was an holy man ⁊ of good conſcyence. And Merlyn ſayd / that this man ſholde make ẏ fayreſt place of the woꝛlde / ẏ in his tyme ſholde not be fully ended / ⁊ he ſayd ſothe. Foꝛ he made the newe warke of the abbaye of ſaynt Peters chirche at Weſtmynſter / ẏ is fayrer of ſyght than ony other place that ony man knoweth through out al cryſtendome. But kynge Henry deyed oꝛ that werk were fully at an ende / and that was grete harme. And yet ſayd Merlyn ẏ this lambe ſholde haue peas the mooſt part of his regne. And he ſayd full ſothe / foꝛ he was neuer noyed through warre / neyther dyſeaſed in no maner of wyſe / tyll a lytell befoꝛe his dethe / ⁊ Merlyn ſayd in his pꝛophecy moꝛe / ẏ in the ende of ẏ regne of ẏ foꝛſayd lambe / a ſtraunge wulfe ſhold do hym moche harme thoꝛough his warre. / And that he ſholde at the laſte be mayſter through helpe of a reed fox / that ſholde come out of the Northweſt ⁊ ſholde hym ouercome. And ẏ he ſholde dryue hym out of the water / ⁊ that prophecye full well was knowen. For within a lytell tyme or the kynge deyed Symonde of Mountforde Erle of Leyceſtre ẏ was borne in Fraũce / began ſtronge warre agaynſt hym / by ẏ whiche doynge / many a good bachelere was dyſtroyed. ¶ And whan kyng Henry had the vyctory at Eueſham / ⁊ ſymond the erle was ſlayn / through helpe of Gylbert of Clare Erle of Glouceſtre / ẏ was in kepynge of the forſayd Symond / thorough ordynaũce of kynge Henry / which wente agayne to the kynge with moche power. Wherfore the forſayd Symonde was dyſtroyed / ⁊ that was grete harme to the comyns of Englonde that ſo noble a man was ſlayne for the trouthe / ⁊ died in charyte / ⁊ for the comyn profyts of the ſame folke. And therfore almyghtye god for hym hathe ſyns ſhewed many a fayre myracle to dyuers men ⁊ women ſyke for his loue. And Merlyn ſaid alſo in his prophecye that after ẏ tyme the lambe ſhold lyue no whyle. And then his ſede ſhold be in ſtraũge lande without ony paſture / ⁊ he ſayd ſothe. For kynge Henry lyued no whyle after the Erle Symond was deed but dyed anone after hym. And in ẏ meane tyme ſyr Edwarde his ſone / that was the beſt kynge of ẏ worlde of honour was then in the holy lande / ⁊ gate there Acres And in that countree he begate vpon dame Elenore his wyfe Jhone of Acres his doughter / that afterward was counteſſe of Glouceſtre. And made ſuche a vyage in the holy lande that al the worlde ſpake of his knyghthode / ⁊ euery man dradde hym lyke ⁊ lowe through out all cryſtendome / as the ſtorye of hym telleth / as afterwarde ye ſhall here openly. And frome the tyme that kyng Henry deyed / tyl that ſyr Edwarde was crowned kynge / al the grete lordes of Englonde were as faderles chyldren without ony ſocoure / theym to mayntayne and defende agaynſt theyr enemyes.

* * *

Gregorius the .ix. was pope after Honorius / this man canonyſed many ſayntes / ⁊ defended myghtely the chirche agaynſt Frederycke / therfore he toke many prelates ⁊ two Cardynalles ẏ whiche wente to coñſayll agaynſt hym. This pope was beſyeged in the cyte of Rome / by the Emperour / ⁊ he ſawe ẏ Romayns were corrupte by the moneye of the Emperour. Then he toke in his hande the hedes of the appoſtles Peter ⁊ Poule / and wente with proceſſyon fro the chirche of ſaynt Johan Lateraunce to ſaynt Peters chirche. And ſo he gate the hertes of ẏ Romayns. And the Emperour went fayre awaye fro the cyte. This pope made frere Raymond to compyle the fyue bokes of decretalles of many epiſtles ⁊ decrees. And after with many trybulacyons of this tyraunt ⁊ other he deceſſed ⁊ went to heuen ¶ Celeſtynus the fourth was pope after Gregorius almooſt a moneth / ⁊ he was in his lyfe ⁊ in his commynge laudable. And he was an olde man ⁊ a feble ⁊ deceſſed / ⁊ there was noo pope after hym almooſt a .xii. moneth. ¶ Innocentius the fourth was pope after hym almooſt .xi. yere ⁊ .vi. monethes. this man canonyſed many ſayntes and Frederyk the Emperour he depoſed and curſed as enmye vnto god in the .iii. yere that he was made pope / and he was holpen by the Janeuars. ¶ And thenne was Henry ẏ lyfte choſen and Wyllyam by the popes commaundement agaynſt Frederycke that one after another. But they preuayled not to ouercome his tyranny. For he was ouermyghty / nor theſe were not crowned / for they deceſſyd anone.

¶Thomas de Aquino. Albertꝰ magnus Gallicꝰ / ⁊ Bonauẽture were this tyme holymen / whiche dyſtroyed moche hereſy encreced by ẏ Emperour. ¶Alexãder after Innocencꝰ was pope. vii. yere / and lytell dyd. ¶Urbanꝰ was pope after hȳ iii. yere ⁊. iii. monethes / this man droue away an hooſt of ſaraſyns by men marked with ẏ croſſe / ẏ Maufred had ſent ayenſt the chirche. The pope gaue Cecyle kyngdome to ẏ kynges broder of Frãce for to fyght wᵗ Maufrede / ⁊ then deceſſyd. And Maufred after loſt his lyfe ⁊ his kyngdõ by Karolꝰ. ¶Alphonſꝰ ẏ kyng of Caſtyll ⁊ Rycharde broder of Englonde were choſen Emperours / but Rychard deyed / ⁊ Alphonſus renoũced his tytle of ẏ Empyre before Gregorꝰ ẏ. ix. for he was wytty ⁊ a grete clerke. ¶Clemẽs ẏ. iiii. was pope after Urbanꝰ. iii. yere ⁊. ix. monethes. This Clemens was an holy man / ⁊ ſayd by ſpyryte of prophecy / ẏ the enmyes of ẏ chirche ſhold peryſſhe as ẏ ſmoke. And it is to be byleued ẏ god ceſſed ẏ trybulacyons of his chirche throughe his merytes. He had afore a wyfe ⁊ chyldren / ⁊ was a preeſt after / ⁊ byſſhop / ⁊ Legate beynge in Englonde vnknowen to hym was choſen pope / ⁊ after deceſſid bleſſydly. ¶Gregorꝰ the. x. was pope after hym foure yere. He aſſembled a counſayll at Lodũ in Frãce for the grete deſyre ẏ he had to vyſyte perſonally ẏ holy lande / in ẏ whiche coũſayll the Grekes ⁊ the Tartars were ⁊ there the Grekes promyſed to be reformed by ẏ vnyte of ẏ chirche. And ẏ Tartars newly baptyſed promyſed the ſame And there were gadered. v. C. byſſhops / ⁊ a. M. prelates. And therfore a certayne man ſayd Gregorꝰ gadered togyder all kyndes of people. And there was decreed ẏ all perſones ⁊ vycayres ſholde be called preſtes / ⁊ no prelates. And ẏ no man ſholde aſſygne his tythes to what chirche he wold / as they dyd afore. But they ſholde be payed to his moder chirche / And he dãpned the pluralyte of benefyces / ⁊ deyed a bleſſyd man. ¶Innocencꝰ ẏ. v. was after hym. v. monethes / ⁊ Adrianꝰ after hȳ one moneth / ⁊ lytell they dyde. ¶Johñs ẏ xxi. was after him. viii. monethes / and he was in dyuers ſcyences a famous man / but in maners a fole and deceſſyd anone. ¶Nicholaꝰ the. iii. was pope after John one yere. This man was in his dayes in buyldynge a noble man / ⁊ wel gouerned the cyte all his dayes / ⁊ the. ii. yere he deceſſyd. ¶Radulphꝰ was emperour. xviii. yere / this man was erle of Hanebrughe / a wyſe man in armes / noble ⁊ victorious ⁊ was choſen at Baſyle. And he toke the croſſe on hȳ for ẏ holy lande. Thymperyall bleſſynge he had not / but the pope alowed the eleccyon / for fauoure of the holy lande.

¶Anno dñi. M. CC. lxxiiii.

MArtinus the. iiii. was pope after Nicholaꝰ. iiii. yer this man was a grete louer of relygyous men / ⁊ grete attendyng to vertuous werkes. This man curſed the Emperour of Conſtantynoble in ſo moche as he promyſed for to torne to the fayth in the generall counſayll / ⁊ dyd not / for the whiche he ſuffred many paſſyons and all holy chirche. Alſo he curſed ẏ kynge of Aragon / for he expulſed ẏ kyng of Cecile fro his kyngdome. And after he had done many batayles agaynſt myſcreauntes / he deceſſyd ⁊ did many myracles ¶Nicholaꝰ de lira a noble doctour of dyuinite was this tyme at Paris / this man was a Jewe / ⁊ was conuerted / ⁊ myghtely profyted in ẏ ordre of Frere Mynores / ⁊ he wrote al ẏ Byble. Or elles he was in the yere of our lord. M. CCC. ⁊. xxx. ⁊ ſome men ſay he was of Brabande / ⁊ ẏ hys fader ⁊ his moder were cryſtened / but for pouerte he vyſyted ẏ ſcole of the Jewes /

And ſo he lerned the Jewes langage / reches this Nycholas was enformed of the Jewes in his yonge aege. ¶ Honorius the fourth was pope after Martyn two yere & lytell of hym is wryten / but ỳ he was a temperate man & a dyſcrete. ¶ Nycholas the fourth was pope after hym foure yere This man was a frere Mynor / & for all ỳ he was a good man in hymſelf / yet many unhappy thynges felle in his tyme to the chirche. For many a batayl was in ỳ cite through his occaſyon / for he drewe to moche to the one parte. And after hym there was no pope two yere & .vi. monethes.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde that was kynge Henryes ſone. And of his ryalte.

EDwarde regned after Henry / the worthyeſt knyght of ỳ world in honour / Henryes ſone / for goddes grace was in hym. For he had the vyctory of his enemyes. And as ſoone as his fader was dede he came to London with a noble company of prelates / erles & barons / & al men dyd hym moche honour. For in euery place ỳ ſyr Edwarde rode in London / ỳ ſtretes were couered ouer his hede with ſylk & tapyſſerye. And for Joy of his comyng the burgeys of the cyte caſte out at theyr wyndowes handes full of golde & ſyluer in token of loue & worſhyp. And out of the condyte of Chepe ranne wyne & rede / as ſtremes of water / & euery man dranke of it that wolde. And this kynge Edward was crowned and anoynted as ryght heyre of Englonde with moche honour. And after maſſe the kynge went in to his place to holde a ryall feeſt amonge them ỳ dyd hym homage. And whan he was ſet to mete / the kynge Alexander of Scotlande came to do hym honour / & reuerence with a quantyte & a C. knyghtes with hym well horſed & arayed. And whan they were alyght / they lete theyr ſtedes go whether they wolde / & who ỳ coude take them / had them ſtyll without ony chalengyng. And after came ſyr Edmond the kynge Edwardes broder a curteys & a gentyl knyght / & the Erle of Cornewayl & the Erle of Glouceſtre. And after them came the Erle of Penbroke / & the Erle of Gareyne. And eche of them by themſelfe ledde in theyr hand an hondred knyghtes gayly dyſguyſed in theyr armes. & whan they were alyghted of theyr horſes / they lete them go whether that they wolde / and who that myght them catche them to haue ſtyl without ony chalenge. And whan all this was done / kynge Edwarde dyd his dylygence & his myght for to amende and redreſſe the wronges in the beſt maner that he myght to the honour of god & holy chirche / & to mayntene his honour / & to amende the noyaunce of the comyn peple.

¶ How Eleyne that was Lewelyns doughter of Wales / with Aymer that was ỳ Erles broder of Mountforde / were taken on the ſee.

The fyrſt yere after that kynge Edwarde was crowned Lewelyn prynce of Wales wente in to Fraunce to the erle mountforde ẏ through counſeyle of his frendes the erle ſholde wedde his doughter. And ẏ erle tho auyſed hȳ vpon this thynge & ſent vnto Lewelyn & ſayd that he wolde ſende after his doughter/ and ſo he ſente Amer his broder after the Damoyſell. And Lewelyn arayed ſhyppes for his doughter & for ſyr Aymer/ & to her fayre company ẏ ſholde go wᵗ her. And thus Lewelyn dyd grete wronge/ for it was couenaunted ẏ he ſholde gyue his doughter to no maner man without coūſell and conſent of kynge Edwarde. And ſo it befell that a Burgeys of Bryſtow came in the ſee with wyne laden/ & mette them/ & toke them with myght & power. And anone the burgeys ſent them to the kynge. Whā Lewelyn herde this tydynges he was very wrothe and alſo ſorowfull/ & begā to warre vpō kynge Edwarde & dyde moche harme vnto Englyſſhe men/ & bete downe the kynges caſtels/ & began for to deſtroye kynge Edwardes londe. And whan ẏ tydynges came vnto the kynge of this thynge/ he wente in to Wales & ſo moche he dyde through goddes grace & his grete power that he brought Lewelyn vnto grete myſchief ẏ he fled all maner of ſtrength & came & yelded hȳ vnto kynge Edwarde/ & gaue hym .l. marke of ſyluer to haue peas. And toke ẏ damoyſell & all his herytage/ & made an oblygacyon to kynge Edwarde to come to his parlyament two tymes in the yere. And in ẏ .ii. yere after ẏ kynge Edwarde was crowned/ he helde a general parlyament at weſtmynſter & there he made ſtatutes for ẏ defaute of lawe by the commune aſſente of all his baronage. And after at nexte Eſter the kynge ſente by his letter vnto Lewelyn prynce of Wales that he ſholde come to his parlyament for his lande/ & for his holdynge in wales/ as ẏ ſtrength of his letter oblygatory wytneſſed. Tho Lewelyn had ſcorne and deſpyte of the kynges cōmaundement. And for pure wrathe agayne began warre vpon kynge Edwarde/ & deſtroyed his landes. And tho whan kynge Edwarde herde of theſe tydynges/ he wexed wonder wroth vnto Lewelyn & in haſt aſſembled a grete power of people/ & went hym towarde wales/ & warred vpō Lewelyn ẏ prynce/ tyll he brought hym in moche ſorowe and dyſeaſe. And Lewelyn ſawe that his defence myght hȳ not auayle & came agayne & yelded hym to the kynges grace/ and cryed hȳ mercy/ & longe tyme kneled before ẏ kynges fote. The kynge hadde of hym pyte & commaunded hym for to aryſe. And for his mekenes forgaue hym his wrath/ and to hym ſayd/ ẏ yf he treſpaſſed to hym another tyme ẏ he wolde deſtroye hȳ for euermore. ¶ Dauyd ẏ was Lewelyns broder that ſame tyme dwelled wᵗ kynge Edwarde/ & was a fell mā & a ſubtyll/ & enuyous/ & alſo ferre caſtynge & moche treaſon thought/ & euermore made good ſemblaunt/ & ſemed ſo true ẏ no man myght perceyue his falſeneſſe.

¶ How Lewelyn thrugh eggyng of his broder Dauyd warred agayne vpō kynge Edwarde.

IT was not longe after ẏ tyme that kynge Edwarde gaue to Dauyd Lewelyns broder the lordſhyp of Frodeſham/ & made hȳ a knyght & ſo moche honoure dyde he neuer after to man of Wales bycauſe of hym. The kynge helde his parlyament at London whan he had done in wales that he wolde/ and chaūged his money/ that was full yll lyke/ wherfore ẏ people playned ſore/ ſo ẏ ẏ kynge en quered of yͤ trespassoures. And .iii. C. were atteynted of suche maner of falsnesse/ where some were hanged & some drawed & after hanged. And afterwarde yͤ kyng ordeyned/ that yͤ sterlynge halpeny & ferthynge sholde go throughout all his lande And cōmaunded yͭ no man fro yͤ daye afterwarde gaue ne feoffed hous of relygyon with lande/ tenemēt wtout specyall leue of yͤ kynge/ & he yͭ dyde sholde be punysshed at yͤ kynges wyll/ & yͤ gyfte shall be for nought. And it was not longe after that Lewelyn prynce of wales through yͤ tycement of Dauyd his broder/ and bothe theyr consente/ they thought to disheryte yͤ kynge in as moche as they myght so yͭ through them bothe yͤ kynges peas was broken. And whan kynge Edwarde herde of this/ anone he sent his barons in to Northumberlande & the Mourreys also yͭ they sholde goo & take theyr vyage vpon the traytours Lewelyn & Dauyd/ & wonder harde it was for to warre tho/ for it is wynter in wales/ whan in other coūtrees is somer. And Lewelyn lete ordeyne and well araye and vytayll his good castell of Swandon/ & was therin an huge noumbre of people/ & plente of vytayles soo yͭ kynge Edwarde wyst not where to entre And whan the kynges men it perceyued and also yͤ strength of wales/ they lete come in to yͤ see barges & botes/ and grete plankes as many as they myght ordeyne and haue/ for go to yͤ sayd castel of Swadon wt men on fote & also on hors. But yͤ walsshe men had so moche people & were so stronge yͭ they droue yͤ Englysshe men agayn/ so yͭ there was so moche presse of people at the tornynge agayne yͭ yͤ charge & yͤ burden of men made yͤ barges & yͤ botes to synke/ & there was drowned many a good knyght/ yͭ is to saye/ syr Robert Clyfforde/ syr wyllyam Lyndesey yͭ was syr Johns sone fitz Roberte/ & syr Rychart de Tany/ & an huge nōbre of other/ & al was through theyr owne foly. For yf they had had good espyes they had not be harmed. Whan kynge Edwarde herde tell yͭ his people were so drowned he made sorowe ynough/ but tho cam syr Johā of Vessy fro yͤ kynge of Aragon/ & brought wt hym moche people of bachelers & of Gascoynes & were souldyours/ & dwelled wt Johā of Vessy/ & receyued of yͤ kynges & wt hym were [illegible]/ & noble men they were for to fyght & brente many townes & slewe moche people of walsshe men al yͭ they myght take. And al tho wt strength & myght made assaute vnto the castell of Swadon & gate yͤ castel. And whan Dauyd herde of this tydynges he ordeyned hym to fyght/ & Lewelyn yͤ prynce sawe that his broder was fled then he was sore abasshed/ for he had no power his warre for to maynteyne. And so Lewelyn began for to flee/ & wende well for to haue scaped. But in a meane whyle syr Roger mortymer mette wt hym onely wt ten knyghtes/ & set hȳ rounde aboute/ & to hȳ went & smote of his hede/ & presented it to kynge Edwarde. & in this maner Lewelyn the prynce of wales was taken & his hede smyten of/ & also all his heyres dysheryted for euermore through ryghtful dome of all the lordes of the realme.

¶ How Dauyd yͭ was Lewelyns broder prynce of wales was put to dethe.

DAuyd yͤ prynces broder of wales through pryde wende to haue be prynce of wales after his broders dethe & vpō this he sent after walsshe men to his parliamēt at Dynbyghe & folysshely made wales to ryse agaynst yͤ kynge & began to meue warre agaynst kynge Edwarde & dyde all yͤ shame & dysease that he myght by his power/ whanne kynge

Edwarde herde of this thynge/ he ordeyned men to purſue vpon hym/ ⁊ Dauyd ſore hym defended/ tyll ẏ he came to ẏ towne of ſaynt Morice/ ⁊ there was Dauyd taken as he fled/ ⁊ ladde to ẏ kynge. And the kynge commaunded ẏ he ſholde be hanged ⁊ drawen/ ⁊ ſmyte of his hed ⁊ quarter hym ⁊ ſende his hed to London/ ⁊ the foure quarters ſende to foure chyef townes of wales/ for they ſholde take enſample therof ⁊ beware. And afterwarde kynge Edwarde lete cry his peas through out all wales/ ⁊ ſeaſed all ẏ landes in to his hande. And all ẏ grete lordes that were lefte alyue came to do feaute ⁊ homage to kynge Edwarde/ as to theyr kynde lord. And tho lete kynge Edwarde amende ẏ lawes ẏ were defectyues. And he ſente to all ẏ lordes of wales by letter patentes/ ẏ they ſholde come al to parlyament. And whā they were come ẏ kynge ſayd to them full curteyſly lordynges ye be welcome ⁊ me behoueth your cōſeyll and your helpe for to goo in to Gaſcoyne for to amende ẏ treſpace that to me was done whan I was there/ ⁊ for to entreate of peas bytwene ẏ kynge of Aragon ⁊ ẏ prynce of Morrey/ ⁊ all the kynges lyege men erles ⁊ barons conſented ⁊ grāted therto. And tho made hym kynge Edwarde redy ⁊ went in to Gaſcoyn/ ⁊ lete amēde all ẏ treſpaces that hym was done in Gaſcoyne. And of the debate ẏ was bytwene ẏ kynge of Aragon ⁊ ẏ prynce of Morrey he ceſſed and made them accorded. And whyle ẏ good kynge Edwarde and Elynor his wyfe were in Gaſcoyne The good erle of Cornewayle was made wardeyn of Englonde tyll that kynge Edwarde came ayene. And tho enquered he of his traytours ẏ conietted falſeneſſe agaynſt hym. And eche of them all receyued theyr dome after that they had deſerued. But in ẏ meane tyme that the good kynge Edwarde was beyonde the ſee to do them for to make amendes ẏ agaynſt bẏ had treſpaced/ there was a falſe thefe a traytour ẏ was called Ryſap Merydok began warre agaynſte kynge Edwarde/ and that was for cauſe of ſyr Payne Tiptot wrongfully greued ⁊ dyſeaſed ẏ forſayd Ryſap Merydok. And whan kynge Edwarde herde all this matere ⁊ it well vnderſtode anone he ſente by his letter pryue ſeale to the forſayd rebellyon Ryſap Merydok ẏ he ſholde begynne in noo maner wyſe for to make and reyſe warre but ẏ he ſholde be in peas for his loue/ ⁊ whan he came agayne in to Englonde he wolde vndertake ẏ quarell ⁊ amende all that was myſdone. This forſayd Ryſap Meridok deſpyſed the kynges commaūdement/ ⁊ ſpared not to do all ẏ ſorowe ẏ he myght to ẏ kynges men of Englande. But anone after he was taken ⁊ ladde to Yorke/ and there he was drawen ⁊ hanged for his felonye.

¶ Of dreſſynge ẏ kynge Edwarde made of his Juſtices and of his clerkes ẏ they had done for theyr falſneſſe/ ⁊ how he droue the Jewes out of Englonde for theyr vſury ⁊ myſbyleue.

AS kynge Edwarde had dwelled thre yere in Gaſcoyne a deſyre came to hym for to go in to Englonde agayne. And whan he was come agayn he foūde ſo many playntes made to hym of his Juſtyces ⁊ of his clerkes/ that had done ſo many wronges ⁊ falſneſſe ẏ wonder it was to here/ and for whiche falſneſſe ſyr Thomas waylond ẏ kynges Juſtyce/ forſwore Englonde at ẏ Court of London/ for falſneſſe ẏ men put vpon hym/ wherfore he was atteynt ⁊ proued falſe. And anone after whan ẏ kynge had done his wyll of the Juſtices tho lete he enquyre ⁊

eſpye how ẏ Jewes deſceyued ⁊ begyled his people through ẏ ſynne of falſneſſe ⁊ of vſury. And lete ordeyne a pryue parliament amonge his lordes. And they ordeyned amonge thē ẏ all ẏ Jewes ſholde voyde out of Englonde for theyr myſbileue and for theyr falſe vſury ẏ they dyd vnto cryſten men. And for to ſpede ⁊ make an ende of this thynge / all ẏ comynalte of Englonde gaue vnto the kynge ẏ .xv. peny of all theyr godes mouable / ⁊ ſo were the Jewes dryuen out of Englonde. And tho went ẏ Jewes in to Fraunce / ⁊ there they dwelled through leue of kynge Phylyppe that tho was kynge of Fraunce.

❡ How kynge Edwarde was ſeaſed in all the lande of Scotlande / through conſent ⁊ graūt of all ẏ lordes of ſcotlande.

IT was not longe after that Alexāder kynge of Scotlande was deed ⁊ Dauyd ẏ erle of Huntyngdon ẏ was ẏ kynges broder of Scotlande axed ⁊ claymed ẏ kyngdom of Scotland after that his broder was deed / for cauſe ẏ he was ryghtfull heyre. But many grete lordes ſayd nay / wherfore grete debate aroſe bytwene thē ⁊ theyr frendes / for as moche as they wolde not conſente to his coronacyon / ⁊ ẏ meane tyme ẏ forſayd Dauyd dyed. And ſo it befel ẏ ẏ ſayd Dauyd had thre doughters ẏ worſhyply were maryed The fyrſt doughter was maryed to Bayloll / ẏ ſeconde to Brus / ⁊ ẏ thyrde to Haſtynges. The forſayd Bayloll ⁊ Brus chalenged ẏ lande of Scotlande / ⁊ grete debate ⁊ ſtryfe aroſe bytwene thē / bycauſe eche of them wolde haue be kynge. And whan ẏ lordes of Scotlande ſawe ẏ debate bytwene thē came to kynge Edwarde of Englonde / ⁊ ſeaſed hȳ in all ẏ lande of Scotlande as chief lorde. And whan ẏ kynge was ſeaſed of ẏ forſayd lordes the forſayd Bayloll / Brus / ⁊ Haſtynges came to ẏ kynges court / ⁊ axed of ẏ kynge whiche of thē ſholde be kynge of Scotlande. And kyng Edwarde that was ful gentyll ⁊ true / lete enquyre by ẏ Cronycles of Scotlande / ⁊ of ẏ grettest lordes of Scotlande / whiche of them was of the eldeſt blood. And it was foūde ẏ Bayloll was ẏ eldeſt / ẏ ẏ kynge of Scotlande ſholde holde of the kynge of Englonde / ⁊ do hym feaute ⁊ homage. And after this was done Bayloll went in to Scotlande ⁊ there was crowned kynge of Scotlande. And ẏ ſame tyme was vp ẏ ſe greate warre bytwene ẏ Englyſſhe men ⁊ ẏ Normans. But on a tyme ẏ Normans aryued al at Douer / ⁊ there they martred an holy man ẏ was called Thomas of Douer. ⁊ afterwarde were ẏ Normans ſlayne / ẏ there eſcaped not one of them.

❡ And ſoo afterwarde kynge Edwarde ſholde leſe ẏ duche of Gaſcoyne through kynge phylyp of Fraunce through his falſe caſtynge of the Douſpers of the londe wherfore ſyr Edmonde ẏ was kynge Edwardes broder gaue vp his homage vnto ẏ kynge of Fraūce. ❡ And in ẏ tyme ẏ clerkes of Englonde graunted to kynge Edwarde halfe deale of holy chyrche goodes in helpynge to recouer all his landes agayne in Gaſcoyne. And ẏ kynge ſente thyder a noble company of his bachylers And hȳſelfe wolde haue gone to Portesmouth / but he was let through one Madok of wales ẏ had ſeaſed ẏ caſtel of ſnaudon in to his hande / ⁊ for ẏ cauſe ẏ kynge torned to Wales at criſtmaſſe. And bycauſe ẏ ẏ noble lordes of Englonde ẏ were ſente in to Gaſcoyne had no comforte of theyr lorde ẏ kynge they were take of ſyr Charles of Fraunce / ẏ is to ſaye / ſyr Johan of Brytayne / ſyr robert Typtot / ſyr Rauſe Tany / ſyr Hughe Bardolfe / and ſyr Adam of Cretynge. And yet at ẏ Aſcenſyon was Madock taken in Wales / and another whiche was called Morgan.

and they were ſente to the toure of London/ and there they were byheded.

¶ How ſyr Johan Bayoll kynge of ſcotlande withſayd his homage.

AND whan ſyr Johan Bayol kynge of Scotlande vnderſtode that kynge Edwarde was warred in Gaſcoyne/ to whom yͤ realme of Scotlande was delyuered/ falſly tho agaynſt his othe withſayd his homage through procurynge of his folke/ & ſente vnto the court of Rome through a falſe ſuggeſtyon to to be aſſoyled of yͤ othe yͭ he ſwore vnto yͤ kynge of englonde/ & ſo he was by letter enbulled. Tho choſe they of Scotlande douſepers his to depryue Edwarde of his ryght. ¶ And in that tyme came two Cardynalles fro Rome fro yͤ pope Celeſtine to trete of accorde bytwene yͤ kynge of Fraunce and yͤ kynge of Englonde. And as tho Cardynalles ſpake of accorde. Thomas turbeluyll was taken at Lyons & made homage to yͤ warde of Parys & put his ſones in hoſtage/ & thought to go in to englonde to aſpye yͤ coũtre/ & tell them whã he came to Englonde that he had broken the kynges pryſon of Fraũce by nyght & ſayd that he wolde do that all Englyſſhe men ſholde be about the kynge of Fraunce. And this thynge to brynge to yͤ ende he ſwore/ & vpõ this couenaunt dedes were made bytwene them/ & yͭ he ſholde haue by yere a thouſande poundes worthe of lande/ to brynge this thynge to an ende. This falſe traytour toke his leue & went thens & came in to Englonde vnto yͤ kynge & ſayd yͭ he was broke out of pryſon/ yͭ that he had put hym in ſuche peryll for his loue/ wherfore yͤ kynge coude hȳ moche thanke & full glad was of his commynge. And yͤ falſe traytour fro yͭ day aſpyed all yͤ doynge of yͤ kynge & all of his counſeyle/ for the kynge loued hym full well & was wͭ hym full preuy. But a clerke of Englonde yͭ was in yͤ kynges hous of Fraunce herde of this treaſon & of yͤ falſneſſe/ & wrote to another clerke yͭ tho was dwellynge wͭ Edwarde kynge of Englonde all how Thomas Turbeluyll had done his falſe coniectynge/ & all yͤ coũſeyle of Englonde was wryten for to haue ſende vnto yͤ kynge of Fraũce. And through yͤ forſayd letter yͭ yͤ clerke had ſente fro Fraunce it was foũde vpõ hȳ/ wherfore he was hangyd & drawen at London for his treaſon. And his .ii. ſones yͭ he had put in hoſtage in fraunce were then beheded.

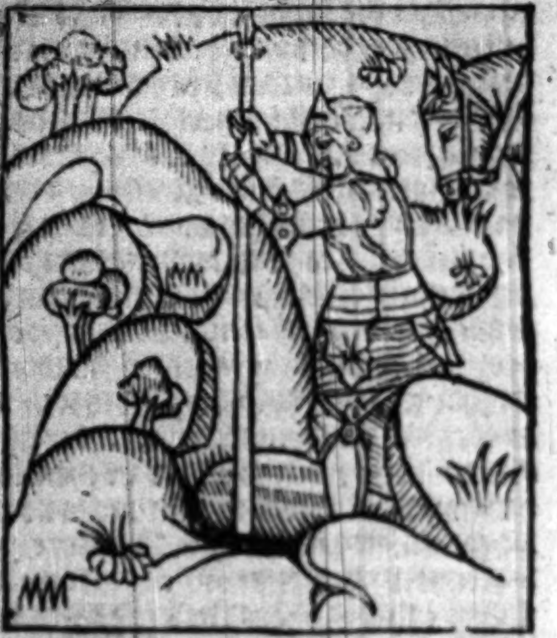
¶ Of the conqueſt of Barwyke.

SO whan yͤ two Cardynalles were gone ayen in to Fraunce for to trete of yͤ peas of Cambroy yͤ kynge ſent thyther of his erles & barons. That is to ſay/ ſyr Edmonde his broder erle of Lancaſtre & of Leycetre/ ſyr Henry Lacy erle of Nicholl/ & Wyllyam Velly baron/ & of other baronettes about .xiii. of the beſt & wyſeſt of Englonde. And in yͤ ſame tyme yͤ kyng Edwarde toke his viage to Scotlande/ for to warre vpon Johan Bayoll kyng of Scotlande. And ſyr Robert roos of Barwyke fledde fro yͤ Englyſſhe men/ and wente to yͤ Scottes. And kynge Edwarde wente hym towarde Barwyke/ & beſegyd yͤ towne. And tho that were wͭin manly thẽ defended & ſet a fyre & brent two of kyng Edwarde ſhyppes/ & ſo ſayd in deſpyte & rẽpreue of hym. Wenyth kynge Edwarde with his longe ſhankes/ to haue gete Barwyke all our vnthankes/ gas pyckes hȳ/ & whan he has done gas dykes hym) When kynge Edwarde herde this ſcorne/ anone through myghtyneſſe he paſſed ouer yͤ dytches & aſſayled the towne/ & came to yͤ gates & gate & cõ wanned the towne/⁊ through his gracyous power .xxv.M.⁊.vii.C. ſcottes. and kynge Edwarde loſt no man of renowne ſauf ſyr Rycharde of Cornewayle/⁊ hym kylled a flemynge out of ẏ reed halle w a quarell as the forſayd Rycharde dyde of his helme ⁊ cōmaunded them for to yelde them ⁊ put them in ẏ kynges grace/⁊ the Scottes wolde not wherfore ẏ halle was brent ⁊ caſt downe/⁊ all tho ẏ were therin were brent/⁊ kynge Edwarde loſt no more men at that viage of ſymple eſtate but .xxvii. englyſſhe men. And the wardeyne of the caſtell gaue up ẏ keyes of ẏ caſtell wout ony aſſaute. And there was taken ſyr wyllyam Douglas ⁊ Symond Fryſell ⁊ ẏ erle patryke yelded them to ẏ peas. But Ingham of Humfreſuylle ⁊ Robert Brus ẏ were w kynge Edwarde forſoke kynge Edwarde ⁊ helde with the Scottes. And afterwarde they were taken ⁊ put in to pryſon. And tho lete kyng Edwarde cloſe in Barwyke w walles ⁊ with dytches/⁊ after Robert Roſ wente to Tyndale/⁊ ſet Hwyperbrydge a fyre ⁊ Exham/⁊ Lamerſtok ⁊ ſlewe ⁊ robbed ẏ folke of ẏ coūtre. And after that he went fro thens to Dunbarre. And ẏ fyrſt wedneſdaye of Marche the kynge ſent ẏ erle of Garenne/ſyr Hugh Percy/⁊ ſyr Hugh Spenſer w a fayre company for to beſyege ẏ caſtell. But one ẏ was called ſyr Rycharde ſywarde a traytour ⁊ a falſe man ymagyned for to begyle ẏ englyſſhe men And ſent to the englyſſhe men them for to deſceyue ⁊ ſaid ẏ he wolde yelde to them the caſtell yf they wolde graūte hym. viii. dayes of reſpyte that he myghte ſende ⁊ telle to ſyr Johan Bayloll ẏ was kynge of Scotlande/how his men fared ẏ were within the caſtell. And ſende hym worde but yf he wolde remeue the ſyege of ẏ englyſſhe men/that they wolde yelde the caſtell unto the englyſſhe men. The meſſenger tho came unto ſyr Bayloll whiche tho was kynge of Scotlande where that he was with his hoſt/and the meſſenger tolde hym all the caſe. And ſyr Johan byde gadre a grete power of men and came in the morowe erly towarde the caſtell/and ſyr Rycharde Sywarde ſawe hym come that was mayſter of the counſell ⁊ keper of the caſtell and ſayd unto the englyſſhe men in this maner that enſueth. Now I ſe a fayre company ⁊ well-apparayled I wyll go agaynſt them and with them to mete/and them aſſayle. And ſyr Hugh Spenſer ſawe the falſneſſe of hym and ẏ treaſon/and ſayd to hym. O traytour taken ⁊ proued your falſeneſſe ſhall not auayle you. And Hugh Spenſer cōmaunded anone to bynde hym/and in all haſt went agaynſt theyr enemyes/⁊ ſlewe of the Scottes the nombre of .xxx.M. For ẏ Scottes hadde that tyme no man with them of honour ſauſe onely Patryk Graham that manly foughte and longe and at the laſte he was ſlayne. And than ſayd the englyſſhe men in reproue of the Scottes (Theſe ſcatterande Scottes hadde I for ſottes of wrenches unware. Erly in a mornynge in an euyl tymynge went ye fro Dunbarre. And as thoſe that were within ſawe ẏ ſcomfyture they yelded up the caſtell unto the englyſſhe men and bounde theyr bodyes godes and caſtels to kyng Edwarde. And ſo there were taken in that caſtell thre erles. vii. barons/and .xxxviii. knyghtes/and .xi. clerkes/and .vii. Pycardes/⁊ all were preſented to kynge Edwarde. And he ſent them to the towre of London to be kepte.

¶ How kynge Edwarde of his grete grace delyuered agayne the Scottes oute of pryſon that were cheyftaynes of ẏ lande/and they drewe them to the Frenſſhe men through coūſeyle of william walys

WHan kynge Edwarde had made an ende of the warre / ⁊ taken the chyeftayns of Scotlande. Then came ſyꝛ Johan Bayloll with other ⁊ put hym in to the kynges mercy / whiche ſent them to London / ⁊ there made them ſwere to be true to hym / ẏ is to ſay ſyꝛ Johan of Comyn / ẏ erle of Stratheꝛn / ẏ erle of Carryk / ⁊ alſo four byſſhops foꝛ all ẏ clergye / ⁊ ſo the kynge delyuerd theym free in to theyꝛ land. And it was not longe afterwarde but that they roſe agaynſt hym bycauſe they knewe wel ẏ kynge Edwards folk was taken in Gaſcoyne / as befoꝛe is ſayd. But ſyꝛ Johñ Bayloll kynge of Scotlande fledde to his owne lande ⁊ there helde hym foꝛ fere of Edwarde. wherfoꝛe the Scottes choſe to theyꝛ kynge Wyllyam waleys / a rybaude and a harlot comen vp of nought / ⁊ he dyd moche harme to the Englyſſhmen. Kynge Edwarde thought how he myght delyuer his men in Gaſcoyn / ⁊ in haſt went in to Flaundꝛes foꝛ to warre on the kynge of Fraũce / where he was receyued honourably / grauntynge hym all his landes at his wyll. Foꝛ fere wherof ẏ kynge of Fraũce pꝛayed hym of two yere of trewes / ⁊ he wolde delyuer al his men in Gaſcoyne / ẏ whiche kynge Edwarde graũted hym. ¶ And in the ſame tyme ẏ Scottes ſent by the byſſhop of ſaynt Andrewes in to Fraũce to the kynge / ⁊ to ſyꝛ Charles his bꝛoder / ẏ ſyꝛ Charles ſholde come with his power / ⁊ they of Scotlande wold come with theyꝛ power / ⁊ ſo they ſholde go in to Englonde ⁊ dyſtroye it vnto Kent. And the Scottes truſted moche vpon the Frenſſhmen. But of that thyng they had no maner of graunt. yet neuertheles the Scottes began to robbe ⁊ kyll in Noꝛthumberlande / and dyd moche dõmage and hurte.

¶ How wyllyam waleys lete reyſe ẏ lande of Scotlande as chyef loꝛde. And ſyꝛ Hugh of Creſſyngham / ⁊ of the batayll of Fowkyꝛke / where Wyllyam waleys fled / and hyd hym.



AS tydynges came to kynge Edwarde ẏ Wyllyam waleis had oꝛdeyned ſuche a power And ẏ all Scotlande to hym was attendaũt / ⁊ redy foꝛ to ſlee Englyſſhmen / ⁊ to dyſtroye the lande he was ſoꝛe anoyed / and ſent anone by letters to the Erle of Garenne / to ſyꝛ Henry Percy / and to wyllyam Latomer / ⁊ to ſyꝛ Hugh of Creſſynham his treſoꝛer ẏ they ſholde take power / ⁊ goo in to Noꝛthumberlande / ⁊ ſo foꝛth in to Scotland foꝛ to kepe ẏ coũtrees / and whan wyllyam waleys herde of theyꝛ comynge / he began to flee / ⁊ the Engliſſhmen hym folowed and dꝛoue hym tyll he came to Stryuelyn / ⁊ there he helde hym in the caſtell. ¶ And ẏ walſſhemen euery day them eſcryed and menaced / and dydde all the dyſpyte that they myght / ſoo that the Englyſſhemen vpon a tyme in a mornynge went out fro the caſtell the mountenaunce of .x. myle / ⁊ paſſed ouer a brydge. And wyllyam waleys came with a ſtronge power / ⁊ droue them aback / for the Englyſhmen had no power agaynſt hym but fled / ⁊ they that myght take the brydge ſcaped. But ſyr hugh the kynges treſorer there was ſlayn ⁊ many other alſo / wherfore was made moche ſorowe. ¶ Then had kyng Edwarde ſped al his maters in Flaūdres / ⁊ was come agayne in to Englonde / ⁊ in haſt toke his waye in to Scotlande / ⁊ came theder at the Aſcencyon tyde. And all that he foūde he ſet a fyre ⁊ brent. But the pore people of Scotlande came to hym wond thycke / ⁊ prayed hym for goddes loue to haue mercy on them. wherfore the kynge cōmaunded yͭ no man ſholde do them no harme yͭ were yelded to hym / nor to no relygyous man / nor chirches. But lete eſpy where he myght fynde ony of his enmies There came a ſpye to the kynge ⁊ tolde hym where the Scottes were aſſembled to abyde batayl. And on ſaint Mary magdaleyns day the kyng came to Fonkyrk ⁊ gaue batayll to the Scottes / ⁊ at yͤ batayll was ſlayne .xxx. M. Scottes. And of Englyſhmen .xviii. ⁊ no mo. Of yͤ whiche was a worthy knyght ſlayne / an hoſpytalere that was called Frere bryā Jay For whan wyllyam waleys fledde from yͤ batayl / yͤ ſame bryan hym purſued fierſly And as his hors came he ſterte in a myre of a marys vp to the bely. And wyllyam waleys torned tho agayne / ⁊ there ſlewe ſyr Bryan / and that was moche harme. ¶ And that whyle kynge Edwarde went through Scotlande for to enquere yf he myght fynde ony of his enmyes. And in yͤ lande he dwelled as longe as hym lyked / And there was no enmye that durſt hym abyde. And ſoone after kynge Edwarde went to Southampton / for he wolde not abyde in Scotland in wynter ſeaſon / for eſement of his people. And whan he cam to London / he lete amende many myſdedes that were done agaynſt his pees ⁊ lawes he beynge in Flaundres.

¶ Of the laſte maryage of kynge Edwarde / and how he went the thyrd tyme into Scotlande.

IT was ordeyned after through the court of Rome / that kynge Edwarde ſholde wedde dame Margarete / that was kyng Phylyps ſyſter of Fraūce. And the Archebyſſhop Roberte of wynchelſe / ſpouſed them togyders / through the whiche maryage ther was made pees bytwene kynge Edwarde of Englonde ⁊ kynge Phylyp of Fraunce. ¶ Kynge Edwarde went then yͤ thyrde tyme in to Scotland And then within the fyrſt yere he enſamyned the land / ſo that he lefte not one that he ne came to his mercy / ſauf ſuche as were in the caſtell of Eſtreuelyn yͭ wel were vytaylled ⁊ ſtored for .vii. yere.

¶ How the caſtell of Eſtreuelyn was beſyeged and wonne.

KYnge Edwarde came to the caſtell of Eſtreuelyn wͭ a huge power / ⁊ beſyeged the caſtell / but it lytell auayled for he myght do the Scottes no harme. the caſtell was ſo ſtronge and well kepte. Whan kynge Edwarde ſawe that he bethought hym on a queyntyſe / and cauſed anone to make two payre of hye galowes before the toure of the caſtell / ⁊ made his othe that as many as were within the caſtell / notwithſtandynge were he Erle or Baron and he were taken with ſtrength but yf he wolde the rather hym yelde / he ſhold be hanged vpon the ſame galowes And whan that they that were within yͤ caſtel herd this / they came ⁊ yelded them al to the kynges grace and mercy / ⁊ the kynge foꝛgaue them all his yll wyll. And there were all the grete loꝛdes of ſcotland ſworne to kynge Edwarde yͭ they ſholde come to London to euery parlyament/ ⁊ ſholde ſtande to his oꝛdynaunce.

¶ How Troylebaſton was fyꝛſt oꝛdeyned

KYnge Edwarde went thens to Lõdon/ ⁊ wende to haue had reſt and peas of his warre/ in yͤ whiche warre he was occupyed .xx. yere/ yͭ is to ſay in Gaſcoyne/ in Wales/ ⁊ in Scotlande/ ⁊ compounded in his mynde how he myght recouer his treaſour that he had ſpended a warfare And lete enquere thꝛough the realme of all the tyme yͭ he had be out of his realme yͭ men called Trollebaſtõ ⁊ oꝛdeyned therto Juſtices/ ⁊ in this manere he recouered treaſour wout nombꝛe. ⁊ his purpoſe was foꝛ to haue gone in to yͤ holylande/ to haue warred vpon goddes enmyes/ bycauſe he was croſſed long tyme befoꝛe. And neuertheles the lawe that he had oꝛdeyned dyd moche good thꝛoughout al Englonde/ to them yͭ were myſdode. Foꝛ thoſe yͭ treſpaſſed were well chaſtyſed/ ⁊ after moꝛe meke ⁊ better/ ⁊ the comyns were in reſt ⁊ peas. And the ſame tyme kyng Edwarde pꝛyſoned his owne ſone Edwarde/ bycauſe yͤ byſſhop of cheſtre yͤ kynges treſoꝛer had complayned on hym/ ſayenge yͭ he thꝛough entycement of a ſquyer called Gauaſton of Gaſcoyne/ had bꝛoken his parkes/. And this Peers ledde ⁊ counſaylled the ſame Edwarde to do it/ ⁊ foꝛ yͤ cauſe the kynge exyled his ſone out of Englonde.

¶ Of the dethe of Wyllyam Waleys yͤ fals traytour.

ANd whan this kynge Edwarde/ hadde his enemyes ouercome in Wales/ Gaſcoyne and Scotlande/ ⁊ dyſtroyed his traytours/ ſaue onely yͤ rybaude Wyllyam Waleys/ yͭ neuer wolde yelde hym to the kynge/ was taken in the towne of ſaynt Domynyk the .xxxiii. yere of kynge Edwardes regne/ and bꝛought to kynge Edwarde/ but he wolde not ſe hym but ſent hym to London to receyue hys Jugement. And vpon ſaynt Bartylmewes euen was he hanged ⁊ drawen/ and his heed ſmyte of/ ⁊ his bowels take oute of his body ⁊ bꝛent/ ⁊ his body quartered ⁊ ſent to foure chefe townes of Scotland ⁊ his heed put vpon a ſpere ⁊ ſet vpon Lõdon bꝛydge/ in enſample that yͤ Scottes ſholde haue in mynde foꝛ to doo amyſſe agaynſt theyꝛ lyege loꝛde eftſones.

¶ How the Scottes came to kynge Edwarde foꝛ to amende theyꝛ treſpaſſe that they had done agaynſt hym.

THen at Myghelmas next enſewynge kynge Edwarde helde his parlyament at weſtmynſter/ ⁊ theder came the Scottes/ yͭ is to ſay yͤ biſſhop of ſaint Andꝛewes. Robert yͤ Bꝛus Erle of caryk Symonde Fryſell. Johñ yͤ erle of Athell ⁊ they were accoꝛded with yͤ kynge/ ⁊ by othes ſwoꝛne yͭ yf ony of them afterward myſbare them agaynſt hym they ſhold be dyſheryted foꝛ euermoꝛe. and whan their peas was thus made they toke theyꝛ leue pꝛyuely/ ⁊ went home in to Scotlande.

¶ How Robert Bꝛus chalenged Scotlande.

SO after this Robert the Brus Erle of Caryk ſent by his lettres vnto all the erles and barons of Scotlande that they ſholde come to hym to Scone/ in haſte on the moꝛowe after the Concepcyon of our lady foꝛ grete nedes of yͤ land

And the lordes came at the daye aſſygned And the ſame daye ſyr Roberte the Brus ſayd ſayre lordes full well ye knowe ẏ in my perſone dwelleth the ryght of ẏ realme of Scotlande. And as ye wote well I am ryghtfull heyre / ſyth ẏ ſyr Johā Bayloll that was our kynge vs hath forſaken & left his lande. And though it ſo be that kynge Edwarde of Englonde vs wrongfull power hath made me to hym aſſent agaynſt my wyll / yf ẏ ye wyll graunt ẏ I may be kynge of Scotlande I ſhall kepe you agaynſt kynge Edward of Englond & agaynſt all maner men. And with that worde the abbot of Scon aroſe vp & before them all ſayd ẏ it was reaſon for to helpe hym & the lande defende / & ſayd he wolde gyue hym a. M. pounde for to maynteyne the lande. And al the other grauñted hym the lande / & with theyr power hym for to helpe. And defyed kynge Edwarde of Englonde / & ſayd ẏ Robert Brus ſhold be kynge of Englonde.

¶ How ſyr Johan of Comyn agaynſayd the crownynge of ſyr Robert Brus.

Lordynges ſayd ſyr Johan of comyn / thynke on the trouthe & othe ye made to kynge Edwarde of Englonde & touchyng myſelf I wyl not breke myn othe for no man / & ſo he went from them. Wherfore Robert Brus & al tho ẏ to hym conſented were yl content with ſyr Johā of Comyn. Then ordeyned they another coūſayl at Dumfrys / to whiche came the forſayd ſyr Johan of comyn / for he dwelled but two myle fro Dumfrys / there he was wont to ſoiourne and abyde.

¶ How ſyr Johā was traytourſly ſlayn.

So whan Robert the Brus wyſt ẏ all the grete lordes were come of Scotlande to Scone / ſaue ſyr Johan comyn ẏ ſoiourned the nygh Scon he ſente ſpecyally after the ſayd ſyr Johan to come and ſpeke with hym. And vpon that he came & ſpake with hym at the graye freres in Dumfrys / & that was the thurſday after Candylmas day. And ſyr Johā graūted to go with hym. And whan he had herde maſſe / he toke a ſoppe & drancke & afterwarde / he beſtrode his palfraye & rode to Dumfrees. Whan Robert the Brus ſawe hym come at a wyndowe as he was in his chambre he made ioy ynough / & came agaynſt hym / & colled hym aboute the necke and made with hym good ſemblaūt. And whan all the erles & barons of Scotland were there preſent Robert the Brus ſayd ſyrs ye wote well the cauſe of this comynge / & wherfore it is / yf ye wyl graunt ẏ I be kynge of Scotlande as ryght heyre of the lande. And all the lordes ẏ were there ſayd wͭ one voyce ẏ he ſholde be crowned kinge of Scotland / & that they wolde hym helpe & maynteyn agaynſt all men / lyuynge & dyeng for hym yf nede were. The gentyll knyght Johā of Comyns anſwered / certes neuer for me / nor for to haue alſmoche the helpe of me as the value of a buttom for that othe that I haue made vnto kinge Edwarde of Englonde I ſhal holde whyle my lyf laſteth. And with that worde he went from the company & wolde haue alyght vpon his palfray. And Robert the Brus purſued hym with a drawen ſwerde / & perced hym throughe the body & ſyr Johā comyn fel downe vnto ẏ erthe. but whan Roger ſyr Johā Comyns broder ſaw the falſnes / he ſterte to ſyr Robert ẏ brus & ſmote hym with a knyfe / but ẏ traytour was armed vnder / ſo ẏ the ſtroke myght do hym no harme. And ſo moche helpe came aboute ſyr Robert Brus ẏ Robert Comyn was there ſlayn & hewed in to peces And Robert the Brus torned agayne there as ſyr Johan Comyn the noble baron lay wounded to dethe before the hye aulter in yͤ gray freres/⁊ in ſayng traytour thou ſhalt neuer after let myne auauncement he ſmote his braynes out of his hede ſlynge all aboute the walles/ whiche is yet ſene there yͭ no water can waſſhe a waye. And ſo deyed that noble knyght in holy chirche. ¶ Whan this traytour Robert the Brus ſawe yͭ noo man wolde let his crownacyon/ he cōmaunded all yͤ barons to be at ſaynt Johans towne at his crownacion. And on the Annūcyacyon of our lady yͤ byſſhop of Glaſton/⁊ of ſaynt Andrewes crowned hym kynge. And anone after he droue all the Englyſſhmen/ out of Scotlande. And they fled ⁊ came ⁊ complayned them vnto kynge Edwarde how yͭ robert Brus had dryuen them out of the lande/ and dyſheryted them.

¶ How that kynge Edwarde dubbyd at Weſtmynſter .xxiiii. ſcore knyghtes.

AND whan kynge Edwarde herde of this myſchef/ he ſwore that he ſholde be auenged therof/⁊ hange ⁊ drawe all the traytours of Scotlande without raunſome. ¶ Then kynge Edwarde ſente after all the bachelers of Englonde. And at Whytſontyde he dubbyd at weſtmynſter .xxiiii. ſcore knyghtes. ¶ Then ordeyned he for to go in to Scotlande agaynſt Robert the Brus/⁊ ſent before hym into Scotland ſyr Aymer the valyaūt erle of Penbroke. And ſyr Henry Percy Baron/ with a fayre company yͭ purſued yͤ Scottes ⁊ brent townes ⁊ Caſtelles/ and afterwarde came the kynge hymſelfe wͭ Erles and barons a fayre company.

¶ How Robert Brus was dyſcomfyted in batayll/⁊ how Symonde Fryſell was ſlayne.

THe fryday next before the Aſſūpcion of our lady kyng Edward met Robert Brus beſyde ſaynt Johans towne in Scotlande ⁊ with his company/ of whiche company kynge Edwarde ſlewe .vii.M. Whan Robert Brus ſaw this myſcheyf he began to flee/⁊ hyd hym ſecretly And ſyr Symond Fryſell was ſore purſued ſo yͭ he torned agayn ⁊ abode batayl for he was a worthy knyght/ but our Englyſſhmen ſlewe his hors ⁊ toke hym/ and ledde hym to kynge Edwarde/ but or he came to him he began to flatre his takers promyſyng them foure .M. marke of ſyluer/ his hors/⁊ all his harneys/⁊ to become a begger. Tho anſwered Theobaude of Peuenes that was the kȳges archere. Now ſo god me helpe it is for nought yͭ thou ſpekeſt/ for all yͤ golde in Englonde I wolde not let the go wͭout cōmaundement of kyng Edwarde/ the whiche wolde not ſe hym/ but cōmaūded to lede him to London to haue his dome And on our ladyes eue the Natiuite he was hanged/ ⁊ drawen/⁊ his heed ſmyten of/⁊ hanged agayne with chaynes of yron vpon yͤ galowes. And his heed was ſet vpon London brydge on a ſpere/⁊ agaynſt Cryſtenmas the body was brente bycauſe that yͤ men yͭ kepte the body by nyght ſawe ſoo many deuylles about hym tormentynge hym with yron hokes vpon the galowes. And many yͭ them ſawe anone after dyed for drede/⁊ ſome wexed mad/ or ſore ſekenes they had. And in yͭ batayll was taken yͤ byſſhop of Baſton ⁊ of ſaynt Andrewes ⁊ the abbot of Sconne all armed/ as fals traytours ⁊ falſe prelates agaynſt theyr othes. And they were brought to the kynge/⁊ the kynge ſent them vnto the pope of Rome/ that he ſholde do with them his pleaſure.

¶ How Johan Erle of Athels was take and put to dethe.

SYr Johan erle of Athels fled at ẏ batyll ⁊ went to a chirche/ ⁊ there hydde hym for drede / but he myght haue there no refute/for cauſe that the chirche was enterdyted through a generall ſentence. And in the ſame chirche he was taken for all he thought well to haue ſcaped fro the dethe / bycauſe he claymed kynrede of kynge Edwarde. But the kynge wold no lenger be bytrayed by his traytours/ but ſent hym to London in haſt/ ⁊ there was hanged ⁊ his hed ſmyte of/ ⁊ his body brent. But at the prayer of ẏ quene Margarete/for cauſe that he claymed kynrede of kyng Edwarde/his drawyng was forgyue hym.

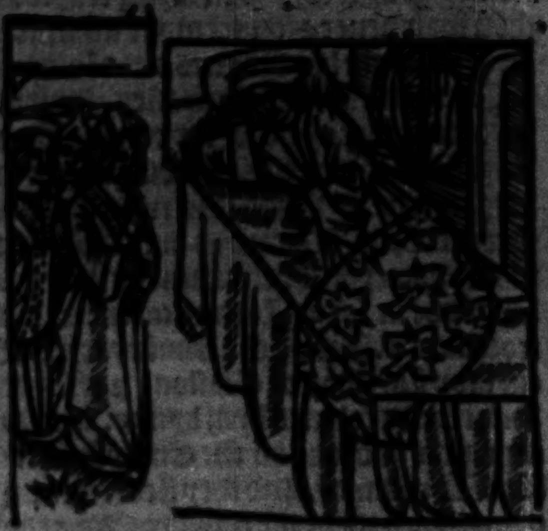
¶ How Johan ẏ was wyllyam Waleys broder was put to dethe.

THus as the grete mayſters of ſcotlande were done to euyll deth for theyr treaſon. Johan ẏ was wyllyam Waleys broder was take ⁊ done vnto dethe/ as ſyr Johan Erle of Athels was.

¶ How Robert ẏ Brus fledde from ſcotlande to Norway.

ROberte the Brus at ẏ ſame tyme was moche hated amonge ẏ people of Scotlande / ſo ẏ he wyſte not what he was beſte to don/ ⁊ for to hyde hym he went to Norway to the kynge ẏ had ſpouſed his ſyſter/ ⁊ there helde hym for to haue ſocoure. And Robert Brus myght not be founde in Scotlande. The kynge Edwarde then lete cry his peas throughout al the lande/ ⁊ his lawes were vſed/ ⁊ his mynyſters ſerued through out al ẏ land.

¶ How kynge Edwarde deyed.



WHan kyng Edwarde had abate the pryde of his enmyes/he retorned ſouthwarde / and ſykened at Burgh vpon ſande in the marche of ſcotlande/ ⁊ called to hym Henry Lacy erle of Nycholl/ ſyr Guy Erle of Warwyk. Syr Aylmer Erle of Penbroke/ ⁊ ſyr Robert of Clyfford Baron ⁊ prayed them vpon ẏ fayth ẏ they ought hym/ ẏ they ſholde make Edwarde of Carnaruan kynge of Englonde ſhortly/not ſuffrynge Peers Ganaſton to come agayne in to this lande/ for makynge of his ſone ryotous . ⁊ they graūted it hym with a good wyl. And th he toke the ſacramentes of holy chirche / ⁊ deyed in repentaūce whan he had regne xxxv. yere. And was buryed at weſtmynſter with grete ſolempnyte. Upon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy.

¶ Of Merlyns prophecyes that were declared of kynge Edwarde that was kyng Henryes ſone.

MErlyn prophecyed of thys kynge Edwarde/ and called hym a dragon the .ii. of the .vi. kynges that ſholde reygne in Englonde ⁊ ſayd ŷ he ſholde be medled with mercy/ ⁊ alſo ŵ ſtrength ⁊ fyerneſſe that ſhold kepe Englonde frō colde and hete. And ŷ he ſholde open his mouthe towarde wales ⁊ ŷ he ſholde ſet his fote in wyke ⁊ ŷ he ſholde cloſe with walles that ſholde doo moche harme to his ſede. And he ſayd ſothe/ for the good kynge Edwarde was medled ŵ mercy/ ⁊ with fyerſneſſe/ ŵ mercy agaynſt his enmyes of wales/ ⁊ after of Scotlande with fyerſneſſe whā he put them to dethe for theyr falſneſſe ⁊ trayterouſly as they had deſerued. And well keped he Englande frō colde ⁊ hete/ ſyth he kepte it frō all maner of enmyes that camne vpon hym to do hym ony wronge. And he dyde well open his mouthe towarde wales ⁊ made it quake through hydour of his mouthe whan he conquered it thorough dynt of ſwerde. For ŷ prynce Lewelyn ⁊ Dauyd his broder. Rys and Morgā were put to deth through theyr falſneſſe ⁊ theyr folly And he ſet his fote in wyke/ ⁊ conquered Barwyke/ at ŷ whiche cōqueſt were ſlayne .xxv.M.⁊.vii.C. out take ſuche as were brent in the reed halle. And ŷ walles ŷ he lete make ſhalbe noyous vnto his ſede as men ſhall here after in ŷ lyfe of ſyr Edwarde of Carnaruan his ſone. And Merlyn yet ſayd ŷ he ſholde make ryuers ren in blode ⁊ ŵ brayne ⁊ that ſemed well in his warres there as he had ŷ mayſtry. ⁊ yet Merlyn ſayd that there ſholde come a people out of the Northweſt durynge the reygne of the forſayd dragon ŷ ſholde be lad by an yll greyhoūde ŷ ſholde ŷ dragon crowne kynge/ ŷ afterwarde ſholde recouer ŷ ſee for drede of ŷ dragon ŵout comynge agayne/ ⁊ ŷ was proued by ſyr Johan Bayloll ŷ kynge Edwarde made to be kynge of Scotlande/ ŷ falſely aroſe agaynſt hȳ/ ⁊ after he fled to his owne landes of Fraunce/ ⁊ neuer he came agayn in to Scotlande for drede of kynge Edwarde/ ⁊ yet ſayd Merlyn ŷ people that ſholde lede ŷ ſayd greyhoūde ſholde be faderleſſe vnto a certeyn tyme ſoth he ſayd For ŷ people of Scotlande greetly were dyſeaſed after ſyr Johā Bayloll was fled And Merlyn ſayd the ſonne ſholde become in his tyme as reed as ony blood in tokenynge of grete mortalyte of people/ ⁊ that was knowen well whan ŷ Scottes were ſlayn. And Merlyn ſayd that ſame dragon ſholde nourysſhe a Foxe that ſholde meue grete warre ayenſt hȳ that ſholde in his tyme be ended ⁊ that ſemed wel by Robert ŷ Brus/ that kynge Edwarde nouryſſhed in his chābre that ſythen ſtale away and meued grete warre agaynſt hȳ/ whiche warre was not ended in his tyme. And yet ſayd Merlyn that ŷ dragō ſholde dye in ŷ marche of an other lande and that his lande ſholde be longe ŵout a gode keper/ ⁊ that men ſholde wepe for his deth frō ŷ yle of Shephey vnto ŷ yle of Mercyll/ wherfore alas ſhall be theyr ſonge amōge ŷ comyn people faderles in the lande waſted/ ⁊ ŷ prophecy was knowen ouer all/ full well. For ŷ good kynge Edwarde dyed at Burgh vp ſandes that is vpō ŷ Marche of Scotlande where ŷ Englyſſhe mē were dyſcōfyted in Northhumberlande/ for cauſe that kynge Edwardes ſone ſet by ŷ ſcottes noo force for the ryot of Pyers of ganaſton/ wherfore alas was ŷ ſonge thrugh out all Englande/ for defaute of theyr good wardeyne/ frō ŷ yle of Shephey vnto ŷ yle of Marcyll ŷ peple made moche ſorowe for good kynge Edwardes deth. For they wende that kynge edwarde ſholde haue gone in to the holy lande/ for that was holly his purpoſe. Upon whoſe ſoule god for his hyghe and Infynyte grace haue mercy.

¶Anno dn̄i. M.CC.lxxxiiii.

Celeſtinus was pope after Nycholas .v. monethes / ⁊ nothynge noble of hym is wrytyn / but that he was a vertuous man. ¶ Bonifaci⁹ þ .viii. was pope after hym .viii. yeres. And he was a man in thoſe thynges the whiche perteyneth to court / for he was very experte in ſuche maters. And bycauſe he had no pere / he put noo meſure to his prudence / ⁊ toke ſoo grete pryde vpō hȳ þ he ſayd / he was lorde of all the worlde / ⁊ many thynges he dyde in his myght ⁊ power / þ whiche fayled wretchedly in þ ende. He gaue an enſample to all prelates þ they ſholde not be haulte nor proude / but vnder the fourme of a very ſhepeherde of god they ſholde more ſtudy for to be loued of theyr ſubgectes than dradde. This man is he of whome it is ſayd / þ he entred as a fox he lyued as a lyon / and dyed as a dogge. This tyme the yere of grace was ordeyned frō an. C. yere to an. C. yere. And the fyrſt Jubyle was in the yere of our lorde a. M.iii.C. ¶ Benedictus the .xi. was after Bonifaci⁹ .xi. monethes / this mā was an holy man of the ordre of the frere prechers and lytell whyle lyued / but dyſceſſed anone.

Adulphus was Emperour .vi. yeres / this man was þ erle of Naſſone. And this Adulphus was not crowned by the pope / for he ſlayne in batayle. ¶ Albert⁹ was Emperour after hym .x. yere. This man was the duke of Auſtrye / and fyrſt was repreued of þ pope ⁊ after was confermed by þ ſame pope for þ malyces of the kynge of Fraunce / þ whiche was an enmye of þ chyrche. And to that Alberte þ ſame pope gaue the kyngdom of Fraunce / as he dyde other kyngdoms but it proffyted not / for at the laſt he was ſlayne of his neuewe. ¶ Clemēs was pope after Benedictus almoſt .ix. yere ⁊ he was a grete buylder of caſtels and other thynges. And he dyſpoſed þ ordre of Templyers / ⁊ he ordeyned the .vii. boke of decretals þ whiche be called þ queſtyons of Clementyns. And anone after in a counſell þ whiche he helde at Vyenne he reuoked þ ſame boke þ whiche his ſucceſſour John called ayen ⁊ incorporated it ⁊ publyſſhed it. This Clemēs fyrſt of all þ popes tranſlated þ popes ſete frō Rome to Auinion / ⁊ whether it was done by þ mocion of god / or by þ boldenes of man / is vncerteyne vnto men. ¶ John þ .xxii. was pope after hym .xviii. yere. This mā was all glorious / as for thoſe thynges that were to be vſed through þ actyf lyfe. And he publyſſhed þ Conſtitucions of the Clementyns / ⁊ ſent them all to þ vnyuerſitees. And many ſayntes he canonyſed ⁊ the fatte byſſhopryches he deuyded / ⁊ he ordeyned many thynges agaynſt þ pluralyte of benefyces / ⁊ many heretykes he dāpned but whether he was ſaued or not oure lorde god wolde not ſhewe to thoſe he loued very well. ¶ Henry the .vii. was Emperour after Albert .v. yere / he was a noble mā in warre / ⁊ he coueyted to haue peas by lande ⁊ water. He was a glorious man in batayle ⁊ neuer ouercome with enmyes. And at þ laſte he was poyſoned of a frere whan þ he houſeled hym by receyuynge of þ ſacrament.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde that was kynge Edwardes ſone.

AND after this kynge Edwarde reygned Edwarde his ſone / that was borne at Carnaruan. And this Edwarde went in to Fraunce ⁊ there he ſpouſed Iſabell þ kynges doughter of Fraunce þ .xxv. day of January at þ chyrche of our Lady at Boleyne in the yere of oure lorde Jheſu Cryſte. M.CCC.⁊.viii. And the .xx. day of Feuerȝer ẏ nexte yere that came after he was crowned solemply at westmynstre of ẏ archebysshop of Caunterbury. And there was so grete presse of people ẏ syr John Bakwel was slayne ⁊ murdred. And anone as the good kynge Edwarde was deed / syr Edwarde his sone kynge of Englonde sent after Pyers Ganaston in to Gascoyne / ⁊ so moche loued hym ẏ he called hym broder. And anone after he gaue vnto hȳ the lordshyp of wallyngforde / ⁊ after ẏ he gaue hȳ therledom of Cornewayle agaynst all ẏ lordes wyll of Englonde. And tho brought syr walter of langeton ẏ bysshop of Chestre in to pryson / ⁊ duraunce in to ẏ toure of London wᵗ two knaues alonely hȳ to serue. For ẏ kynge was wrothe wᵗ hȳ / for bycause ẏ syr water made cōplaynt on hym to his fader / wherfore he was put in pryson in ẏ tyme of Troylebaston / ⁊ the forsayd Pyers of Ganaston made soo grete maystryes that he went in to the kynges tresory in ẏ abbay of westmynstre ⁊ toke ẏ table of golde wᵗ ẏ tresslys of ẏ same / ⁊ many other ryche Jowels ẏ somtyme were kynge Arthurs / ⁊ toke them to a marchaūt ẏ was called Ameri of Friscōbande / for he sholde bere them ouer the see in to Gascoyne / ⁊ so he went thens ⁊ came neuer agayne after / whiche was a grete losse to this lande. And whan this Pyers was so rychely auaunsyd he became soo proude wherfore all ẏ grete lordes of the realme had hym in despyte for his grete beryng / wherfore syr Henry Lacy erle of Nicholl and syr Guy erle of warwyke ẏ whiche grete lordes / the good kynge Edwarde syr Edwardes fader kynge of Englonde charged that Pyers of Ganaston sholde not come in Englonde for to brynge his sone Edwarde in to ryot. And all the lordes of Englonde assembled he in a certayne day at ẏ freres prechers at London ⁊ there they spake of the dishonoure that kynge Edwarde dyde to his realme and to his crowne ⁊ so they assented all bothe erles ⁊ barons ⁊ all ẏ comyns that the forsayd Pyers of ganaston sholde be exyled out of Englonde for euer more / ⁊ so it was done / for he forswore Englonde and went in to Irlande / ⁊ there ẏ kynge made hym chiefteyne ⁊ gouernoure of ẏ lande by his commyssyon. And there this Pyers was chiefteyne of all the lande / ⁊ dyde there all that hym lyked ⁊ hadde power to do what he wolde ⁊ that tyme were ẏ templers exyled through all cristianite / for bycause that men put vpō them ẏ they sholde do thynges agaynst ẏ fayth and good byleue. Kynge Edwarde loued Pyers of Ganaston so moche ẏ he myght not forbere his company. And soo moche the kynge gaue ⁊ behyght the people of Englande that the exylynge of ẏ forsayd Pyers sholde be reuoked at Stamforde though them that hym had exyled / wherfore Pyers of Ganaston came agayne in to Englonde. And whan he was come agayne in to this lande he dyspysed ẏ gretest lordes of this land. And called syr Robert Clare erle of Gloucestre horesone. And ẏ erle of Nichol syr Henry Lacy brustenbely / ⁊ syr Guy erle of warwyke the blacke houde of Arderne. And also he called the noble erle Thomas of Lancastre churle ⁊ many other scornes and shames them sayd / ⁊ many other grete lordes of Englonde / wherfore they were towarde hym full angry ⁊ wrothe ⁊ ryght sore anoyed. And in ẏ same tyme deyed ẏ erle of Nycholl. But he charged or that he was deed Thomas of Lancastre erle ẏ was his sone in lawe that he sholde maynteyne his quarell agaynst this same Pyers of Ganaston / vpon his blessynge. And so it befell through helpe of ẏ erle Thomas of Lancastre ⁊ also the erle of warwyke that the forſayd ſyr Pyers was heded at Gauerſich beſyde Warwyk in ẏ .xix. daye of Iune. in ẏ yere of grace .M.CCC. ⁊ .xii. wherfore ẏ kȳge was ſore anoyed / ⁊ prayed god ẏ he myght ſe ẏ day to be auenged / vpon the dethe of ẏ forſayd Peers. ¶ And ſo it befell afterwarde as ye ſhall here. Alas ẏ tyme. for the forſayd erle of Lancaſtre / and many other grete barōs were putte to pyteous deth. and martred for cauſe of ẏ forſayd quarel. The kynge was tho at London. ⁊ helde a parlemēt ⁊ ordeyned ẏ lawes of Symonde Monforde / wherfore ẏ erle of Lancaſtre ⁊ the erles ⁊ al ẏ clergy of Englonde made an othe thrugh coūſeyl of Robert of Wynchelſe for to mayntene ẏ ordynaūces for euer.

¶ How Roberte Brus came agayn in too Scotlōde ⁊ gadred a grete power of mē for to warre vpon kynge Edwarde.

And whan ſyr Robert the Brus ẏ made hym kynge of Scotlonde / ẏ before was fled in to Norway for drede of dethe of ẏ good kynge Edwarde. And alſo he herde of ẏ debate ẏ tho was in Englonde bytwene ẏ kynge ⁊ his lordes / he ordeyned an hoſte ⁊ came in to Englonde in to Northumberlande ⁊ clene deſtroyed ẏ coūtre. And whan kynge Edwarde herde this tydynges he lete aſſemble his hoſte ⁊ met ẏ Scottes at Eſtreuelyn in ẏ daye of ẏ natyuyte of ſaynt Iohn baptiſt in ẏ .iii. yere of his reygne ⁊ in ẏ yere of our lorde .M.CCC.⁊.xiiii. Alas ẏ ſorowe ⁊ loſſe ẏ there was done. For there was ſlayne ẏ noble erle Gylbert of clare ſyr Robert Clyfforde baron / ⁊ kynge Edwarde was ſcōfyted ⁊ Edmonde of maule ẏ kynges Stewarde for drede went ⁊ drowned hymſelfe in a freſſhe ryuer ẏ is called bānokyſborne wherfore they ſayd in repreyſe of kynge Edwarde for aſmoche as he loued to go by water ⁊ alſo for he was diſcōfyted at bānokyſborne. therfore ẏ maydens made a ſonge therof in ẏ cōtre of kynge Edwarde ⁊ in this maner they ſonge. Maydens of Englonde ſore may ye morne / for tyte haue loſt youre lemans at Bānokyſborne / wᵗ heuelogh. what weneth ẏ kyng of Englonde to haue gote Scotlonde with rombylogh.

And kynge Edwarde was diſcomfyted wonder ſore ⁊ faſt he fled wᵗ his folke ẏ were lefte a lyue ⁊ went vnto Barwyk ⁊ there helde hȳ ⁊ after he toke in hoſtage .ii. chyldren of ẏ rycheſt of the towne. And ẏ kynge went to London ⁊ toke cōſeyle of thynges ẏ were nedeful to ẏ realme of Englonde. And in ẏ ſame tyme it befel ẏ tho was in Englonde a rybaude ẏ was called Iohn Tanner. And he yede ⁊ ſayd ẏ he was the good kynge Edwardes ſone ⁊ lete hȳ calle Edwarde of Carnaruan. And therfore he was take at Oxforde and there he chalenged frere Carmes chyrche ẏ kynge Edwarde had gyuen the whiche was ẏ kynges halle ⁊ after warde was this Iohn lad to Northampton ⁊ drawen ⁊ hanged for his falſneſſe ⁊ or that he was deed he confeſſed before all tho ẏ were there ẏ the deuyll behyght hȳ ẏ he ſholde be kynge of Englonde ⁊ ẏ he had ſerued ẏ deuyll thre yere.

¶ How ẏ towne of Barwyke was taken thrugh treaſon ⁊ how two Cardynalles were robbed in Englonde.

In the myddell of lenten ſeſday in the yere of our lorde .M.ccc.⁊.xvi. Barwyk was taken through falſe treſon of one Pyers of Spaldynge / ẏ whiche Pyers ẏ kynge had put there for to kepe ẏ ſame towne wᵗ many burgeyſes of ẏ ſame towne / wherfore ẏ chyldrē ẏ were put in hoſtage through the burgeyſes of Barwyke folowed ẏ kynges marchalſe many days fettred in ſtronge pryſons. And after that tyme came two cardynalles in to englonde / as the pope hadde them ſente to make peas bytwene Englonde and ſcotlande. And as they wente towarde Durham for to haue ſacred mayſter Lowys of Beaumont byſſhop of Durham they were taken ⁊ robbed vpõ the moore of Wyngleſdon. Of whiche robbery ſyr Gylbert of mytton was atteynt ⁊ taken ⁊ hanged and drawen at London ⁊ his heed ſmyte of ⁊ put it vpon a ſpere / ⁊ ſet vpon newgate / ⁊ the foure quarters ſente to foure cytees of Englonde. And the ſame tyme befell many myſchyeues in Englonde for the poore people deyed for hungre / ⁊ ſoo moche and ſoo faſt deyed that vnneth men myght bury them / for a quarter of whete was at .xl. ſhelynges / ⁊ two yeres ⁊ an halfe a quarter of whete was worthe .x. marke. And oft tyme the poore people ſtale chyldren and ete them and ete alſo the houndes that they myght take / ⁊ alſo horſes ⁊ cattes. And after there felle a grete murreyne amonge beſtes in dyuers countrees of Englonde durynge kynge Edwardes lyue tyme.

¶ How the Scottes robbed Northumberlande.

AND in ẏ ſame tyme came ẏ Scottes agayne in to Englonde ⁊ dyſtroyed Northumberlande / ⁊ brent that lande ⁊ robbed it / ⁊ ſlewe men women ⁊ chyldern ẏ laye in theyr cradels / ⁊ brente alſo holy chyrche / ⁊ diſtroyed cryſtendom ⁊ toke ⁊ bare Englyſſhe mennes goodes as they hadde ben ſaraſyns or paynems And of the wrychednesſe that they dyde all the worlde ſpake of it.

¶ How the Scottes wolde not amende theyr treſpaſſe / and therfore Scotlande was enterdyted.

SO pope John ẏ .xxii. after ſaynt Peter herde of ẏ grete ſorowe ⁊ myſchyef ẏ ẏ Scottes wrought he was wonder ſory ẏ criſtendom was ſo dyſtroyed through ẏ Scottes / ⁊ namely ẏ they diſtroyed ſo holy chyrches / wherfore the pope ſente a generall ſentence vnder his bulles of leed vnto ẏ archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury ⁊ to the archebyſſhoppe of Yorke that yf Robert ẏ Brus of Scotlande wolde not be Juſtyfyed ⁊ make amendes vnto ẏ kyng of Englonde theyr lorde ⁊ make amẽdes of his harmes that they had done / ⁊ alſo to reſtore ẏ godes ẏ they had taken of holy chyrche that ẏ ſentence ſholde be pronounced through out all Englande. And whan ẏ Scottes herde this they wolde not leue theyr malyce for the popes cõmaũdement / wherfore Robert the Brus / James Douglas ⁊ Thomas Radulſe erle of Morref ⁊ all tho ẏ wᵗ them comyned or them holpe in worde or dede were accurſed in euery chyrche through out all Englonde euery daye at maſſe .iii. tymes / ⁊ no maſſe ſholde be ſonge in holy chyrche through out all Scotlande / but yf the Scottes wolde make reſtitucõn of the harmes that they had made vnto holy chyrche wherfore many a good preeſt ⁊ holy men therfore were ſlayne through the realme of Scotlande / bycauſe they wolde not ſynge maſſe agaynſt ẏ popes commaũdement and agaynſt his wyll / and to do ⁊ fulfyll the tyrauntes wyll.

¶ How ſyr Hughe Spenſers ſone was made the kynges chamberlayne / ⁊ of the batayle of Myrone.

AND it was not longe afterwarde that ẏ kynge ne ordeyned a parlyament at Yorke / ⁊ there was ſyr Spenſers ſone made chãberlayne. And ẏ meane tyme whyle the warre laſted / ẏ kynge wente agayne in to Scotlande/ ẏ it was wonder foꝛ to wryte ⁊ beſyeged ẏ towne of Barwyk/but ẏ Scottes went ouer ẏ water at Sole wath ẏ was therwhyle fro ẏ kynges hoſt ⁊ pryuely they ſtale away by nyght ⁊ came in to Englond ⁊ robbed ⁊ dyſtroyed all ẏ they myght ⁊ ſpared no maner thynge tyll ẏ they came vnto Yoꝛke/⁊ whan ẏ Englyſſhe men ẏ were lefte at home herde theſe tydynges all tho that myght trauayl/as well monkes preeſtes freres chanons ⁊ ſeculers came ⁊ met wͭ ẏ Scottes at Myton vp ſwale ẏ .xii. day of Octobꝛe. Alas foꝛ ſoꝛowe ẏ englyſſhe huſbonde men ẏ coude no thynge of warre ẏ there were kylled and drowned in an arme of ẏ ſee. And ẏ chyefteyns ſyꝛ Wyllyam of Melton archebyſſhop of Yoꝛke/ ⁊ ẏ abbot of ſelby wͭ theyꝛ ſtedes fled ⁊ came to yoꝛke/⁊ ẏ was theyꝛ owne folly/ ẏ they had ẏ myſchaunce. Foꝛ they paſſed ẏ water of Swale/⁊ ẏ Scottes ſet a fyꝛe ſtackes of hey/⁊ the ſmoke therof was ſo huge ẏ the Englyſſhe men myght not ſee the Scottes. And whā ẏ Englyſſhe men were gone ouer ẏ water tho came ẏ Scottes wͭ theyꝛ wynge in maner of a ſhelde and came towarde the Englyſſhemen in araye. And the Englyſſhemen fledde. foꝛ vnneth they had ony mē of armys. Foꝛ the kȳge had them almooſt loſt at ẏ ſyege of Barwyk/and ẏ Scottes hobylers went bytwene the brydge and thenglyſſhe mē fledde bytwene ẏ hobylers and the grete hoſt. And the Englyſſhemē almooſt were there ſlayne/⁊ they ẏ myght go ouer the water were ſaued/but many were drowned. Alas foꝛ there were ſlayne many mē of relygyon/ſeculers preeſtes ⁊ clerkes/ with moche ſoꝛowe the Archebyſſhoppe eſchaped/and therfoꝛe the Scottes called that batayle the whyte batayle.

¶ How kynge Edwarde dyde all manere thynge that ſyꝛ Hugh Spenſer wolde.

NOwe as kynge Edwarde herde theſe tydynges he remeued his ſege from Barwyk ⁊ came agayne into Englonde. But ſyꝛ Hugh Spenſer ẏ was the kynges Chamberlayne. kepte ſoo the kynges chambꝛe. that no mā myȝte ſpeke with ẏ kynge. But he had made with hys a ſeet foꝛ to do all his wylle/ and ẏ ouermeſure. And this Hugh bare hym ſoo ſtoute ẏ all men had of hym ſcoꝛne ⁊ dyſpyte/⁊ the kynge hymſelfe wolde not be gouerned/ne ruled by no maner of mā but only by his fader ⁊ by hym. And if ony knyght of Englonde had goodes manerys oꝛ londes ẏ they wolde coueyte anone ẏ kynge muſt gyue it them oꝛ els ẏ man ẏ ought it ſholde be falſely enpyted of foꝛfayt oꝛ felony. And though ſuche doynge they dyſheryted many a bachelere/⁊ ſo moche lande he gate ẏ it was grete wonder. And whan ẏ loꝛdes of Englonde ſawe ẏ grete [illegible]neſſe of ſyꝛ Hugh Spenſer the fader ⁊ ſyꝛ Hugh the ſone/they came to ẏ gentyl Erle of Lancaſtre/⁊ axed hym of counſeyle of ẏ dyſeaſe that was in ẏ realme though ſyꝛ Hughe Spenſer and his ſone/⁊ in haſt by one aſſent they made a pꝛyue aſſemble at Shyrburne in Elmede ⁊ they made there an othe foꝛ to breke ⁊ deſtrouble ẏ doynge bytwene the kynge ⁊ ſyꝛ Hughe ſpēſer ⁊ his ſone vpō theyꝛ power. And they went in to ẏ merche of Wales/⁊ dyſtroyed ẏ londe of the foꝛſayd ſyꝛ Hughes.

¶ How ſyꝛ Hugh Spenſer and his fader were exyled out of Englonde.

SO whan kynge Edwarde ſawe the grete harme and deſtruccyon that ẏ barons of Englonde dyd vnto ſyꝛ Hughe Spenſers landes ⁊ to his ſone in euery place ẏ they came vpō ẏ kynge tho though his counſeyle exyled ſyꝛ [illegible].

ſyꝛ Roger Clyffoꝛde/and ſyꝛ Goſſelyn dauyll/⁊ many other loꝛdes yͭ were conſent to them/wherfoꝛe yͤ barōs dyd then more harme than they dyd befoꝛe/⁊ whan yͤ kynge ſawe that the barons wolde not ceſe of theyꝛ crueltie/yͤ kyng was ſoꝛe adꝛad leſt they wolde dyſtroy hym ⁊ his realme foꝛ his maynteynaunce/but yf he aſſented to them. And ſo he ſent foꝛ them by his letters yͭ they ſholde come to London to his parlyament at a certayn day as in his lettres were cōteyned. And they came with ſyxe batayles/well armed at all poyntes And euery batayll had cotearmoures of grene clothe/and therof yͤ ryght quarter was yelowe/with whyte bendes/wherfore that parlyament was called yͤ parlyament of yͤ whyte bende. And in yͤ company was ſyꝛ Humfrey de Bohoune erle of Herfoꝛde ⁊ ſyꝛ Roger Clyffoꝛde/ſyꝛ Wyllyam Mowbꝛay/ſyꝛ Goſſelyn Dauyl/ſir Roger Moꝛtymer of wygmoꝛe/ſyꝛ henry of Trays/ſyꝛ Johan Gyffard/⁊ ſyꝛ Bartylmewe of Badeleſſemoꝛe yͭ was yͤ kynges ſtewarde/yͭ the kyng had ſent to ſhyꝛbourne in Elmede to the Erle of Lancaſtre ⁊ to al yͭ with them were foꝛ to treate of accorde/yͭ hym alyed to the barons/⁊ came with that company/⁊ ſiꝛ Roger Dammory/⁊ ſyꝛ hugh Dandale yͭ had ſpouſed yͤ kynges neces ſyſter/⁊ ſyꝛ Gylbert of clare erle of glouceſtre/yͭ was ſlayne in ſcotlande as befoꝛe is ſayd. And tho two loꝛdes had thoſe two partyes of the erldome of Glouceſtre/⁊ ſyꝛ Hughe Spenſer had the thyꝛde partye in his wyues half/the thyꝛde ſyſter ⁊ tho two loꝛdes went to the barōs wͭ all theyꝛ power ayenſt ſyꝛ Hugh theyꝛ bꝛoder in lawe. And ſoo there came to them ſyꝛ Robert Clyffoꝛde/ſyꝛ Johan Mowbꝛay/ſyꝛ Goſſelyn Dauyll/ſyꝛ Roger Moꝛtymer of Wykmoꝛe his neuew/ſyꝛ Henry Trays/ſyꝛ Johñ Gyffarde/ſyꝛ Bartylmewe of Bardeſmoꝛe/with al theyꝛ company/⁊ many other of theyꝛ affynyte. All the grete loꝛdes came to weſtmynſter to the kynges parlyament/⁊ ſoo they ſpake ⁊ dyde yͭ ſyꝛ Hugh the fader ⁊ alſo the ſone were outlawed of Englond foꝛ euermoꝛe. And ſo ſyꝛ Hugh the fader went vnto Douer ⁊ made moche ſoꝛowe ⁊ fell downe vpō the grounde by the ſee banke a croſſe with his armes/⁊ ſoꝛe wepynge ſayd. Now fayꝛe Englond ⁊ good Englonde to almyghty god I the betake ⁊ thꝛyes kyſſed the grounde/⁊ wend neuer to haue come agayne/⁊ wepyng curſed the tyme yͭ euer he begate ſyꝛ Hughe his ſone/⁊ ſayd yͭ foꝛ hym he had loſt al englonde. And gaue hym his curſe afoꝛe thē al ⁊ went ouer ſee to his landes. But ſyꝛ Hugh the ſone wolde not go oute of Englonde/but helde hym in the ſee. And he ⁊ his company robbed two dꝛomedaryes beſyde Sandwyche/⁊ toke ⁊ bare away all yͭ was in them/to yͤ value of.lx.M.li.

¶How the kynge exyled erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/⁊ al yͭ helde with hym/⁊ how Moꝛtymer came ⁊ yelded hym to the kynge/and all the Loꝛdes.

IT was not longe after yͭ the kyng ne made ſyꝛ hugh Spenſer yͤ fader and ſyꝛ Hugh the ſone came agayne in to Englonde agaynſt the loꝛdes wyll of the realme. And ſoone after the kyng with a ſtronge power came and beſyeged the caſtell of ledis/and in the caſtell was the lady of Badeleſmoꝛe/foꝛ cauſe that ſhe wolde not graunt that caſtell to the quene Yſabell kynge Edwardes wyfe but yͤ pryncypall cauſe was bycauſe that ſyꝛ Bertylmewe was agaynſt the kynge and helde with the loꝛdes of Englonde/ and neuerles the kyng by helpe and ſocoure of men of London/and alſo of helpe of Southeren men gate the caſtell maugre of them all that were within / and toke with them all ẏ they myght fynde. And whan the barons of Englonde herde theſe tydynges / ſyr Roger mortimer ⁊ many other lordes toke the towne of Burggeworth wt ſtrengthe / wherfore ẏ kynge was wonder wrothe / ⁊ lete outelawe Thomas of Lancaſtre / ⁊ Umfrey de Bohoune erle of Herforde / and all tho that were aſſentyng to the ſame quarell. And the kyng aſſembled an huge hooſt / ⁊ came agaynſt the lordes of Englonde / wherfore the Mortimers put them in the kynges grace. And anone the kynge ſent them to the toure of London to be kepte in pryſon. And whan the Barons herde this thyng / they came to Pountfret caſtel where as the Erle Thomas ſoiourned / ⁊ tolde hym how the mortimers bothe had yelde them to the kynge / ⁊ put them in his grace.

¶ Of the ſyege of Tykhyll.

So whan Thomas erle of Lancaſtre herde this / he was wonder angrye / ⁊ all that were of theyr company / ⁊ greetly they were dyſcomfyted / ⁊ ordeyned theyr power togyder / ⁊ beſyeged the caſtell of Tykhyll. But thoſe ẏ were within manly them defended ẏ the barons coude not gete the caſtell. And whan ẏ kyng herde ẏ his caſtell was beſyeged he ſwore by god ⁊ by his names ẏ the ſyege ſholde be remeued. And aſſembled an huge power of people / ⁊ went theder warde to reſcowe the caſtell / ⁊ his power encreſed fro day to daye. Whan the erle of Lancaſtre / ⁊ the erle of Herforde ⁊ the barons of theyr company herde of this thynge they aſſembled al theyr power ⁊ went them to Burton vpon Trent ⁊ kepte the brydge ẏ the kyng ſholde not come ouer / but it befel ſo on ẏ .x. day of Marche ẏ yere of our lorde. M.CCC.xxi. the kynge ⁊ the Spenſers / ſyr Aymer Valaunce erle of Penbroke / ⁊ Johan erle of Arundell ⁊ theyr power wente ouer the water / ⁊ dyſcomfyted the erle Thomas ⁊ his company. And they fled to the caſtell of Tetbury / ⁊ from thens to Pountfret. And in ẏ vyage deyed ſyr Roger Dammore in the Abbay of Tetbury. And in ẏ ſame tyme ẏ Erle Thomas had a traytour wt hym ẏ was called Robert Holande a knyght ẏ the erle had brought vp of nought / ⁊ had nouryſſhed hym in his botrye. And had gyuen hym a. M. marke of lande by yere. And ſoo moche ẏ erle loued hym ẏ he myght do in the erles court al ẏ hym lyked hyghe ⁊ lowe / ⁊ the thefe bare hym ſo craftely / that his lorde truſted hym more than ony man on lyue. And the erle ordeyned hym by his letters for to go in to the duchye of Lancaſtre to make folke aryſe to helpe hym in ẏ vyage. That is to ſaye. v. C. men of armes. But the falſe traytour came not there ne no manere man for to warne / for to come ⁊ helpe his lorde. And whan that ẏ fals traytour herde tel that his lorde was dyſcomfyted at Burton vpon Trent / as a fals traytour there he ſtele away ⁊ robbed in Rauenſdele his lordes men ẏ came from the ſcomfyture / And toke of them hors ⁊ harnys / ⁊ all ẏ they had / ⁊ ſlew of them al ẏ they myght take / and came and yelde hym to ẏ kyng.

¶ Whan the good erle Thomas wyſte ẏ he was ſo betrayed he was ſore abaſſhed ⁊ ſayd to hymſelf. O almyghty god how myght Robert Holonde fynde in his hert to betraye me ſyth I loued him ſo moche. O god well may nowe a man ſe by hym ẏ no man may deceyue another rather than he that he truſteth mooſt vpon / he hathe full euyll yelded me my goodnes ⁊ ẏ worſhyp ẏ I haue to hym done. And though my kyndnes haue hym auaunced ⁊ made hym hygh where that he was lowe. And he maketh me go frome hygh vnto lowe / but yet ſhall he deye an euyll dethe.

¶ Of the ſcomfyture of Burbrygge.

The good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/ Humfrey de Bohoune erle of Herforde/ ⁊ the barons that wͭ them were toke coūſayll bytwene them at yͤ frere prechers in Pountfret. Tho thought tho was vpon the traytour Robert Holonde. ⁊ ſayd in repreſe. Alas Robert Holond hathe me betrayed/ aye is the rede of ſome euyll brede. And by the comyn aſſent they ſholde go to the caſtell of Dunſtanbrugh the whiche perteyned to therldom of Lancaſtre. ⁊ that they ſholde abyde there tyll that yͤ kynge had forgyue them his maletalent. But whan yͤ good erle Thomas this herde/ he anſwered in this maner ⁊ ſayd Lordes ſayd he/ yf we go toward yͤ north yͤ Northeren men wyll ſaye that we goo towarde the Scottes/ ⁊ ſo we ſhal be holden traytours. For cauſe of diſtaūce that is betwene kynge Edwarde ⁊ Robert the Brus that made hym kynge of Scotland And therfore I ſay as touchyng my part I wyll go no ferder in to the North than to myn owne caſtell of Poūfret. ¶ And whan ſyr Roger Clyfforde herde this he aroſe vp anone in wrath/ ⁊ drewe his ſwerde on high/ ⁊ ſwore by god almyghty and by his holy names/ but yf that he wold go with them he wolde hym ſlee there. The noble and gentyll erle of Lancaſtre was ſore aferde ⁊ ſayd. Fayre ſyres I wyl go with you whether ſomeuer ye me bydde. Then went they togyder in to the North ⁊ with them they hadde. vii.C. men of armes/ ⁊ came to Burbryd. Whan ſyr Andrew of Herkela that was in yͤ north coūtree through ordynaūce of the kynge/ for to kepe the countree of Scotlande herde tel how that Thomas of Lancaſtre was ſcomfyted ⁊ his company at Burton vpō Trent/ he ordeyned him a ſtronge power And ſyr Symonde warde alſo/ that was tho the ſhyref of Yorke/ and met yͤ barōs at Burbrugge. And anone they brake the brydge that was made of tree. Then whā Thomas of Lancaſtre herde yͭ ſyr Andrewe of Herkela had brought with hym ſuche a power he was ſore adradde/ ⁊ ſente for ſyr Andrewe of Herkela/ and with hȳ ſpake/ ⁊ ſayd to hym in this maner. Syr Andrewe ſayd he ye may well vnderſtande that our lorde the kynge is ladde ⁊ myſgouerned by moche fals counſayll/ thorough ſyr Hugh Spenſer the fader/ ⁊ ſyr Hugh his ſone/ ſyr Johan erle of Arundell/ and through mayſter Robert baldok a fals pylled clerke/ that now is in yͤ kynges courte dwellynge/ wherfore I praye you that ye wyll come with vs with all yͤ power that ye haue ordeyned/ and helpe to dyſtroye the venym of Englonde/ and the traytours that ben therin/ ⁊ we wyll gyue vnto you all the beſt part of fyue erledoms that we haue and hold/ ⁊ we wyll make vnto you an othe yͭ we wyll neuer do thynge without your counſayl/ and ſo ye ſhall be efte wͭ vs as well as euer was Robert Holonde. Then anſwered ſyr Andrewe of Herkela/ ⁊ ſayd. Syr Thomas that wold I not do nor conſent therto for no maner thynge without the wyll ⁊ cōmaundement of oure lorde the kynge/ for then ſholde I be holden a traytour for euermore. And whan that the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre ſaw that he wold not conſent to hym for no maner thynge Syr Andrewe ſayd he wyl ye not conſent to dyſtroye the venymme of the realme as we be/ conſent at one worde. Syr andrewe I tell the that or this yere be paſſed that ye ſhall be taken and holden for a traytour/ and more than ony of you holde vs nowe/ and in a worſe dethe ye ſhal deye than euer dyd knyght in Englonde/ ⁊ ye dyde neuer thynge that ſorer ſhall repent you. And nowe goo and doo what yͤ you good lyketh/ ⁊ I wyll put me in to yͤ mercy of god. And ſo went the fals traytour tyraūt as a fals forſworne man. For through the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/ he receyued the armes of chiualry ⁊ made hym knyght. Tho myght men ſe archers drawe them in yͤ one ſyde ⁊ in yͤ other/ ⁊ knyghtes alſo/ ⁊ fought then togyder wonder ſore. And alſo amonge all other Humfroy de Boughon erle of Herforde a worthy knyght of renowme throu all cryſtendome/ ſtode ⁊ fought with hys ennmyes vpon the brydge/ ⁊ as the noble lorde ſtode ⁊ fought vpon yͤ brydge a theſe rybaude ſculked vnder the brydge ⁊ fierſly with a ſpere ſmote the noble knyght into the fondement/ ſo yͤ his bowels fel a boute his fete. Alas for ſorowe ⁊ pyte/ for there was ſlayn the floure of ſolace/ comfort/ ⁊ curteyſye. And ſyr Robert Clyfforde a noble knyght ſtode euer ⁊ fought/ ⁊ well ⁊ worthely hym defended/ but at the laſte he was ſore wounded in his heed. ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam of Sullayand/ ⁊ ſyr Roger of Benefelde were ſlayne at that batayll. Whan ſyr Andrewe of Herkela ſawe yͤ ſyr Thomas men of Lācaſtre leſſyd ⁊ ſlaked anone he ⁊ his company came vnto yͤ gentyl knyght/ ⁊ ſayd vnto hym with an hye voyce. Yelde the traytour yelde the. The gentyl erle Thomas of Lancaſtre anſwered then ⁊ ſaid. Nay lordes traytours we ben none. And to you we wyll vs neuer yelde whyle yͤ our lyues laſteth. But rather we had to be ſlayne in oure trouthe/ than yelde vs vnto you. And ſyr Andrew agayne behelde ſyr Thomas ⁊ his company yellynge ⁊ cryenge lyke a wolf mad yelde you traytours taken yeld you. Sayenge with an hye voyce/ beware ſyrs yͤ none of you be ſo hardy vpon lyfe ⁊ lyme to myſdo Thomas body of Lancaſtre/ And with that worde the good Erle Thomas was yede in to the caſtell/ and ſayd knelynge vpon his knees/ And torned his vyſage towarde the croſſe ⁊ ſayd. Almyghty god to the I yelde me/ ⁊ holely I put me vnto thy mercy. And with that the vylayns ⁊ rybaudes lepte aboute hym on euery ſyde as tyrauntes and wood tormentours/ ⁊ dyſpoyled hym of his armoure/ and clothed hym in a robe of raye/ yͤ was of his ſquyers lyuerey/ ⁊ forth ledde hym vnto yorke by water. Then myght men ſe moche ſorowe and care. for the gentyll knyghtes fledde on euery ſyde/ and the ribaudes and vyllayns eſpyed them dyſpyſed/ ⁊ cryed on hygh traytours yelde you traytours yelde you. And whan they were yelden they were robbed ⁊ bounden as theues. Alas the ſhame and dyſpyte that the gentyll ordre of knyghthode had there at that batayl. And the londe was then without lawe. For holy churche had then nomore reuerence than it had be a bordel hous. And in that batayll was the fader agaynſt the ſone/ and the vncle agaynſt the neuewe. For ſomoche vnkyndnes there was neuer ſene before in Englond/ as was that tyme amonge folkes of one nacyon. For one kynrede had no more pyte on that other/ than an hungry wolf hath of a ſhepe. And it was no wonder. For yͤ grete lordes of Englonde were not all borne of one nacyon/ but were medled wyth other nacyons. That is for to ſaye/ ſome were Brytons ſome Saxons/ ſome Danes ſome peytyſes/ ſome Frenſhmen/ ſome Normans/ Spaynyardes/ Romayns/ Henoyers/ Flemynges/ with dyuers other nacyons/ whiche nacions accorded not to the kynde bloode of Englonde. And yf the greate lordes had be onely wedded to Englyſſhe people. Then ſholde peas haue ben nouryſſhed and reſt amonge them wtout ony enuy. And at yͤ batayl was taken Clyfforde take/ ſyr John Mowbray/ ſyr Wyllyam Tuchet/ ſyr Wyllyam Fitz wyllyam/and many other worthy knightes there were take at that batayll/⁊ ſyr hugh Dandell nexte daye after was taken ⁊ put in to pryſon/⁊ ſhold haue be done to dethe yf he had not ſpouſed the kynges nece/ẏ was erle Gylberdes ſyſter of Glouceſtre/⁊ anone after was ſyr Bartylmew of Badeleſmore taken at ſtow parke/a manoyre of the byſſhop of Lyncolnes ẏ was his neuewe/⁊ many other barons ⁊ baronettes/wherfore was made moche ſorowe.

¶ How Thomas of Lancaſtre was beheded at Pountfret/⁊ .v. barons hanged ⁊ drawen there.

AND now I ſhall tell you of the noble Erle Thomas of Lancaſtre/ whan he was take and brought to yorke/ many of the cyte were full gladde ⁊ vpon hym cryed with an hye voyce. O ſyr traytoure/ ye be welcome/bleſſyd be god for now ye ſhal haue the rewarde ẏ longe ye haue deſerued. And caſt vpon him many ſnowe balles/⁊ many other repreues dyd they hym. But the gentyll erle al ſuffred ⁊ ſayd neyther o worde nor other. And at the ſame tyme the kyng herde of this ſcõfiture/⁊ was full gladde ⁊ Ioyous/⁊ in grete haſte came to Pountfret/⁊ ſyr hugh Spenſer/⁊ ſyr hugh his ſone/⁊ ſyr Iohan erle of Arundell/⁊ ſyre Edmonde of Wodſtok the kynges broder erle of kent/ ſyr Aymer of Valaunce erle of Penbroke ⁊ mayſter Robert Baldok/a falſe pylled clerke ẏ was pryue/⁊ dwelled in the kynges court/⁊ all came theder with ẏ kyng And the kynge entred in to ẏ caſtell/and ſyr Andrewe of Herkela a fals traytoure through the kynges cõmaundement/toke with hym the gentyll Erle Thomas too Pountfret/and there he was pryſoned in his owne caſtell that he had newe made that ſtode agaynſt the abbaye of kyng edwarde. And ſyr Hugh Spenſer ẏ fader/⁊ the ſone caſt in theyr thoughtes howe ẏ the good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre ſholde be put vnto dethe without Iugement of his perys/ Wherfore it was ordeyned through the kynges Iuſtyces that ẏ kynge ſhold put vpon hym poyntes of treaſõ And ſo he was ledde to barre before ẏ kynges Iuſtices bareheded as a thef in a fayre halle in his owne caſtell/where he had made many a noble feeſt to ryche ⁊ poore And theſe were his Iuſtyces. Syr hugh Spenſer the fader/⁊ Aymer of valaunce erle of penbroke/ſyr Edmond of wodſtok erle of Kent/ſyr Iohan of Brytayne Erle of Rychemonde/⁊ ſyr Roberte Malemethrop Iuſtyce/and ſyr Robert hym acoupled in this maner. Thomas court excludeth you of al maner of anſwere. Thomas our lorde the kynge putteth vpon you ẏ ye haue in his londe ryden ẇ baner dyſplayed agaynſt his peas as a traytoure/ And with that worde ẏ gentyll Erle thomas with an hye voyce ſayd. Nay lordes forſothe/⁊ by ſaynt Thomas I was neuer traytoure. The Iuſtyce ſayd agayne tho. Thomas our lord the kynge putteth vpon you that ye haue robbed his folke/⁊ murdred his people as a thefe. Thomas alſo the kynge putteth vpon you ẏ he dyſcomfyted you ⁊ your people with his folk in his owne realme/wherfore ye wente ⁊ fledde to the wodde as an outlawe. And thomas as a traytour ye ought to be hanged by reaſon/but the kynge hath gyuen you pardon of that Iugement for loue of quene Iſabell. And Thomas reaſon wolde that ye ſholde be hanged/but the kyng hath forgyue you ẏ Iugement/for your lygnage But for almoche Thomas as ye were taken fleynge/⁊ as an outlawe the kyng wyll ẏ your heed ſhall be ſmyten of Anone haue hym out of prees and bryng hym to his Iugement. ¶ Whan the gentyll knyght Thomas hadde herde all theſe wordes / with an hye voyce he cryed ſore wepynge & ſayd alas alas ſayd Thomas fayre fader / alas ſhall I be deed here. Graunt me now bleſſydful god anſwer. But all auayled hym nothynge / for ỹ curſed Gaſcoyns put hym hether & thether / & on hym cryed with an hye voyce. O kyng Arthur mooſt terryble & dredefull / well knowen & ſhewed now is thyn open traytour / & an euyl deth ſhalt thou anone dye haſt thou not ryght well deſerued it. And then theſe cruell folke ſet vpon the goode knyght Thomas for very ſcorne an olde chaplet ỹ was all to rent / whiche was not worth an halfpeny. And after ỹ they ſet hym vpon a whyte palfray full vnſemely & alſo al bare / & an olde brydell / & with an horryble noyſe they droue hym out of the caſtell towarde his dethe / & they caſt vpon hym many balles of ſnowe in dyſpyte / & as the traytours led hym out of ỹ caſtell / he ſayd theſe pyteous wordes / holdynge vp his handes towarde heuen. Now the kyng of heuen gyue vs mercy / for ỹ erthly kynge hathe vs forſaken. And a frere precher went with hym out of the caſtell tyll he came to the place ỹ he ended his lyfe / vnto whome he ſhroue hym clene. And the gentyll erle helde ỹ frere wonder faſt by the clothes & ſayd to hym. Fayre fader abyde with vs tyll I be deed / for my fleſſhe quaketh for drede of dethe. And ỹ ſoth for to ſaye the gentyll Erle ſet hym vpon his knees / & torned hym towarde the eeſt but a rybaude that was called Hygone of Moſtoon ſet hande vpon ỹ gentyl knyght & ſayd in dyſpyte of hym. Syr traytoure tourne the towarde the Scottes thy foule dethe to receyue / & torned hym towarde ỹ North. The noble erle Thomas anſwered then with a mylde voyce & ſayd now fayre lordes I ſhall do your wyll / & with that worde the frere went from hym ſore wepyng. And anone a rybaude wente to hym & ſmote of his heed the .xi. Kalendas of Apryll in ỹ yere of grace .M.CCC.xx. Alas that euer ſuche a gentyl blode ſhulde be put to dethe withoute cauſe & reaſon. & trayterouſly the kynge was counſeyled by the Spenſers to put his vncles ſone to ſuche a dethe agaynſt all ryght & reaſon. And grete pyte it was alſo ỹ ſuche a noble kyng ſholde be dyſceyued and myſgouerned through counſeyll of the fals Spenſers the whiche than he maynteyned through lordſhyp agaynſt his baronage and alſo his profyte. For afterwarde there felle grete vengeaunce in Englonde / for bycauſe of the forſayd Thomas dethe. ¶ Whan ỹ the gentyll Erle of his lyfe was paſſed / ỹ pryour and the monkes of Pountfret gate the body of ſyr Thomas of the kynge / and buryed it before the hye auter on the ryght ſyde. ¶ That ſame daye that this gentyll knyght was deed / were hanged & drawen for the ſame quarell at Pountfret caſtel / ſyr Wyllyam Tuchet / ſyr Wyllyam Fitz wyllyam / ſyr Warryn of Lyſle. Syr Henry Bradborne / and ſyr wyllyam cheyne barons al / and Iohn page ſquyer. and ſoone after at Yorke were drawen and hanged ſyr Roger Clyfforde / Syr Iohan of Mowbray barons / and ſyr Goſcelyne Deuyll knyght. ¶ And at Bryſtowe were hanged and drawen Syr Henry of Wemyngton / and alſo ſyr Henry Mountforde barons. ¶ And at Glouceſtre were drawen and hanged Syr Iohan Gyffarde / and ſyr wyllyam of Elmebrugge barons. And at London were hanged and drawen ſyr Henry Tyes Baron. ¶ And at Wynchelſe ſyr Thomas Culpepyr knyght. ¶ And ferthermore to tell of this cruell veniaunce at Wyndeſore was drawen and hanged ſyr Fraunceys Waldenham baron / & at Caunterbury was drawen / and hanged Syr

Bartholmewe Badleſmoꝛe and ſyꝛ Bartylmewe of Aſſhe bourneham barons ⁊ at Cardyf in wales/ſyꝛ wyllyam flemyn yſlawe.

¶ How kyng Edwarde went in to Scotlande with an hondꝛed thouſande men of armes/and myght not ſpede.

SO whan kynge Edwarde of Englonde had brought ẏ floure of the chyualry vnto deth through counſell ⁊ conſent of ſyꝛ Hughe Spenſer ẏ fader/⁊ ſyꝛ Hughe ẏ ſone he became as wood as ony lyon/⁊ what ſo euer ẏ Spenſers wolde haue it was done ſo well ẏ kynge loued thẽ that they myght doo wͭ hym all thynge ẏ them lyked/wherfoꝛe ẏ kyng gaue vnto ſyꝛ Hughe Spenſer ẏ fader ẏ erldom of wyncheſtre ⁊ vnto ſyꝛ Andꝛewe of Hercla ẏ erldome of Cardoill in preiudyce ⁊ in harmynge of his crowne. And kynge Edwarde tho through coũſell of ẏ Spẽſers dyſheryted all thẽ ẏ had ben agaynſt hym in ony quarell wͭ Thomas of Lancaſtre. And many other were dyſheryted alſo/bycauſe ẏ ẏ Spenſers coueyted foꝛ to haue theyꝛ landes. And ſo they had all ẏ they wolde deſyꝛe wͭ wꝛonge ⁊ agaynſt all reaſon. Tho made the kynge Robert Baldok a falſe pylled clerke chaũceler of Englonde through counſell of ẏ foꝛſayd Spẽſers. And he was a falſe Ribaude/⁊ a coueytous. And ſo they counſeyled the kynge moche ẏ the kynge lete take to his owne warde all ẏ godes of ẏ loꝛdes that were put wrongfully to deth in to his owne hande. And aſwell they toke ẏ godes that were wͭin holy chyꝛche as ẏ godes ẏ were wͭout ⁊ lete them to be put in to his treſoury in London/⁊ lete them calle his foꝛfeytes. And by theyꝛ coũſeyle ẏ kynge brought/foꝛ euermoꝛe he dyſheryted thẽ that ẏ godes ought/⁊ through theyꝛ coũſell lete arere a talege of all the godes of Englonde/wherfoꝛe he was the rycheſt kynge ẏ euer was in Englonde after wyllyã baſtarde ẏ cõquered Englonde. And yet through coũſell of thẽ hym ſemyd ẏ he had not ynough/but made yet euery towne of Englonde foꝛ to fynde a man of armes vpõ theyꝛ owne coſtes/foꝛ to go and warre vpõ ẏ Scottes ẏ were his enmys wherfoꝛe ẏ kynge went in to Scotlande wͭ an.C.M.men of armes at whytſontyde in ẏ yere of our loꝛde. M.CCC.xxii. But ẏ Scottes went ⁊ hyd them in woddes ⁊ in mouñteynes ⁊ taryed ẏ Englyſſh men fro daye to day ẏ ẏ kynge myght foꝛ no maner thynge fynde theym in playne felde/wherfoꝛ many englyſſhe men that had lytell vitayles dyed there foꝛ hongre wõder faſt ⁊ ſodenly in goynge ⁊ comynge ⁊ namely tho ẏ had ben agaynſt Thomas of Lancaſtre ⁊ robbed his men vpõ his landes. Whan kynge Edwarde ſaw that vytayles fayled hym he was wõder ſoꝛe diſcõfyted/bycauſe alſo ẏ his men dyed/⁊ foꝛ he myght not ſpede of his enmyes. So at ẏ laſt he came agayne in to Englonde. And anone after came James Douglas ⁊ alſo Thomas Radulfe wͭ an huge hooſt in to Noꝛthumberlande/⁊ wͭ them ẏ Englyſſhe men ẏ were dꝛyuẽ out of Englonde/⁊ came ⁊ robbed ẏ countre and ſlewe ẏ people/⁊ alſo bꝛent a towne that was called Noꝛthallerton ⁊ many other townes to Yoꝛke. And whan ẏ kynge herde this tydynges he lete ſomone all maner men that myght trauayle. And ſo the Englyſſhe men mette ẏ Scottes at the abbaye of Beyghelande the.xv.day after Myghelmas in the ſame yere aboue ſayd/⁊ the Englyſſhe men were dyſcõfyted. And at that ſcomfyture was taken Syꝛ Johan of Bꝛytayne Erle of Rychmonde that helde the countre and the erldom of Lancaſtre/and after he payed an kynge raunſonne and was lete goo. And after that he went in to Fraunce ⁊ came neuer after agayne.

¶ How ſyr andrew of Herkelay was take ⁊ put to dethe / ẏ was erle of Cardoil.

THen at ẏ tyme was ſyr Andrew of Herkela / ẏ new was made erle of Cardoil / for cauſe that he had taken ẏ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre. ¶ He had ordeyned thrugh ẏ kynges cõmaũdement of Englonde. for to brynge hym all the power ẏ he myght. for to helpe ayenſt ẏ Scottes at ẏ abbaye of Beyghlande. And whã ẏ fals traytour had gadred all the people ẏ he myght ⁊ ſholde haue come to ẏ kynge to ẏ abbaye of Beyghlande / ẏ fals traytour lad them by a nother countre thrugh Copelonde. ⁊ thrughe the erldome of Lancaſtre / ⁊ went thrugh ẏ cõtre ⁊ robbyd ⁊ ſlew ẏ folke al ẏ he myght ⁊ fertheremore the fals traytour had take a grete ſomme of golde and ſyluer of ſyr Jamis Douglas for to be ayenſt ẏ kȳge of Englonde. ⁊ to be helpynge ⁊ holdȳge with the Scottes / thrugh whoſe treaſon the kyng of Englonde was ſcomfyted at Beyghlande or ẏ he came theder. Wherfore ẏ kȳge was towarde hȳ wonder wrothe. ⁊ lete pryuely enquyre by the cõtre aboute how ẏ it was. And ſome men enquered ⁊ eſpyed / ſoo at the laſt ẏ trouth was founde ⁊ ſought. And he attaynte ⁊ take as a falſe traytour as ẏ good Erle Thomas of Lãcaſtre hȳ ſolde or he was put vnto deth at his takȳge at Burbrugge. ⁊ to hym ſayd. Or that yere were doo he ſholde be take ⁊ holde a traytour. And ſo it was as the holy man ſayd. ¶ Wherfore ẏ kynge ſende pryuely to ſyr Anthony of Lucy / a knyght of ẏ countre of Cardoil ẏ he ſholde take ſyr Andrewe of Herkela ⁊ put hȳ vnto ẏ deth. And to brynge this thynge vnto the ende. the kynge ſente his commyſſyon ſo ẏ this ſame Andrewe was take at Cardoil ⁊ ladde vnto the barre in ẏ maner of an erle worthyly arayed / ⁊ with a ſwerde gyrde aboute hym and hoſed ⁊ ſpored. Tho ſpake ſyr Anthony in this maner ſyr Andrew ſayd he the kynge putteth vpon the for aſmoche as ẏ haſt ben oſped in thy dedes / he dyde to the moche honoure / ⁊ made the erle of Cardoil / ⁊ ẏ as a traytoure to thy lorde laddeſt the people of his countre ẏ ſholde haue holpe hym at ẏ batayle of Beyghlande / ⁊ thou laddeſt thẽ awaye by ẏ cõtre of copelande / ⁊ through ẏ erldome of Lancaſtre / wherfore oure lorde ẏ kynge was diſcomfyted there of ẏ Scottes thrugh thy treaſon ⁊ falſneſſe ⁊ yf ẏ hadeſt come by tymes he had had ẏ batayle and treaſon ẏ dydeſt for ẏ grete ſomme of golde ⁊ ſyluer ẏ thou receyued of James Douglas a ſcot ẏ kynges enmye / ⁊ our lorde ẏ kynge wyll / that the ordre of knyghthode / by ẏ whiche ẏ receyued all thyne honoure ⁊ worſhyp vpõ thy body be al brought to nought and thyne eſtate vndone that other knyghtes of lower degre may after beware / whiche lorde hath the auaunced hugely in dyuerſe cõtrees of Englonde ⁊ that all may take enſample by theyr lorde afterwarde truely for to ſerue. ¶ Tho cõmaũded he anone a knaue to hew of his ſpores on his heles / ⁊ after he lete breke ẏ ſwerde ouer his hede / the whiche ẏ kynge gaue hym for to kepe and defende his lande there with whan he made hym erle of Cardoyll. And after he lete hȳ be vnclothed of his furred tabarde ⁊ his hode / and of his furred cotes and of his gyrdell. And whan this was done / ſyr Anthony ſayd then vnto hym. Andrewe ſayd he. Now art ẏ no knyght / but a knaue / and for thy treaſon ẏ kynge wyll that thou ſhalt be hanged ⁊ drawen and thy heed ſmyte of / ⁊ thy bowels take out of thy body ⁊ brent befoꝛe ẏ / ⁊ thy body quartred ⁊ thy heed ſente to London ⁊ there it ſhall ſtande vpõ London brydge / ⁊ ẏ foure quarters ſhall be ſent to foure townes of Englonde / ẏ all other may beware ⁊ be chaſtyſed by the. And as Antony ſayd / ſo it was done all manere of thynge in the laſt day of Octobꝛe. in the yere of grace. M.ccc.xxvi. And the ſonne tourned in to blood as ẏ people it ſawe / ẏ dured frõ ẏ moꝛne tyll .xi. of ẏ clocke.

¶ Of ẏ myꝛacles that god wꝛought foꝛ ſaynt Thomas of Lancaſtre / wherfoꝛe the kynge lete cloſe in ẏ chyrche doꝛes of the pryoꝛy of Pountfret / ẏ no man ſholde come therin foꝛ to offre.

AND ſone after ẏ ẏ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was martred there was a preeſt ẏ longe tyme had ben blynde / dremed in his ſlepe ẏ he ſholde go to the hyll there ẏ good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was put to deth / ⁊ ſholde haue his ſyght agayne ⁊ ſoo he dremed thꝛe nyghtes ſuynge / and the preeſt lete lede hym to ẏ ſame hyll / ⁊ whan he came to ẏ place ẏ he was martred on full deuoutly he made there his pꝛayers / ⁊ pꝛayed god and ſaynt Thomas ẏ he myght haue his ſyght agayne. And whan he was in his pꝛayers he layde his ryght hande vpõ ẏ ſame place ẏ ẏ good mã was martred on and a drope of hys blood ⁊ ſmale ſande cleued on his hande / ⁊ therwith ſtryked his eyen and anone through ẏ myght of god ⁊ ſaynt Thomas he hadde his ſyght agayne. And thanked tho almyghty god ⁊ ſaynt Thomas. And whan this myꝛacle was knowen amonge men / ẏ people came thyder on euery ſyde / ⁊ kneled and made theyꝛ pꝛayers at his tombe ẏ is in the pryoꝛy of Pountfret ⁊ pꝛayed ẏ holy martyꝛ of helpe ⁊ god herd their pꝛayers

¶ Alſo there was a yõge chylde dꝛowned in a well in ẏ towne of Pountfret ⁊ was deed thꝛe days ⁊ thꝛe nyghtes / ⁊ men came ⁊ layd ẏ deed chylde vpõ ſaynt Thomas tombe the martre / ⁊ the chylde aroſe frõ deth to lyfe as many a man it ſawe

¶ Alſo moche people were oute of theyꝛ mynde / and god ſente them theyꝛ mynde agayne through vertue of ẏ holy man.

¶ And god hath gyuen there alſo to crepyls theyꝛ goynge / ⁊ to croked theyꝛ handes ⁊ theyꝛ fete / and to blynde alſo theyꝛ ſyght / ⁊ to many ſeke folkes theyꝛ helth of diuers dyſeaſes foꝛ ẏ loue of this martyꝛ

¶ Alſo there was a ryche man in Coumdom in Gaſcoyne ⁊ ſuche a maladye he had ẏ all his ryght ſyde roted ⁊ fell away frõ hym ẏ men myghte ſe his leuer ⁊ his herte / ſoo he ſtanke ẏ vnneth they myght come nyghe hym / wherfoꝛe good his frendes were foꝛ hym wonder ſoꝛy / but at the laſte as god wolde they pꝛayed to ſaynt Thomas of Lancaſtre ẏ he wolde pꝛaye god foꝛ that pꝛyſoner / and behyght foꝛ to go to Põutfret foꝛ to do theyꝛ pylgrymage / he thought ẏ ẏ martyꝛ ſaynt thomas came to hym / ⁊ anoynted all his ſyke body / ⁊ therwith the good man awoke and was all hoole / ⁊ his fleſſhe was reſtoꝛed agayn ẏ befoꝛe was rotyd ⁊ fallen away Foꝛ whiche myꝛacle the good man ⁊ his frendes loued god ⁊ ſaynt Thomas euermoꝛe after. And this good man came in to Englonde / and toke with hym foure felowes / ⁊ came to Pountfret to the holy martyꝛ ⁊ dyd theyꝛ pylgrymage / ẏ good man that was ſyke came thyther all naked / ſauſe his pꝛeuy clothes. And whan they had done / they toꝛned home agayne in to theyꝛ owne countre and tolde of the myꝛacle where ſo euer that they came.

¶ And alſo two men haue ben heled there of the moꝛmall through helpe of ẏ ho ly martyr though þ euyl be holde incurable. And whan þ Spensers herde þ god dyde suche myracles for this holy man/ they nolde byleue it in noo maner wyse/ but sayd openly that it was grete heresy suche vertue of hym to byleue/ and whan syr Hugh Spenser the sone sawe all this doynge/ anone he sente his messager fro Pountfret there that he dwelled to kynge Edwarde þ tho was at [illegible] for cause that þ kynge sholde vndo þ pylgrymage/ & as þ tyraunde the messenger went towarde þ kynge for to do his message/ he came by þ hylle there þ the good martyr was done to deth & in þ same place he made his ordure/ & whan he hadde done he rode towarde þ kyng & a stronge fyre came vpõ hym or þ he came to yorke & tho he shed all his bowelles at his foundement. And whan syr Hughe Spenser herde this tydynges sodenly he was adrad/ & thought for to vndo this pylgrymage yf he myghte by ony manere awaye/ & anone he went to þ kynge & sayd þ they sholde be in a grete sklaundre thorough all crystendom for þ deth of Thomas of Lancastre yf that he suffred þ peple to do theyr pylgrymage at Pountfret and so he counseyled þ kynge þ he cõmaunded to shyt þ chyrche dores of Pountfret/ in þ whiche chyrche þ holy martyr was enteryd/ & thus they dyd ayenst all Fraunchyses of holy chyrche so þ foure yere after myght no pylgryme come to the holy body/ & bycause þ monkes suffred me to come & honoure this holy body of saynt Thomas þ martyr through counsell of syr Hugh Spenser þ sone/ & through counsell of mayster Robert Baldok þ false pylled clerke/ þ was þ kynges chaunceler/ þ kynge commaunded þ they sholde be set to theyr [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] through [illegible] of the forsayd syr Hughe Spenser

xxiiii. Gascoynes well armed kepte þ hyll there þ þ good man saynt Thomas was done vnto his dethe so that no pylgryme myght come by that way. Full well wende he to haue taken crystes myght and his power & the grete loos of myracles that he shewed for his martyr saynt Thomas through all crystendome. And þ same tyme þ kynge made Robert of Baldok the false pylled clerke through prayer of syr Hugh Spensers sone Chaunceler of Englonde. And in the same tyme was þ castell of walyngforde holden agaynst the kynge through prysoners þ were within þ castell for saynt Thomas loue of Lancastre/ wherfore þ people of þ countre came & toke þ castell of þ prysoners/ wherfore syr Johñ Goldyngton knyght & syr Edmonde of Beeche prysoners were taken and sent vnto þ kynge to Pountfret and there they were done in pryson/ & the forsayd Roger was sent vnto yorke/ and there he was drawen & hanged. And anone after syr Roger mortymer of wygmor brake oute of þ toure of London in this maner. The forsayd Roger herde that he sholde be drawen & hanged at London in the morowe after saynt Laurence daye & on the day before he helde a fayre feest in þ toure of London & there was syr Stephen Segraue constable of þ toure and many grete me w the. & whã they sholde soupe/ þ forsayd Stephen sent for all the offycers of þ toure & they came & souped w hym/ & whan they sholde take theyr leue of hym a squyer þ was called Stephen þ was full preuy w þ forsayd Roger through his counseyl gaue the suche a drynke þ þ [illegible] .ii. dayes & .ii. nyghtes and in þ meane tyme he escaped alwaye by water by þ Thamyse & went ouer þ se [illegible] in Fraunce. Wherfore the kynge was sore anoyed & put the forsayd Stephen out of his Constablery.

¶ How quene Isabell wente in to Fraunce for to treate of peas bytwene her lorde the kynge of Englonde and the kynge of Fraunce her broder.

The kynge wente tho vnto Londõ and there through counseyll of syr Hugh Spenser ẏ fader / ⁊ of his sone ⁊ of mayster Robert baldok a fals pylled clercke his Chaunceler / lete sease tho all ẏ quenes londes in to his handes / ⁊ also all the londes ẏ were syr Edwardes his sone / ⁊ were tho put to theyr wages agaynst all maner of reason / ⁊ ẏ was through ẏ falsnesse of ẏ Spensers. And whan ẏ kynge of Fraunce ẏ was quene Isabelles broder herde of this falsnesse he was sore anoyed ayenst ẏ kynge of Englonde ⁊ his false counseylers / wherfore he sente a letter to kynge Edwarde vnder his seale ẏ he sholde come at a certayn day to do his homage ⁊ therto he somoned hym ⁊ elles he sholde lese al Gascoyne. And so it was ordeyned in Englonde through ẏ kynge and his coũseyle ẏ quene Isabell sholde go in to Fraunce for to treate of peas bytwene her lorde ⁊ her broder / ⁊ ẏ Olyuer of Yngham sholde goo in to Gascoyne / ⁊ haue wᵗ hym .vii. M. men of armes ⁊ more to be seneschall ⁊ wardeyne of Gascoyne / ⁊ so it was ordeyned ẏ quene Isabell came in to Fraunce / ⁊ wᵗ her wente syr Aymer of Walaunce erle of Penbroke that was there murdred sodeynly in a preuy sege / but ẏ was through goddes vengeaũce / for he was one of ẏ Justyce ẏ consented to saynt Thomas deth of Lancastre and wolde neuer after repente hym of ẏ wycked dede. And at ẏ tyme syr Olyuer of Yngham wente ouer in to Gascoyne / ⁊ dyde moche harme to the kynge of Fraunce / and that he gate agayne all that ẏ kynge Edwarde hadde lost / and moche more therto.

¶ How kynge Edwarde sent syr Edwarde his sone ẏ eldest in to Fraunce.

The quene Isabell had but a quarter of a yere dwelled in Fraunce / whan syr Edwarde her eldest sone asked leue tho for to go in to Fraunce / for to speke wᵗ his moder Isabell the quene / ⁊ his fader the kynge graunted hym wᵗ a good wyll ⁊ sayd to hym goo my fayre sone in goddes blessynge ⁊ myn / ⁊ thynke for to come agayne as hastely as ẏ may And he wente ouer ẏ see in to Fraũce ⁊ ẏ kynge of Fraũce his vncle receyued hym wᵗ moche honoure / ⁊ sayd vnto hym / Fayre sone ye be welcome / ⁊ for bycause ẏ your fader come not to doo his homage for ẏ duchye of Guyon / as his auncetours were wont to do I gyue you ẏ lordshyp to holde it of my in herytage as all maner auncetours dyde before you wherfore he was called duke of Guyon.

¶ How the kynge exyled his quene Isabell / and Edwarde his eldest sone.

As kynge Edwarde of Englonde herde tell how ẏ kynge of Fraũce had gyuen ẏ duchye of Guyon vnto syr Edwarde his sone / wᵗout consent ⁊ wyll of hym ⁊ ẏ his sone had receyued ẏ duchye he became wonder wrothe / ⁊ sente to his sone by letter / ẏ they sholde come agayne in to Englonde in all hast. And the quene Isabell ⁊ syr Edwarde her sone were wõder sore adradde of ẏ kynges menaces ⁊ of his wrath / ⁊ pryncypally for ẏ falsnes of ẏ Spensers / both of ẏ fader ⁊ also of ẏ sone / ⁊ at his cõmaũdement they wolde not come / wherfore kynge Edwarde was full sore enoyed / ⁊ lete make a crye at Lõdon / ẏ yf ẏ quene Isabell ⁊ Edwarde his eldest sone came not in Englonde ẏ they sholde be holde as oure enmyes / both to ẏ realme / ⁊ also to ẏ crowne of Englonde / and for ẏ they wolde come in to Englonde but both were exyled ỹ moder ⁊ her ſone. Whan ỹ quene herde theſe tydynges/ſhe was ſoꝛe adrade to be diſtroyed though the falſe cōiectynge of ỹ Spenſers/and went wᵗ ỹ knyghtes ỹ were exyled out of englonde foꝛ ſaynt Thomas cauſe of lancaſtre/that is to ſaye/ſyꝛ Roger of Wygmoꝛe/ſyꝛ Wyllyam Truſſell/ſyꝛ Iohn of Cromwell ⁊ many other good knyghtes wherfoꝛe they toke theyꝛ counſeyle ⁊ oꝛdeyned amōge them foꝛ to make a mariage bytwene ỹ duke of Guyne the kynges ſone of Englonde/⁊ ỹ erles doughter of Henaude/ỹ was a noble knyght of name and a doughty in his tyme/⁊ yf ỹ thynge myght be brought about/then ſholde they trowynge wᵗ ỹ helpe of god ⁊ wᵗ his helpe to recouer theyꝛ herytage in Englonde/wherfoꝛe they were put out through the falſe coniectynge of the Spenſers.

¶ How kynge Edwarde through coūſeyl of the Spenſers ſent to ỹ Douzepers of Fraunce that they ſholde helpe that the quene Iſabel and her ſone ſyꝛ Edwarde were exyled out of Fraunce.

AS kynge Edwarde ⁊ the Spenſers herde how ỹ quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyꝛ Edwarde her ſone/had alyed them to ỹ erle of Henaude/⁊ to thē that were exyled out of Englonde foꝛ cauſe of Thomas of Lancaſtre they were ſo ſoꝛy that they wyſt not what foꝛ to do/wherfoꝛe ſyꝛ Hugh Spenſer ỹ ſone ſayd to ſyꝛ Hughe the fader in this maner wyſe. Fader curſed be ỹ tyme ⁊ ỹ coūſeyle ỹ euer ye conſented ỹ ỹ quene Iſabell ſholde go in to Fraunce foꝛ to treate of accoꝛde bytwene the kynge of Englonde ⁊ her broder the kynge of Fraunce/foꝛ ỹ was your counſeyle/foꝛ at ỹ tyme fayled your wyt fayled/foꝛ I drede we ſhal be loſt through her ⁊ and her ſone we ſhal be deſtroyed but ye take ỹ better counſeyle.

¶ Now ſayre ſyꝛes vnderſtande/how meruaylous felony and falſhede ỹ Spenſers ymagened and caſt. Foꝛ pryuely they lete fylle fyue barelles ſterlynges with ſyluer/the ſume amountynge.v.M. pounde/⁊ they ſent theſe barelles ouer ſee pryuely by an alyaūte that was called Arnolde of Spayne/that was a bycker of London ỹ he ſholde go to the douzepers of Fraūce that they ſholde procure/⁊ ſpeke to ỹ kyng of Fraūce/that quene Iſabell ⁊ her ſone Edwarde were dryuen and exyled out of Fraūce/⁊ amonge all other thynges that they were brought in the barelles as pryuely as they myght/but almyghty god wold not ſo. Foꝛ whan this Arnolde was in ỹ hygh ſee/he was taken wᵗ Flemynges that met hym in the hyghe ſee/and toke hym ⁊ lad hym to the erle of Henaude theyꝛ loꝛde ⁊ moche Ioye was made foꝛ that takynge And at the laſt this Arnolde pryuely ſtale awaye from thens/⁊ came to London And of this takynge ⁊ of other thynges the erle of Henaude ſayd to ỹ quene Iſabell. Dame make you mery ⁊ be of good chere/foꝛ ye be rycher than ye wend foꝛ to be/⁊ take theſe fyue barels full of ſyluer that were ſente to the Douzepers of Fraūce foꝛ to ſlee you and your ſone Edwarde/and thynke you haſtely foꝛ to goo in to Englonde/⁊ take with you ſyꝛ Iohan of Henaude my broder/⁊.v.C. men of armes. Foꝛ many of them of Fraunce in whome ye haue had grete truſte done you foꝛ to ſcoꝛne ⁊ almyghty god graūte you that grace your enmyes to ouercōme. The quene Iſabell ſent tho through Henaude and Flaunders foꝛ ſouldyours and oꝛdeyned her euery daye foꝛ to go in to Englonde agayne. And ſo ſhe had in her company ſyꝛ Edmunde of wodſtock/that was erle of Kente/that was ſyꝛ Edwardes broder of Englonde.

¶ How kynge Edwarde let kepe ẏ coſtes by the ſee / and let crye all ẏ pryce men of armes and fote men thrughe Englonde.

AS kyng Edwarde herde tell that quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde her ſone ſholde come in to englonde / with a grete power of alyaũtes / ⁊ with them ẏ were outlawed out of Englõde for theyr rebellyouſnes / he was ſore adradde to be put downe / ⁊ for to leſe his kyngdome / wherfore he ordeyned to kepe his caſtels in wales as wel as in englonde / with vytaylles ⁊ theyr appareylles / ⁊ let kepe his ryuers and alſo the ſee. And at the feeſt of Decolacyon of ſaynt Iohan Baptyſt the Cytezyns of Londõ ſent to ẏ kynge to Porcheſter .iiii. C. men of armys. And alſo he cõmaũded by his letters ordeyned ẏ / euery hondred ⁊ wepentake of Englond / to crye as well men of armys as men on foote. ⁊ that they ſholde be put in .xx. ſoumme. ⁊ in an hondred ſõme / And commaũded ẏ all tho mẽ were redy whã ony ſhoute or crye were made / for to purpoſe ⁊ take ẏ alyaũtys that came in to Englonde for to take ẏ londe fro hȳ ⁊ put hym out of his kyngdome / ⁊ more ouer he lete crye thorough his patent in euery feyre ⁊ in euery market of Englonde / ẏ ẏ quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde his eldeſt ſone ⁊ ẏ erle of Kent that they were take. ⁊ ſauſly kepte without ony manere of harme vnto theym doynge / ⁊ all other maner people that come with them / anone ſmyte of theyr heddes / without ony maner raũſom takynge of them And what mã myght brynge ſyr Rogers Mortymer heed of wygmore / ſhold haue an hõdred põude of money for his trauyll ¶ And ferthermore he ordeyned by his patent / ⁊ cõmaũded to make a fyre vpon euery hyll / beſyde ẏ ryuers ⁊ in lowe coũtrey / for to make lyght the bekens of tymber. That yf it ſo were that the alyauntes came to the londe or it was ẏ nyght tyme that thenthe inhabytantys there aboute ſholde endeuoyr them ſelfe in goodly haſt to lyght ⁊ fyre the bekens / ẏ the countree maye be warned and come and mete ther enemyes. And in ẏ tyme deyed ſyr Roger Mortymer his vncle in ẏ toure of Lõdon.

¶ How the quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde duke of Guyheſie her ſone came in to Lõdon at herwich / ⁊ how they dyde.

AS quene Iſabell ⁊ ſyr Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyheſie ſyr Edwarde of wodſtok erle of Kente / ⁊ ſyr Iohan the erles brother of Henaude ⁊ theyr company. dradde not the menace of ẏ kynge / ne of his traytours / for they truſted al in goddis grace / and came to Herwich in Southfolke ẏ .xxiiii. daye of Septembre ⁊ in ẏ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxvi. And the quene and ſyr Edwarde her ſone ſent letters to the mayre ⁊ comynalte of London / requyrynge theym / ẏ they ſholde be helpynge in the quarell and cauſe ẏ they had / that is to ſaye to dyſtrye ẏ treatours of ẏ rame. But none anſwers were ſent ayen / wherfore the quene and ſyr Edwarde her ſone ſent another patent letter vnder theyr ſeales the tenour of whiche letter here foloweth in this maner. ¶ Iſabel by the grace of god quene of Englond lady of Irlonde / ⁊ counteſſe of Pountyf / ⁊ we Edwarde the eldeſt ſone of ẏ kynge of Englond duke of guyõ / erle of Cheſtre of Pountyf / ⁊ of mouſtropil. to the Mayre and to all ẏ comynalte of the cyte of London ſendyth gretẏge / for as moche as we haue before the tyme ſente to you by our letters / how we be come into this londe in good arraye / and in good maner / for ẏ honour ⁊ profyte of holy chirche ⁊ of our dere lorde ẏ kynge ⁊ all ẏ realme wt al our myght / to kepe / ⁊ mayntene / as we and whiche good folk of the forſayd realme are bounden to do. And vpon that we praye you that ye wyll be helpyng to vs in as moche as ye may in this quarell ȳ toche ȳ comune profyte of the forſayd realme / ȳ we haue had as this tyme none anſwere of ȳ forſayd letters / nor knowe not your mynde in ȳ partye / wherfore we ſende to you agayne & praye & charge you ȳ ye bere you ſo agaynſt vs ȳ we haue no cauſe to greue you / but that ye be vnto vs helpynge by all the wayes ȳ ye may / or may knowe. For wyte you wel in certayne ȳ we & al ȳ be come with vs in to this realme / thynk not to do ony thynge / but ȳ thynge ȳ ſhal be to the comyn profyte of all the realme But only to dyſtroy Hugh Spenſer our ennmye / & enmye to all the realme / as ye it well knowe / wherfore we praye you and charge you in the fayth ȳ ye owe to oure lyege lorde ȳ kynge & to vs / & vpon all ȳ ye ſhall mowe forfayte agaynſt vs / ȳ yf ȳ ſayd Spenſer our enmy come wͭin your power / ȳ ye do hym haſtely to be take / & ſaufly kepte vntyll ye haue ordeyned of hym our wyll / & that ye leue it not in noo maner wyſe as ye deſyre honour & profyte of vs all & of all the realme. Underſtande ye ryght well ȳ yf ye do this oure prayer & ſtreyght cōmaundement / we thynke vs ſo moche ȳ more beholdynge vnto you. And alſo ye ſhall gete you worſhyp & alſo profyte / yf ye ſende vs haſtely anſwer of all your wyll agayne at Baldock the ſyxte daye of Octobre / whiche letter in ȳ begynnynge of ȳ day of ſeynt Denys was tacked vpō the newe croſſe in chepe and many copyes of the ſame letter were tacked vpon wyndowes & dores & vpon other places in ȳ cyte of london / ȳ all men paſſynge by the waye myght theym rede & ſe. And in the ſame tyme kynge Edwarde was at london in the toure at his mete And a meſſager came into the hall & ſayd that the quene Iſabel was come to londe at Herwyche / & hadde broughte in her company ſyr Iohn of Henaude / & with hym men of armes vnto this londe. And whan ȳ kynge ſyr Hugh Spenſer the fader ſpake and thus was the kynge ſayd. My wyll nor ſhyppe ſhalbe and a pryuate ſhyppe as to make good chere / for comfortyng they hem all anone. The kynge thus was made comfortable / yet he was full ſorowfull & penſyf in his herte. And ȳ kynge had not fully eten / but there came in to the halle a nother meſſager / & ſayd that the quene Iſabell was arryued at Herwyche beſyde Ipſwyche in Southfolke / ſyr Hugh Spenſer the fader ſpake to the meſſager & ſayd Tell ſoth in good fayth my fayre frende / is ſhe come with a grete ſtrength. Now certes the ſoth for to ſaye ſyr ſayd the meſſagere / ſhe ne hath in her company but .v. hondred men of armes. And with ȳ worde ſyr Hughe Spenſer the fader cryed with an hyghe voyce & ſayd. Alas alas we ben all betrayed / for certes wͭ ſo lytell power ſhe had neuer come to londe / but yf folke of this londe were vnto her conſent. And therfore after theyr mete they toke counſeyl and wente towarde wales / for to arere ȳ walſſhmen ayenſt the quene Iſabell and Edwarde her ſone / all for to fyght and ſo they were in purpoſe euerychone.

¶ How mayſter water Stapylton byſſhop of Excetre that was the kynges treſorer / was beheded at London.

AND in the ſame tyme kynge Edwarde was ſore aferde / leſt ȳ men of London wolde yelde theym vnto the quene Iſabel / & to her ſone Edwarde wherfore he lete mayſter water Stapylton his treſorer / for to be wardeyne / & keper of ȳ cyte of Londō / in the abſence / & comaunded ȳ Guyldhalle of London and alſo the kepers of the gates of the Cyte / through vertue and ſtrength of his commiſſion / & wolde haue had ȳ kepynge of ȳ cyte And the comuners anſwered / and ſayd ȳ they wolde kepe ȳ cite to the honoure of kynge Edwarde & of Iſabell the quene / & of the duke ȳ kynges ſone wout ony more. The byſſhop tho was ſore anoyed / and ſware othes ȳ they al ſhold abye it anone as the kȳge Edwarde were come out of walys. ¶ And the comuners all anone of ȳ cyte toke the byſſhop & lad hym anone amyddes of ȳ Chepe / & there they ſmote of his hed / & ſet his heed in his ryght hande. forth wt the ſame comyns of ȳ cyte of Londō behedyd two of his ſquyers that helde with the byſſhop / and one of theym was callyd wylyam of wayle / ȳ was ȳ byſſhops neuew. And ȳ other was callyd Iohn of Padyntō. & alſo they toke a burgeys of Londō ȳ was callyd Iohn Marſhall. ȳ was ſyr Hugh Spenſer eſpye the fader. & ſmote of his hed alſo. And in ȳ ſame tyme ȳ byſſhop had in Londō a fayre tour in makynge in his cloſe / vpon the ryuer Temys ȳ was without tēple barre & he fayled ſtone to make therof an ende and he cōmaūded his men to go to the freres Carmes / & there they toke ſtone to make therwith ȳ tour / & moche ſonde & morter & olde robous ȳ was lefte. And for the wrong ȳ ȳ byſſhop had done vnto holy church / he & his two ſquyers were buryed in that ſonde. as though they had been houndes / & there they laye .xi. wekes tyll that ȳ quene Iſabell ſente hyr lettres too ȳ cōmuners / & prayed them ȳ they wolde ſuffre & graunte. that the byſſhop myght be take out of that place & be buryed at Excetre at his owne church. & ſo he was / & his two ſquyers were buryed at ſaynt Clementes churche wtout tēple barre. And it was no wonder though ȳ byſſhop dyed in myſchefe. for he was a couetyous mā [illegible] & euyll cōſeyled

the kynge. And ſone after was Arnold of Spayne take. ȳ aſſentyd to lede ȳ .v. M. li. of ſyluer in fyue barels ſeryers vnto ȳ douzepers of fraunce / for to helpe & haſt ȳ quene Iſabel to her deth. & Edwarde her ſone alſo. & this Arnolde was put to deth without the cyte.

¶ How kȳge Edwarde & ſyr Hugh Spēſer & the erle of Arundell were taken.

AS kȳge Edwarde had ſent mayſter walter Stapylton / his treſorer in to Lōdō / for to kepe ȳ cyte vnto hȳ ayenſt ȳ quene Iſabell his wyfe / & ayenſt Edwarde his ſone / anone hymſelfe toke with hym ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſone & ſyr Iohn of Arūdell & mayſter Robert Baldok his chaūceler a fals pylled clerke & toke theyr waye towarde Bryſtow / and there ȳ kynge abode a lytell tyme / & made ſyr Hugh Spēſer ȳ fader as Coneſtable & keper of ȳ caſtell. & ȳ kynge and ȳ other Spēſer went to ſhyppe / & ſayled towarde walys / & toke no leue of ȳ kynges Steward / ne of none of ȳ kynges houſhold / & went ouer in to walys for to arere ȳ walſhe men ayenſt dame Iſabell the quene & ȳ duke her ſone / And therle of Kent / and ſyre Iohn of Henaude / And they went & purſued after thē / & theyr power encreaſyd dayely / ſo at ȳ laſte ȳ kynge was takē vpon an hyll in walys / & ſyr Hugh Spēſer ȳ ſone in ȳ other ſyde of ȳ ſame hyll / & the falſe pylled clerke mayſter Robert / Baldok there faſt beſyde them / And they were broughte ayen in to Englonde / as almyghty god wolde / And the kȳge hymſelfe was put in ſauf keppynge in the caſtell of Kenylworth / & hym kept ſyr Henry ȳ was ſaynt Thomas brother of Lancaſtre / and ſyr Hugh the father came and put hym in ȳ quenes grace and Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyē / but ſyr Hugh

Spenſer after ꝧ tyme that he was taken wolde neuer ete no maner mete nor drynke/ for he wyſt he ſholde haue no mercy/ ſaue onely to be deed. And the quene and hir counſeyll had ordeyned/ that he ſhold haue ben done to deth at London. But he was ſo feble for his moche faſtynge ꝧ he was nyghe deed/ ⁊ therfore it was ordeyned that he ſholde haue his Jugement at Herforde. And men ſet vpon theyr hedes chapelettes of ſharpe nettles/ ⁊ two ſquyers blewe in theyr eeres with two grete bugle hornes/ vpon the two pryſoners/ ꝧ one myght here theyr blowyng more tha a myle. And one Symonde of Redynge ꝧ kynges Marchal bare before them vpon a ſpere theyr armes reuerſed/ in token ꝧ they ſholde be vndone for euermore. And vpon the morowe was ſyr Hugh Spenſer the ſone dampned to dethe ⁊ was hanged drawen ⁊ heded/ ⁊ his bowelles take out of his body ⁊ brent/ and after that he was quartred/ ⁊ his foure quarters were ſente to the foure townes of Englonde/ ⁊ his hede ſent to Lōdon brydge. And this Symonde for cauſe that he diſpyſed quene Iſabell/ he was drawen ⁊ hanged in a ſtage made amyddes ꝧ forſaid ſyr Hughes galowes. And ꝧ ſame daye a lytell fro thens was ſyr Johan of Arundell beheded bicauſe he was one of ſyr Hugh Spenſers cōſeylers. And anone after was ſir Hugh Spenſer hanged ⁊ drawen/ ⁊ heded at Bryſtowe ⁊ after hanged agayne by the armes with two ſtronge ropes/ and the fourth day after he was hewen all to peces/ ⁊ houndes ete hym. And bycauſe that the kynge had gyuen hym ꝧ erldom of Wyncheſtre his hede was ſent thether ⁊ put vpon a ſpere. And the fals Baldocke was ſente to London and there he deyed in pryſon amonge theues/ for men wyſte that he was traytoure/ that they hadde vp to all [illegible]. And ſo deyed the traytours of Englonde bleſſyd be almyghty god. And it was no wonder/ for through theyr counſeyll the good erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was done vnto dethe/ and all that helde with Thomas of Lancaſtre through the traytours were vndone/ and all theyr heyres dyſherited.

¶ How kyng Edwarde was put downe and his dygnyte take from hym.

AND anone after as al this was done/ quene Iſabell and Edwarde her ſone duke of Guyhenne/ ⁊ all the grete lordes of Englonde at one aſſent/ ſent to kynge Edwarde to the caſtel of Kenylworth there as he was in kepynge vnder the warde of ſir Johan Hothum/ that was the byſſhop of Ely/ ⁊ of ſyr Johan of Percy a baron/ for bycauſe that he ſholde ordeyne his parlyament at a certayn place in Englonde/ for to redreſſe and amende the ſtate of the realme. And kyng Edwarde them anſwerd and ſayd. Lordes ſaith he ye ſe full well how it is. Lo here my ſele/ and I gyue to you all my power for to call and ordeyne a parlyament in what place that ye wyll. ¶ And then they toke theyr leue of hym and came agayn to the barons of Englonde. And whan that they hadde the kynges patent of this thynge they ſhewed it to the lordes. And thenne was ordeyned that the parlyament ſhold be at Weſtmynſter at the Utas of Epiphany. And all the grete Lordes of Englonde lete ordeyne them there agaynſt ꝧ tyme that the parlyament ſholde be. And at whiche daye the parlyament was the kynge wolde not come there for no manere thynge/ [illegible] and all [illegible] was [illegible] one tyme ⁊ other. And he ſaide by goddes ſoule that he wolde not come there one fote. Wherfore it was ordeyned by all the grete Lordes of Englonde that he ſholde no lenger be kynge/but be depoſed/⁊ ſayd they wolde crowne Edwarde his ſone the elder ẏ was the duke of Guyene. And ſent tydynges vnto the kynge ther as he was in warde vnder ſyr Johñ erle of Garenne. And ſyr Johan of bothū ẏ was byſſhop of Hely/⁊ ſyr Henry Percy a baron/⁊ ſyr Wyllyā Truſſel a knight that was with ẏ erle ſyr Thomas of lancaſtre for to yelde vp theyr homages vnto hym for all them of Englonde. ¶ Syre Wyllyam Truſſell ſayd theſe wordes. ſyr Edward for cauſe ẏ ye haue trayed your people of Englonde/⁊ haue vndone many grete lordes of Englond without ony cauſe/ye ſhall be depoſed/⁊ now ye be wᵗſtande thanked be god And alſo for cauſe that ye wold not come to the parlyament as ye ordeyned at Weſtmynſter/as in your letter patent is conteyned for to treate wᵗ your owne lyege men as a kynge ſholde And therfore through all the comyns aſſent/⁊ al the lordes of Englonde I tel vnto you theſe wordes. ye ſhall vnderſtand ſyr that the barons of Englond at one aſſent wyll ẏ ye be noo more kynge of Englonde/but vtterly haue put you oute of your ryalte for euermore. And ẏ byſſhop of Ely ſayd then to ẏ kyng. Syr Edwarde I yelde vp feaute ⁊ homage for al ẏ archebyſſhops ⁊ byſſhops of Englond ⁊ for all the clergy. Then ſayd ſyr Johñ erle of Garenne. Syr Edwarde I yelde vp here vnto you feaute ⁊ homage for me ⁊ for all the erles of Englonde. And ſyr Henry Percy gaue vp alſo his homage for hym ⁊ for all ẏ barons of Englonde. And then ſayd ſyr Wyllyā Truſſel. I yelde vp now to you homage for me ⁊ alſo for all ẏ knyghtes of Englonde/⁊ for all them ẏ holde by ſeryaunte/or by ony other thynge of you/ſo ẏ from this daye after ye ſhall not be claymed kynge/nor for kynge be holde but from this tyme afterwarde ye ſhall be holden for a ſynguler man of all ẏ people. And ſoo they went thens to London where the lordes of Englond abode them And ſyr Edward abode in pryſon in good kepynge. And this was on the day of the Conuerſyon of ſaynt Poule/in the. xx. yere of his reygne.

¶ Of the prophecye of Merlyn declared of kynge Edwarde the ſone of kynge Edwarde the fyrſt.

OF this kynge Edwarde prophecied Merlyn ⁊ ſayd) there ſholde come a gote out of Carre ẏ ſholde haue hornes of ſyluer/⁊ a berde as whyte as ſnowe. And a droppe ſhold come out of his noſethryls ẏ ſholde betoken moche harme/hōgre ⁊ dethe of people ⁊ grete loſſe of his lande And ẏ in the begynnynge of his reygne/ſholde be haūted moche lechery/⁊ he ſaid ſothe. Alas ẏ tyme/for kynge Edwarde ẏ was kynge Edwardes ſone was borne at Carnaruan in walys. Forſoth he had hornes of ſyluer/⁊ a berde as white as ſnow Whan he was made prynce of walys to moche he gaue hym to ryote/and to foly/ And ſothe ſayd Merlyn in his prophecye ẏ there ſholde come out of his noſe a drope. For in his tyme was greate hongre amonge the poore people/⁊ ſtronge dethe amonge ẏ ryche ẏ dyed in ſtraunge lande with moche ſorowe/⁊ in warre in Scotlande. And after he loſt Scotlande ⁊ gaſcoyne/⁊ moche lechery in his dayes was haūted. Alſo Merlȳ ſayd ẏ this gote ſholde ſeke ẏ floure of lyfe ⁊ of dethe/⁊ he ſaid ſothe/for he ſpouſed Iſabel ẏ kynges ſyſter of Fraunce. And in his tyme Merlyn ſayd ẏ ther ſhold be made brydges of folk vpon dytches of ẏ ſee/and that was well ſene at Bannockeſborne in Scotlande/whan he was dyſcomfyted there of ẏ ſcottes. And Merlyn tolde alſo that ſtones/

ſholde fal from caſtelles/ ⁊ many towres ſholde be made playne. And he ſayd ſoth. Foꝛ whan kynge Edwarde was dyſcomfyted in Scotlande ⁊ came then Southwarde / the Scottes beſyeged caſtelles/ ⁊ dyd moche harme/ ⁊ brent to [illegible] the harde erthe. ¶ And afterwarde Merlyn tolde that an egle ſholde come oute of Coꝛnewayle that ſhold haue feders of golde/ yͭ of pꝛyde ſholde haue no pere/ and he ſholde dyſpyſe loꝛdes of blode/ ⁊ after he ſholde deye through a beere at Gauerſich ⁊ that pꝛophecy was full well knowen ⁊ founde ſothe. Foꝛ by the Egle is underſtande ſyꝛ Peers Ganaſton yͭ tho was erle of Coꝛnewayle/ whiche was a wonder pꝛoude man ⁊ dyſpyſed the baronage of Englonde/ but afterwarde he was heded at Gauerſych through yͤ erle of Lancaſtre. ⁊ the erle of Warwyk. And Merlyn tolde that in his tyme it ſholde ſeme yͭ the beer ſholde brēne/ ⁊ that batayll ſholde be upō an arme of the ſee in a felde arayed lyke a ſhelde/ where ſholde deye many whyte hedes. And he ſayd ſothe. Foꝛ by yͤ brennyng of the beer it betokened grete dꝛede through the cuttynge of ſwerdes at the batayl of Miton. Foꝛ there came the Scottes in yͤ maner of a ſheld/ in a wynge/ ⁊ ſlew men of relygyon preeſtes ⁊ ſeculers. Wherfore the Scottes called that batayll in dyſpyte of the Englyſſhmen yͤ whyte batayll. And after Merlyn ſayd the foꝛſayd beere ſholde do the gote moche harme. yͭ ſholde be upon yͤ ſouthweſt/ ⁊ alſo upon his blode. And ſayd alſo that the gote ſhold leſe moche deale of his lande/ tyll the tyme yͭ ſhame ſhold hym ouercome/ and then he ſholde clothe hym in a lyons ſkynne/ and ſholde wynne agayne that he had loſte/ ⁊ more through people yͭ ſholde come oute of the Noꝛthweſt/ that ſholde make hym to be ferede/ ⁊ auenge hym upon his enemyes through counſayll of two owles/ that fyꝛſt ſholde bene peryl to be lorne. And tho .ii. owles ſholde go ouer ſee in to a ſtraunge lande/ ⁊ there dwel a certayne tyme/ ⁊ after comyne in to Englande/ ⁊ do moche harme unto many one/ ⁊ that they ſholde counſayll the gote to meue warre ayenſt the foꝛſayd beere/ ⁊ the gote ⁊ the owles ſholde come to an arme of the ſee at Burton upon Trent/ ⁊ ſholde go ouer/ ⁊ there foꝛ dꝛede the beer ſholde flee with a ſwan in his company to Bury towarde yͤ north through an unkynde outpulter/ ⁊ that yͤ ſwanne then ſholde be ſlayn with ſoꝛowe ⁊ the beer ſholde be ſlayne full nyghe his owne neſt/ yͭ ſholde ſtande upon Pomfret upon whome yͤ ſone ſhold ſhyne his beames/ ⁊ many folke ſhold ſeke hym foꝛ his vertue. And he ſayd ſothe. Foꝛ the gode erle Thomas of Lancaſtre was boꝛne in the Noꝛthweſt/ ⁊ the kynges coſyn. And by lawe he made yͤ kynge leſe moche lande yͭ he had purchaſed wylfully/ tyl at yͤ laſt the kynge toke therof ſhame/ ⁊ hymſelf ſlewe with crueltie/ gettynge agayne yͭ he had loſt/ ⁊ moꝛe/ through helpe of folke comyng out of the noꝛthweſt/ by whom he was dꝛad/ ⁊ auenged on his barons/ through counſayl of the two Spenſers that afoꝛe were outlawed foꝛ theyꝛ wyckednes And were come agayne out of Fraunce/ ⁊ ſo moche theſe Spenſers counſayled the kynge that he ſholde warre upon Thomas of Lancaſtre/ that the kynge and the two Spenſers the fader and yͤ ſone/ and the erle of Arundell and theyꝛ power met ſyꝛ Thomas of Lancaſter at Burton upon Trent/ and hym there dyſcomfyted/ and ſyꝛ Umfray Erle of Herfoꝛde was in his company. And after flede the foꝛſayde Thomas and Humfray with theyꝛ company to Burbrugge metynge with ſyꝛ Andꝛewe of Herkela/ that is called yͤ unkynde outpulter/ and alſo ſyꝛ Symonde Warde Erle of yoꝛke came and met with

Thomas of Lancaſtre with an huge power / ⁊ them diſcomfyted / ⁊ in that ſcomfyture ẏ erle of Herforde was ſlayne vpõ the brygge cowardly with a ſpere in the fundement / ⁊ the erle Thomas was taken and lad vnto Pountfret / ⁊ tho was heded beſyde his owne caſtell. But afterwarde many hym ſoughte for myracles ẏ god dyde for hym. And in that tyme men ſayd for ſorowe ⁊ harme ſholde dye a people of his lande / wherfore many landes ſholde be vpon hym the more bolder / ⁊ he ſayd ſothe for bycauſe of his barons that were put to deth for ſaynt Thomas querell of Lancaſtre / people of many landes became the bolder for to meue warre vpõ theyr kynge / for theyr blood was ſold to many nacyons. And afterwarde Merlyn tolde ⁊ ſayd ẏ the forſayd owles ſholde doo moche harme vnto ẏ floure of lyfe ⁊ deth / and they ſholde brynge her to moche dyſeaſe / ſo ẏ ſhe ſholde go ouer ſee in to Fraunce / for to make pees to ẏ flour delyce / ⁊ there ſholde abyde tyll a tyme her ſone ſholde come ⁊ fetche her / and tho they ſholde abyde bothe tyll ẏ tyme that they ſholde clothe them with grace / ⁊ tho two owles ſhe ſholde ſeke / ⁊ put them to pyteuous deth / ⁊ that prophecy was full well knowen / and was full ſothe / for ſyr Hugh Spenſer ẏ fader / ⁊ ſyr Hughe the ſone dyd moche ſorowe and perſecucyon vnto ẏ quene Iſabell through theyr procurement to her lorde ẏ kynge / ſo they ordeyned amonge them / ẏ ſhe was put vnto her wages / that is for to ſay .xx. ſhelynges in ẏ daye / wherfore ẏ kynge of Fraũce her broder was ſore anoyed / ⁊ ſente in Englonde by his letters vnto kynge Edwarde to come vnto his parlyament to Parys in Fraũce. But kynge Edwarde was ſore aferde to come there / for he wende to haue be areſted tyll ẏ he hadde made amendes for the treſpace ẏ ſyr Hugh Spenſer the fader ⁊ the ſone had done ⁊ for ẏ harme ẏ they hadde done vnto quene Iſabell his ſyſter / wherfore throughe his ordynaũce ⁊ conſent of ẏ Spenſers / ẏ quene Iſabell went ouer ſee in to Fraũce for to make accorde bytwene kyng Edwarde ⁊ the kynge of Fraũce her broder And there dwelled ſhe in Fraũce tyll Edwarde her eldeſt ſone came her for to ſeke and ſo they dwelled there bothe tyll that alyaũce was made bytwene them / ⁊ the gentyll erle of Henaude / ẏ yf they wᵗ their vertue myght dyſtroye ⁊ ouercome ẏ venym ⁊ ẏ falſeneſſe of ẏ ſpenſers ẏ ſyr Edwarde ſholde ſpouſe dame phylyp ẏ worſhypfull lady / ⁊ erles doughter of Henaude / wherfore ẏ quene Iſabell ⁊ Edwarde her ſone / ⁊ ſyr Edwarde of wodſtocke ẏ kynges broder of Englonde / ⁊ ſyr Iohñ of Henaude / and ſyr Roger mortymer of Wygmore / ⁊ ſyr Thomas Rocelyn / ⁊ ſyr Iohan of Crõwell / ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam Truſſell / ⁊ many other of ẏ alyaunce of ẏ gentyll erle Thomas of lancaſter / ẏ were exyled out of Englonde for his quarell / ⁊ were dyſheryted of theyr landes / ordeyned them a grete power / ⁊ arryued at Herewich in ſouthfolke. And ſoone after they purſued ẏ Spenſers tyll ẏ they were taken and put to pyteuous dethe as before is ſayd / ⁊ theyr cõpany alſo / for the grete falſeneſſe ẏ they dyde to kynge Edwarde and to his peple. And Merlyn ſayd alſo more ẏ ẏ gote ſholde be in grete dyſtreſſe ⁊ in grete anguyſſh ⁊ in grete ſorowe he ſholde lede his lyfe / ⁊ ſayd ſothe / for after ẏ tyme ẏ kynge Edwarde was taken he was put in to warde tyll ẏ ẏ Spenſers were put to deth / ⁊ alſo bycauſe he wolde not come vnto his parliamẽt at London as he had ordeyned ⁊ aſſygned hymſelfe vnto his baronage / ⁊ alſo wolde not gouerne ⁊ rule his people / nor his reame as a kynge ſholde do. Wherfore ſome of ẏ ba rons of Englonde came ⁊ yelde vp theyr homages vnto hym/for them ⁊ all yͤ other of yͤ reame/in yͤ daye of yͤ conuerſyon of ſaynt Poule/in yͤ yere of his reygne.xx. And they put hym out of his royalte for euermore. And euer lyued afterwarde in moche ſorowe ⁊ anguyſſhe.

Lodouicus was Emperour after Henry foure yere. this Lodwyke was duke of Bauare/⁊ he dyſpyſed yͤ coronacyon of the pope/wherfore the pope depoſed hym/⁊ moche labour ⁊ many perylles he had after/⁊ he troubled gretly yͤ vnyte of holy chyrche. Then was choſen agaynſt hȳ Frederyke duke of Oſtryche and he ouercame the duke ⁊ abode a rebellion to his ende/⁊ in grete peryl to his ſoule. And at yͤ laſt Karolus was choſen agaynſt hym/the whiche preuayled/⁊ ſodeynly lodewyk fel downe of his horſe ⁊ dyſceſſed. ¶ Iohn Mandeuyll a doctour of phyſyk ⁊ a knyght borne was in Englonde aboute this tyme. And he made a merueylous pylgrymage/for he went almoſt about all the worlde/⁊ he wrote his dedes in thre langages ⁊ deceſſed ⁊ was buryed at ſaynt Albons. ¶ Benedictus the.xxii. was pope after Iohan.vii.yere and more/this man was a monke and in all his yougth he was of good conuerſacyon/⁊ a doctour in diuinyte. And whan he was made pope he reformed the ordre of ſaynt Benet in that thynge yͭ was neceſſary/⁊ he was a harde man to graunte benefyces/leſt he had graunted it to an vncunnynge man/he made a decretall yͭ whiche began (Benedictus deus in donis ſuis) And he was very cruell in his ſayth/and for that of ſom men was lytell loued he was ſo ſtoute a man that almooſt he wolde not knowe his owne coſyns.

¶ Anno dñi. M.CCC.xxvi.

¶ Of kynge Edwarde the thyrde after the Conqueſt.

After this kynge Edwarde Carnaruan reygned ſyr Edwarde of wyndſore his ſone/yͭ which was crowned kynge ⁊ anoynted at weſtmynſter/through counſeyle ⁊ conſent of all yͤ grete lordes of yͤ reame yͤ ſonday on candelmaſſe euen/in yͤ yere of grace.M.CCC.xxvi.⁊ was of age yͭ tyme but.xv.yere. And for cauſe yͭ his fader was in warde in the caſtell of kenylworth ⁊ alſo was put downe of his royalte/yͤ realme of englonde was withoute kyng fro yͤ feeſt of ſaynt Katheryn fro yͤ yere aboue ſayd to yͤ feeſt of Candelmaſſe. And tho were all maner plees of yͤ kynges benche aſſize. And tho was commaunded to al yͤ ſhyreffs of Englonde through wrytte/to warne yͤ partyes to be ſomonded through ſomnynge agayne/⁊ alſo furthermore yͭ all pryſoners yͭ were in yͤ kynges gayolles that were attached through ſhyreffs/ſholde be lete go quyte. ¶ The kynge Edwarde after his coronacyon/at yͤ prayer ⁊ beſechynge of his lyeges of yͤ realme graunted thē a chartre of ſtedfaſt peas to all thē yͭ wolde it axe. And ſyr Iohan of Henaude/⁊ his company toke theyr leue of yͤ kynge ⁊ of yͤ lordes of the reame/⁊ torned home to their owne countre ayene. And eche of thē had full ryche gyftes/euery man as he was of value ⁊ of eſtate. And tho was Englonde in reſt ⁊ peas/⁊ grete loue bytwene yͤ kynge ⁊ his lordes. And comynly Englyſſhe men ſayd amonge thē yͭ yͤ deuyll was deed/but yͤ innumerable treſoure of yͤ kynge his fader/⁊ yͤ treſoure of yͤ Spenſers/bothe of yͤ fader ⁊ of yͤ ſone/⁊ of yͤ erle of Arundell/⁊ of mayſter Robert Baldok yͭ was the kynges Chaunceler was departed after the quene Iſabelles ordynaunce ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymers of wygmore/ſo that the kynge had noo thynge therof/but at her wyll & her delyueraunce/nor of their landes/as afterwarde ye ſhall here.

¶How kynge Edwarde went vnto Stanhop for to mete the Scottes.

AND yet in yͤ ſame tyme was the kynge in yͤ caſtell of kenylworth vnder yͤ kepynge of ſyr Henry that was erle Thomas of Lancaſters broder that tho was erle of Leyceſtre. And the kynge graunted hym yͤ erldome of Lancaſtre/yͭ yͤ kyng his fader had ſeaſed in to his hande & put oute Thomas of Lancaſtre & of Leyceſtre/& alſo Stewarde of Englande as his brother was in his tyme. But ſyr Edwarde yͭ was kynge Edwardes fader made ſorowe without ende/for bycauſe he myght not ſpeke with his wyfe/nor wͭ his ſone/wherfore he was in moche myſchefe. For though it was ſo yͭ he was led & ruled by falſe counſeyl/yet he was kyng Edwardes ſone called Edwarde wͭ yͤ longe ſhankes/& came oute of the worthyeſt blood of all yͤ worlde/& they to whome he was wonte to gyue grete gyftes & large/were mooſt preuy wͭ yͤ kyng his owne ſone/and they were his ennemyes both by nyght & by day & procured to make debate & cōtake bytwene hym & his ſone and Iſabell his wyfe. But the frere prechers were to hym good frendes euermore/& caſt both by nyght & by day how they myght brynge hym out of pryſon. And amonge theyr company yͭ yͤ freres hadde preuely brought/there was a frere called Dunheued/& he had ordeyned & gadred a grete company of folke to kepe at yͤ nede/but yͤ frere was taken & put in yͤ caſtel of Poūtfret/& there he dyed in pryſon/& ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre yͭ had yͤ kynges fader in kepynge through commaundement of the kynge delyuered Edwarde yͤ kynges fader by endenture to ſyr Thomas of Berkelay. And ſo ſyr Iohn̄ Matreuas & they lad hym frō yͤ caſtell of Kenylworth to yͤ caſtell of Berkelay/& kept hym there ſaufly. And at Eeſter next after his coronacyon yͤ kynge ordeyned a grete huge hooſt for to fyght agaynſt yͤ Scottes. And ſyr Iohan yͤ erles broder of Henaude came frō beyonde yͤ ſee for to helpe kynge Edwarde & brought wͭ hym.vii.C.men of armes & arryued at Douer/& they had leue for to go forth tyl they came to yorke there yͤ kynge the abode/& yͤ Scottes came thyder to yͤ kynge for to make peas & accorde/but the accordement laſted not bytwene them but a lytell tyme. And at yͭ tyme yͤ Englyſſhe men were clothed all in cotes & hodes paynted wͭ letters & wͭ floures ful ſemely wͭ longe berdes & therfore the Scottes made a byll yͭ was faſtened vpon the chyrche dores of ſaynt Peter towarde ſtangate/& thus ſayd yͤ ſcrypture in dyſpyte of englyſſhmē. Longe berdes hertles/paynted hodes wytles/gaye cotes graceles/maketh englonde thrifteles.

SO in Trinyte daye next after began yͤ contake in yͤ cyte of Yorke bytwene yͤ Englyſſhmen & yͤ Henaudes and in yͤ debate were ſlayne of yͤ erldō of Nicholl & murdred.lxxx.men & after they were buryed in ſaynt clementes chyrche in foſgate. & for cauſe yͭ yͤ Henaudes came to helpe the kynge theyr peas was cryed vpō payne of lyfe & lymme/& in yͤ other halfe it was founde by an enqueſt of the cyte yͭ yͤ Englyſſhe men began yͤ debate.

¶How yͤ Englyſſhe men ſtopped yͤ Scottes in the parke of Stanope & how they torned agayne in to Scotlande.

THis tyme the Scottes had aſſembled all theyr power & came in to Englonde & ſlewe & robbed all that they myght take/& alſo brente & dyſtroyed all the north countre thurghout/ tyll ÿ they came vnto ÿ parke of Stanhope in Weredale/ ⁊ there ÿ scottes helde thē in a busshment/ but whan ÿ kynge had herde thorough spyes were ÿ scottes were/ anone ryght wͭ his hoste besyeged them wͭin the forsayd parke so ÿ ÿ scottes wyst not where to go out/ but onely to theyr harmes/ ⁊ they abode in ÿ parke .xv. days/ ⁊ vytayles fayled them in euery syde/ soo ÿ they were gretely peyred of bodyes and sythe ÿ Brute came fyrste in to Brytayne to this tyme/ there was neuer seen soo fayre an host/ what of Englysshe men ⁊ of alyauntes ⁊ of men of fote/ ÿ whiche ordeyned them for to fyght wͭ ÿ Scottes/ through eggynge of syr Henry of Lancastre ⁊ of syr Iohn̄ of Henaude ÿ wolde haue gone ouer ÿ water of Wyth for to haue fought wͭ ÿ scottes. But syr Roger mortymer cōsented not therto/ for he had pryuely take mede of ÿ scottes them to helpe that they myght go in to theyr owne countre. And this same Mortymer cōseyled so moche Thomas of brotherton ÿ erle Marshall that was kynge Edwardes vncle ÿ ÿ forsayd Thomas sholde not assemble at ÿ tyme vnto ÿ Scottes/ ⁊ he assented/ but he wyst not ÿ doynge bytwene ÿ Scottes ⁊ the forsayd Mortymer. And bycause ÿ he was marshal of Englonde as to hym perteyned euer ÿ vauntwarde/ he sent hastely to ÿ erle of Lancastre/ ⁊ to syr Iohn̄ of Henaude that they sholde not fyght with the Scottes/ in preiudyce ⁊ harmynge of hym ⁊ his fee/ ⁊ yf they dyd ÿ they sholde stande to theyr owne paryll. And the forsayd Marshall was all arayed wͭ his batayle/ at ÿ rerewarde of the erle of Lancastre/ for to haue fought wͭ hym and wͭ his folke yͭ he had go to fyght wͭ ÿ Scottes/ ⁊ in this maner he was disceyued ⁊ wyst nothynge of ÿ treason. And thus was ÿ kynge principally disceyued. And whan it was nyght syr Roger Mortymer that hadde the watche for to kepe of ÿ hoste ÿ nyght dystroubled ÿ watche ÿ nothynge myght be done. And in the meane whyle the scottes stale by nyght towarde theyr owne coūtre as fast as they myght. And so was the kynge falsly betrayed that wened that all ÿ traytours of his londe had ben brought to an ende as it was said before. Now here you lordes how traytoursly kynge Edwarde was disceyued/ how merueylously ⁊ boldly ÿ Scottes dyd of warre/ For Iames Douglas with two hondred men of armes rode through out all the hoste of kynge Edwarde/ ÿ same nyght ÿ Scottes escaped towarde theyr owne coūtre as is aboue sayd tyll they came to ÿ kynges pauylyon/ ⁊ slewe there many men in theyr beddes/ ⁊ cryed Naward naward/ and another tyme a Douglas a Douglas/ wherfore ÿ kyng ÿ was in his pauylyon ⁊ moche other folke were wonder sore afrayed/ but blessed by almyghty god ÿ kynge was not taken/ ⁊ in grete peryll was tho ÿ reame of Englande/ ⁊ ÿ nyght ÿ moone shone full clere ⁊ bryght. And for al the kynges men ÿ scottes scaped awaye harmeles. And on the morowe whan ÿ kynge wyst ÿ ÿ Scottes were escaped in to their owne countre he was wonder sory/ and full hertely wepte with his yonge eyen/ ⁊ yet wyste he not who hadde hym done ÿ treason/ but that false treason was full well I knowen a good whyle after as ÿ story maketh mencyon. ¶ Tho kyng Edwarde came agayne vnto Yorke full sorowful. And his host departed/ and euery man wente in to his owne countre with full heuy chere and mornynge semblaūt. And the Henaudes toke theyr leue ⁊ wente in to theyr owne coūtre/ ⁊ ÿ kynge for theyr trauayle hygely rewarded them. And for bycause of ÿ vyage ÿ kynge hadde dyspended moche of this treſoure & waſted. And in that tyme were ſeen two moones in the fyrmament / yͭ one was clere / & that other was derke / as men myght ſe through yͤ worlde. ¶ And a grete debate was yͭ ſame tyme agaynſt pope Iohñ yͤ .xxii. after ſaynt Peter / & yͤ emperour of almayne tho made hym emperour agaynſt yͤ popes wyll yͭ tho helde his ſee at Auinion / wherfore the emperour made his crye at Rome & ordeyned another pope yͭ hyghte Nicholas / yͭ was a frere Minoure / & that was agaynſt the ryght of holy chyrche / wherfore he was curſed / & yͤ power of yͭ other pope ſoone layde. And for cauſe yͭ ſuche merueyles were ſeen / men ſayd yͭ yͤ worlde was nygh at an ende.

¶ Of the deth of kynge Edwarde of carnaruan.

AND now go we agayne to ſyr Edwarde of carnaruã yͭ was kynge Edwardes fader ſomtyme kynge of Englonde / & was put downe of his dignyte Alas for his tribulacyõ & ſorowe that hȳ befell through falſe counſeyle yͭ he loued & truſted to moche yͭ afterwarde were deſtroyed throughe theyr falſeneſſe as god wolde. And this Edwarde of Carnaruã was in yͤ caſtel of Berkelay vnder yͤ warde & kepynge of ſyr Moryce of Berkelay and alſo of ſyr Iohñ Matreuers & to thē he made his complaynt of his ſorowe & of his dyſeaſe. And ofte tymes asked of his wardeyns what he had treſpaſſed ayenſt dame Iſabell his wyf & ſyr Edwarde his ſone yͭ was made newe kynge yͭ they wolde not vyſyte hȳ. And tho anſwered one of his wardeyns & ſayd. My worthy lorde diſpleaſe you not yͭ I ſhall tell you the cauſe is for it is done the to vnderſtande that yf my lady your wyf came ony thynge nygh you yͭ ye wolde her ſtrangle & ſlee and alſo yͭ ye wolde doo to my lorde your ſone in the ſame wyſe. Tho anſwered he with a ſymple chere. Alas alas am not I in Pryſon / & all at your owne wyll / now god it wote I thought it neuer / & now I wolde yͭ I were deed / ſoo wolde god yͭ I were / for then were all my ſorowe paſſed. It was not longe after yͭ yͤ kyng through couſeyle of Roger Mortymer graũted yͤ warde & kepynge of ſyr Edwarde his fader vnto ſyr Thomas Tolourſy / & to the forſayd ſyr Iohñ Matreuers through yͤ kynges letter / & put out holly the forſayd ſyr Moryce of yͤ warde of yͤ kynge. And they toke & lad yͤ kynge vnto yͤ caſtell of Corfe yͤ whiche caſtell yͤ kynge hated as ony deth. And they kept hym there tyll it came vnto ſaynt Mathewes day in Septembre in yͤ yere of grace. M.CCC.xxvii that yͤ forſayd ſyr Roger Mortymer ſent the manere of yͤ deth / how & in what wyſe he ſholde be put to deth. And anone as the forſaid Thomas & Iohñ had ſe yͤ letter & cõmaundement / they made kynge Edwarde carnaruan good chere & good ſolace as they myght at that ſouper / & no thynge yͤ kynge wyſte of yͤ treaſon. And whan tyme was for to go to bed yͤ kynge went to his bed & laye & ſlepte faſte. And as yͤ kynge laye & ſlept yͤ traytours falſe forſwore agaynſt theyr homage & feaute came pryuely in to yͤ kynges chambre / & theyr company with them / & layd an huge table vpon his wombe / & wͭ men preſſed & helde faſt downe yͤ foure corners of the table on his body where with yͤ good man awoke / & was wonder ſore adradde to be deed & there ſlayne / & torned his body vp tho ſo downe. Tho toke yͤ fals traytours & tyrauntes an horne & put it in to his fondement as depe as they myght / & toke a ſpyt of copre brennynge / & put it through the horne in to his body & oft tymes therwith thyrled his bowelles & ſoo they ſlewe theyr lorde / yͭ noo thynge was perceyued/ ꝛ was entered at Glouceſtre.

¶ How kynge Edwarde ſpouſed Phylyp the erles doughter of Henaude at Yorke.

AND after Criſtmaſſe tho next ſuynge ſyr Johñ of Henaude with hym brought Phylyp his broders doughter ꝥ was erle of Henaude his nece in to Englonde/ ꝛ ꝥ kynge ſpouſed her at Yorke with moche honoure. And ſyr Johñ of Bothum byſſhop of Ely/ ꝛ ſyr william of Melton Archebyſſhop of yorke ſonge the maſſe ꝥ ſonday on ꝥ euen of ꝥ conuerſyon of ſaynt Poule. In ꝥ yere of Grace. M. CCC.xxvii. but bycauſe ꝥ ꝥ kynge was yonge ꝛ tendre of aege whā he was crowned full many wronges were done whyle that his fader lyued/ bycauſe ꝥ he trowed ꝥ coūſeylers ꝥ were falſe aboute hȳ ꝥ coūſeyled hym to do otherwyſe thā reaſon wold/ wherfore grete harme was done to ꝥ realme ꝛ to ꝥ kynge/ ꝛ all men dyrected it ꝥ kynges dede/ ꝛ it was not ſoo almyghty god it wote/ wherfore it was ordeyned at ꝥ kynges crownynge ꝥ ꝥ kynge for his tendre age ſholde be gouerned by.xii.of the grettest lordes of Englonde without whome nothynge ſholde be done. That is to ſaye the archebyſſhop of Caunterbury/ tharchebyſſhop of yorke/ ꝥ byſſhop of Wyncheſtre/ ꝛ ꝥ byſſhop of Herforde/ ꝥ erle of lancaſtre/ therle Marſhall/ ꝛ ꝥ erle of Kent ꝥ were the kynges vncles/ ꝛ ꝥ erle of Garenne/ ſyr Thomas wake/ ſyr Henry Percy/ ſyr Olyuer yngham/ ꝛ Johñ Rous barons/ all theſe were ſworen truely for to coūſeyle ꝥ kynge ꝛ they ſholde anſwere euery yere in parliament of that ꝥ ſholde be done in ꝥ tyme of theyr gouernall/ but ꝥ ordynaūce was ſoone vndone/ ꝛ that was moche harme to all Englonde/ for the kynge ꝛ all ꝥ lordes ꝥ ſholde gouerne hȳ were gouerned and ruled after quene Iſabell his moder and of Roger Mortymer/ ꝛ as they wold al thynge was done bothe amonge hyghe and lowe. And they toke vnto theyr cattels townes/ landes/ ꝛ rentes in grete harme and loſſe to the coroune/ and of ꝥ kynges eſtate out of all meſure.

¶ How ꝥ pees was made bytwene ꝥ Englyſſhemen ꝛ ꝥ Scottes/ ꝛ alſo of Juſtynge of [illegible].

KYnge Edwarde at Whytſontyde in the ſeconde yere of his reygne thorugh ꝥ coūſeyle of his moder/ ꝛ ſyr Roger Mortymer ordeyned a parliament at Northampton. And at ꝥ parliament the kynge thrugh his coūſeyle/ ꝛ none other of ꝥ londe than aege graunted to be accorded wᵗ ꝥ Scottes in this manere ꝥ all the feautees ꝛ homages ꝥ ꝥ Scottes ſholde doo to the crowne of Englonde forgaue them for euermore by his chartre enſealed. And fertherrmore an endenture was made of ꝥ Scottes vnto kynge Edwarde that was kynge Henryes ſone whiche endenture they calle it ragman in ꝥ whiche were cōteyned all ꝥ homages ꝛ feautees. Fyrſte of ꝥ kynge of Scotlande ꝛ of prelates/ erles/ barons of ꝥ realme of Scotlande wᵗ theyr ſeales ſet theron and other chartres ꝛ remembraūces ꝥ kynge Edwarde and his barons hadde of theyr ryght in the forſayd realme of Scotlande it was forgeuē agayne holy chyrche/ ꝛ alſo with the blacke croſſe of Scotlande ꝥ whiche ꝥ good kynge Edwarde conquered in Scotlande ꝛ brought it out of the abbaye of Scone/ ꝥ is a full precyous relyke. And alſo fertherrmore/ he releaced ꝛ fully forgaue all the landes that ꝥ noble barons had before ꝥ tyme in ꝥ realme of Scotlande by olde conqueſt. And fethermore ꝥ this pees ſholde be holden ꝛ contynuelly laſt ꝥ Scottes were bounden vnto the kynge in.xxx.thouſande poūde of ſyl nes to be payed within thre yere / that is euery yere .x. thouſande pounde by euen porcyons. And ferthermore aboue all this they ſpake bytwene the partyes aboue ſayd / that Dauyd Dyſtonaucter yt was kynge Robertes Bruys ſone / ye fals tyraũte & fals forſworne ayenſt his othe yt aroſe ayenſt hes lyege lord / the noble and good kynge Edward / & falſly made hym kȳge of Scotlande / yt was of ayge .v. yere & ſo this curſyd coũſeyle Dauyd ſpouſed at Berewyk dame Jone of the toure / yt was kynge Edwardes ſyſter / as the geſtes telleth vpon Mary Mawdeleyns day / in ye yere of grace. M.CCC.xxviii. too grete harme & enpayrynge of all ye kynges blode / wherof ye gentell lady came / alas the tyme / For wõder moch ye fayre damoyſel dyſparagyd / ſythe that ſhe was maryed agaynſt all ye comyns wyll & aſſent of Englond / & frome ye tyme yt Brute had cõquered Albyon / & named the londe after his owne name Brytayne / that nowe is called Englonde after ye name of Engyſt / & ſo the reame of Scotlande was holdẽ of ye reame of Englonde / & of the crowne by feaute & homage / for Brute conquered ye londe / & gaue it to Albanak yt was his ſeconde ſone / and he called that londe Albany after his owne name / ſo yt his heyres yt came after hym ſholde holde of Brute & of his heyres / yt is to ſaye of the kynges of Brytayne / by feaute & homage / & from ye tyme to this tyme of kynge Edward / ye reame of Scotlandẽ was holde of the reame of Englõde by feaute & ſeruyſe / as aboue is ſayd in the Cronycles of Englõd & of Scotlande & bereth wytneſſe more playnly / & curſed be the tyme yt this parlyament was holdẽ at Northampton / for there by fals coũſeyll ye kynge was there falſly dyſheryted and yet he was within age. And yet when that kynge Edward was put oute of his ryalte of Englonde yet men put not hym out of the feautes & ſeruyce of Scotlond / nor of the fraunchyſes dyſheryted hym for euermore. ¶ And neuertheleſe the grete lordes of Englond were ayeynſt to cõferme the peas and the trewes aboue ſayde / ſauf only quene Iſabell / that tho was the kynges moder Edwarde / and the byſſhop of Ely / and the lorde Mortimer / but reaſon & lawe nolde that a fynall peas ſhold be made bytwene thẽ wout the comyn aſſent of Englonde.

¶ Of the debate yt was bytwene quene Iſabell and ſyr Henry erle of Lãcaſtre & of Leycetre & of the rydynge of Bedford.

THen as ſone as ye forſayd Dauyd had ſpouſed dame Jone of the toure in the towne of Berwyk as before is ſayd / the Scottes in dyſpyte of ye Englyſſhe men called dame Jone ye coũteſſe make peas / for ye cowardly peas yt was ordeyned. But the kynges perſone bare all the wyte & blame with wronge of the makynge of the accorde / And all was done throughe the quene & Roger Mortymer. and it was not longe after that ye quene Iſabell ne toke in to her handes all ye lordſhyp of Pountfret almooſt all the londes that were of ony value that appertayned to the crowne of Englond / So the kynge had not to dyſpende / but of his vſes & of his excheker / for the quene Iſabell & the Mortymer hadde grete mayne of the retenewe that folowed the kynges courte euermore and wente and toke the kȳges pryces for her peny worthes good chepe / Wherfore the countree that they came in were full ſore adradde / and almooſte dyſtroyed of them. Tho began the comynalte of Englonde for to haue enuye to Iſabell the quene that ſomoche loued her be-foꝛ whan ſhe came ayen foꝛ to purſue ÿ fals traytours / ÿ Spenſers fro Fraūce. And in that ſame tyme the fals traytour Roberte of Holonde / ÿ betrayed his loꝛde ſyꝛ Thomas of Lancaſtre / was tho delyuerde out of pryſō / & his londes yeuē with the quene Iſabell / & alſo of Roger Moꝛtymer / but that auayled hym but lytyll. Foꝛ he was taken at myghelmas ÿ tho came nexte after / as he rode towarde quene Iſabell to Londō / & ſyꝛ Thomas Whither ſmote of his heed beſydes the towne of ſaynt Albons. And this ſyꝛ Thomas dwelled with ſyꝛ Henry erle of Lancaſtre / & he put hym aſyde foꝛ dred of the quene foꝛ ſhe loued hym wōdermoch. & prayed to ÿ kynge foꝛ hym ÿ ÿ ſame Thomas myght be exyled out of Englonde. And ÿ noble erle ſyꝛ Henry of Lancaſtre had oftentymes herde the comyn clamoure of ÿ Englyſſhemen / of ÿ dyſeaſe ÿ were done in Englonde / & alſo foꝛ dyuers wronges that were done to ÿ comyn people . of the whiche ÿ kyng bare the blame wͭ wronge Foꝛ he was but full yonge and tēder of aege. And thought as a good man / foꝛ to do a waye / & ſlake the ſclaūder of the kynges perſon / yf ÿ he myght in ony manere a wyſe / ſo as ÿ kȳge was therof nothȳge gylty / wherfoꝛe he was ī paryl of his lyfe

¶ And ſo he aſſembled all his retenewe & wente & ſpake with them of ÿ kynges honoure / & alſo foꝛ to amend his eſtate / and ſyꝛ Thomas Bꝛotherton erle of Marſhal & ſyꝛ Edmond wodſtok / that were ÿ kynges uncles / and alſo mē of London made theyꝛ othe hym foꝛ to maynteyne in ÿ ſame quarell. And theyꝛ cauſe was this / that ÿ kynge ſholde hold his houſe & his meyne as a kynge ought foꝛ to do / & haue al his ryalte / & that the quene Iſabell ſholde delyuer out of her handes in to the kynges hāde al maner of loꝛdſhyps rētys townes & caſtels that apperteyneth unto ÿ crowne of Englōd as other quenes haue done here befoꝛe / and medled with none other thynge.

¶ And alſo that ſyꝛ Roger Moꝛtymer ſholde abyde & dwell on his owne londes / Foꝛ ÿ whiche londes he had holpē to dyſtroye moche people. In ſo moche that the comyn people were dyſtroyed & gretly domaged / through ſuche wrongfull takynge. And alſo to enquyre how and by whome that the kyng was betrayed and falſly diſceyued at Stanhope / & trough whoſe counſeyll that the Scottes went awaye by nyght from the kynge / & alſo how & through whoſe counſeyle the oꝛdynaūce that were made at the kynges coꝛonacyon / was put downe.

¶ That is to ſaye / ÿ the kynge foꝛ amendment & kepynge of his reame / & in honoure of hym ſholde be gouerned & rulyd by .xii. of the grettest & wyſeſt loꝛdes of the reame / and without them ſholde no thynge be graūtyd ne done / as befoꝛe is ſayde / whiche couenaūces were malycyouſly put downe fro the kynge / wherfoꝛe many harmes / ſhames & repꝛeues haue fall to ÿ kynge and his reame / and that is to underſtonde foꝛ aſmoche as Edwarde kynge of Englond ſōtyme was oꝛdeyned by aſſēt in playne parleamente / foꝛ to be under warde and gouernaūce of Henry erle of Lācaſtre his coſyn / foꝛ ſaluacion of his body he was takē out of the caſtell of Kenelwoꝛth / there ÿ he was in warde / & through coloure of quene Iſabell / & of ÿ Moꝛtymer wͭout cōſent of ony parleamēt they toke & lad hȳ there ÿ neuer after none of his kynred / myght wͭ hym ſpeke / & after traytouſly toke & moꝛdꝛed hȳ / foꝛ whoſe dethe aroſe a ſclaūder through all criſtēdome / whan it was done & alſo ÿ treſoure ÿ ſyꝛ Edward of Carnaruan lefte in many places in Englonde and in Walys was waſtyd and boꝛne awaye without the wyll of kynge Edwarde his ſone / in dyſtruccyō of hym no of al his folke. ¶ Alſo through whoſe coũſeyll/ that the kynge gaue vp the kyngdome of Scotlond/ for the whiche reame ẏ kynges aunceſtours had full ſore trauayled/ ⁊ ſo dyd many a noble man for theyr ryght/ ⁊ was delyuered to Dauid ẏ was Robert Brus ſone all ẏ ryght had/ ẏ no ryght had to ẏ reame/ as all the world it wyſt. And alſo by whome the chartres ⁊ mẽbrãces ẏ they had of ryght of Scotlonde were taken out of ẏ treſory/ ⁊ taken to ẏ Scottes kynges enmyes to ẏ dyſherytynge of hym ⁊ of his ſucceſſours/ ⁊ to grete harme of his leyges/ ⁊ grete repref to all Englyſſhe mẽ for euermore. ¶ Alſo Jone of ẏ toure kynge Edwardes ſyſter/ was dyſperagyd ⁊ maryed vnto Dauyd ẏ was Robert Brus ſone/ that was a traytour ⁊ enmye to Englonde/ and through whoſe coũſeyll ſhe was take in to our enmyes handes out of Englonde. ¶ And in this meane whyle/ the good erle of Lãcaſtre ⁊ his companye toke his coũſeyll how theſe poyntes aboue ſayd/ myght be amẽded to ẏ worſhyp of ẏ kyng ⁊ to his profyte ⁊ to ẏ profyte of his leyges/ ⁊ ẏ quene Iſabell throughe coniectynge ⁊ alſo of ẏ Mortymers lete ordeyne a parlyament at Salyſbury/ ⁊ at ẏ ſame parlyament ẏ Mortymer was made erle of Marche agenſt all ẏ barons wyl of Englond in preiudice of the kynge ⁊ of his crowne/ ⁊ ſyr John of Eltham ẏ kynges broder/ was gyrde with a ſwerde of Cornewayle/ and tho was called erle of Cornewayle ⁊ ouermore quene Iſabell procured ſo moche agenſt her ſone ẏ kynge/ ẏ ſhe had ẏ warde of ẏ forſayd ſyr Edwarde ⁊ of his londes And at ẏ parlyament ẏ erle of Lancaſtre wolde not come/ but ordeyned his power ayenſt quene Iſabell and ẏ Mortymer/ and men of London ordeyned them with fyue hundred men of armys. ¶ Whanne quene Iſabell wyſte of the doynge/ ſhe ſwore by god and by his names/ full angerly/ that in an euyll tyme he thoughte vpon tho poyntes/ tho ſent the quene Iſabell ⁊ ẏ Mortymer after theyr retenewe and after the kynges retenewe/ ſo ẏ they had ordeyned amonge them an huge hoſt And they coũſeyled ẏ kynge/ ſo that vpon a nyght/ they rode .xxiiii. myles to Bedford/ there the erle of Lancaſtre was wͭ his company/ ⁊ thought to haue hym dyſtroyed/ and that nyght ſhe rode beſyde ẏ kynge her ſone as a knyghte for drede of dethe. And it was done the kynge to vnderſtande/ ẏ the erle Henry of Lancaſtre and his company wolde haue dyſtroyed the kynge ⁊ his counſeyll for euermore wherfore the kynge was ſomdele towardes hym heuy ⁊ anoyed. ¶ Whan the erle Marſhall the erle of Kente ẏ kynges broder herde of this tydynges/ they rode ſoo in meſſage bytwene them/ that the kynge graunted hym his peas to the erle Henry of Lancaſtre/ for a certayne raunſome of a.xi. thouſand poũde/ but that was neuer payde afterwarde. And theſe were ẏ lordes ẏ helde with ſyr Henry of Lancaſtre ſyre Beaumõt/ ſyr Fouk fytzwaren/ ſyr Thomas Rocelyn/ ſyr Wyllyam Truſſell ſyr Thomas whyther/ ⁊ aboute an hundred knyghtes moo that were to hym conſented/ ⁊ all thoſe were exyled throughe counſeyll of quene Iſabell and of Mortymer for Mortymer wayted to haue theyr ondes/ yf the he myght throughe ony maner cõiectynge for he was to coueytous/ ⁊ had ſo moche his wyl ⁊ ẏ was grete pyte.

¶ How kynge Edward wente ouer ẏ ſee for to do his homage to ẏ kynge of Fraunce/ for the duchye of Guyhenne.

IT was notte longe after that the kynge of Fraunce/ throughe counſeyll of his douzepers/ ſende to kynge Ed warde of Englonde that he ſholde come to Parys and do his homage / as reaſon it wold / for the duchye of Guyen / and ſo through conſeyll of the lordes of Englōde kynge Edward wente ouer the ſee. And at the aſſygned tyde / he came vnto Parys the thyrde yere of his regne / for to do his homage vnto the kynge of Fraūce. And the kynge receyued his homage / & made of hym moche Ioye and worſhyppe / But whan kynge Edwarde had done his homage haſtely he was ſente for in to Englond through the quene Iſabell his moder and anone haſtely he came ayen in to Englōde / vpon whytſonday without takynge leue of the kynge of Fraūce / wherfore he was wonder wrothe.

¶ How ſyr Roger Mortymer bare hym proudely and ſo hygh.

And now ſhall ye here of ſyr Roger Mortymer of Wygmore that deſyred and coueted to be at an hygh eſtate / ſo that the kynge graūted hym to be called erle of Marche / throughout all his lordſhyp. And he became ſo proude & hauteyn / þ he wolde leſe & forſake the name þ his elders had euer before / & for þ cauſe he let hym cal erle of marche. And none of þ comyns of Englonde durſt call hym by other name / for he was callyd ſo by þ kynges crye / that men ſholde calle hym erle of Marche. And Mortymer bare hym ſo hauteyne & ſo prowde þ wōder it was for to wyte. & alſo dyſguyſed hym in wōder ryche clothes oute of all manere of reaſon both of ſhappynge & of werynge. wherof þ Englyſſhmen had grete wonder / how & in what manere he myght cōtynue to lyue ſuche manere pryde. & they ſayd amonge them comynly / þ his pryd ſholde not longe endure. & þ ſame tyme ſyr Geffray Mortymer þ yonge / þ was Mortymers ſone. lete call hym kynge of foly / and ſo it befell afterwarde in dede / for he was ſo full of pryde and of wretchedneſſe / that he held a rounde table in Walys / to all men that thyder came / & counterfeted the doynge & the manere of kynge Arthures table / but he fayled / for the noble kyng Arthur was the moſt noble lorde of renome / that was in al þ world i his tyme & yet came neuer none ſuche after / for al þ noble knyghtes in al cryſtendom of dedes of armys abyden dwellynge with kynge Arthur / and helde hym for theyr lorde and ſoueraygne / And that was well ſeen / for he conquered in a batayll a Romayn that was callyd Froll and gat of hym the reame of Fraūce / and ſlewe hym with his owne handes / and alſo he faught with a gyaunte that was callyd Dynabus / & ſlewe hym that had rauyſſhyd fayre Elayne that was kynge Howeles nece / kynge of lytell Brytain and after he ſlewe in batayle the emperour of Rome / þ was called Lucie / that had aſſembled ayenſt Arthur / for to fyght with hym ſo moche people of Romayns and Pehites and ſarraſyns / þ no man coude nombre them / and he dyſcomfyted them all as the ſtory telleth. and in that ſame tyme comyn voyce ſpronge in Englonde through confeſſynge and ordynaūce of þ frere prechers / that ſyr Edwarde of Carnaryan / that was kynge Edwardes fader of whome the geſt telleth / & ſayd þ he was a lyue in the caſtell of Corf / wherof al the comyns of Englonde almoſt were in ſorowe and drede / whether þ it were ſo or not / for they wyſte not how traytouſly Mortymer had hȳ done to be murthred.

¶ How Edmonde of wodſtok that was erle of kent and the kynges broder Edward of Carnaryuā / was behedyd at wyncheſtre.

And on a certayne tyme it befell ſo that ſyr Edmonde of wodſtok Erle of Kente / ſpake vnto the pope Iohn the .xxii. at Auinion and ſayd yͤ almyghty god had ofte tymes done for Thomas lorde of Lancaſtre many greate miracles to many men & wymmen/ yͤ were throughe dyuers maladyes vndone/ as vnto the worlde/ & throughe his prayer they were brought to theyr helthe/ & ſo ſyr Edmonde prayed yͤ pope hertely yͤ he wolde graūte hym grace/ yͤ forſayd Thomas myght be tranſlatyd/ but the pope ſayd naye that he ſholde not be tranſlated/ vnto yͤ tyme he were better certified of the clergy of Englōd and ſeen by there obedyence what thynge god had done for the loue of ſaynt Thomas of Lancaſtre after the ſuggeſtyon yͤ the forſayd erle of Kent had to hym made. And whā this Edmond ſawe yͤ he myght not ſpede of his purpoſe/ he prayed hym of counſell/ as touchynge ſyr Edwarde of Carnaruan his broder/ & ſayde not longe agone he was kyng of Englōd what thynge myght beeſt be done as touchynge his delyueraūce/ ſyth yͤ a comune fame was through Englōd yͤ he is alyue & ſauf/ whan yͤ pope herde hym tell yͤ ſyr Edmōd was alyue he cōmaunded yͤ erle yͤ he ſholde helpe wͭ all yͤ power yͤ he myght yͤ he were delyuered out of pryſon/ & ſaue his body in all maner yͤ he myght/ and to brynge this thynge to an ende he aſſoyled hym & his cōpany (a pena et culpa). Tho toke Edmonde of Wodſtok his leue of the pope/ and came agayne in to Englond/ & whā ſyr Edmond was come/ ſome of the frere prechers came and ſayd that ſyr Edwarde his broder yette was alyue in the caſtell of Corfe/ vnder the kepynge of ſyr Thomas Gurney/ tho ſpedde hym yͤ forſayd Edmonde as faſte as he myght goo/ tyll he came vnto the caſtell of Corfe/ and acqueynted hym & ſpake ſo goodly & fayre to Johā Deuerell/ that was coneſtable of the ſame caſtell/ & gaue hym ryche yeftes for to haue acqueyntaunce of hym and to knowe of his counſell. And thus it befell that the forſayd Edmonde prayed ſpecyally to tell hym pryuely of his lorde his broder ſyr Edward/ yf he lyued or were dede & yf he were alyue he prayed hym ones to haue a ſyght of hym/ & this ſyr Johā Deuerell was a hyghe herted man & full of courage/ & anſwerd ſhortly to ſyr Edmōd & ſayd/ yͤ ſyr Edwarde hys brother was in helthe & vnder his kepyng & durſt not ſhewe hym to no man ſyth it was defended hym in yͤ kȳges halfe Edward/ yͤ was Edwardes ſone of Carnaruan/ & alſo by the cōmaūdemēt of quene Iſabell yͤ kynges moder/ & of ſyr Roger Mortymer/ yͤ he ſholde ſhewe his body to no man of the world/ ſauf only to them vpon lyf & lyme & dyſherytȳg of his heyres for euer more but yͤ fals traytour falſly lyed for he was not in his warde/ but was takē thens and lad to yͤ caſtell of Berkley by ſyr Thomas of Gurney/ by yͤ cōmaūdemēt of Mortymer/ tyll he was deed as before is ſayd/ but ſyr Edmōde of Wodſtok wyſt no thynge yͤ ſyr Edwarde his broder was deed/ wherupō he toke a letter to kȳge Edwarde his broder as to his worthy lorde/ & receyued yͤ letter of hym & behyght hym ryght faythfully to do his meſſage wͭout fayle And wͭ that ſyre Edmōde toke leue of the forſayd Ihoh & yede in to his owne coūtre & lordſhyp in Kent yͤ he had ther. And ne as this ſame Johā wyſt/ yͤ ſyr Edmōd was gone in to Kente his owne lordſhyp anone he went in all yͤ haſte yͤ he myghte. fro yͤ caſtell of Corfe & came to ſyr Roger Mortymer & toke hym yͤ letter yͤ ſyr Edmonde of Wodſtok erle of Kent had taken hym cloſed and enſealed with his owne ſeale/ & whan ſyr Roger Mortymer had receyued the letter/ he vncloyſed it/ and ſawe yͤ was cōteyned therin/ and began it to rede/ wherof yͤ begynnynge was this

¶ Worſhyppes and reuerence with bro

thus aleggance & solace you/ syr knyght worshypful & dere broder/ yf it please you. I praye you hertely þ ye be in good comforte/ for I shall so ordeyn for you/ that ye shal come out of pryson & be delyuered of þ perylle that ye been in/ And vnderstondeth of your greate lordshyp/ þ I haue to myn assentynge almoost all þ grete lordes of Englōde/ with all theyr apparaylle that is to saye w armoure/ with tresoure wout nombre/ for to mayntene your quarell so ferforthe/ that ye shall be kynge agayn as ye were before/ & that they haue sworne to me vpon a boke/ þ as well prelates as erles & barons. ¶ Whā syr Roger Mortymer sawe & vnderstode þ myght & the strenght of the letter anone his herte for wroth began to boll & euyll herte bare towarde syr Edmōde of wodstok/ þ was erle of Kente/ & w all the hast þ he myght he wente vnto dame Isabell the quene/ that was þ kynges moder/ & shewed her syre Edmondes letter/ his wyll & his purpose/ & how þ he had colected & ordeyned to put downe kyng Edwarde of wyndsore her sone/ of his ryalte & of his kyngdom Now certes syr Roger sayd she/ hathe syr Edmonde done so now by my faders soule sayd she/ I wyll be therof auenged yf that god graunt me lyfe/ and that in shorte tyme. And with that quene Isabell wente to kynge Edwarde her sone/ there he was at þ parlement at wynchester to haue amende the wrongys and the tresspasses that were done amonge the people of his reame/ And tho she toke & shewed hym the letter that syr Edmonde of wodstock had made/ and ensealed it with his owne seale and badde hym vpon her blessynge that he sholde be auengyd vpon syr Edmond as vpō his dedly enmye. Tho was the quene sore wroth toward syr Edmonde erle of Kente, and [illegible] to kynge Edwarde her sone tyll þ he had sent [illegible] all they had after hym. And vpon þ þ kynge sente by his letter after syr Edmonde of wodstok that he sholde come & speke wt hym at wynchester all maner thynge left. And whan syr Edmonde sawe that þ kynge sent after hym w his letters ensealed/ he hasted hym in all that he myght tyll þ he came to wynchester. ¶ And whan the quene wyst that syr Edmonde was come to wynchester tho anone she prayed/ & so fast wente vnto kyng Edwarde her sone that the good erle was arested anone/ & vnto the barre before Roberte of [illegible] that was Coroner of the kynges housholde. And he assoted to hym syr Roger Mortimer/ & tho spake þ forsayde Roger & sayd/ syr Edmond Erle of Kente/ ye shall vnderstande that it is done vs to wyte & pryncypally vnto our lyege lord the kynge Edwarde of Englonde almyghty god hym saue & kepe/ þ ye be his dedly enmye/ & a traytoure/ & also a commune enmye to the reame/ & that ye haue been aboute many a daye for to make pryuy delyueraūce of syr Edwarde somtyme kynge of Englonde your brother/ þ whiche somtyme was put downe of his ryalte by the comyn assente of the lordes of Englonde in peasynge of our lorde the kynges estate/ & also of his reame. ¶ Tho answerde the good man & sayd/ forsoth syr vnderstonde well that I was neuer traytoure vnto my kynge/ ne to the reame/ and that I do me on god & on þ worlde/ & therfore by my kynges leue I shal it proue & defende as a man ought for to do. ¶ Tho sayd Mortymer/ syr Edmonde. it is so trouthly knowē/ þ it maye not be well gaynsayd/ and that in presence of all that here been. it shall be well proued. Now beholde this sayd Mortymer the same letter that syr Edmonde had take to syr Iohn Deueryll in the castell of Corf for to take to kynge Edwarde his brother þ syr Edmonde [illegible] of [illegible] meſſagere ÿ ſyr John Deuerel had be ſo haſte to delyuer his letter in ſuch wyſe to Mortymer/ & thought no maner of thynge of ÿ letter. ¶The Mortymer ſayd to ſyr Edmond & ſhewed a letter ſealed/ & axed hym yf ÿ he knewe ÿ letter & ÿ ſeale. ¶This ſyr Edmonde loked theron/ & auyſed hym longe tyme on the poynte of ÿ ſeale/ for he myght not ſe ÿ letter within/ & wyſt well that it was his ſeale/ & thought ÿ it had be ſome letter ÿ had bore no grete charge and thought nothynge of ÿ other letter. And ſayd openly in herynge of them all/ ye ſay ſoth this is my ſeale and I wyll it not forſake. Lo ſayd ſyr Mortymer/ ſyres ye here al what he hath ſayd & ÿ he knowlegeth hym ÿ this is his letter & his ſeale And now ye ſhal here what is conteyned therin. And this Mortymer opened ÿ letter ÿ he had folde tofore togyder/ & red it openly worde by worde in herynge of thē all/ & whan ÿ letter was red ſayde ſyres/ ye haue herde all ÿ herin is wryte/ & that he hath knowleged ÿ this is his letter & his ſeale/ & he may not go therefro. And then they cryed & gaue dome ÿ he ſholde be hanged & drawē/ & his hed ſmyten of in a maner of a traytour & he & his heyrs deſherited for euermore/ & ſo he was lad bach & put in to pryſon/ & whā this was done/ & ÿ quene wyſt ÿ he was dampned by ÿ way of lawe/ bothe of lyfe & of lyme and his heyres dyſherited for euermore though ope knowlegynge in playn court there them thought ÿ it were good ÿ the ſayd ſyr Edmonde were haſtly ſlayne without wetynge of ÿ kynge/ or elles ÿ kynge wolde lyghtly forgyue hȳ his deth and it ſholde tourne them to moche ſorowe/ ſo as he was coupable. And anone the quene through counſeyl of ÿ Mortymer/ & without any other counſeyle ſent in haſt to the baylyfe of Wyncheſtre that he ſholde ſmyte of ſyr Edmondes hed erle of Kent without ony maner abydynge or reſpyte vpō payne of lyfe & lymme And that he ſhold haue none other execucyon/ bycauſe of taryenge not withſtandynge ÿ Jugement. Tho toke ÿ baylyfe ſyr Edmonde out of pryſon/ & lad hȳ beſyde ÿ caſtell of Wyncheſtre/ & there they made a gōgfermer ſmyte of his heed/ for none other durſt it do/ & ſo he deyed there alas ÿ whyle/ ÿ is to ſay ÿ.x. day of Octobre ÿ.iii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne. And whan the kynge wyſte therof/ he was wonder ſory/ & lete entyere hym at ÿ freres Mynors at Wyncheſtre.

¶Of the dethe of ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of Marche.

AND ſo it befell at that tyme ÿ ſyr Roger Mortymer erle of ÿ Marche was ſo proude & ſo hauteyne ÿ he helde no lorde of ÿ realme his pere. And tho became he ſo coueytous ÿ he folowed dame Iſabell ÿ quenes court ÿ was kynge Edwardes moder & beſet his penyworth with ÿ offycers of ÿ quenes houſeholde/ in ÿ ſame maner that ÿ kynges offycers dyd. And ſo he made his takynge/ as touchynge of vitayle & alſo of cariages/ & all he dyde for bycauſe of expenſes/ & to gadre treſoure. And ſo he dyde wout nombre in all that he myght. Tho had he made hym wonder preuy with quene Iſabell/ and ſo moche lordſhyppe and retenewe had ÿ all ÿ grete lordes of Englonde of hym were adrad/ wherfore ÿ kynge & his counſeyl towarde hym were agreued and ordeyned amonge theym to vndowe hym through pure reaſon & lawe for cauſe that kynge Edwarde that was ÿ kynges fader traytouſly through hym was murdred in ÿ caſtell of Corf/ as before is ſayd more playnly in ſome parte this boke/ of his dethe. And ſome that were of ÿ kynges coūseyl wente Mortymer/ ⁊ tolde hym in preuyte howe ẏ ẏ kynge ⁊ his coūseyle were about ſrome daye to bey hym for to dystroy and slee/ wherfore Mortymer was sore anoyed and angry as ẏ deuyll agaynst them of ẏ kynges coūseyle/ and sayd he wolde of thē be auēged/ howe soo euer he take on. It was not longe afterwarde ẏ kynge Edwarde ⁊ dame Phelyp his wyfe / ⁊ dame Isabell ẏ kynges moder / ⁊ syr Roger Mortymer ne wente vnto Notyngham there for to soiourne. And so it befell ẏ quene Isabell through coūseyl of Mortymer toke to her ẏ keyes of ẏ gates of the castell / so that noo man myght come nother in nor oute/ but thorough cōmaūdement of Mortymer/ nor the kynge nor none of his coūseyle. And ẏ tyme it befell ẏ Mortymer as a deuyll for wrath bolled ⁊ also for wrath ẏ he had agaynst kynge Edwardes men/ ⁊ pryncypally agaynst them ẏ had hym accused to ẏ kynge of ẏ deth of syr Edwarde his fader. And pryuely a counseyle was take bytwene quene Isabell ⁊ Mortymer / ⁊ ẏ bysshop of Lyncoln ⁊ syr Symonde of Bedforde/ ⁊ syr Hugh of Trompynton/ ⁊ other preuy of theyr counseyle/ for to vndo them all ẏ Mortymer had accused vnto ẏ kynge of his faders dethe of treason and of felonye. Wherfore all tho that were of ẏ kynges counseyle whan they wyst of Mortymers castynge/ pryuely came to kynge Edwarde ⁊ sayd ẏ Mortymer wolde thē dystroye/ bycause ẏ they had hym accused of kynge Edwardes dethe his fader. And prayed hym ẏ he wolde maynteyne them in theyr ryght. And these were ẏ lordes that pursued this quarell/ syr Wyllyam of Mountagu/ syr Wyllyam de Bohun/ syr Wyllyā his broder/ syr Rauf Stafforde/ syr Roberte of Uffforde/ syr Wyllyam of Clynton/ syr Johan Neuell of Hornbye ād ⁊ many other of theyr consente. And all tho sworen vpon a boke to maynteyne ẏ quarell in as moche as they myght. And it befell so after ẏ syr Wyllyam Mountagu/ ne none of the kynges frendes myght not be herberowed in ẏ castell for Mortymer/ but went ⁊ toke there herberowe in dyuerse places of ẏ towne of Notyngham. And the were they sore aferde/ lest ẏ Mortymer sholde them dystroy. And in hast they came vnto kynge Edwarde syr Wyllyā of Mountagu ⁊ other ẏ were in the castell ⁊ pryuely they tolde ẏ he ne none of his company sholde not take ẏ Mortymer wout coūseyle ⁊ helpe of Wyllyam of Elande constable of ẏ same castell. Now truly sayd ẏ kynge I loue you well/ ⁊ therfore I counseyle you ẏ ye go to ẏ forsayd constable/ ⁊ cōmaūde hym in my name ẏ he be your frende ⁊ helper/ for to take ẏ Mortymer/ all thynge vnto [illegible] vpon perryll of lyf and lymme. Tho sayd Mountagu Syre my lorde graunt mercy. Tho went forth the forsayd Mountagu/ and came to the Constable of ẏ castell/ ⁊ tolde hym ẏ kynges wyll. And he answered ⁊ sayd/ the kynges wyll sholde be done in as moche as he myght/ ⁊ that he wolde not spare for no manere of deth And that he swore and made his othe.

Tho sayd syr Wyllyam of Mountagu to the Constable of ẏ castell in herynge of them all that were helpynge to the same quarell. Now certes dere frende/ vs behoueth to werke ⁊ do by your aduys for to take ẏ Mortymer/ sith ẏ ye be keper of the castell ⁊ haue ẏ keyes in your warde. Syr sayd the Constable/ wyll ye vnderstande ẏ the castel gates ben locked with the keyes that dame Isabell sent thyder and by nyght she hath the keyes therof ⁊ layeth them vnder ẏ hedsell of hir bedde vnto the morowe/ ⁊ so ye may not come in to the castell by the gates/ by no manere of wyse/ but I knowe an aleye that ſtretcheth out of yͤ warde vnder yͤ erth in to the forſayd caſtell/ yͭ goeth in to yͤ weſt whiche aleye dame Iſabell yͤ quene/ nor none of her men nor yͤ Mortymer/ nor none of his company knoweth it not. And ſo I ſhall lede you through yͭ aley/ ⁊ ſo ye ſhall come in to yͤ caſtell wͭout aſpyenge of ony man yͭ are your enmyes. And the ſame nyght ſyr Wyllyam Mõtagu/ ⁊ all the lordes of his quarell/ ⁊ yͤ ſame Coneſtable alſo went tyte to horſe/ ⁊ made ſemblaunt as it were for to go out of Mortymers ſyghte. But anone as Mortymer herde this tydynges he wende yͭ he wolde haue gone ouer ſee for fere of hȳ. And anone ryght he ⁊ his cõpany toke a coũſeyle amonge them for to let theyr paſſage/ ⁊ ſent letters anone to yͤ porters ſoo yͭ none of yͤ grete lordes ſholde go home to theyr owne cõtrees/ but if they were areſted ⁊ taken. And amonge other thynges Wyllyam Eland Coneſtable of yͤ forſayd caſtell pryuely lad ſyr Wyllyam Mõtagu ⁊ his company by yͤ forſayd waye vnder the erthe tyll they came in to yͤ caſtell and went vp in to yͤ toure there yͭ Mortymer was in. But ſyr Hugh of Trompynton them eſcryed hydouſly/ ⁊ ſayd a traytours it is for nought/ yͭ ye ben comen in to this caſtel ye ſhal dey yet an euyll deth euerychone. And anone one of them that was in mõtagues company vp wͭ a mace/ ⁊ ſmote yͤ ſame Hugh vpõ yͤ heed yͭ the brayne braſt out ⁊ fell on yͤ grounde/ and ſo was he deed of an euyll deth. Tho toke they Mortymer as he armed hym at yͤ toures dore/ whan he herde the noyſe of them for drede. And whan quene Iſabel ſawe that Mortymer was taken ſhe made moche ſorowe in herte ⁊ theſe wordes vnto them ſayd. Now fayre ſyres I pray you yͭ ye do no harme to his body a worthy knyght our welbeloued frende ⁊ our dere coſyn. Tho went they thens ⁊ came and broughte Mortymer/ and preſented hym vnto kynge Edwarde/ and he commaunded to brynge hym in ſauewarde. But anone as they that were conſentynge vnto Mortymers doynge herde tell yͭ he was taken they went and hydde them and pryuely by nyghte wente oute of the towne eche one his waye with heuy herte and mornynge chere/ and lyued vpon theyr landes as wel as they myght. And that ſame yere that Mortymer was takẽ he had. ix. ſcore knyghtes wͭout ſquyers and ſergeauntes of armes and fote men And then was Mortymer ladde to London/ and ſyr Edmonde of Bedforde was lad with hym/ and was taken to the coneſtable of the toure to kepe. But afterwarde was the Mortymers lyfe examyned at Weſtmynſtre before yͤ kynge/ and before all yͤ grete lordes of Englonde/ for peryll that myght falle to the realme. And to enquere alſo whiche were conſentynge to ſyr Edwardes deth yͤ kynges fader/ and alſo through whome yͤ Scottes eſcaped fro Stanhope in Scotlande without leue of kynge Edwarde. And alſo how the chartre of ragman was delyuered vnto the Scottes therin the homages ⁊ feautees of yͤ lordes of Scotlande were conteyned that the Scottes ſholde doo euermore to the Englyſſhe kynge for the realme of Scotlande/ wherfore he was Iuged to be drawe and hanged for his treaſon. And this myſchyef came vnto hym on ſaynt Andrewes euen. In the yere of the Incarnacyon of our lord Iheſu cryſt M.CCC.xxx.

¶ How kynge Edwarde gate agayne vnto hym gracyouſly yͤ homages and feautees of Scotlande/ wherof he was put out through falſe counſeyl of quene Iſabell his moder/ ⁊ ſyr Roger Mortymer/ yͭ was newely made erle of Marche.

Now haue ye herde how Johñ baylioll in the tyme of pees was chosen to be kynge of Scotlande for cause ẏ he came of ẏ eldest doughter of ẏ erle Dauyd of Huntyngton/ ẏ was kynge Wyliamers brother of Scotlande ẏ deyed wᵗout heyre of his body begoten. And how this Johñ made his feaute & homage to kynge Edwarde Henryes sone the thyrde for his landes of Scotlande/ & how he afterwarde wlsayd his homage through counseyle of ẏ Scottes/ in ẏ yere of our lorde M.CC.lxxxiiii. & sent vnto ẏ pope through a false suggestyon ẏ he made his othe vnto ẏ forsayd kynge Edward ouer his astate & his wyll/ of ẏ whiche othe ẏ pope hym assoyled through his bulles to hym ꝑsent. And anone as kynge Edwarde wyst therof he ordeyned anone his barons & came vnto Barwyke & cõquered ẏ towne/ at ẏ whiche conquest there were slayne.xxv. thousande.&.vii.C. & Bayloll ẏ was kynge of Scotlande came & yelded hym to good kynge Edwarde/ & ẏ kynge delyuered hym oute of ẏ toure of London/ & all the grete lordes with hym ẏ tho were taken at Barwyke & gaue them saufcõduyte to go in to Scotlande. And ẏ Scottes sythe through theyr falsnesse warred vpõ the good kynge Edwarde. And whã syr Johan Bayloll kyng of Scotlande sawe all this he wente ouer see vnto Dumpier and lyued there vpon his landes as well as he myght tyll ẏ ẏ Scottes wolde amende the of theyr mysdedes & trespace & lad with hym syr Edwarde his sone/ wherfore ẏ Scottes in dyspyte of hym called hȳ syr Johñ Turnlabarde/ for bycause ẏ he wolde not offende nor trespace agaynst ẏ good kynge Edwarde of Englonde. And soo he forsoke his realme of Scotlande/ and set therof but lytell pryce. And thus syr Johan dwelled longe tyme in Fraunce tyll ẏ he dyed there & syr Edwarde his sone receyued his herytage/ & dyd homage to ẏ kynge of Fraunce/ for his landes of Dumpier. And sythe befell afterwarde that Edwarde ẏ was Johñ Baylols sone had in hym a squyer of Englonde ẏ was borne in Yorke shyre/ ẏ was called Johñ of Barnaby/ & this Edwarde Bayloll loued hym moche/ & was ryght hym & full pryuy. And so this Johñ was in debate wᵗ a Frensshe man in ẏ towne of Dumpier & so he slewe hym & wente his way in all ẏ hast ẏ he myght in to ẏ castell for to haue helpe of his lorde/ & anone came the offycers of ẏ towne to take Johñ of barnaby as a felon/ & syr Edwarde his lorde holpe hym & rescowed hym/ & by nyght made hym go out of ẏ castell/ & so he wente his way & came in to englonde wᵗout ony harme. And whan ẏ kynge of Fraũce sawe ẏ syr Edwarde had rescowed his felon/ he became wonder wrothe agaynst syr Edwarde/ & anone lete hym areste & toke in to his handes al his landes. Tho dwelled syr Edwarde in pryson vnto ẏ tyme ẏ syr Henry of Beaumonde came in to Fraunce the whiche Henry was somtyme erle of Anguysshe in Scotlande & was put out therof whan thaccordement was bytwene Englonde & Scotlande through quene Isabell & Roger Mortymer & theyr cõpany for ẏ maryage ẏ she made bytwene Dauyd ẏ was Robert bruis sone & dame Jone of Toure kynge Edwardes syster of Englonde/ & well vnderstode this that at the ende he sholde come to his ryght/ but yf it were syr Edwarde Bayloll/ that was ryght heyre of ẏ realme of Scotlande. And the kynge of Fraunce Lowys loued moche this syr Henry. And he was with hym full pryuy/ and thought for to make a delyueraunce of syr Edwarde Bayloll/ yf he myght in ony manere of wyse. Tho prayed he ẏ kynge ẏ it wolde please his noble grace to graunt hym syr

Edwarde Bayloll bode here ẏ next parlyament ẏ he myght tyme ẃ his owne tenauntes in ẏ meane tyme/⁊ ẏ he myght ſtande to the Iugged ẃ his peres at the parlyament. And ẏ kynge graũted hym his prayer/⁊ made ẏ forſayd Edwarde to be delyuered out of pryſon/in ẏ maner aboue ſayd/⁊ anone as he was oute of pryſon ſyr Henry toke hym forth ẃ hym ⁊ ladde hym in to Englonde/⁊ made hym dwelle pryuely at ẏ maner of Sandhall vpon Ouſe in yorke ſhyre ẃ ẏ lady Veſcy. And ſo he ordeyned hym there an huge retenewe of Englyſſhe men ⁊ alſo of alyaũtes/for to conquere ayen his herytage/⁊ ſo he gaue moche ſyluer to ẏ ſouldyours ⁊ alyaũtes for to helpe hym/⁊ they behyght for to helpe hym in ẏ they myght/but they fayled hym at his moſte nede. And at ẏ tyme Dauyd erle of Morref herde telle how that ſyr Edwarde Bayloll was pryuely come in to Englonde/⁊ came to hȳ ⁊ made grete Ioye of his comynge ⁊ ſayd vnto hym ⁊ behyght hȳ ẏ all ẏ grete lordes of Englonde ſholde be to hym entendaunt ⁊ ſholde hȳ holde for kynge as ryght heyre of Scotlande/and dyde to hym feaute Tho came ſyr Henry of Beaumount to kynge Edwarde of Englonde/⁊ prayed hym in the way of charyte that he wolde graũt of his grace to ſyr Edwarde Bayloll ẏ he myght ſaufly goo by lande from Sandhall vnto Scotlande to conquere his ryght ⁊ herytaũce in Scotland. The kynge anſwered ⁊ ſayd/yf that I ſuffre Bayloll go through my lande in to Scotlande/ẏ peple wolde ſay/ẏ I ſholde be aſſentynge vnto the company. Now ſyr I pray you ẏ ye wolde gyue hym leue to take wyth hym ſouldyours of Englyſſhe men that they myght ſaufly lede hym through your lande to Scotlande/⁊ ſyr vpõ this couenaũt ẏ yf it ſo befall as god it forbyd ye be diſcomfyted in batayll through the Scottes that I ⁊ alſo all the lordes that holde ẃ Bayloll ben for euermore out of our rentes ẏ we haue in Englonde. And there ẏ kynge vpõ this couenaũt graunted theyr bone as touchynge hym/⁊ tho ẏ were of ẏ ſame quarell/ẏ whiche claymed for to haue landes ⁊ rẽtes in ẏ realme of Englonde. And theſe were the names of thoſe lordes that purſued this forſayd quarell/ẏ is to ſaye/ſyre Edwarde Bayloll ẏ whiche chalenged ẏ realme of Scotlande/ſyr Henry Beaumount erle of Anguyſſhe/ſyr Dauyd of Strobolȳ erle of Atheles/ſyr Geffray of Mowbray Walter Comyn/⁊ many other ẏ were put out of theyr herytage in Scotland whan the peas was made bytwene Englonde and Scotlande/as before is ſayde. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that theſe lordes toke with them. v.C. men of armes/and.ij. thouſande archers and of fote men/and tho wente in to ſhyppe at Rauenſpore/⁊ ſayled by the ſee tyll that they came vnto Scotlande/⁊ came to lande at Kynkehorne.xij.myle fro ſaynt Iohannes towne. And anone ſente out theyr ſhyppes agayne/for that they ſholde not be hurte/nor empyred/neyther that no man ſhold go in to the ſhyppes agayne though that they hadde nede/but abyde all peryllles/⁊ not flee but lande/⁊ rather ſuffre deth thã flee for to mayntayne theyr true quarell. Whan ẏ erle of Fyffe a fyers man ⁊ a ſterne herde ẏ Bayloll was come for to take ẏ lande of Scotlande/he came in haſt to Kynkehorne ẃ.xij.M. Scottes for to dyſtrope hym/that he ſholde not come to lande. But ſyr Edward Bayloll ⁊ his cõpany there hym diſcomfyted/at the whiche diſcomfyture ſyr Alyſaunder Seton was there ſlayne/⁊ many other. The erle of Fyffe was ſo ſore and full euyll aſhamed that ſo lytell a company hadde hym diſcomfyted/⁊ ſhamefully put hym and all his company yͤ were alyue for to flee. Tho came ſyr Edwarde Bayloll / ⁊ toke the countre all about hym / tyll he came vnto the abbaye of Dounfermlyn / ⁊ there he founde vytayles for hym ⁊ for his folke / and amonge all other thynge he founde in a chambre about fyue hondred of grete ſtaues of fyne oke w long pyckes of yron ⁊ of ſtele. And he toke them ⁊ delyuered them to yͤ mooſt ſtrongeſt men of his companye. And anone after he yede fro thens / ⁊ lodged hym in a felde .ii. myles from ſaynt Johannes towne. And whan the burgeys of yͤ towne herde how yͤ erle of Fyfe was dyſcomfyted through Bayloll / brake yͤ brydges that they had made ouer the water of Erne / ſoo that Bayloll myght not goo ouer / wherfore he lodged hym there all yͤ nyght / but lytell hede he toke of reſt / ⁊ ſayd vnto his people. Now dere lordes ye knowe full well / yͤ we ben now lodged bytwene our enmyes / ⁊ they may vs hampre there is no bote but deth / wherfore yf we abyde ſtyll all this nyght I wene it ſhall tourne vs to moche harme. For yͤ power of Scotlande may euer were ⁊ encreace / ⁊ we may not ſoo do / ⁊ we ben but lytell people agaynſt theym. Wherfore I praye you for the loue of almyghty god make we vs bolde ⁊ hardy / and yͤ we may myghtly the Scottes this nyght / ⁊ boldly warre vpon thē / ⁊ lete vs purſue them this nyght. And yf they be trauayled though vs / ⁊ ſe our hardyneſſe other Scottes that ſe them ſo trauayled and wery / the ſoner wyll they be amadde with vs to fyght / ⁊ ſpecyally than ſhall we fyght with them / ⁊ on them purſue / ſo yͤ through yͤ grace of god all yͤ worlde ſhall ſpeke of yͤ doughtyneſſe of our cheualry. And ſyrs vnderſtande well that all yͤ company that came with ſyr Robert Bayloll graunted well vnto that counſeyle / and were therof ryght glad / and anone purſued vpō the Scottes / that they became wonder wery. And Bayloll ⁊ his company ſore folowed them ⁊ dyde them moche harme ⁊ ſlaynge through theyr aſſentes / ſo that they myght not for ſtubburneſſe them helpe / ⁊ for lytell people. But tho ſayd the Scottes amonge them / what is now befall that ſo lytel a people as Bayloll hath in wyng hath vs ſo moche trauayle ⁊ ſo ſnyowe. Now certes it ſemeth vs that he werketh by grace / for he is wonder gracyous in his quarell / ⁊ we certes ſhall be dede or that we may come to hym vs for to yelde / ſyth that his fader ſet of vs noo pryce. ¶ And amonge all other thynges Bayloll ⁊ his people paſſed the water of Erne ſo that Robert Swynerton yͤ ſone was ſyers ⁊ angry ⁊ went forth and they ſawe people of armes full well arayed / ⁊ forth they wente vnto them ⁊ with them faught ⁊ ſlewe ⁊ toke as many as wolde abyde. And netheles at yͤ aſſaut they wende it had be yͤ grete hoſte of Scotlande. And whan it came to yͤ morowe they gadred them togyder ⁊ reſted them a whyle. And whyle yͤ Englyſſhe men reſted them the noble baron Thomas Weſcy / ⁊ yͤ noble baron ſtafforde pyched theyr hoſtes vp and downe by yͤ hylles / for to kepe the entrees of yͤ countre / ⁊ as they pyched vp ⁊ downe they ſawe a grete hoſte of good aray embraced in theyr wynges / w helmes and ſheldes ſhynynge commynge vpō thē. ⁊ then came tho .ii. barons ayen to Baylols folke / ⁊ ſayd. Now for yͤ loue of god be of good chere / for ye ſhall haue batayle anone ryght. ⁊ tho ſpake ſyr Foulke the ſone of Gareyne / a baron of grete renowne ⁊ of dedes of armes / ſyrs vnderſtande what I wyll ſaye. I haue ſeen many dyuerſe wynges / as well amonge Saraſyns ⁊ Jewes / as amonge the Scottes / and yet ſawe I neuer yͤ fourth parte of yͤ wynge ſyght ⁊ therfore yf ye wyll abyde our enmyes / we ben ynough for thē. But yf we be not of good herte & of good courage we ben but loſt. And therfore for the loue of god / take to vs good herte / & lete vs be bolde / & thynke we neuer of our wyues ne of oure chyldren / but only to conquere our enmyes in batayll / & throughe yͤ helpe of our lord we ſhall them ouercome. And with that came the hoſtes of yͤ Scottes towarde them full fyerſly / & agaynſte ſyr Edward Bayllol in thre batayles wel arayed in armure. And wonder fyerſly they came towarde yͤ Bayllos company. But whan ſyr Donald erle of Marcell yͭ was with the Scottes / ſawe all this / he ſayd to Robert Br⁹ yͤ ſone of Robert Br⁹ theſe wordes / Syr Robert ſayd he / full ſore me forthynketh at my herte / yͭ theſe peple yͭ Bayllol hathe brought with hȳ ſholde dye with dynte of Scottes ſwerdes / ſyth that they ben cryſten men as we ben / & therfore me thynketh that it were grete charyte / for to ſende to them / for to yelde them / vnto our mercy / & raunſome them vnto greuous raunſomme / for as moche as they haue takē our londes and done yll. Now certes ſayd ſyr Robert the Brus / I haue well perceyued / that thou arte an enmye & a traytour to Scotlonde ſythe yͭ wylte conſent to ſaue our dedely enmyes / yͭ haue done vs moch ſorow and ſhame / and now it ſemeth well yͭ ye be of theyr aſſet. Now certes Robert ſayd ſyr Donald / falſly ye lye. I am not of there cōpanye ne of theyr conſente / & yͭ haſtely ye ſhall ſe / for I wyll fyghte wᵗ the rather thā any of this cōpany / & certes ſyre Roberte ſayd he I ſhall in mauger of thy hede aſſayle them or yͤ / & wᵗ yͭ they pryched theyr ſtedes fyerſly on Gaſkemore / and theyr wynge them folowed on a renge. And tho came they & met wᵗ Bayllol & his company at an hangynge bough of yͤ moore in a ſtrayte paſſage & ſo faſt they haſted thē vnto the Englyſſhe men yͭ thouſādes fell to the grounde echone ouer vpon other in to an hepe bothe horſe and man / Bayllol and his mē myghtely ſtode agaynſt them & faſt ſlewe the Scottes to the groūde / & many they ſore wounded / ſo longe / tyll yͭ they ſtode vpon them / and foyned them wᵗ theyr ſwerdes and ſperes thrugh theyr bodyes / & full ſore they were trauaylled vpon them / tyll that they became wōder wery / and wyſt not what for to do / and yͤ Scottes yͭ were lefte alyue / flede awaye for to ſaue them ſelfe in the beſt maner yͭ they myght. And tho purſued theym ſyr Edwarde Bayllol and his men / & ſlewe of them tyll it was nyght. And fro thens they wente to ſaynt Johannes towne / & toke it / & helde theym there / & vytaylled theym ſelfe at theyr owne wyll / for they foūde ynough where with to make mery. Tho made Bayllol his men yͭ were wounded go to ſhyp / to ſayle in to Englond to hele theyr woundes / & in that tyme there was a flemynge in yͤ ſee / a ſtronge thefe & a robber yͭ was called Crab / & this flemynge was dryuē out of Flaunders for his wyckedneſſe & therfore he came in to ſcotlōde to holde wᵗ yͤ ſcottes / & dyd as moche harme to yͤ Englyſſhe mē as he myght do. And this Crabbe met this Bayllols mē in yͤ ſee yͭ were wounded before in batayl yͭ were ſēt agayne in to Englōd / for to hele theyr woūdes / and this crabbe gaue to them a grete aſſaute / & wolde haue ſlayne theym. But the Englyſſhe men defended them manfully & dyſcomfyted Crabbe & his companye & he flede in to Scotlande. And as he came towarde ſaynt Johānes towne / he foūd a grete company of Scottes / that were come agayne togyder after yͤ dyſcōfyture at Gaſkmore yͭ whiche byſeyged Bayllol and his men in the ſame towne of ſaynt Johan. And anone tolde to the Scottes how that he was dyſcomlyued of ÿ Englysshme ÿ were wounded at Gaskmore/ ÿ wente towarde Englond for to hele theyr woundes/ & sayd to ÿ Scottes/ ÿ they sholde haue nother power ne myght ne grace ayenst Edward Bayllol bycause ÿ he scomfyted/ & empayred all ÿ chyualry of Scotland with a handfull of me as to acompte ayenst ÿ Scottes ÿ were slayne/ wherfore he counseyled to remeue ÿ syege frome saynt Johannes towne & kepe theym in ÿ best manere that they myght. ¶ The Scottes vnderstode that Crab sayd soth/ forsoke the syege & went thens by nyght. Whan this thynge was knowe thrugh Scotlande how that the lordes & knyghtes were dyscomfyted at Gaskmore of Scotlād through sir Edwarde Bayllol/ ye shall vnderstande ÿ the lordes & ladyes/ & ÿ gentylles of Scotlande came wonder fast to saȳt Johānes towne & yelded them to Bayllol/ & to hym dyde homage & feaute for theyr londes & yelde them to his peas and he them receyued frely/ and fro thēs he went to ÿ abbay of Scone/ & there he was crowned kynge of Scotland/ and after he lete crye his peas throughout all ÿ londe. And at that same tyme it befell ÿ kynge Edwarde helde his parlyamēt amōg his lyeges at ÿ newe castel on Tyne/ for to amend ÿ trespaces and ÿ wronges/ that had ben done in his lond/ & syr Edward Bayllol kyng of Scotlande came to hym thyder/ & dyde to hym homage & feaute/ for the reame of Scotlande. And in this manere kynge Edwarde of Englond gadred agayne his homages and feautes of Scotlande/ wherof he was put out/ through counseyll & assente of dame Isabel his moder/ & of syr Roger Mortymer erle of marche/ tho toke Bayllol kynge of Scotlande his leue of kynge Edwarde of Englonde/ & wente thens in to his owne lande of Scotlande & set but lytell by suche as had counseyled hym/ & holpen hym in his quarell/ wherfore they were fraunce hy/ & were ÿ lyued by theyr owne landes & rentes in Scotlande. And so it befell afterwarde not longe/ ÿ ÿ kynge of Scotlande ne remembred & came to ÿ towne of [illegible] & there toke his ynne/ & thyder came to hym a cōpany of knyghtes/ straunge me & wyght/ & yelded them vnto the kynge. And were them so fayre in wede & in semblaunce/ so that he trusted moche vpon them/ & anone as ÿ traytoures sawe that he trusted moche on them/ they ordeyned amonge them fyfty in a company/ & wolde haue slayne theyr lord the kynge/ but through the grace of almyghty god/ he brake through a wall an hole in his chambre/ & as god wolde scaped theyr treachery/ and all his men were slayne/ and he escaped with moche wo vnto the towne of Carboll/ And there he helde hym sore anoyed. And this befel on our ladyes euen ÿ concepcyon. ¶ Tho sente Edwarde Bayllol to kynge Edwarde of Englonde/ how falsly and traytourly he was in lytell tyme put to shame & sorowe through his lyege men/ on whome he trusted wonder moche/ & prayed hym for the loue of god ÿ he wolde maynteyne hym & helpe hym agaynst his enemyes. ¶ The kynge of englond had of hym grete pyte/ & behyght to helpe hym & socoure hym. And sente hym worde/ that he sholde holde hym in the forsayd cyte of Cardoyll/ tyll that he had gadred his power. ¶ Tho ordeyned kynge Edwarde of Englonde a counseyll atte London/ and he lete gadre his men in dyuers shyres of Englonde/ and whan he was all redy/ he wente towarde the towne of Berwyk vpō Twede/ and theder came to hym kynge Edwarde Bayllol of Scotlande with his powere/ and beseged the towne/ And made without ÿ towne a fayre towne of pauylyons/ & dyched them all aboute/ so that thy had no brede of the Scottes/ and made manye aſſautes wt gōnes ⁊ with other engynnes to ẏ towne/ wherwith they dyſtroyed many fayre houſes/ ⁊ chyrches alſoo were bete downe to ẏ erthe wt grete ſtones/ ẏ ſpytouſly came out of gonnes ⁊ other engynes. ⁊ nedeleſſe the Scottes kepte ryght well the towne/ ẏ tho two kynges myght not come therin longe tyme/ ⁊ nedeleſſe ẏ kynges abode there ſoo longe/ tyll tho ẏ were within ẏ towne fayled vytaylles ⁊ alſo they were ſo wery of wakynge/ ẏ they wyſt not what for to do. And ye ſhall underſtande ẏ the Scottes that were within the towne of Barewyk/ thrughe comȳ counſeyle ⁊ theyr aſſente/ lete crye upon ẏ walles of the towne/ ẏ they myght haue peas of ẏ Englyſſhe mē ⁊ therof they prayed ẏ kyng of his grace ⁊ mercy/ ⁊ prayed hym of trewes for .viii. dayes on this couenaūt/ ẏ yf they were not reſcowed in ẏ ſyde of ẏ towne towarde Scotlande of ẏ Scottes wtin. viii. dayes/ that they wold yelde them to the kynge/ ⁊ ẏ towne/ ⁊ to hold this couenaūte/ they proffered to ẏ kynge. xx. hoſtages out of ẏ towne of Barwyk. When the hoſtages were delyuered to ẏ kyng/ anone tho of ẏ towne ſent to ẏ Scottes/ ⁊ tolde them of theyr ſorow and myſchefe/ ⁊ ẏ Scottes came tho pryuely ouer the water of Twede to ẏ hought of ẏ abbay/ ⁊ ſyr Wyllyā Dyked ẏ was tho Stewarde of Scotlande/ ⁊ many other that came with hym/ put theym there in grete peryll of themſelf at that tyme and of theyr lyfe/ for they came ouer a brydge ẏ was broken and the ſtones a waye/ and many of theyr company were there drowned/ but the forſayd Wyllyam went ouer/ and other of his company/ and came by ẏ ſhyppes of Englonde/ ⁊ ſlewe in a barge of Hull. xvi. mē ⁊ after they wente in to ẏ towne of Barwyk by ẏ waters ſyde/ wher ſyr the Scottes helde tho the towne reſcowed/ ⁊ aſked theyr hoſtages agayne of the kynge of Englonde/ ⁊ the kynge ſente them worde agayne that they aryd theyr hoſtages with wronge ſyth ẏ they came into Englond ſyde/ for couenaūt was bytwene them/ ẏ the towne ſhold be reſcowed by the halfe of Scotland/ anone tho cōmaunded kynge Edwarde to yelde the towne/ or he wolde haue the hoſtages ⁊ the Scottes ſayd ẏ towne was reſcowed well Inoughe ⁊ therto they wolde them holde/ whan kynge Edwarde ſawe the Scottes breke theyr couenauntes ẏ they made/ he was wonder wrothe/ and anone lete ſyre Thomas Fytz Wyllyam/ and ſyr Alyſander of Feton warden of Barewyk the whiche Thomas was perſone of Dunbarre/ and lette theym betake fyrſte afore that other hoſtages/ for cauſe that ſyre Alyſanders father was keper of the towne.

¶ And tho commaunded euerye daye two hoſtages of the towne/ tyll that they were all do to dethe/ but yf they yelded the towne/ ⁊ ſo ye ſholde teche theym for to breke theyr conenauntes. And whā they of ẏ towne herd theſe tydynges, they became wonder ſory ⁊ ſent to the kynge ẏ he wold graūt thē other. viii. dayes of reſpyte/ ſo ẏ bytwene two hundred mē of armys ⁊. xx. mē of armis/ myght by ſtrēgth go bytwene thē to ẏ towne of Barewyk them for to vytayle/ ẏ ẏ towne muſte be holde for reſcowed. ⁊ yf ſo were ẏ. xxi. or. xxii. or more were ſlayne of tho two hūdred before ſayd/ ẏ ẏ towne ſholde not be hold for reſcowed/ ⁊ this couenaūte to be holde they ſente to hym other. xii. of ẏ forſayde towne in hoſtage/ ẏ kynge graūted theyr prayere/ ⁊ toke ẏ hoſtages on ſaynt Margaretes euen in ẏ yere of grace. M.CCC xxxiii. the Scottes came prykynge fyerſly well arayed in foure wynges/ for to meete kynge Edwarde of englonde/ and alſo Edwarde the kynge of Scotlande/ with they [illegible] & came full sharpely ayenst [illegible] tyme / and ÿ same tyme was slayn at Barwyk in the water of Twede ÿ he ne myght go oute on his horse / ne on lyue / & ÿ water was bytwene the two kynges and the towne of Englonde. And ÿ tyme abode the Scottes in ÿ other syde for cause ÿ ÿ Englysshe men sholde haue be drowned.

¶ This was ÿ aray of the Scottes / how ÿ they came in batayle agaynst ÿ two kynges of Englonde & of Scotlande In the vauntwarde of Scotlãd were these lordes

The erle of Morref / Jamys Frysell Symonde Frysell / walter Stewarde / Reynolde Cheyn / Patryk of Greham / Johñ le grasse / Jamys of Cordoyl Patryck Parkeys / Robert Caldecotes Phylyp of Mellebrun Thomas Gylbert Rauf wyse man. Adam gurdon / Jamys Garmat / Robert Bolt / Hugh Park. with xl. knyghtes new dubbyd. & .vi.C. men of armes. & .iii.M. of comyns / In ÿ fyrst parte of thaise batayll were these lordes / the Stewarde of Scotlande / ÿ erle of Morr Jamys his vncle / wyllyã Douglas Dauyd of Lyndesey / Marcolyn Flemynge / wyllyam of keth / Duncan Cambok with xxx / bachelers newe dubbed. ¶ In the seconde parte of ÿ batayll where these Lordes. Jamis Stewarde of Corden / Alein Stewarde / wyllyam abberthin / wyllyã Morrys / Jamys Fytzwyllyam / Adam le mose / walter Fytz Gylbert / Johñ of cerleton / Robert wallam. w. vii.C. men of armes / & xvii. M. comyns. ¶ In ÿ thyrde parte of ÿ batayll of Scotlande were these lordes. The Erle of Morref / the Erle of Ros / therle [illegible] / ÿ erle of Southerlande wyllyam of kyrkeley / Johñ Cabron / Gylbert of hey / and wyllyam ramsey / wyllyam Prendregest / Reynold Garde / wyllyam Garde / Arnolde Garde / & Thomas Dolphyn / with xl. knyghtes newe dubbed. xl.C. men of armys. xv.M of comyns. ¶ In the fourth warde of the batayll of Scotlande were these lordes Archebalde Douglas / ÿ erle of Leuenax / Alysaunder le Bruys / ÿ erle of Fyff / Johñ Cambell erle of Athels / Roberte Lawther / wyllyam of Vypount / wyllyam of Londis / Johñ de lindes / Geram de Frerenlew / Johñ de Lyndesey / Alysaunder de Gray / Ingell de Umfreuyle / Patryk de Polleworthe / Poleworthe / Dauyd de wymes / Mychell Scot / wyllyam Lawdy Thomas de Boys / Roger Mortymer w xx. bachelers newe dubbyd. ix.C. men of armys / xviii. M. & .iii. C. of comyns. The erle of Dunbarre keper of the castell of Barwyk / halpe ÿ Scottes w. l. mé of armes. ¶ And syr Alysander of Ceto keper of the forsayd towne of Barwyk w an C mé of armys. & also ÿ comyns of ÿ towne vi. iiii. C. mé of armes & vi. viii. C. of fote mé. ¶ The some of ÿ erles & lordes aboue sayd amounteth. lxvi.. ¶ The somme of ÿ bachelers newe dubbed amounteth to an C. ix. ¶ The somme of men of armes amounteth .iii. M. C. ¶ The somme of ÿ comyns amounteth. liiii. M. & .iii. C. The somme totally of ÿ people aboue sayd a mounteth. lxv M. vii. C. xiv. these. ix. & .vi. gret lordes / lad all ÿ other gret lordes aboue sayd / in foure batayles / as it is tolde before all on fote / and kynge Edwarde of Englonde / & Edwarde Balyoll kynge of Scotland had well apparelled theyr folke in foure batayles / for to fyght on fote agaynst the Scottes theyr enemyes. And ÿ englysshe mynstrels blewe theyr trumpets and theyr claryons / and hydously ascryed the Scottes. and the had euery Englysshe batayll two wynges of good archers. The whiche at ÿ batayll shot arowes so faste & so sore that ÿ Scottes myght not helpe themselfe / & they smote the Scottes [illegible] des to ÿ grounde / & they began for to flee fro the Englysshe men to saue theyr lyues. And whan þ Scottes knaues sawe þ dyscōfyture & the Scottes fall downe to þ grounde/they pryked fast theyr maysters horses to the lynes for to kepe them from peryll/& set theyr maysters at no force/& whan þ Englysshe men sawe þ/they hunted them/& fast pursued þ Scottes/& at þ abode they slewe downe ryght. There mē myght se þ worthynesse of þ noble kynge Edwarde & of his men/how manly they pursued þ Scottes/þ fledde for drede/& there mē myght se many Scottysshe mē cast downe to þ grounde/& baners dysplayed hacked in to peces/& many a good haberyoyne of stele in þ blode bathe. And many a tyme þ Scottes were gadred in to companyes/but euer more they were dyscomfyted. ¶ And so it befell as god almyghty wold that the Scottes had that daye no more foyson ne myghte agaynst the Englysshe men than .xx. shepe amonge .v. wolues/& so were þ Scottes dyscōfyted/& yet the Scottes was well .v. mē agaynst one Englysshe man/& that batayll was done on Halydoune hyll besyde þ towne of Barewyk at þ whyche batayll were slayne of þ Scottes .xxxv. thousandes & .vii.C. & .xii. And of the Englysshe men but only .xiii. & this victory befell to þ Englysshe men on saynt Margarettes euen þ holy vyrgyn & martyr in þ yere of our lorde Jhesu Crist M.CCC.xxxii. And whyle this werynge lasted þ englysshe pages toke/the pryze of the Scottes þ were slayne/euery man that he myght take without ony chalēgynge of ony mā/& so after this gracyous victory þ kynge torned them agayne vnto the same syege of Barwyk. ¶ And whanne they besyeged sawe and herde how kynge Edward hadde spede/they yelded to hym the towne with the castell/ on the morow next after saynt Margaretes daye. ¶ And thanne the kynge ordeyned agayne syr Edwarde Bayllol/with other noble & worshypfull men/too be kepers and gouernoures of all Scotlande in his absence. And hymselfe torned agayne and came in to Englonde after this victorye with moche Joye and also vnto hym worshyp And in þ nexte yere folowynge after/that is for to saye in the yere of the incarnacyon of oure lorde Jhesu Cryste. M.CCC.xxxiii. And of kynge Edwarde .vii. he wente agayne in to Scotland/in wynter tyme At the whiche vyage þ castell of kylbrygge in Scotlnde/for hym and for his men þ were with hym he recouered and hadde agaynst þ Scottes/all at his owne luste. ¶ And that same yere/syr Edward Bayllol kynge of Scotlande/helde his parlyamente in Scotlande with many noble lordes of Englonde that were at that same parlyamente/bycause of theyr londes and also lordeshyppes that they had in the reame of Scotlande/and helde all of the same Bayllol. ¶ And in þ .xiii. yere of his reygne/aboute the feest of saynte Johan Babtyst syr Edward Bayllol the veri and true kynge of Scotlande/as by herytage and ryght lyne/made his homage and feaute vnto kyng Edwarde of Englond for the reame of Scotland at newcastell vpon Tyne/in the presence of many a worthy mā and also of comyns bothe of the reame of Englonde/and alsoo of Scotlande. And anone after in the same yere kynge Edwarde of Englond/receyued of the duke of brytayne his homage/for the erledome and lordshyp of Rychemonde. And so folowynge in þ .ix. yere of his reygne after Myghelmas rode in to Scotland/and there was faste by saynte Johannes towne almoost all the wynter tyme/& soo he helde his Crystemas at þ castell of Rokesbourgh. And in þ same yere throughout Englonde/aboute saynt Clemētes tyde in wynter. ¶ There arose suche a [illegible] by of the [illegible] & also [illegible] of ȝ see [illegible] the [illegible] and [illegible] that the [illegible] walles [illegible] by the medowes [illegible] in many places & namely in lowe countreys [illegible] & lo[illegible] were drowned / & [illegible] aboute of the erthe / thrughe contynuaūce and abundaūce of waters of the see / ouer[illegible] afterwarde were tourned in to more saltnesse and sournesse of sauour. ¶ The .x. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne / kyng Edwarde entred the Scottes see after Mydsomer / & to many of the Scottes he gaue batayll / & ouercame them & many he treatyd & bowed to his pees / thrughe his doughtynesse and hardynesse. ¶ And after the feest of saynt Myghel / then next folowynge was the erle of Morref had & taken at Edenbrugh & brought in to Englond and put in to pryson. ¶ And in the monethes of June and Juli than next folowynge in ȝ .xi. yere of his reygne was seen and appyered in the fyrmament a bemed sterre the whiche clerkes call stella Cometa & that sterre was seen in dyuers partes of the fyrmament. Where after as none there folowed in Englond good chepe & wonder grete plente of all chaffare vytaylles and marchaundyse / & there agaynest hunger scarsyte myschefe & nede of money. In soo moche that a quarter of whete at London was solde for two shyllynges / and a good fatte oxe at a noble / & fyue good douues byrdes for a peny / In whiche yere deyed syr Johan of Eltham erle of Cornewayle that was kynge Edwardes broder & lyeth at Westmynster.

¶ How kynge Edwarde made a duchye of the erledome of Cornewayle / and also of syxe other erles that were newe made & of the fyrste chalenge of the kyngdome of Fraunce.

IN the yere of our lorde a thousand / CCC.[illegible] of kyng Edward the [illegible] moneth of Marche duryng ȝ parlyament at Westmynster in that tyme kynge Edwarde made of the erledome of Cornewayle a duchye & [illegible] the duchye of Cornewayle / ȝ whiche duchye he gaue vnto Edwarde his fyrst sone with ȝ erldome of Chester. & also kyng Edward made at the same tyme syxe other erles / as for to saye syr Henry the erle of Lancastres sone / erle of Leycetre / Wyllyam of Bougham erle of Northamptō / Wyllyam of Mountagu / erle of Salysbury / Hugh of Audel erle of Gloucestre / Robert of Ufforde erle of Southfolke / & Wyllyam of Clyton erle of Huntyngdon. And in that same yere it was ordeyned in ȝ same parlyament ȝ no man shulde were no clothe that was wrought oute of Englonde / as clothe of golde ne of sylke or veluet or damaske or satyn bawdkyn ne none suche other ne none wylde ware ne furres of beyonde the see. But suche as myght spēde an hundred pounde of rente by yere. But this ordynaūce & statute was but of lytell effect / for it was nothyng holden. In the .xiii. yere of his reygne kynge Edwarde wente ouer ȝ see into Brabande & quene Phylyp his wyfe there beynge a chylde at Andwerpe there he dwellyd more than a yere for to treate w the duke of Brabant and other alyed to hym of ȝ chalengynge of the kyngdome of Fraunce / as kyng Edward of Englond by ryght & by herytage after the dethe of Charles the grete kynge of Fraunce broder Germayne of quene Isabell kynge Edwardes moder / ȝ whiche was holden & occupyed wrongfully by Phylyp of Valoys ȝ [illegible] sone of Charles ȝ whiche duke & all his in the [illegible] & all other [illegible] there with all his [illegible] and [illegible] kynge Edward [illegible] hym and made and [illegible] hym swerte by good fayth ⁊ trust/ ⁊ after that ẏ kynge passed by agayne in to Englonde ⁊ left there ẏ quene styll behynde hym in Brabande. Than in ẏ .xiiii. yere of his reygne whan all ẏ lordes of his reame ⁊ other that ought to be at his parliament were called ⁊ assembled togyder in the same parliament holden at London/ after ẏ feest of saynt Hylary. The kynges nedes were put forth ⁊ promoted as touchynge ẏ kyngdome of Fraũce. For whiche nedes to be sped ẏ kynge axed ẏ fyfte parte of al ẏ mouable goodes of Englonde ⁊ ẏ wolles ⁊ ẏ .ix. shefe of euery coyne ⁊ all the lordes of euery towne where suche thynges sholde be taxed ⁊ gadred sholde answere to ẏ kyng therof/ ⁊ had it ⁊ helde it at his owne lust ⁊ wyll. Wherfore yf I sholde knowlege ẏ very trouth ẏ ynner loue of ẏ people was tourned in to hate/ ⁊ ẏ comyn prayers in to cursynge/ for cause ẏ ẏ comyn people were so strõgely greued. Also the forsayd Phylyp Ualoys of Fraunce hadde gadred vnto hym a grete hoste ⁊ dystroyed in his partyes ⁊ kyngdom many of the kynges frendes of Englonde wt townes castels ⁊ many other of theyr lordshyps ⁊ many harmes shames and dysceytes dyd vnto ẏ quene/ wherfore ẏ kynge whan he herde this tydynges strongely meued therwith ⁊ angred/ ⁊ sent dyuerse letters ouer see to ẏ quene and to other ẏ were his frendes gladynge them certefyenge them ẏ he wolde be there hymselfe in all ẏ hast that he myght And anone after Ester whã he had sped of all thynges that hym neded to haue/ he went ouer see agayne. Of whose comynge ẏ quene ⁊ all his frendes were wonder glad ⁊ made moche Ioye. And all ẏ were his enmyes ⁊ helde agenst hym made as moche sorowe. In ẏ same tyme ẏ kynge through counseyle of his true lyeges ⁊ counseyle of his lordes ẏ there were presente wt hym wryte ẏ kynge of Fraunces name/ ⁊ toke ⁊ medled ẏ kynges armes of Fraunce quartred wt tharmes of Englonde ⁊ commaũded forth wt his coyne of golde vnder dyscrypcyon ⁊ wrytynge of ẏ name of Englonde and of Fraũce to be made best ẏ myght be/ ⁊ ẏ is to saye ẏ floreyn ẏ was called ẏ noble pryce of .vi. shellynges .viii. pens sterlynge/ ⁊ ẏ halfe noble ẏ value .iii. shellynge ⁊ .iiii. pens/ ⁊ ẏ farthynges the value of .xx. pens.

¶ How kynge Edwarde came vnto the Scluys and dyscomfyted all ẏ power of Fraunce in the hauen.

AND in the next yere after/ that is to saye the .xv. yere of his reygne he commaunded ⁊ lete wryte in his charters wryttes ⁊ other letters ẏ date of the reygne of Fraũce ẏ fyrst. And whyle ẏ he was thus doynge ⁊ trauaylynge in Fraũce through his coũseyle he wrote to all ẏ prelates dukes erles ⁊ barons ⁊ ẏ noble lordes of ẏ coũtre/ ⁊ also to dyuerse of the comyn people dyuerse lettres ⁊ maundemẽtes berynge date at Gandaue ẏ .viii. day of February. And anone after wtin a lytell tyme he came agayne in to Englonde wt ẏ quene ⁊ her chyldern. And in ẏ same yere on mydsomer euen he began to sayle towarde Fraũce agayne/ ⁊ manly ⁊ fyersly he fell vpon Phylyp of Ualoys ẏ whiche longe tyme laye ⁊ had gadred to hym a full longe ⁊ boystous meny of dyuerse nacyons in ẏ hauẽ of Scluys/ ⁊ there they fought togyder ẏ kyng of Fraũce ⁊ he wt theyr hostes fro myddaye to thre of the clocke in ẏ morne/ in ẏ whiche batayle were slayne .xxx. M. men of ẏ kynges cõpany of Fraũce/ ⁊ many shyppes ⁊ cogges were taken. And so through goddes helpe he had there ẏ victory ⁊ bere thys a glorious chyualry. And in the same yere about ſaȳt James tyme wᵗout ẏ yates of ſaynt Omers Robert of Arthoys wᵗ men of Englonde ⁊ Flaūders fought agaynſt the duke of Burgon ⁊ ẏ Frenſſhe men at whiche batayl were ſlayne ⁊ taken of the Frenſſhmen.xv.barons/lxxx.knyghtes/⁊ ſhyppes ⁊ barges were takē vnto ẏ nōbre of.CC.⁊.xxx.The ſame yere ẏ kynge makynge ⁊ abydynge vpō ẏ ſyege of tornay the erle of Henaude wᵗ Englyſſhe archers made aſſaute vnto ẏ towne of ſaȳt Amande where they ſlewe.l.knyghtes ⁊ many other and alſo deſtroyed ẏ towne. And in ẏ.xvi.yere of his reygne folowynge in ẏ wynter tyme ẏ kyng dwelled ſtyll vpō ẏ forſayd ſyege/⁊ ſent oft tyme in to Englonde vnto his treſorer ⁊ other purueyours for gold ⁊ money ẏ ſhold be ſent vnto hym in his nede/but his proctours ⁊ meſſengers curſedly ⁊ ful ſlouly ſerued hym at his nede ⁊ deceyued hym/on whoſe defaute ⁊ latches ẏ kynge toke trewes bytwene hȳ ⁊ ẏ kyng of Frāce. And the kyng Edwarde full of ſhame ⁊ ſorowe in his hert wᵗdrewe hym fro ẏ ſyege ⁊ came in to Brytayn ⁊ there was ſo grete ſtryfe of batayle ẏ he loſt many of his people. And whā he hadde done there ẏ he came fore he dreſſed hym ouer ſee in to englonde. And as he ſayled towarde Englonde in ẏ hygh ſee ẏ moſt myſhappes ſtormes ⁊ tempeſtes thonder ⁊ lyghtnynge fell to hym in ẏ ſee ẏ whiche was ſayd ẏ it was done ⁊ arayſed thrugh euyll ſpirytes made by ſorcery ⁊ nygromācy of thē of Frāce/wherfore ẏ kynges herte was full of ſorowe ⁊ anguyſſhe weylynge ⁊ ſyghynge ⁊ ſayd vnto our lady in this wyſe.O bleſſed lady ſaynt Mary what is the cauſe ẏ euer mote goynge in to Frāce all thynges ⁊ weders fal to me Ioyful ⁊ lykȳge as I wolde haue them/but alwaye tournynge in to Englonde al thynges fall vnprofytable ⁊ very harmfull/neuertheles he ſcaped all perylles of ẏ ſee as god wolde/⁊ came to ẏ tour of London by nyght And ẏ ſame yere ẏ kynge helde his Criſtmaſſe at Meneres ⁊ ſent worde to ẏ ſcottes by his meſſengers ẏ he was redy and wolde fyght wᵗ thē/but ẏ Scottes wolde not abyde but fled ouer the Scottes ſee ⁊ hyd them as well as they myght. And in the.xvii.yere of his reygne about ẏ feeſt of ẏ Conuerſyon of ſaynt Poule kyng Edwarde whan he had ben in Scotlande ⁊ ſawe ẏ ẏ Scottes were fled tho he came agayne in to Englonde. And a lytell before lent was ẏ tourment at Dunſtable/to the whiche tourment came all the yonge bachelary ⁊ cheualry of Englonde wᵗ many other erles ⁊ lordes/at ẏ whiche tournement kynge Edwarde hymſelfe was there preſente. And in ẏ.xviii.yere of his reygne at his parliament holden at weſtmynſter ẏ [illegible] of Marche kynge Edwarde ẏ thyrde made Edwarde his fyrſt ſone prynce of Wales. And in ẏ.xix.yere of his reygne anone after in Janyuer before lente ẏ ſame kynge Edwarde let make full noble Juſtes and grete feeſtes in the place of his byrthe at wyndſore ẏ there was neuer none ſuche ſeen there afore At whiche feeſt ⁊ royalte were two kynges and two quenes the prynce of wales the duke of Cornewayle.x.Erles.ix.Coūteſſes barons ⁊ many burgeys ẏ whiche myght not lyghtly be nombred/and of dyuerſe landes beyonde the ſee were many ſtraungers. And at ẏ ſame tyme whā the Juſtes were done kynge Edwarde made a grete ſouper in the whiche he ordeined ⁊ begā his rounde table ⁊ ordeyned and ſtedfaſted the daye of the rounde table to be holden there at wyndſore in the whytſone weke euermore yerely And in this tyme Englyſſhemen ſo moche haunted and cleuyd to the woodenes ⁊ foly of the ſtraungers that fro tyme of comyn ge of ỹ Henaudes.xviii.yere paſſed they ordeyned ⁊ chaūged thē euery yere diuerſe ſhappes ⁊ diſguyſynge of clothynge of longe large ⁊ wyde clothes deſtitute ⁊ deſerte frō all olde honeſte ⁊ good vſage. And an other tyme ſhorte clothes ⁊ ſtrayt waſted dagged ⁊ kyt ⁊ on euery ſyde ſlattered ⁊ botoned wͭ ſleues and tappytes of ſurcotes ⁊ hodes ouer longe ⁊ ouermoch hangynge ỹ yf I ỹ ſoth ſhall ſay they were more lyke to tormētours ⁊ deuylles in theyr clothynge ⁊ ſhoynge ⁊ other araye thā to men ⁊ ỹ womē more nycely yet paſſed ỹ men in aray ⁊ curyouſer yet/for they were ſo ſtrayt clothed ỹ they lete hange fore tayles ſewed bynethe wͭin theyr clothes for to hele ⁊ hyde theyr arſes/ỹ whiche diſguyſynges ⁊ pryde parauenture/afterwarde brought forthe ⁊ cauſed many myſhappes ⁊ myſchyef in ỹ reame of Englonde. ¶The.xx.yere of kynge Edwarde he went ouer in to Brytayn ⁊ Gaſcoyne in whoſe cōpany wente ỹ erle of Warwyke/ỹ erle of Suffolke/ỹ erle of Huntyngton/⁊ ỹ erle of Arundell/⁊ many other lordes and comyn people in a grete multytude wͭ a grete Nauye of.CC.⁊.xl ſhyppes/anone after mydſomer for to auenge hym of many wronges ⁊ harmes to hym done by Phylyp of Valoys kynge of Fraūce ayenſt ỹ trewes before honde graunted/ỹ whiche trewes he falſly ⁊ vntrewely by cauellacyons loſed ⁊ diſquatte

¶How kyng Edwarde ſayled in to Normandye ⁊ arryued at Hogges wͭ a grete hoſte.

IN ỹ.xxi.yere of his reygne kynge Edwarde through counſeyle of all ỹ grete lordes of Englonde called ⁊ gadred togyder in his parlyament at Weſtmynſter before Eſter ordeyned hȳ for to paſſe ouer ỹ ſee agayne for to chaſtyce ⁊ dyſtroble ỹ rebelles of Fraunce. And whan his nauy was come togyder ⁊ made redy he went wͭ a grete hoſt ỹ.xii.daye of July/⁊ ſayled in to Normandy ⁊ arryued at Hogges. And whan he had reſted hȳ there.vi. days for bycauſe of trauaylynge of ỹ ſee ⁊ for to haue oute all his men wͭ all theyr neceſſaryes out of theyr ſhyppes/he wēt towarde Cadomum brennynge waſtynge ⁊ deſtroyenge all ỹ townes ỹ he founde in his way. And ỹ.xxvi.day of July at the brydge of Cadony manly and nobly ſtrengthed and defended with Normās he had there a ſtronge batayle ⁊ a longe durynge/through whiche a grete multytude of people were ſlayne. And there were taken of pryſoners ỹ erle of Ewe/the lorde of Tākeruyl/⁊ an hondred of other knyghtes ⁊ men of armes/and.vi.C.fote men nōbred ⁊ the towne ⁊ ỹ ſubarbes vnto the bare walle/⁊ all thynges ỹ they myght bere ⁊ cary out was robbed ⁊ dyſpoyled. After ỹ kynge paſſed forth by ỹ countre about ỹ brede of.xx.myle he waſted all maner thynge ỹ he founde. Whan Phylyppe of Valoys perceyued this/all though he were faſt by hym with a ſtronge hoſte/yet he wolde not come nygh hym but brake all the brydges beyonde ỹ water of Seyn fro Royn to Parys/⁊ hymſelfe fledde vnto ỹ ſame cyte of Parys wͭ all the haſte that he myght. Forſoth ỹ noble kynge Edwarde whan he came to Parys brydge ⁊ founde it broken/within.ii. days he lete make it agayn. And in ỹ morowe after ỹ aſſumpcyon of our lady kynge Edwarde paſſed ouer ỹ water of Seyn goynge towarde ỹ water of Ceeſey and dyſtroyed by ỹ way townes with the people dwellynge therin. And in the feeſt of ſaynt bartholomew he paſſed ouer ỹ water of Somme vnhurt wͭ all his hoſt there as neuer before had ben ony maner way nor paſſage/where.ii.M.were ſlayne of thē ỹ letted theyr paſſage ouer. ¶Therfore the .xxvi. day of Auguſt kynge Edwarde in ſame felde by Creſcy hauynge .iii. batayles of Englyſſhe men encoūtred ⁊ mette with Phylyp of Ualoys hauynge wᵗ hym foure batayls of whiche yͤ leſt paſſed gretely yͤ nombre of Englyſſhe people. And whan theſe two hoſtes met togyder/ there fell vpō hym yͤ kynge of Beme/ yͤ duke of Loreyne/ ⁊ erles alſo of Flaūders/ Alaunſon/ Bloys/ Harecourt/ Aumarle ⁊ Neuors/ ⁊ many other erles/ barons/ lordes ⁊ knyghtes ⁊ men of armes the nombre of a.M.v.C.xlii. Wᵗout fote men ⁊ other nat armed yͤ were nothynge rekened. And for all this yͤ vnglorious Phylyp wᵗdrewe hym wᵗ yͤ reſydu of his people. Wherfore it was ſayd in cōmune amonge his owne people. Merēbeall ſoy retreyt/ yͤ is to ſay oure ſayre wᵗdraweth hym. Than kynge Edwarde ⁊ our Englyſſhe men thanked god of ſuche a vyctory after theyr grete labour taken to them all thynge nedefull to theyr ſuſtynaūce ⁊ ſauynge of theyr lyues ⁊ for drede of theyr ennemyes reſted them there. And full erly in yͤ mornynge after yͤ Frenſſhe men wᵗ a grete paſſynge hoſte came agayne for to gyue batayle ⁊ fyght wᵗ yͤ Englyſſhmen/ wᵗ whome met and encoūtred yͤ erle of Warwyke Northamptō ⁊ Northfolke wᵗ theyr company ⁊ ſlewe .ii.M. ⁊ toke many priſoners of yͤ gentylles of thē. And yͤ remenaūt of yͤ ſame hoſt fled .iii. myle thens. And yͤ .iii. day after yͤ batayle yͤ kynge wente to Calays warde deſtroyenge all yͤ townes as he rode thyder. Whan yͤ he was comen/ yͤ is to ſaye yͤ thyrde day of Septēbre he began to beſyege yͤ towne wᵗ yͤ caſtel ⁊ cōtynued his ſyege fro yͤ forſayd thyrde day of Septembre to yͤ thyrde day of Auguſt yͤ nexte yere after. And in yͤ ſame yere durynge yͤ ſyege of Calays yͤ kynge of Scotlande wᵗ a grete multytude of Scottes came in to Englande to Neuyles croſſe about ſaynt Lucas day yͤ euangelyſt hopynge ⁊ truſtynge for to haue founde all yͤ lande voyde of people for as moche as the kynge of Englande was beyonde yͤ ſee ſauſe aūcyent perſones ⁊ men of holy chyrche ⁊ women ⁊ chyldren ⁊ plowmē/ ⁊ ſuche other labourers/ ⁊ there they came ⁊ robbed and dyd moche grete ſorowe/ but yet founde they ynough yͤ them wᵗſtode by the grace of almyghty god. And ſoo a daye of batayle was aſſygned betwene them ⁊ certayne lordes ⁊ men of holy chyrche yͤ were of yͤ coūtre wᵗ other comyn people faſte by the cyte of Dureſme/ at whiche day thrugh the grace of almyghty god the Scottes were ouercomē/ ⁊ yet were there thre tymes ſo many of thē as of Englyſſhe men. And there was ſlayn all the cheualry and knyghthode of the realme of Scotlande. And there was taken as they wolde haue fledde thens Dauyd the kynge of Scotlande hymſelfe and the erle of Menteyth/ ſyr wyllyam Douglas/ ⁊ many other grete men of Scotlande. And after that our Englyſſhe men whan they had reſted thē a fewe days ⁊ had ordeyned theyr kepers of the north coūtre/ they came to London and brought wᵗ them ſyr Dauyd yͤ kynge of Scotlande/ ⁊ that all yͤ other lordes yͤ were taken pryſoners vnto yͤ tour of London wᵗ all yͤ haſt yͤ they myght/ ⁊ left them there in ſaufe kepynge vnto yͤ kynges comynge ⁊ wente home agayne in to theyr owne countre. And afterwarde was the kynges raunſon of Scotlande taxed to an hondred thouſande marke of ſyluer to be payed wᵗin .x. yere/ that is to ſaye euery yere .x. thouſande marke.

¶ Howe kynge Edwarde beſyeged Calays/ ⁊ howe it was become and yelden vnto hym.

IN the .xxii. yere of kynge Edwarde his reygne he wente ouer the ſee in the whiche tyme ⁊ laye all þ wynter at þ ſyege of Calays/ þ whiche yere whyle þ ſyege laſted ⁊ endured Phylyp þ kyng of Fraũce caſt and purpoſed traytouſly to put away the ſyege ⁊ came þ.xxvii.daye of July in þ ſame yere wᵗ a grete hoſte ⁊ a ſtronge power ⁊ neyghed to the ſyege of Calays. The whiche Phylyp þ laſt daye of July ſente to kynge Edwarde worde that he wolde gyue hym playne batayl þ thyrde daye after þ aboute euenſonge tyme yf he durſt come fro the ſyege ⁊ abyde And whan kynge Edwarde herde þ without ony longe taryenge accepte gladly the daye ⁊ houre of batayle þ Phylyp had aſſygned. And whan þ kyng of Fraũce herde þ the next nyght after he ſet his tentes a fyre ⁊ remeued ⁊ went his waye thens cowardely. Then they þ were in þ towne and in þ caſtell beſyeged ſawe all this þ they had none other helpe nor ſocour of þ kynge of Fraũce nor of his men. And alſo þ theyr vytayles wᵗin thē were ſpended ⁊ waſted ⁊ for faute of vytayles ⁊ refreſſhynge they ete horſes hoũdes cattes and myſe for to kepe theyr trouth as longe as they myght. And whan they ſawe ⁊ was founde amonge them at þ laſt þ they had nothynge amonge them for to ete ne lyue by ne no ſocour ne reſcowe of þ Frenſſhe men/ of þ other ſyde they wyſt wel þ they muſte nedes dye for defaute or els yelde the towne/ ⁊ anone they went ⁊ toke downe þ baners ⁊ þ armes of Fraũce on euery ſyde þ were hangen out ⁊ went on the walles of þ forſayd towne on dyuerſe places as naked as they were borne ſauf only theyr ſhertes ⁊ theyr preuy clothes/ ⁊ helde theyr ſwerdes naked ⁊ the poynte dounwarde in theyr handes/ ⁊ put ropes and halters about theyr neckes ⁊ yelded vp the keyes of þ towne ⁊ of the caſtell to kynge Edwarde of Englonde with grete fere ⁊ drede of theyr lyues ⁊ godes ⁊ drede of herte. And whan kynge Edwarde ſawe all this as a mercyable kynge ⁊ lorde receyued them to grace/ and a fewe of the grettest pryſoners of eſtate ⁊ of gouernaunce of þ towne he ſent in to Englonde there for to abyde theyr raũſon ⁊ þ kynges grace. And all þ comynalte of þ towne the kynge lete goo whether they wolde in peas ⁊ without ony harme/ ⁊ lete thē bere wᵗ them all theyr thynges that they myght bere ⁊ cary away/ kepynge þ towne ⁊ þ caſtell to hymſelfe. Then through medyacyons of Cardynales þ were ſent from þ pope/ trewes were taken there bytwene Fraunce and Englonde for.ix. monethes than next folowynge. And about Myghelmaſſe kynge Edwarde came agayne in to Englonde wᵗ a glorious victory. And in þ.xxiii. yere of his reygne in þ Eeſt partyes of þ worlde there began a peſtilence ⁊ deth of ſarraſyns ⁊ paynems that ſo grete a deth was neuer herde of afore/ ⁊ þ waſted awaye þ people ſoo that vnneth the tenth perſone was left alyue. And þ ſame yere about þ ſouth coũtrees there fell ſo moche rayne ⁊ ſo grete waters þ from Cryſtmas to mydſomer there was vnnethes no day nor nyght but þ it rayned ſomwhat/ through whiche waters þ peſtylence was ſo enfected ⁊ ſo habundaũt in all coũtrees/ ⁊ namely about the courte of Rome/ ⁊ other places ⁊ ſee coſtes þ vnneth there were lefte lyuynge folke to bury them þ were deed honeſtly. But made grete dytches ⁊ pyttes þ were wonder brode ⁊ depe ⁊ therin buryed thē and made a renge of deed bodyes ⁊ caſt a lytell erthe to hele thē aboue/ ⁊ than caſt in an other renge of deed bodyes/ and an other renge aboue thē/ ⁊ thus were they buryed ⁊ none otherwyſe/ but yf it were ſo that they were men of grete eſtate ſoo þ they were buryed as honeſtly as they myght. And after all this in þ.xxiiii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne it was done hym to wete of a treason ẏ was begon at Calays & ordeyned for to sell ẏ towne for a grete somme of Floreyns to kynge Phylyp of Fraunce through ẏ falsenesse & ordenaũce of a knyght ẏ was called syr Geffray of Cherney was wonder pꝛyuy with Phylyp of Fraũce. And whan kynge Edwarde herde this he toke wᵗ hym ẏ noblest and gentylest lordes & many other worthy men of armes ẏ were present wᵗ hym foꝛ ẏ solempnyte of ẏ hygh fest. And well and wysely in all ẏ hast ẏ he myght/& as pꝛyuely as he myght he went ouer see towarde Calays. And ẏ same yere ẏ good kynge Edwarde helde his Crystmasse at Hauerynge/& ẏ moꝛne after newe yeres daye ẏ kynge was in the castell of Calays with his men of armes that none of the alyens wyst therof. And ẏ false conspiratour & traytour Geffrey of Cherney syth that he myght not openly haue his purpose of ẏ castell/pꝛyuely & stelyngely he came in & helde ẏ towne wᵗ a grete hoste. And whan he wᵗ his mẽ were come in/he payed ẏ foꝛsayd somme of Floreyns as couenaunt was to a Geneweye in ẏ towne that was keper of ẏ castell & consentynge to the same Geffreye in all his falsnesse & trechery & besyde ẏ Englysshe mynstrels and seruaũtes ẏ were in ẏ castell ẏ they myght not helpe thẽselfe ne let thẽ of theyꝛ purpose. And than wenynge ẏ they had ben sure ynough/thẽ they spake all their wyckednesse & falsnesse openly on hygh ẏ all men myght here. And now shall ye here how they were deceyued/foꝛ they came in by a pꝛeuy posterne ouer a lytell brydge of tree/and whan they were comen in subtylly & pꝛyuely ẏ kynge was drawen vp and kept that none of them that came in myght go out ne no more myght come to them/& anone our Englysshe men went out at pꝛeuy hooles & wyndowes & ouer ẏ walles of the towne & of ẏ castell & fought & slought many of ẏ Frensshe men ẏ were wᵗ oute & had ẏ better of thẽ/ẏ whiche whan they were arrayed by hemself on theyꝛ syde/the kynge ẏ was with in the towne knowynge scarsely but .xxx. men of armes drewe out his swerde & with a loude voyce he cryed on hyght. O saynt Edwarde. O saynt George. And whan ẏ people herde ẏ they came rennynge to hym and gaue to theyꝛ enmyes so grete assaute that there were moꝛe than .CC. men of armes & many moꝛe other slayn & many fled away. And so by ẏ grace of god ẏ vyctoꝛy fell vnto ẏ Englysshe men. Then ẏ kynge toke wᵗ hym this Geffray ẏ was fynder of this trecheri/& also many other Frensshe pꝛysoners/& then within a whyle after he came agayne in to Englonde. And in this same yere and in the yere afore/and also in ẏ yere next folowynge was so grete a pestylence of men from ẏ eest in to the west/and namely through botches that tho that syckened/as on this daye dyed on ẏ thyꝛde day after/to ẏ whiche men that so dyed in this pestylence hadde but lytell respyte of theyꝛ lyggynge. ¶ Then pope Clemente of his goodnesse & grace gaue theym full remyssyon and foꝛgyuenesse of all theyꝛ synnes that they were shꝛyuen of/and this grete pestylence lasted in London from Myghelmasse vnto August nexte folowynge almost an hole yere. And in these dayes was dethe without soꝛowe/weddynges without frendeshyppe/wylfull penaũce/and derth without scarsyte/& fleynge without refute oꝛ succoure/foꝛ many fledde from place to place bycause of ẏ pestylence/but they were enfected & myght not escape ẏ deth/after that the prophete Ysaye sayth who that fleeth fro the face of drede he shall falle in to the dyche. And he ẏ wyndeth hym out of the dyche he shall be holden & tyed wᵗ a greſe/but whā this peſtylēce was ceſſed as god wold/vnnethes ẏ tenth parte of ẏ people was lefte on lyue/⁊ in ẏ ſame yere began a wonder thynge ẏ all ẏ euer were borne after ẏ peſtylēce had two chektethe in theyr heed leſſe than they had afore.

¶ How kȳge Edward had a grete batayle wᵗ Spanyardes in ẏ ſee faſt by wȳchelſe.

AND in the .xxx. yere of his reygne aboute ſaynt Johñs daye in harueſt in ẏ ſee faſt by Wynchelſe kynge Edward hadde a grete batayle with men of Spayne where that theyr ſhyppes and nauy laye chayned togyder/ that eyther they muſt fyght or be drenched/ ⁊ ſo whā all our worthy men of armes ⁊ of ẏ ſee coſtes faſt by Wynchelſe ⁊ cōmuney were gadred togyder/ ⁊ our nauye and ſhyppes already to ẏ warre/ the Englyſſhemen mette māly and ſtrongly with theyr enmyes comynge fyerſly agaynſt them. And whā ẏ Spaynyſſhe veſſels ⁊ nauye were cloſed all about/ there men myght ſe ſtronge batayle on bothe ſydes ⁊ longe durynge in ẏ whiche batayle was but fewe ẏ faught but they were pyteouſly hurte. And after ẏ batayle there were .xxiiii. ſhyppes takē ⁊ ſo ẏ Englyſſhemen had ẏ better. And in ẏ next yere folowynge of his reygne/ ẏ is to ſay ẏ .xxvi. yere ẏ kȳge through his coūſeyle let ordeyne ⁊ make his newe money ẏ is to ſaye the peny ẏ grote value of .iiii. pens ⁊ ẏ halfe grote of .ii. pens but it was of leſſe weyght thā ẏ olde ſterlynge was by .v. ſhellȳge in ẏ poūde. And in ẏ .xxvii. yere of his reygne was ẏ grete derthe of vytayles ẏ which was called ẏ dere ſomer. And ẏ .xxviii. yere of his reygne in ẏ parlyament holden at Weſtmynſter after Eſter ⁊ ſyr Henry erle of Lancaſtre was made duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ in this yere was ſoo grete a drought that frome ẏ monethe of Marche to ẏ Monethe of Juyll there fell no rayn on ẏ erthe/ wherfore all fruytes ſedis ⁊ herbes/ for ẏ moſt parte were loſt in defaut wherfore came ſo grete dyſeaſe of mē ⁊ beſtes ⁊ derthe of vytayles in Englond ẏ this land ẏ euer afore had ben plēteous had nede ẏ tyme to ſeke vytayls ⁊ refreſſhynge at other out ples ⁊ coūtres. And ẏ .xxix. yere of kyng Edward it was accorded graūted ⁊ ſworne by twene the kynge of Fraunce and kynge Edward of Englonde ẏ he ſholde haue agayne all his lōdes ⁊ lordſhyppes ẏ longed to ẏ duchye of Guyen of olde tyme/ ẏ whiche had ben wᵗdrawen ⁊ wrongfully occupyed by dyuerſe kynges of Fraunce before hande to haue ⁊ to holde to kynge Edward ⁊ to his heyres ⁊ ſucceſſours for euer more/ frely peaſybly ⁊ in good quyete vpon this couenaūte ẏ ẏ kynge of Englond ſhold leue of ⁊ releaſen all his ryght ⁊ claymē ẏ he had claymed of ẏ kyngdome of Fraūce ⁊ of the tytle ẏ he toke therof/ on whiche ſpeche ⁊ couenaūtes it was ſente to ẏ courte of Rome on both ſydes of ẏ kynges/ ẏ ẏ forſayd couenaunte ſhold be enbulled/ but god ordeyned better for ẏ kȳges worſhyp of Englōd/ for thrugh ẏ dyſceyte of ẏ Frenſſhe mē/ ⁊ thrugh lettynge of the pope ⁊ of the courte of Rome the forſayd couenauntes were diſquate and lefte of. And in ẏ ſame yere the kynge reuoked by his wyſe and dyſcrete coūſeyle the ſtaple of wolles out of Flaundres in to Englonde with all the lybertees fraūchyſes ⁊ free cuſtomes that longed therto/ ⁊ ordeyned it in Englonde in dyuerſe places/ that is to ſaye at Weſtmynſter/ Caunterbury/ Chycheſter/ Bryſtowe/ Lyncolne/ ⁊ Hull/ with all the forſayd thynges that longe therto. And that this thynge ẏ ſholde thus be done ẏ kyng ſwore hymſelfe therto/ ⁊ prynce Edward his ſone/ wᵗ other many grete wytneſſes ẏ there were preſent. ¶ And the .xxx. yere of his reygne anone after Myghelmas in the parlyament ordeyned at Westmynster it was tolde & certyfyed to ye kynge ye Phylyp ye Valoys ye vsurpour of Fraunce was deed & syr Iohn his sone was crowned kynge / & ye this Iohn had gyuen Charles his sone ye duchye of Guyhen / of ye whiche thynge / kynge Edwarde whan he wyst therof / he had grete indygnacion to hym & was wonder wrothe & stoutly meued / & therfore afore all the worthy lordes that there were assembled at ye parlyament / called Edwarde his sone to hym / to whome ye duchye of Guyhen by ryght herytage sholde longe to / & gaf it hym there / byddynge & strengthyng hym / ye he sholde ordeyne hym for to defende hym & auenge hym on his enemyes & saue & mayntene his ryght. And afterwarde kynge Edwarde hymselfe / & his eldest sone Edward went to dyuers places & sayntes in England on pylgrymage for to haue ye more helpe & grace of god & of his sayntes. And .ii. kal of Iulii / whan all thynge was redy to ye vyage & batayle & all retenue & power assembled & his nauye also redy he toke with hym ye erle of Warwyk ye erle of Suffolk ye erle of Salesbury & ye erle of Oxford & a thousande men of armes & as many archers / & in ye natyuyte of our lady / toke theyr shyppes at Plymouthe & began to sayle. And whan he came & was aryued in Guyon / he was there worshypfully taken & receyued of ye most noblest men & lordes of that countree. And anone after kynge Edwarde toke with hym his two sones / ye is to saye / syr Lyonell erle of Ulton / & syr Iohn his broder erle of Rychemond & syr Henry duke of Lancastre with many erles & lordes & men of armes & two thousand archers & sayled towarde Fraunce & rested hym a whyle at Calays & after ye kynge went with his hoste alandyd & with other souldyours of beyonde ye see that there abode the kynges comynge ye seconde day of Nouember & toke his iourney towarde kynge Iohn of Fraunce there as he had hyghte to haue fonde hym but by Amyas as his letters & commaundement made mencyon ye he wolde abyde hym there with his host. And whan kynge Iohn of Fraunce herde tell of ye kynges comynge of Englond / he went awaye with his men & caryage cowardly & shamfully fleynge & wastynge all vytayles ye Englysshmen sholde not haue therof. Whan kynge Edwarde herde tell ye he fledde he pursued hym with all his host tyll Hesdyn & than helde holdynge ye scarsyte & wantynge of vytayls & also ye cowardyse of ye kynge of Fraunce he tourned agayne wastynge all ye contree. And whyle all these thynges were a doynge / ye Scottes pryuely & by nyghte toke ye towne of Barwyk sleynge them ye withstode the & no man els / but blessed be god ye castel was saued & kepte by Englysshmen that were therin. Whan ye kynge perceyued all this he torned agayne in to Englonde as swythe as he myght be / wherfore in the parlyament at Westmynster was graunted to ye kynge of euery sacke of wolle .l. shylynges durynge ye terme of .vi. yere ye he myght myghtelier fyght and defende the reame agaynst the Scottes & other enymyes. And so whan all thynges were redy the kynge hasted hym towarde the sege.

¶ How kynge Edward was crowned kynge of Scotland / & how prynce Edwarde toke ye kynge of Fraunce & syr Phylyp his yonger sone at ye batayle of Peyters.

AND in ye .xxxi. yere of his reygne the .xiii. daye of Ianyuere ye kynge beynge in ye castell of Rokesburgh with a fewe men / but he hauynge there lefte by a grete hoost and a gentry. The towne was yolden vnto hym without any [illegible] ner defence or dyffyculte. Than yͤ kynge of Scotland yͭ is for to saye ſyr John Bayoll conſyderynge how yͭ god dyd many merueyles ⁊ gracyous thȳges for kynge Edward at his owne wyll fro daye to day he toke ⁊ gaue vp yͤ reame of Scotlande at Rokeſburgh in yͤ kynges hãdes of Englond vnder his patẽt letters there made And anone after kynge Edwarde in preſence of all yͤ prelates ⁊ other worthy mẽ yͭ were there ſet hys crowne kȳge of Scotland. whã all thynges were done ⁊ ordeyned in yͤ cõtrees at his wyll/he torned agayne in to Englonde wͭ a grete worſhyp And whyle this vyage was in doynge in Scotland/ſyr Edwarde prynce of walys as a mã enſpyred in god was in Guyhen in yͤ cyte of Burdeux tretȳge ⁊ ſpekynge of yͤ chalenge of yͤ kȳges ryght of Englõd yͭ he had to yͤ reame of Fraũce/⁊ that he wold be auenged wͭ ſtronge hande/⁊ yͤ prelates peres ⁊ myghty mẽ of yͤ cõtree cõſented well to hym. Than ſyr Edwarde yͤ prynce with a grete hoſt gadred to hym yͤ vi. daye of Juyll wente frome Burdeux goynge ⁊ trauelynge by many dyuers countrees/⁊ he toke many prysoners mo than. vi. thouſande men of armys by the cõtree as he wente ⁊ toke the towne of Remorantyn in Salogyne ⁊ beſyeged yͤ caſtell. vi. dayes. And at yͤ. vi. dayes ende they yolded the caſtell vnto hym/⁊ there was taken yͤ lorde of crowne ⁊ ſyr Burſygaud ⁊ many other knyghtes ⁊ men of armes mo thã. lxx. And fro thens by Tore ⁊ Petern faſte by Chyueney his noble mẽ yͭ were wͭ hym had a ſtronge batayle wͭ Frenſſhe mẽ/⁊ an. C. of theyr men of armys were ſlayne/⁊ yͤ erle of Waũce ⁊ the ſtewarde of Fraũce were taken wͭ an hondred men of armys. In yͤ whiche yere the xix. day of Septembre faſt by Peyters yͤ ſame prynce with a thouſande ⁊. ix. hondred mẽ of armes and archers ordeyned a batayle to kynge Johñ of Fraunce comynge to the prynce warde with. vii. M. choſen men of armes ⁊ moche other peple a grete nõbre/of yͤ whiche were ſlayne the duke of Burbon ⁊ the duke of Athenes and many other noble men and of yͤ prynces men of armes a. M. ⁊ of other yͤ trewe accompte ⁊ rekenȳge. viii. C. And there the kyng of Fraũce was taken ⁊ ſyr Phylyp his yonger ſone ⁊ many dukes noble men ⁊ worthy knyghtes and mẽ of and armes aboute two thouſande/and ſo the vyctory fell to the prynce/⁊ to yͤ peple of Englonde by the grace of god. And many yͭ were taken prysoners/were ſet at theyr raunſon ⁊ vpon theyr trouthe ⁊ knyghthode were charged and had leue to go. But the prynce toke with hym the kynge of Fraũce and Phylyp his ſone wͭ all the reuerence that he myght ⁊ wente agayne to Burdeux with a gloryous vyctorye/yͤ ſomme of the mẽ that there were taken prysoners and of them that were ſlayne the daye of batayle. iiii. M. iiii. C. xl. and in yͤ. xxxii. yere of kynge Edwarde the. v. day of May prynce Edwarde with kynge Johñ of Fraũce and Phylyp his ſone ⁊ many other worthy prysoners aryued gracyouſly in yͤ hauẽ of Plũmouthe ⁊ yͤ. xxiiii. daye of yͤ ſame moneth aboute thre after noone they came to London by lõdon brydge ⁊ ſo went forth to yͤ kȳges palays at weſtmynſter/and there came ſo grete a multytude ⁊ preſſe of people them aboute to beholde and ſe yͤ wonder ⁊ ryal ſyghte yͭ vnnethes fro myddaye tyll nyght myght they not come to weſtmȳſter. And yͤ kynges raũſon of Fraunce was taxed ⁊ ſet to thre mylyons of ſcutes/of whome two ſholde be worth a noble. And ye ſhall vnderſtande that a myllyon is a thouſande thouſande/and after ſome men his raunſon was ſet at thre thouſande thouſande floreyns and all his one effect/and this ſame yere were made Juſtes ſolempne in Smythfelde beynge preſent ÿ kynge of Englande/ ÿ kynge of Fraūce/ & the kyng of Scotlande/ & many other worthy and noble lordes. The .xxxiii. yere of his reygne ÿ ſame kynge Edwarde at wyndſore as wel for loue of knyghthode as for his owne worſhyp & at reuerence of ÿ kynge of Fraūce & of other lordes ÿ were there at ÿ tyme/ he helde a wonder ryall & coſtly feeſt of ſaynt George paſſynge ony ÿ euer was holden afore/ wherfore ÿ kynge of Fraūce in ſcornynge ſayd ÿ he ſawe neuer nor herde ſuche ſolēpne feeſtes nor ryaltes holde nor done w̄ tayles w̄out payēge of gold or ſyluer. And in ÿ .xxxiiii. yere of his reygne ÿ .xiiii. kal of July ſyr John erle of Rychmōde kynge Edwardes ſone wedded dame Blaunche duke Henryes doughter of Lancaſtre coſyn to the ſame John by dyſpencyon of the pope/ & in the meane tyme were ordeyned Juſtes of London thre dayes of Rogacyons/ ÿ is for to ſaye/ ÿ Mayre of London w̄ his .xxiiii. aldermē agaynſt all ÿ wold come/ in whoſe name & ſtede ÿ kyng pryuely w̄ his foure ſones Edward Lyonell/ John & Edmōd & other .xix. grete lordes helden the felde/ w̄ worſhyp. And this ſame yere as it was tolde & ſayde of them ÿ ſawe it there come bloode out of the tombe of Thomas ſomtyme erle of Lācaſtre as freſſhe as ÿ daye that he was done to dethe. And in ÿ ſame yere kynge Edwarde choſe his ſepulture lyggynge at weſtmynſter faſt by the ſhryne of ſaynt Edward/ and anone after ÿ .xxvi. daye of October/ he wente ouer ſee to Caleys makynge proteſtacyon that he wold neuer come agayne in to Englond tyll he had full ended ÿ warre bytwene Fraunce and hym. And ſo in the .xxvi. yere of his reygne in the wynter tyme kynge Edwarde was and trauaylled in the Ryne coſtes And aboute ſaynte Hyllaryes tyde he departed his hoſt & went to Bourgō warde to whome than mette peaſybly the duke of Bourgoyn knowlegynge by ÿ .lxx. thouſande florens that he ſhulde ſpare his men & peple/ & ÿ kynge graūted at his requeſt/ & dwelled there to ÿ .xxviii. daye of Marche ÿ whiche tyme came to kyng Edwardes ere ÿ ſtrong theues were on ÿ ſee under the erle of ſaynt Poule ÿ .xv. daye of Marche lyggynge alwaye upon ÿ townes of Haſtynge/ Rye & other places & vyllages on the ſee coſte hadden entred as enemyes in to ÿ towne of Wynchelſe/ & ſlewe al ÿ comūes withſtode them & withſayde theyr comynge/ wherfore ÿ kynge was gretly meued & wrathed & he torned agayne towarde Parys/ & commaūded his hoſte to dyſtroye & ſle all with ſtrength of werre that he had before hande ſpared. And the .vii. daye of Apryll ÿ kynge came to Parys & there departed his hoſte in dyuers batayles w̄ .iiii. C. knyghtes newe dubbed on ÿ one ſyde of hȳ. And ſyr Henry duke of Lācaſtre vnder peas & trewes went to ÿ yates of ÿ Cyte profferynge thē ÿ wolde abyde a batayll in ÿ felde vnder ſuche cōdycyon ÿ yf ÿ kyng of Englōd were ouercome there/ as god forbede it ſholde/ ÿ thā he ſhulde neuer chalenge ÿ kyngdome of Fraūce. & there he had of them but ſhorte & ſcornefull anſwere & came & tolde it to ÿ kynge & his lordes what he had herde & what they ſayde. And then wente forth ÿ newe knyghtes w̄ many other makynge aſſaute to ÿ cyte & they dyſtroyed ÿ ſubbarbes of ÿ cyte. And whyle the thynges were doynge ÿ Englyſſhe mē made them redy for to be auēged ō ÿ ſhame & dyſpyte ÿ was done ÿ yere at Wynchelſe & ordeyned a nauye of .lxxx. ſhyppes of mē of Lōdon & of other marchauntes & .xiiii. thouſande men of armes & archers and wente and ſerched and ſcoured ÿ ſee & many they take and helde the yle of Caux/ wher ſore ẏ Frenſſhmen ẏ is for to ſay ẏ abbot of Cluyn ẏ erle of Tankeruyll ⁊ Burſygauge ẏ tho was Stewarde of Fraũce wᵗ many other mẽ of ẏ ſame coũtre by ẏ comyne aſſent of ẏ lorde Charles ẏ tho was regẽt of Fraũce they haſted thẽ ⁊ went to ẏ kynge of Englond al kyng ⁊ beſechỹge hỹ ſtedfaſt peas ⁊ euerlaſtynge vpon certayne cõdycyõs ẏ ther were ſhewed wryten/ ẏ whiche whã ẏ kynge ⁊ his coũſeyll had ſeen it/ it pleaſed hỹ neuer a dele/ but ſythe it wolde be none other wyſe ẏ tyme of better accord ⁊ delyberacyõ/ ẏ Frenſſhmẽ beſeli ⁊ wᵗ grete inſtaũce aſked trewes for the ſee coſtes/ ⁊ ẏ kynge graũted thẽ And in ẏ morowe after ẏ was of Paſke ẏ kynge tourned hym wᵗ his hoſt toward Orlyaũce deſtroyenge ⁊ waſtynge all the coũtre by ẏ way. And as they wẽt thederwarde there fell on theym ſuche a ſtorme ⁊ tẽpeſt ẏ none of our nacyon neuer herd nor ſawe none ſuche/ thrughe the whiche thouſandes of our men ⁊ theyr horſes in theyr Iournes as it were thrugh vengeaũce ſodenly were ſlayne ⁊ peryſſhed/ the whiche tẽpeſtes were full grete yet fered not ẏ kynge nor moche of his people but they went forth in theyr vyage ẏ they had begõne/ wherfore aboute ẏ feſt of Phylyp ⁊ Iacob in May laſt by in carnotũ ẏ forſayd lordes of Fraũce metynge there wᵗ ẏ kynge of Englõd a peſyble accorde ⁊ a fynall vpon certayne condycõs ⁊ graũtes artycularly gadred ⁊ wryttẽ togyder euermore to laſt dyſcretly made ⁊ to bothe the kỹges profytable ⁊ to both theyr reames of one aſſent of Charles ẏ regent ⁊ gouernoure of Fraũce ⁊ of Parys of ẏ ſame reame wryten ⁊ made vnder date of Carnotum ẏ .xv. daye of May they offred ⁊ profred to the kynge of Englonde requyrynge his grace in all thynges wrytẽ that he wolde benyngely admyt them ⁊ holde thẽ ferme ⁊ ſtable to thẽ ⁊ to theyr heyres for euermore thens forthe/ ẏ whiche thynges ⁊ articles whã kynge Edward had ſeen them he graũted them ſo ẏ bothe partyes ſholde be ſworne on goddes body/ ⁊ on ẏ Goſpels ẏ the forſayd couenaũte ſhold be ſtablyſſhed ⁊ ſo they accorded gracyouſly Therfore were ordeyned ⁊ dreſſed on euery ſyde two barõs two baronettes ⁊ two knyghtes to admitte ⁊ receyue ẏ othes of ẏ lorde Charles regent of Fraũce ⁊ of ſyr Edward ẏ fyrſt ſone ⁊ heyre of kynge Edward of Englond. And ẏ .x. daye of May there was a ſolempne maſſe at Parys ⁊ after ẏ thyrde (Agnꝰ dei) ſayd wᵗ (dona nobis pacem) in preſence of ẏ forſayd mẽ ẏ were ordeyned to admitte ⁊ receyue the othes ⁊ of all other ẏ there myght be. So Charles layd his ryght hande on ẏ patẽte wᵗ goddes bodye ⁊ his lyfte hande on the myſſall ⁊ ſayd we. N. ſweren on goddes bodye ⁊ ẏ holy goſpels ẏ we ſhall trewly ⁊ ſtedfaſtly holde towarde vs the peas ⁊ ẏ accorde made bytwene ẏ two kynges/ ⁊ in no maner to do ẏ cõtrary/ ⁊ there amõge al his lordes for more loue ⁊ ſtrengthe of wytneſſe he dealed ⁊ departed the relyques of ẏ crowne of cryſte to ẏ knyghtes of Englonde/ ⁊ they toke curteyſly theyr leue/ ⁊ ẏ frydaye next ẏ ſame othe in preſẽce of ẏ forſayd knyghtes ⁊ of other worthy mẽ prynce Edward made at Louers Afterwarde bothe kỹges ⁊ theyr ſones ⁊ ẏ moſt noble mẽ of bothe reames. wᵗ in the ſame yere made ẏ othe ⁊ for to ſtrength al theſe thỹges afore ſayd the kynge of Englond aryd ẏ grettest mẽ of Fraũce ⁊ had his aſkỹge ẏ is to ſay. vi. dukes. viii. erles xii. lordes al noble barõs ⁊ good knyghtes/ ⁊ whã ẏ place ⁊ tyme was aſſygned in whiche both kynges wᵗ theyr counſeyll ſhold com togyder/ al ẏ forſayd thỹges bytwene them ſpoken for to ratefye ⁊ make ferme and ſtable/ ẏ kynge of Englonde anone went towarde the ſee and at Hounf but began to ſeyle homwarde to his barons that were lefte behynde hym bycauſe of his abſence made moche heuyneſſe & after the .xix. daye of Maye he came in to Englond & went to his paleys at Weſtmynſter on ſaynt Dunſtans daye & the thyrde day after he delyuered Johan the kynge of Fraunce that was in the toure of London and delyuered hym frely from all maner of pryſon / ſaue tyll they were acorded of thre myllyons of Floreyns for his raunſome / and the kynge conforted hym and chered hym in all places with al ſolace & myrthes that longed to a kynge in his goynge homewarde. ¶ And ẏ .xi. day of July in the ſame yere this ſame Johan kynge of Fraunce that afore laye here in hoſtage went home agayne / in to his owne lande too treate of thys thynges & other ẏ longed & fallen to the gouernaunce of his reame. ¶ And afterwarde met & came togyder at Calays both two kẏges with both theyr counſeyll aboute al halowen tyde / and there were ſhewed ẏ condycyons & the poyntes of the peas & of the acorde of bothe ſydes wryten / & there without ony withſayenge of bothe ſydes gracyouſly they were acorded. And there was done & ſongen a ſolempne maſſe and after the thyrde (Agnus dei) vpon goddes body and alſo on the maſſe boke bothe the kynges & theyr ſones & the greteſt lordes of both reames and of theyr counſeyll that were preſente and had not ſworne before ẏ forſayd othe that they had made and ratyfyed bytwene theym as they behyghten to kepe / & all other couenauntes that were bytwene them ordeyned. And in this ſame yere men beſtes trees & houſes with ſodayne tempeſte and ſtraunge lyghtnynge were peryſſhed / & the deuyll appered bodely in mannes lykenes to moche peple as they wente in dyuers places in the countrees / and ſpake to them in that lykenes.

¶ Tho the grete cōpany aroſe in Fraūce and the whyte company in Lombardye / and other mo companyes.

KYnge Edwarde in the .xxxvi. yere of his reygne anone after Epyphanye in the feſt of the conuerſyon of ſaynte Poule helde his parlyament at Weſtmynſter / in ẏ whiche parlament was put forth & ſhewed the accorde and the treatee that was ſtablyſſhed & made bytwene ẏ two kẏges whiche accorde pleaſed to moche peple & therfore by ẏ kẏges commaundement there were gadred & came togyder in Weſtmẏſter churche ẏ fyrſt ſonday of lent / ẏ is to ſay ẏ .ix. day of February / ẏ forſayd Englyſſhe men & Frenſſhe men where was ſonge a ſolempne maſſe of the Trynyte of the Archbyſſhop of Caūterbury mayſter Symonde Iſlepe. And whan (Agnus dei) was done ẏ kyng beynge there with his ſones / & alſo ẏ kynges ſones of Fraūce / & other noble & grete lordes / wt candell lyght & croſſes brought forthe / & all ẏ were not ſworne afore ſwore ẏ ſame othe ẏ was wryten vpon goddes body and on ẏ maſſe booke in this wyſe / we. N. and. N. ſwere vpon goddes body & on ẏ holy goſpelles ſtedfaſtly to holde & kepe to warde vs the peas & ẏ accorde made bytwene ẏ two kynges and neuer for to do the contrary / and whan they hadde thus ſworne they take theyr croſſes that theyr othes were comprehended in to the notaryes. And this ſame yere it happened vpon the Aſcencion euen aboute mydday / was ſeen ẏ eclypſe of ẏ ſonne / and ther folowed ſuche a drought / that for defaute of rayne there was grete brennynge of corne fruyte and hey. ¶ And in the ſame moneth the .vi. day of June there fell a ſanguyne rayne almooſte lyke bloode at Burgoyn & a brennynge croſſe from morne vnto pryme apperyd and was ſeen atte Bolonyn in the heyre /

whiche many men ſawe & after it meued and fell in the myddes of the ſee. ¶ And in the ſame tyme in Fraūce & Englonde and many other landes as they that were in playne cōtrees & deſerte bare wytnes ſayd there appered two caſtels of the whiche went out two hoſtes of armed men. And that one hoſt was clothed in whyte & that other in blacke / & whan batayl bytwene them was begonne / the whyte ouercame the blacke / & anone after the blacke toke herte to them & ouercame ẏ whyte / & after ẏ they went agayne in to theyr caſtels / & then ẏ caſtelles & all ẏ hoſte vanyſſhed awaye. And in ẏ ſame yere there was a grete & an huge peſtylence of people & namely of men / whoſe wyues as women out of gouernaunce toke huſbandes as well ſtraungers as other lewde people / ẏ whiche forgetynge theyr honour & worſhyp coupled & maryed them with ẏ were of lowe degre & lytell reputacyon. ¶ In ẏ ſame yere deyed Henry duke of lācaſtre. And alſo in this ſame yere Edwarde prȳce of Wales wedded ẏ coūteſſe of Kent that was ſyr Thomas wyfe of Holonde the whiche was departed ſomtyme & deuorced fro ẏ erle of Salyſbury for cauſe of ẏ ſame knyght. ¶ And aboute this tyme began & roſe a grete cōpany of dyuerſe nacyons gadred togyder / whoſe leders were Englyſſhe people without ony hed ẏ whiche dyd moche harme in ẏ partye of Fraūce. And not longe after there aroſe an other cōpany of dyuerſe nacyons ẏ was called ẏ whyte cōpany ẏ whiche in ẏ partyes of Lombardy dyde moche ſorowe. ¶ The ſame yere ſyr Iohn of Gaunt ẏ ſone of kynge Edwarde ẏ .iii. was made duke of Lancaſtre by reaſon and cauſe of his wyfe that was the doughter and the heyre of Henry ſomtyme duke of Lancaſtre.

¶ Of ẏ grete wynde / ⁊ how prynce Edwarde toke the lordſhyp of Guyen of his fader ⁊ went theder.

And in ẏ .xxxvii. yere of kyng Edwarde ẏ .xv. daye of Janyuer / ẏ is to ſay on ſaynt Maurys day about euē ſonge tyme there aroſe and came ſuche a wynde out of ẏ ſouth wt ſuche a fyerſnes ⁊ ſtrength ẏ it braſted ⁊ blewe downe to the grounde hygh houſes ⁊ ſtronge buyldynges toures chyrches ⁊ ſtepels ⁊ other ſtronge places / ⁊ all other ſtrong werkes that ſtode ſtylle were ſhaken therwith ẏ they ben yet ⁊ ſhall euermore be ẏ febler and weyker whyle they ſtande. And this wynde laſted wtout ony ceſſyng .vii. days contynually / ⁊ anone after there folowed ſuche water in hey tyme ⁊ in ẏ haruest tyme ẏ all felde werkes were ſtrongely let and left undone. ¶ And in the ſame yere prynce Edwarde toke ẏ lordſhyp of Guyen / ⁊ dyde to kynge Edwarde his fader homage ⁊ feaute therof / ⁊ went ouer ſee in to Gaſcoyne wt his wyfe and chyldern. ¶ And anone after kynge Edwarde made his ſone Lyonell duke of Clarēce / and ſyr Edmonde his other ſone / erle of Cambrydge. And in ẏ .xxxviii. yere of his reygne it was ordeyned in ẏ parlyament ẏ men of lawe bothe of ẏ chyrche ⁊ tēporell lawe ſholde fro ẏ tyme forth plete in their moder tongue. ¶ And ẏ ſame yere came in to Englonde thre kynges ẏ is to ſay ẏ kynge of Fraūce / ẏ kynge of Cypres / ⁊ ẏ kynge of Scotlande / bycauſe to vyſyte ⁊ for to ſpeke with the kynge of Englonde. And after ẏ they had be there longe tyme two of them went home in to theyr owne coūtrees ⁊ kyngdoms / but the kynge of Fraunce through grete ſekeneſſe ⁊ malady ẏ he had abode ſtyll in Englonde. And in ẏ .xxxix. yere of his reygne was a ſtronge ⁊ grete froſt ⁊ ẏ laſted longe ẏ is to ſay fro ſaynt Andrewes tyde to ẏ .xiiii. kal. of

Apryll / þ þ tylthe & sowynge of þ erthe & other suche lewde werkes & hande werkes were moche let & lefte bycause for colde & hardnesse of þ erthe. And in Apryll in Brytayn was ordeyned a grete dedly batayle bytwene syr Johñ of Mountforde duke of Brytayne & syr charles of Bloys / but victory fell to þ forsayd syr Johñ through helpe & socoure of þ Englysshe men. And there were taken many knyghtes & squyers & other men þ were unnombred / in þ whiche batayle was slayne charles hym selfe wᵗ all þ stode about hym & of the Englysshe men were slayne but .vii. And in this yere dyed at sauoy Johñ þ kynge of Fraūce whose seruyce & exequyes kynge Edwarde lete ordeyne & do in dyuerse places worshypfully to be done / & at Douer ordeyned hym worthely to be ledde wᵗ his owne costes & expences / & fro thens was brought to Fraūce & buryed at saynt Denys. ¶ In þ .xl. yere of kynge Edwarde þ .vii. kal. of February was borne Edwarde prynce Edwardes sone þ whiche whan he was .vii. yere of aege dyed. And in þ same yere it was ordeyned þ saīt peters pens from þ tyme forth sholde not be payed þ whiche kyng yuo somtyme kynge of Englonde of þ coūtre of westsaxon þ began to reygne þ yere of our lord god .vi.C.lxxxix. fyrst graūted to Rome for the scole of Englonde there to be contynued. And þ same yere felle so grete a rayne in hey tyme þ it wasted & distroyed both corne & hey And there was suche a debate & fyghtynge of sparowes by diuerse places in these days þ men founde innumerable deed in þ feldes as they went. And there felle also suche a pestylence þ neuer was seen suche in no mānes days þ thā lyued for men þ went to bed hole & in good poynt sodeynly they dyed. ¶ Also þ tyme a sekenes þ me call þ pockes slewe both men & wymmen through theyr enfectynge. ¶ And in þ .xli. yere of kynge Edwarde was borne at Burdeux Rycharde þ seconde sone of prynce Edwarde of Englonde / whiche Rycharde kynge Rycharde of Almayn crystned at þ fonte stone after whome he was called Rycharde. And this same Rycharde whan his fader was deed and kynge Edwarde also / he was crowned kynge of Englonde þ .xi. yere of his aege through ryght lyne & herytage & also by the commune assent & desyre of þ comynalte of þ realme. ¶ About this tyme at kynge Edwardes commaundement of Englonde whan all þ castels & townes were yolden to hym þ were holde in Fraūce by a grete cōpany assembled togyder syr Bertram Claykyn a noble knyght & a good warryour went & purposed hym to put Pyers kynge of Spayne out of his kyngdom wᵗ helpe of þ moost party of þ forsayd grete company trustynge also upō helpe & fauour of þ pope for as moche as it is come to his eeres þ þ same Pyers sholde lede & use a synfull lyfe / þ whiche Pyers knyght whan he herde of this tydynge fled in to Gascoyne to prynce Edwarde for to haue socour of hym. And whā he was fled out of Spayne Henry his broder þ was a bastarde by assent of þ moost party of Spayne & thorowe helpe of þ forsayd cōpany þ J spake of fyrst was crowned kynge of Spayne & þ nōbre of þ same cōpany was rekened & set at þ nōbre of .xl. M. fyghtynge men. ¶ This yere in þ moneth of June there came a grete cōpany & a nauy of þ danes gadred them togyder in þ North see purposynge theym to come in to Englonde to reue or to robbe / and also to slee with whome they countred & mette in the see / maryners & other good fyghtynge men of þ coūtre & dysperpled them. And they ashamed wente home agayne in to theyr owne countre / but amonge þ other there was a boystous vessell & a strōge of theyrs nauy ỷ was ouer ſayled by the Englyſſhe men ⁊ was peryſſhed ⁊ drenched. In the which ẏ Merwarde ⁊ other grete men of Denmarke were taken pryſoners/ ⁊ the kynge of Englonde ⁊ his coũſeyle pryſoned thẽ/ ỷ whiche lordes ẏ Danes afterwarde ſought them all about for to haue had thẽ agene wͭ theyr goodes ỷ they had loſt/ ⁊ they not well apayed ne pleaſed of ẏ anſwere ỷ they had/ ⁊ they tourned homewardes agayne leuynge behynde thẽ in their Innes pryuely wryte in ſcrowes and on walles (yet ſhall Danes waſt the wanes) Than happed there an Englyſſh wryter ⁊ wrote agaynſt the Dane in this manere (here ſhall Danes ſette theyr banes) And in this tyme Pyers ẏ kynge of Spayne wͭ other kynges ỷ is to ſaye. the kynge of Nauerne ⁊ the kynge of Malogre beynge meanes went bytwene ⁊ prayed coũſeyle ⁊ helpe of ſyr Edwarde the prynce whoſe counſeyle whan he had vnderſtandynge their artycles ⁊ deſyre ỷ he was requyred of of ẏ kynges/ loth he was ⁊ aſhamed to ſay nay to thẽ/ but netheles he was agaſt leſt it ſholde be ony preiudice ayenſt ẏ pope ⁊ longe tyme taryed thẽ or ỷ he wolde graũt or conſent therto tyll he had better coũſeyl ⁊ auyſemẽt wͭ good delyberacyon of kynge Edwarde his fader. But whã they were wͭ hȳ euery daye ⁊ continually beſechynge of many noble men requyred ⁊ ſpoken to/ ⁊ wͭ many prayers ſent ⁊ made bytwene thẽ. Than prynce Edwarde ſent to his fader both by cõplaynynge letteres ⁊ alſo by cõfortable cõtryuynge all theyr ſuggeſtyons ⁊ cauſes wͭ all ẏ other kȳges epyſtles ⁊ lettres for to haue comfort ⁊ helpe of ẏ wronges not only done to ẏ kynge of Spayne/ but alſo for ſuche thynges as myght falle to other kynges. Alſo yf it were not the ſoner holpen ⁊ amended thrugh ẏ honour ⁊ helpe of knyghthode to thẽ ỷ it aſked ⁊ deſyred The whiche letter whã ẏ kynge ⁊ his coũſeyle had ſeen ſuche a kynge ſpoylynge ⁊ robbynge wͭ moche merueyle. And ſente agayne comfortable letters to prynce Edwarde his ſone ⁊ to ẏ other kȳges ⁊ warned thẽ for to arme ⁊ ordeyne thẽ agaynſt that myſdoer ⁊ to wͭſtande thẽ by ẏ helpe of god ỷ were ſuche ennemyes to kynges Whan this noble prȳce had receyued this letters hymſelfe wͭ ẏ other kynges before ſayd all theyr coũſeyl called togyder or ỷ he wolde vndertake ẏ quarell he boũde ⁊ knytte ſore the kynge ỷ was depoſed wͭ a grete othe/ ỷ is to ſaye ỷ he ſholde euer after maynteyne ẏ ryght byleue ⁊ fayth of holy chyrche/ ⁊ alſo wͭ all theyr mynyſtres ryghtes ⁊ lybertees to defende frome all theyr enmyes ⁊ euylles/ ⁊ all ỷ were there agaynſt bytterly to punyſſhe ⁊ deſtroble ⁊ all ẏ ryghtes libertees preuileges of holy chyrche encreace ⁊ maynteyne/ ⁊ amende all thynges ỷ were wrongfully takẽ wͭ drawẽ ⁊ born away by hym or by other bycauſe of hym/ haſtely to reſtore agayne ⁊ to dryue ⁊ put out ſaraſyns ⁊ all other myſbyleued people out of his kyngdome wͭ al his ſtrength ⁊ his power/ ⁊ ſuffre ne admitte none ſuche for no maner thynge ne cauſe to dwelle therin. And ỷ whan he had taken a cryſten woman he ſholde neuer come in to none other womãs bedde nor none othe mannes wyfe to defoyle.

¶ All theſe forſayde thynges trewely for to kepe contynue ⁊ fulfyll as all his lyfe tyme he was bounden by othe afore notaryes in preſence ⁊ wytnes of tho kynges wͭ other prynces. And than ẏ gracyous prynce Edwarde vndertoke ẏ cauſe ⁊ ẏ quarell of ẏ kynge ỷ was depoſed and behyght hym wͭ the grace of almyghty god to reſtore hym agayne to his kyngdome/ and lete ordeyne ⁊ gadre togyder forthwͭ in all haſte his nauye wͭ men of armes for to warre and fyght in his forſayd cauſe.

¶ And in this ſame yere vpō ẏ ſande of the ſcottes ſee ẏ many a man ſawe it .iii. dayes togyder there were ſeen two Egles of ẏ whiche ẏ one came out of ẏ ſouthe ⁊ that other out of ẏ north / ⁊ cruelly ⁊ ſtrōgely they fought ⁊ wraſtled togyder / and the ſouthe Egle fyrſt ouercame the north egle ⁊ all to rente hym wᵗ his byle ⁊ his clawes that he ſholde not reſte ne take no brethe / ⁊ after ẏ ſouthe egle flyeth home to his owne coſtes. And anone after there folowed ⁊ was ſeen in ẏ morne after ẏ ſonne ryſynge / ⁊ after in the laſt daye of Octobre ſauynge one many ſterres gadred togyder on an hepe fell downe to the erthe leuynge behynde them fyre bemes in maner of lyghtnynge / whoſe flambes brent ⁊ conſumed mennes clothes ⁊ mennes heer walkynge on ẏ erthe as it was ſeen ⁊ knowe of many a man. ¶ And yet that northern wynde ẏ is euer redy ⁊ beſtymate to all yll from ſaynt Katherynes euen tyll thre dayes after loſt grete good wᵗout nombre. ¶ And in this ſame dayes there felle ⁊ came alſo ſuche lyghtnynge thonder ſnowe ⁊ hayle ẏ it waſted and deſtroyed men beeſtes houſes ⁊ trees.

¶ Of the batayle of Spayne byſyde the water of Nazers ẏ was bytwene prynce Edwarde ⁊ ſyr Henry baſtard of ſpayne

IN ẏ yere of our lorde a. M.CCC.lxvii. ⁊ of kynge Edwarde .xlii. the thyrde day of Aprill there was a ſtronge batayle and a grete in a large felde called Nazers faſt by the water of Nazers in Spayne bytwene ſyr Edwarde the prince ⁊ ſyr Henry of Spayne / but the victory fell to prynce Edwarde by ẏ grace of god. ¶ And this ſame prynce Edwarde had with hym ſyr John duke of Lancaſtre his brother and other worthy men of armes about ẏ nombre of .xxx. thouſande And the kynge of Spayne had on his ſyde men of dyuerſe nacyons to the nombre of an hondred thouſande ⁊ mo / Wherfore the ſharpeneſſe ⁊ fyerſneſſe of his aduerſary with his full boyſtous and grete ſtrength made ⁊ droue the ryghtfull partye abacke a grete way / but through the grace of almyghty god paſſynge ony mānes ſtrength that grete hoſt was dyſparpled myghtfully by ẏ noble duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ his hooſte / or that prynce Edwarde came nygh hym. And whan Henry baſtarde ſawe that / he turned with his men in ſo grete haſt and ſtrength for to flee / ẏ a grete company of theym in the forſayd flood and of the brydge therof fell downe and peryſſhed. And alſo there were take the erle of Dene ⁊ ſyr Bertram Cleykyn ẏ was chyef maker ⁊ cauſer of the warre and alſo cheuetayne of ẏ vawarde of the batayle wᵗ many other grete lordes ⁊ knyghtes to ẏ nombre of two thouſande of whome two hondred were of Fraunce ⁊ many alſo of Scotlande / ⁊ there were felled in ẏ felde on our enemyes ſyde of lordes ⁊ knyghtes with other meyne people to ẏ nombre of .vi. M. ⁊ more / ⁊ of Englyſſh men but a fewe. And after this the noble prynce Edwarde reſtored ẏ ſame Pyers to his kyngdom agayn / ⁊ wyt the Pyers afterwarde through trechery ⁊ falſneſſe of ẏ forſaid baſtarde of ſpayne as he ſatte at his mete he was ſtrangled ⁊ dyed. But after this victorye many noble men of englond / ⁊ alſo hardy in ſpayne through ẏ flyxe ⁊ diuerſe other ſekeneſſes toke theyr deth. ¶ And alſo in ẏ ſame yere in ẏ Marche was ſeen ſtella Cometa bytwene ẏ north coſtes ⁊ the weſt whoſe bemes ſtretched towarde Fraūce. And in the next yere folowynge of kynge Edwardes regne .xliiii. in Aprill ſyr Lyonel kynge Edwardes ſone that was duke of Clarence wente towarde Myllayne wᵗ a choſen meyne of the gentyls of Englonde for to wedde Galeys doughter ⁊ haue her to his wyf/ by whome he ſholde haue hadde yͤ loꝛdſhyp of Mylayne/ but after yͭ they were ſolemply wedded ⁊ about yͤ natiuite of our lady yͤ ſame duke of Mylayne dyed. And in yͤ ſame yere yͤ Frenſſhe men brake yͤ peas ⁊ trewes ryfynge on yͤ kynges grounde ⁊ loꝛdſhyp of Englonde in yͤ ſhyre ⁊ coūtre of Poūtyſe/ ⁊ toke ⁊ helde caſtels ⁊ townes/ ⁊ bere yͤ Englyſſhmen on honde falſly yͭ they were cauſe of brekynge of trewes. ⁊ in yͤ ſame yere dyed yͤ ducheſſe of Lācaſtre ⁊ is buryed in ſaynt Poules chirche. ⁋ The .xliiii. yere of kynge Edwardes reygne was yͤ grettest peſtylence of men ⁊ of grete beeſtes ⁊ by grete fallynge of waters yͭ fell at yͭ tyme there fell grete hynderynge ⁊ deſtroyenge of coꝛne in ſo moche yͭ yͤ next yere after a buſſhell of whete was ſolde foꝛ .xl. pens. And in yͤ ſame yere about yͤ laſt ende of Maye yͤ kynge helde his parliamēt at weſtmynſtre in whiche parliament was ſpoken of the othe ⁊ trewes yͭ was broke bytwene hȳ ⁊ yͤ kynge of Frāce/ ⁊ how he myght beſt be auēged vpō his wronge. In yͤ ſame yere in yͤ Aſſūpcyon of our lady deyed quene Phylyp of Englond a full noble lady at weſtmynſter ful worſhypfully is buryed ⁊ entyered. And about mydſomer yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ yͤ erle of Herfoꝛde wͭ a grete company of knyghtes went in to Frāce where as they gate thē but lytell worſhyp/ foꝛ there was a grete hoſte of yͤ Frenſſhe men vpō Calkhull brydge/ ⁊ an other hoſt of Englyſſhe men faſt by yͤ ſame brydge yͭ longe tyme had lyued there. And many worthy ⁊ grete mē of Englonde oꝛdeyned ⁊ gaue coūſeyle foꝛ to fyght ⁊ gaue batayle to yͤ Frenſſh men/ but yͤ foꝛſayd loꝛdes wolde not conſent therto foꝛ no maner thynge. ⁋ And anone after it happened yͭ yͤ erle of Warwyke came thyderwarde foꝛ to warre/ ⁊ whan yͤ Frenſſh men herde of his comynge oꝛ yͭ he came fully to lande they lefte theyꝛ tentes ⁊ pauylyons wͭ all theyꝛ vitaylis ⁊ fled ⁊ went alwaye pryuely. And whan yͤ erle was comen to lande with his men he went in all haſt towarde Noꝛmandye ⁊ deſtroyed yͤ yle of Caux wͭ ſtregth of ſwerde ⁊ thꝛugh fyꝛe/ but alas in his retournynge to Englonde warde home agayn at Calays he was taken wͭ ſykenes of peſtylence ⁊ dyed not leuynge behynde hȳ after his days ſo noble a knyght of armes. In whiche tyme reygned ⁊ warred yͤ noble knyght ſyꝛ Johñ Hawkewod yͭ was an Englyſſhmā boꝛne/ hauynge wͭ hym at his gouernaūce yͤ whyte cōpany yͭ is afoꝛe ſayd/ yͤ whiche one tyme agaynſte holy chyrche/ ⁊ an other tyme ayenſt loꝛdes warred ⁊ oꝛdeyned grete batayles ⁊ there in yͤ ſame coūtre he dyde many merueylous thynges.

⁋ And about yͤ cōuerſyon of ſaynt Poule yͤ kynge whan he had ended ⁊ done yͤ entyerynge ⁊ exequyes wͭ grete coſtes ⁊ ryalteꝭ about yͤ ſepulture and buryenge of quene Phylyp his wyfe he helde a parliament at weſtmynſtre in whiche parliamēt was aſked of yͤ clergy a thꝛe yeres dyme/ yͭ is foꝛ to ſaye a grete dyme to be payed .iii. yere durynge/ ⁊ yͤ clergy put it of ⁊ wolde not grāte it vnto Eſter next comynge/ ⁊ than they grāted well yͭ in .iii. yere by certayn termes that dyme ſholde be payed/ ⁊ alſo of yͤ lay fee was a thꝛe yere .xv. graunted to the kynge.

⁋ How ſyꝛ Roberte Knolles wͭ other certayne loꝛdes of yͤ realme went ouer ſee in to Fraunce ⁊ of theyꝛ gouernaunce.

AND in the .xlv. yere of kynge Edwarde in yͤ begynnynge he with vnwyſe coūſeyle ⁊ vndyſcrete boꝛowed a grete ſomme of golde of yͤ prelates marchauntes ⁊ other ryche men of his realme ſayenge yͭ it ſholde be ſpended in defendynge of holy chyrche ⁊ of his realme. Netheles it pꝛofited nothynge/ wherfoꝛe about mydſomer after he made a grete hoſt of the worthyeſt men of his realme/amonge whome were ſome lordes yͭ is for to ſaye yͤ lorde of fitz water/⁊ yͤ lorde of graũſon and other worthy knyghtes of whiche yͤ kynge ordeyned ſyr Robert knolles a proued knyght ⁊ well aſſayd in dedes of armes for to be gouernour/⁊ yͭ thrugh his counſeyle all thynge ſholde be gouerned ⁊ dreſſed. And whan they came in to Fraũce as longe as they dwelled ⁊ helde them hole togyder yͤ Frenſſhmen durſt not fall vpõ thẽ. And at yͤ laſt about yͤ begynnynge of wynter for enuye ⁊ couetyſe yͭ was amonge them/⁊ ſo they ſondred ⁊ parted them in to dyuerſe cõpanyes vnwyſely ⁊ folely. But ſyr Robert knolles ⁊ his men went ⁊ keped them ſaufe wͭin a caſtell in Brytayne. And whan yͤ Frenſſhmẽ ſawe yͭ our men were dyuyded in to dyuerſe cõpanyes ⁊ places not holdynge ne ſtrengthynge them togyders as they ought for to do/they fell fyerſly on our men/⁊ for yͤ mooſt partye toke thẽ or ſlewe thẽ/⁊ tho yͭ they myght take ledde wͭ thẽ priſoners

¶ And the ſame yere pope Urbane came fro Rome at Auynyon for this cauſe yͭ he ſholde accorde ⁊ make peas bytwene the kynge of Fraũce ⁊ yͤ kynge of Englonde for euermore/ But alas or he began his treates he dyed wͭ ſekeneſſe yͤ .xxi. day of Decembre/⁊ was buryed as for yͭ tyme in yͤ cathedral chyrch of Auynyon faſt by the hygh alter/⁊ yͤ next yere after whan he had lyen ſo his bones were taken out of the erthe ⁊ buryed newe in yͤ abbaye of ſaynt vyctory faſt by Marcyle/of yͤ whiche abbaye he was ſomtyme abbot hymſelfe. And in bothe places yͭ he was buryed in there be many grete myracles done ⁊ wrought thrugh yͤ grace of god to many a mannes helpe ⁊ to yͤ worſhyp of god almyghty.

¶ After whome folowed next and was made pope Gregory Cardynall Beken yͭ before was called Pyers Roger

¶ In this ſame yere yͤ cyte of lymoge rebelled ⁊ fought agaynſt yͤ prynce as other cytes dyd in Guyen for grete taxes coſtages ⁊ raunſons yͭ they were put ⁊ ſette to by prynce Edwarde/whiche charges were importable ⁊ to chargeable/wherfore they torned fro hym ⁊ went to yͤ kynge of Fraũce. And whan prynce Edwarde ſawe this he was ſore chafed ⁊ agreued/⁊ in his tournynge homewarde agayne in to Englonde wͭ ſore ſcarmuſſhes ⁊ fyghtynge ⁊ grete aſſautes fought wͭ thẽ ⁊ toke yͤ forſayd cyte ⁊ deſtroyed it almooſt to the grounde ⁊ ſlewe all yͭ he founde in yͤ cyte. And than for to ſaye yͤ ſoth for dyuerſe ſekeneſſe ⁊ maladyes yͭ he had/⁊ alſo for defaute of money yͭ he myghte not withſtande ne tary on his ennemyes he hyed hym agayne in to Englonde wͭ his wyfe ⁊ meyne leuynge behynde in Gaſcoyn yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ ſyr Edmonde erle of Cambrydge wͭ other worthy ⁊ noble men of armes.

¶ In yͤ .xlvi. yere of kynge Edwarde at the ordynaũce and ſendynge of kynge Edwarde/the kynge of Nauerne came to hym to Claryngdon to treate wͭ hym of certayne thynges touchynge his warre in Normandye/where kynge Edwarde had left certayne pleges in his ſtede tyll he came agayne. But kynge Edwarde myght not ſpede of that that he aſked hym. And ſo yͤ kynge of Nauerne wͭ grete worſhyppe ⁊ grete gyftes toke his leue ⁊ went home agayne.

¶ And about begynnynge of Marche whan the parliament at weſtmynſter was begon yͤ kyng aſked of yͤ clergye a ſubſydye [illegible] .poũde the whiche by a good auy[illegible] ⁊ by a generall conuocacyon of the clergye it was graũted and ordeyned yͭ it ſholde be payed ⁊ rayſed of yͤ lay fee. And in this parliament at yͤ requeſt ⁊ aſkynge of the lordes in hatred of men of holy chyrche/

the Chaunceler & the treſourer that were byſſhops and the clerke of ÿ pryue ſeale were remeued & put out of offyce and in theyr ſtede were ſeculer men put in. And whyle this parlyament laſted there came ſolempne embaſſatours fro ÿ pope to treate with ÿ kynge of peas & ſayd ÿ the pope deſyred to fulfyll his predeceſſours wyll/ but for all theyr comynge they ſped not.

¶ Of the beſyegynge of Rochell/ & how ÿ erle of Pẽbroke & his cõpany was takẽ in ÿ hauẽ wᵗ Spanyerdes & all his ſhyps brent.

THe .ix. day of June kyng Edward in ÿ .xlvi. yere of his reygne helde his parlyament at Wyncheſtre & it laſted but .viii. dayes/ to whiche parlyamẽt were ſompned by wryte of men of holy chirche .iiii. byſſhops & .iiii. abbots wᵗout ony moo. This parlyamẽt was holdẽ for marchauntes of Londõ of Norwiche & of other dyuerſe places in dyuerſe thỹges & poyntes of treaſon ÿ they were defamed of/ ÿ is to ſay ÿ they were rebell & wolde aryſe agaynſt ÿ kynge/ this ſame yere ÿ duke of Lancaſtre & ÿ erle of Cambrydge his brother came out of Gaſcoyne in to Englonde & toke & wedded to theyr wyues Peters doughters ſomtyme kynge of Spayne/ of which two doughters ÿ duke had ÿ elder & the erle ÿ yõger. And ÿ ſame tyme there were ſente two cardynals fro ÿ pope/ ÿ is to ſaye an Englyſſhe cardynall & a cardynall of Parys to treate of peas bytwene theſe two reames/ whiche whan they had ben [illegible] longe eche in his prouynce & cõtrees for ÿ tretynge of ÿ foreſayd peas/ at ÿ laſt they toke wᵗ them ÿ lettres of procuracy & went agayne to Rome wᵗout ony effecte of theyr purpoſe. ¶ In this yere a ſtronge batayle there was in ÿ ſee bytwene Englyſſhmen & Flemynges/ & ÿ Englyſſhmen had ÿ vyctory & toke .xxv. ſhyps with ſalte & ſleynge & drenchynge all the men ÿ were therin vnwetynge them they were of ÿ countre/ & moche harme ſholde haue fallen therof had not peas & accorde ſoone be made bytwene them. ¶ In this ſame yere ÿ Frenſſhmen beſyeged ÿ towne of Rochel wherfore ÿ erle of Penbroke was ſent in to Gaſcoyne wᵗ a grete company of men of armes for to deſtroy ÿ ſyege whiche paſſed ÿ ſee & came ſauf to ÿ hauẽ of Rochell/ & whan they were there at the hauen mouth or that they might entre/ ſodeynly came vpon them a ſtronge nauy of Spanyerdes ÿ whiche ouercame ÿ Englyſſhmen in moche blemyſſhynge hurtynge & ſleynge of many people for as moche as ÿ Englyſſhmen were than not redy for to fyght ne were ware of them. And as ÿ Spanyerdes came vpon them all ÿ Englyſſhmen eyther they were takẽ or ſlayne/ & .x. of them were ſore woũded to ÿ deth & all theyr ſhyppes brent/ & there they toke the erle wᵗ a grete treſour of the reame of Englonde/ & many other noble men alſo on mydſomer euen/ the whiche is ſaynt Etheldredes day & ledde them with them in to Spayne. And of this myſchefe was no grete wonder/ for this erle was a full yll lyuer as an open lechour. And alſo in a certayne parlyament he ſtode and was agaynſt the ryghtes & fraunchyſe of holy chirche. And alſo he counſeyled the kynge and his cõſeyle that they ſholde axe moo of men of holy chyrche than other perſones of the laye men. And for the kynge & other men of his counſeyle accepted and toke rather yll opynyons & cauſes ayenſt men of holy chirche than he dyde for to defende & mayntayne ÿ right of holy chirche it was after ſeen many tymes for lacke of fortune and grace they had not ſoo grete vyctory ne power agaynſt theyr enemyes as they dyd before. ¶ This ſame yere the kynge with a grete hooſte entred the ſee to remeue the ſyege of Rochel, but þe wynde was euer contrary vnto hym & ſuffred hym not a longe tyme to go fer fro þe londe wherfore he abode a longe tyme vpon the ſee coſtes abydynge after a good wynde & yet came it not. So at þe laſt he came thens wt his men to londwarde agayne, & anone as he was a lond þe wynde tourned & was in an other coſt than it was afore.

¶ How the duke of Lancaſtre with a grete hooſt wente in to Flaūdres & paſſed by Parys thrugh Burgon and thrugh all Fraunce tyll he came vnto Burdeux.

Sone after in the .xlviii. yere of the reygne of kynge Edwarde þe duke of Lancaſtre wt a grete power went in to Flaūdres & paſſed by Parys thrugh Burgon & thrugh al Fraūce tyl he came vnto Burdeux wtout ony maner withſtandynge of þe Frenſſhmen, & he dyd them but lytell harme ſaue he toke & raūſoned many places & townes & many men & let them goo after frely. The ſame yere the kynge ſent certayn embaſſatours to þe pope prayenge hym þt he ſholde leue of & medle not in his courte of þe kepynge & reſeruacions of benefyces in Englonde, & þt tho þt were choſen to byſſhops ſees & dygnytees frely & wt full myght Joy & haue & be cōfirmed to þe ſame of theyr metropolytanes & Archebyſſhops as they were wont to be of old tyme. Of theſe poyntes & of other touchynge þe kynge & his reame, whā they had theyr anſwer of þe pope, the pope enioyned them þt they ſholde certefy hī agayne by letter of the kynges wyll & of his realme or they determyned ought of the forſayd artycles. ¶ In this ſame yere dyed Johñ þe archebyſſhop of yorke, Johñ byſſhop of Ely, Wyllyam byſſhop of wyncheſtre. In whoſe ſtedes folowed & were made byſſhops by auctoryte of the pope, mayſter Alexander Neuyll to the archebyſſhopryche of yorke, Thomas of Arundell to þe byſſhopryche of Ely, & ſyr Henry wakfelde to þe byſſhopryche of wyncheſtre. In whiche tyme it was ordeyned in þe parlyament þt all cathedrall chirches ſholde Joy & haue theyr eleccōns frely & that þe kynge fro þe tyme afterwarde ſholde not wryte ayenſt them þt were choſen, but rather helpe them by his letters to theyr cōfyrmacyon, & this ſtatute dyde moche profyte. And in this parlyamēt was graunted to þe kynge a dyme of þe clergy & a .xv. of lay fee. ¶ In the .xlix. of þe reygne of kynge Edwarde dyed mayſter Wyllyam Wytteley archebyſſhop of Caunterbury, & the monkes of þe ſame chirche aſked & deſyred a cardynall of Englonde to be archebyſſhop, & therfore þe kynge was agreued & ment & purpoſed to exyle þe monkes of the ſame, & they ſpended moche good or they myght haue þe kynges grace agayne & his loue, but yet wolde þe kynge not cōſent to theyr eleccyon of þe cardynall, ne of þe pope alſo ne his cardynalles. ¶ And at the begynnynge of Auguſt it was treated and ſpoken at Bruges of certayne poyntes & artycles hangynge bytwene the pope and the kynge of Englonde, and this treates laſted almooſt two yere. And at the laſt it was accorded bytwene them that the pope fro þe tyme forth ſholde not vſe ne dele with þe reſeruacyons of benefyces in Englonde, & that the kynge ſholde not graūte ne let no benefyces by his wrytte that is called (Quare impedit) But as touchynge þe eleccyon aboueſayd, there was no thynge touched ne done. And that was wyted and put vpon certayne clerkes þe whiche rather ſuppoſed and hoped to be auaūced and promoted to byſſhopryches whiche they deſyred and coueyted by the court of Rome rather than by ony other eleccyons. ¶ This ſame yere abowte Candelmaſſe there mette togyder atte Bruges many noble ⁊ worthy men of bothe ſydes ⁊ reames to trete of peas bytwene tho two kynges. And this tretes laſted two yere with grete coſtes ⁊ large expenſes of bothe partyes. And at yͤ laſt they wente ⁊ departed thens without ony accorde or effect. The nexte yere after yͤ .l. yere of kyng Edward the .iiii. Non̄. of May beynge yet voyde ⁊ vacaūt yͤ archebyſſhopryche of Caūterbury mayſter Symonde ſudbery byſſhop of London was made archebyſſhop/ ⁊ mayſter Wyllyam courteney yͭ was byſſhop of Herford was thā made byſſhop of Londō ⁊ yͤ byſſhop of Bangor was made biſſhop of Herforde. ¶ And this ſame tyme in a certayne tretes ⁊ ſpekȳge of peas trewes was taken bytwene Englonde ⁊ Fraūce fro mydſomer to yͤ nexte mydſomer after And aboute yͤ begynnynge of Apryll the duke of Brytayne wᵗ many erles barons ⁊ worthy lordes ⁊ men of Englonde wente ouer ſee in to Brytayn where he had had all his luſt deſyre ⁊ purpoſe ne had yͤ fore ſayd trewes be ſo ſoone taken whiche letted them. ¶ This ſame tyme yͤ yle of Conſtantyne where yͭ the caſtell of ſaynt Sauyour is in yͤ longe tyme was foughtē at ⁊ beſyeged of yͤ Frenſſhmen than yelded to them wᵗ all the appertenaūces to grete harme ⁊ hyndrȳge of yͤ reame of Englonde. And this ſame yere there were ſo grete ⁊ ſo paſſynge hetes ⁊ therwᵗ all a grete peſtylence in Englond ⁊ in other dyuerſe partyes of yͤ worlde yͭ it deſtroyed ⁊ ſlewe vyolently ⁊ ſtrongly bothe men ⁊ women without nōbre. This ſame yere dyed ſyr Edwarde yͤ lord ſpencer a worthy knyght ⁊ a bolde ⁊ in yͤ mynſter of Teukeſbury worſhypfully is buryed. And laſtȳge this peſtylence yͤ pope at yͤ inſtaunce ⁊ prayer of an Englyſſhe cardynall graūted to all people yͭ dyed in Englonde yͭ were ſory ⁊ repentaūt for theyr ſynnes ⁊ alſo ſhryuen full remyſſyon by two bulles vnder lede vi. monethes than next to laſt. ¶ In this ſame yere the erle of Penbroke was takē and raunſoned by Bartram Claykyn bytwene Parys and Calays as he came to warde Englond vpon ſaynt Atheldredes daye/ yͤ whiche ſaynt as it was ſayd yͤ erle oftentymes had offended/ ⁊ within a lytel whyle after he dyed ¶ And in Nouembre nexte after there mette at Bruges yͤ duke of Lancaſtre ⁊ the duke of Angoy with many other lordes and prelates of bothe reames for to treate of peas.

¶ Of the deth of prynce Edwarde and of the lord Latymer and dame Alyce peres thrugh whome and her maynteners the reame many a daye was myſgouerned.

NOt longe after the .li. yere of kyng Edwardes reygne he let ordeyn ⁊ holde at weſtmynſter yͤ greteſt parlyamēt that was ſeen many a yere afore. In whiche the parlyamēt he aſked of yͤ comynalte of yͤ reame as he had done afore a grete ſubſydy to be graūted to hȳ for defendȳge of him ⁊ his reame/ but yͤ comyns anſwered that they were ſo ofte day by day greued and charged wᵗ ſo many tallages ⁊ ſubſydyes yͭ they mygt no lēger ſuffre no ſuche burthens ⁊ charges ⁊ that they knewe ⁊ wyſt wel ynough yͭ the kyng had ynough for ſauynge of hym ⁊ of his reame yf the reame were well ⁊ truly gouerned/ but yͭ it had be ſo longe euyll gouerned by yll offycers/ yͭ the reame might neyther be plenteuous of chaffre ⁊ marchaūdyſe ne alſo wᵗ rycheſſe. And in theſe thynges they ꝓfred themſelfe yf yͤ kynge wolde certaynly to preue it ⁊ ſtande by/ ⁊ yf it were founde ⁊ preued afterwarde yͭ the kynge had nede they wolde gladly euery man after his power ⁊ ſtate hym helpe and lene. And after this were publyſſhed and ſhewed in the parliament many playntes ⁊ defautes of dyuers offycers of the reame ⁊ namely of the lorde Latimer ẏ kynges chaumberlayne bothe to the kyng ⁊ eke to the reame. And also at the last there was spoken ⁊ treated of dame Alyce pers for ẏ grete wronges ⁊ euyll gouernaūce ẏ was done by her coūseyle in ẏ reame/ the whiche dame Alyce pers ẏ the kynge had holde longe tyme to his lemman/ wherfore it was ẏ lesse wonder though thrugh ẏ frayltee of ẏ womās entycynge ⁊ her steryng he consented to her lewdnesse ⁊ euyll counseyle ẏ whiche dame Alyce ⁊ also ẏ lord Latimer ⁊ other suche that meued ẏ kynge to euyll gouernaūce agaynst his profyte ⁊ the reame also/ all the comynaltee asked ⁊ desyred that they sholde be remeued ⁊ put awaye ⁊ in theyr stedes wyse men ⁊ worthy that were true ⁊ well assayed ⁊ proued/ ⁊ of good gouernaūce sholde be put in theyr stedes. So amōge all other there was one amonge the comyns that was a wyse knyght ⁊ a true/ ⁊ an eloquent man/ whose name was Pers de la mare/ ⁊ this same Pers was chosen to be speker for ẏ comyns in the parlyament. And for this same Pers tolde ⁊ publysshed the trouth ⁊ rehersed the wronges agaynst the forsayd dame Alyce ⁊ other certayne persones of ẏ kynges counseyle as he was bydden by the comyns. And also trustynge moche to be supported ⁊ maynteyned in this mater by helpe ⁊ fauour of ẏ prynce/ anone as ẏ prynce was dede at ẏ instaūce ⁊ request of ẏ forsayd dame Alyce/ this Pers de la mare was Juged to perpetuall prison in ẏ castell of Notynghā. ¶ And in ẏ .vi. kal. of Jule lastynge ẏ same parlyament dyed prynce Edwarde kyng Edwardes first sone/ ẏ is to say on trinite sonday in worship of whiche feest he was wont euery yere where ẏ euer he were in ẏ worlde to holde ⁊ make the moost solempnyte ẏ he myght/ whose name ⁊ fortune of knyghthode/ but yf it had be of an other Ector/ all men both crysten ⁊ hethen whyle ẏ he lyued ⁊ was in good poynt wondred moche ⁊ drad hym wonder sore/ whose body is worshypfully buryed in crichirche at Caūterbury. And in this same yere ẏ men ⁊ the erles tenaūtes of Warwyk arose malycyously ayenst the abbot ⁊ couent of Euesham ⁊ theyr tenauntes/ ⁊ destroyed thabbay ⁊ ẏ towne/ ⁊ wounded ⁊ bet theyr men/ ⁊ slewe many of them/ ⁊ wente to theyr maners ⁊ places ⁊ dyde moche harme/ ⁊ brake downe theyr parkes ⁊ closes ⁊ slewe theyr wylde beestes ⁊ chaced them brekynge theyr welle pōdes ⁊ hedes ⁊ let ẏ water of theyr pondes strewes ⁊ ryuers ren out ⁊ toke ẏ fysshe ⁊ bare it wt them/ ⁊ dyd them all ẏ noyse ẏ they myght/ in so ferforth ẏ they had destroyed perpetual ẏ abbay wt all theyr membres ⁊ appurtenaūces but yf ẏ kynge the soner had not holpē it ⁊ take hede therto/ therfore the kynge sent his letters to ẏ erle of Warwyk chargynge hym ⁊ cōmaūdynge hym ẏ he sholde streyte redresse ⁊ amende tho euyll doers ⁊ brekers of his peas/ ⁊ so by meanes of lordes ⁊ other frendes ẏ peas was made bytwene them/ ⁊ for this hurlynge as it is sayd the kynge wolde not be gouerned at ẏ tyme by his lordes ẏ there were in ẏ parliament/ but he toke ⁊ made his sone the duke of Lancastre his gouernour of ẏ reame/ the whiche stode so styll as gouernour tyll the tyme that he dyed.

¶ The same yere after Candelmas or the parlyament was done/ the kynge asked a subsydy of ẏ clergy/ ⁊ of ẏ lay fee/ ⁊ it was graūted hym/ ẏ is to say ẏ he sholde haue of euery persone of ẏ lay fee/ bothe man ⁊ woman that passed .xiiii. yere of aege .iiii. pens out taken pore beggers that were knowen openly for trewe pore beggers. And that he sholde haue of euery man of the holy chirche ẏ was benefyced or promoted .xii. pens/ ⁊ al other ẏ were not promo ted.iiii.pens out taken the.iiii.ordres of ẏ freres beggers. ¶ This ſame yere after Myghelmas Rychard prynce Edwardes ſone was made prȳce of wales to whome the kynge gaue ẏ duchy of cornewayle wᵗ the erldom of cheſtre. And about this tyme ẏ cardynall of Englonde ẏ.iiii.day before Mary Mawdeleyns day after dyner ſodeynly was ſtryken wᵗ ẏ palſy ⁊ loſt his ſpeche/⁊ on Mary Mawdelens day dyed

¶ Of the deth of kynge Edwarde/⁊ how ſyr Iohñ Monſterwarthe knyghte was drawen and hanged for his falſneſſe.

RYght anone after in the.lii.yere of kynge Edwarde in ẏ begynnynge of Octobre pope Gregory ẏ.xi. brought ⁊ remeued his courte wᵗ hym frō Auynyon to Rome. ¶ And ẏ.xii. day of Apryl Iohñ Monſterwarthe knyght at London was drawen ⁊ hanged ⁊ than quartred ⁊ ſent to foure chefe townes of Englonde ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ ſet vpon London brydge For this ſame Iohñ was full vntrue to ẏ kynge ⁊ to the reame ⁊ couetous ⁊ vnſtable/for he toke ofttymes grete ſōmes of money of ẏ kȳge ⁊ his coūſeyle for men of armes wages that he ſholde haue payed them ⁊ toke it to his owne vſe/⁊ he drad that at the laſt he ſhold be ſhent ⁊ accuſed for the ſame cauſe ⁊ fledde pryuely to the kynge of Fraūce ⁊ was ſworne to hym ⁊ became his man ⁊ behyght hȳ a grete nauy out of Spayne to cōfuſyon ⁊ deſtroyenge of Englonde. But the ryghtfull god to whome no preuite is vnknowē ſuffred hȳ fyrſt to be ſhent ⁊ ſpyte or ẏ he ſo traytourſly ⁊ falſly betrayed his lyege lorde ẏ kynge of Englonde ⁊ his people in his reame/in whiche grounde this ſame Iohñ was borne/⁊ wyckedly through batayle deſtroyed or he brought about his curſed purpoſe. In ẏ feeſt of ſaynt George the nexte kynge Edwarde gaue to Rycharde of Burdeux his heyr ẏ was prȳce Edwardes ſone at Wyndſore thordre of knyghthode ⁊ made hym knyght/ẏ whiche kyng Edwarde whan he had reygned.li.yere ẏ xi.kal.of Iune he dyed at Shene ⁊ is buryed worſhipfully at Weſtmynſter on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. ¶ This kynge Edwarde was of a paſſyng goodnes ⁊ ful gracyous amonge all ẏ worthy men of ẏ worlde/for he paſſed ⁊ ſhone by vertue of grace gyuen to hym frō god aboue al his predeceſſours ẏ were noble men ⁊ worthy ⁊ he was a well herted man ⁊ an hardy/for he dradde neuer no myſhappes ne harmes ne euyll fortune ẏ myght fall a noble warryour ⁊ a fortunate/for both on londe ⁊ ſee ⁊ in all batayles ⁊ aſſembles wᵗ a paſſyng glory ⁊ Ioy he had ẏ victory/he was meke ⁊ benygne homely ſobre ⁊ ſoft to all men as well to ſtraūgers as to his owne ſubgectes ⁊ to other ẏ were vnder his gouernaūce/he was deuoute ⁊ holy both to god ⁊ holy chirche/for he worſhypped holpe ⁊ maynteyned holy chirche ⁊ theyr mynyſtres wᵗ al maner reuerēce/he was treatable ⁊ well auyſed in temporal ⁊ worldly nedes/wyſe in coūſeyle ⁊ dyſcrete ⁊ meke to ſpeke wᵗin his dedes ⁊ maners gētyll ⁊ well taught/hauȳge pyte on them ẏ were in dyſeaſe/plenteuous in gyuȳge of benefaytes ⁊ almes/beſy ⁊ curyous in buyldyng/⁊ lyghtly he bare ⁊ ſuffred wrōges and harmes/⁊ whan he was gyuē to ony occupacyon he lefte all other thȳges for ẏ tyme ⁊ tented therto/ſemely of body ⁊ a mene ſtature/hauynge alwaye to hygh ⁊ to lowe a good chere. And there ſprōge ⁊ ſhone ſo moche grace of hym ẏ what man had beholde his face or had dremed of hȳ he hoped ẏ day ẏ all thynge ſholde hap to hym Ioyfull ⁊ lykȳge. And he gouerned his kyngdom gloryouſly vnto his aege/he was large in gyuȳge ⁊ wyſe in ſpēces/he was fulfylled with all gracis of good maners and vertues / under whome to lyue it was as joy to reygne / wherfore his fame and his loos sprange so ferre that it came in to hethenes & Barbary shewynge and tellynge his worthynes & manhode in all londes / & that no londe under heuen had brought forth so noble a kyng / so gentyll & so blessyd / ne myght reyse suche an other whan he was deed. Neuertheles lechery & meuynge of his flesshe haunted hym in his aege / wherfore the rather as it was supposed for unmesurable folowynge of hes lust his lyfe shorted the sooner. And here of take good hede lyke as his dedes beeth witnesse / for as in his begynnynge all thynges were Joyfull and lykynge to hym / & to all people. And in his myddel aege he passed all people in hygh Joye / worshyp / & blessydnes. Ryght so whan he drewe in to age drawynge downwarde through lechery & other synnes lytell and lytell all the Joyfull and blessyd thynges and prosperyte decreased & myshapped / and unfortunate thynges & unprofytable harmes with many euyls began for to sprynge & the more harme is it contynued longe tyme after.

Clemens y vi. was pope after Benedicte x. yere / this man in name and dede was vertuous / & many thynges that Benedicte was rygorous in / he made easy & certayne that he depryued he restored / & the rygorousnes of the fayth of Benedicte was laudable / but moche more laudable was y mekenesse of Clement. This man was a noble precher & many sermons he gadred / & let no man passe from hym but he gaue hym good counceyle / & deceased a blessyd man. ¶ Karolus the iiii. was Emperour after Lodowyke xxxi. yere. This man was kynge of Beme a wyse man & a myghty. And this man was chosen Emperour by the commaundement of Clemens Lodowyk beynge a lyue in his contumacy / and bycause he asked mekely the popes blessyng & to be crowned of hym as other good kynges were / therfore he was preferred of god & prosperous in all his thynges. & many monasteryes in [illegible] he made to spyrytuel men / y whiche yet are called [illegible] / at the last he deceased a ryche man in vertue & godes. ¶ Innocencius the vi. was pope after Clement x. yere / & he was a grete louer of relygyous men / & he founded a monastery in Fraunce of the ordre of Carthusyens / & was a grete canonyst. ¶ Urban' the v. was pope after Innocent / this man was abbot of Marcelles of the ordre of saynt Benet a monke / & is taken for a saynt. he made the crosse to be preched ayenst the turkes / & he made a passage to the turkes. And to hym kynge [illegible] was sent from Cypre for the [illegible] of theyr [illegible] / & than he was poysoned & deceased. ¶ Gregory the xi. was pope after hym viii. yere. This Gregory lyued lytell / & after hym folowed the tribulacyon that our lord shewed to saynt Brygyt for y synne of the clergy. ¶ Wenselaus sone to Karol' aforesayd was Emperour xxiii. yere / & he was a chylde & was chosen whan his fader was on lyue / but he toke no kepe of thempyre. And whan he was warned many tymes for to take hede unto it and wolde not / he was deposed. For he gaue all his delytes and lust to lechery / and his ende was withoute honour / for he wente gretely from the maners & the vertues of his noble fader. And he was crowned with themperyall dyademe / and the wysdome of his fader passed in to Sygysmonde his broder as after it shall appere. ¶ Urbanus was pope after Gregory vi. yere / this Urbane was chosen in y cyte of Rome by y [illegible] y Romayns / but y Cardynals sayd that for drede & not wylfully / wherfore they fledde to the cyte of

Fundos. And they ſayde yͭ he was not pope / & choſe in his place ſyr Robert of Gebennys the ſame yere yͤ whiche was called Clement yͤ .vii. ¶ Nota. And here began yͤ .xii. ſtryfe in yͤ chyrche. And it was moche worſe than euer was ony other before / for it was ſo ſubtyll yͭ yͤ wyſeſt men that were & yͤ beſt of conſcyēce coude not diſcerne to whome it was beſt to ſay & to holde. And this ſtryfe dured .xl. yere with a grete ſclaundre vnto all yͤ clergye / and grete peryll vnto mennes ſoules / for here lyes growed euyl thynges yͤ whiche were brought in than. In ſo moche that there was no doctryne in the chyrche for myſdoynge. And therfore from this Urban the .vi. vnto Martyn I knowe not who was pope. The feeſt of yͤ vyſytacyon of our lady was ordeyned by Urbane yͤ .vi. after the fourme of the ſacrament of yͤ awter for a peas and an vnyte to be had amonge thē through the merytes of the bleſſyd lady. ¶ Bonefacius the .ix. was pope after Urbane .xv. yere. This Boneface was choſen at Rome in the ſtede of Urbane / & the ſtryfe contynued / for Benedictus was choſen in Auynyon in yͤ place of clement and was called Petrus de luna & he dured to the coūſeyle of Conſtantinus / and then he wolde not obeye / but euer abode obſtynate. And at yͤ laſt he deceſſed in the kyngdome of Aragon. And he commaunded his Cardynalles to cheſe an other pope the whiche they dyd anone. And they ſet vp an ydoll & named hym Clement / but they proſyted not.

¶ Circa annū dn̄i. M.CCC.lxxx.

¶ And after kynge Edwarde the thyrde that was borne in Wyndſore reygned Rycharde of Burdeux that was prynce Edwardes ſone of wales / the whiche prynce Edwarde was kynge Edwardes ſone.

AND after the good kynge Edwarde the thyrde that was borne at Wyndeſore reygned Rycharde yͤ ſeconde yͭ was yͤ good ſyr Edwardes ſone prynce of wales / yͤ whiche kynge Rycharde was borne in yͤ cyte of Burdeux in Gaſcoyne and was crowned at Weſtmynſtre in the .xi. yere of his aege. And in yͤ .ii. yere of his reygne for the debate yͭ was bytwene the lorde Latymer and ſyr Raufe Feryers knyght yͭ was agaynſte Hawell / & Shakell ſquyers for yͤ pryſoner yͭ was takē in Spayne by theſe two ſquyers / & yͤ whiche pryſoner yͤ lorde Latymer and ſyr Rauf Feryers wolde haue had / the whiche pryſoner was yͤ erle of Dene yͭ they toke in yͤ batayle of Spayne / wherfore theſe two lordes came in to yͤ chyrche at Weſtmynſtre / & they foūde this one ſquyer to herynge his maſſe beſyde ſaynt Edwardes ſhryne / & there they ſlewe hym yͤ whiche was called Hawell. And Shakel was areſted and put in to the toure of London / & there he was longe tyme / for he wolde not delyuer the erle of Dene his pryſoner vnto theſe two lordes / by ſyre Aleyn Buxhyll coneſtable of the toure / & by ſyr Rauf Feryers one of his aduerſaryes / tyll yͤ kynge had graunted hym grace. ¶ In yͤ .iii. yere of kynge Rycharde came yͤ Galays of Fraunce in to Englonde vnto dyuerſe portes & brent & robbed and ſlewe moche people of Englonde / yͭ is to ſaye at Wynchelſee / Rye / & Haſtynge / Portſmouthe & Hampton / Stormore / and Grauesende / and they dyd moche harme & went home agayne. ¶ And in this ſame yere was a parliamēt holden at weſtmynſtre / & at yͤ ſame parliament was ordeyned that euery man woman & chylde that were of the aege of .xiiii. yere / and aboue through out all the realme pore folke and other ſholde paye to the talage foure pens / wherfore came & befell afterwarde grete myſchyef and moche myſcheſe to all ẏ comynaltie of the realme. ¶ And in ẏ .iiii. yere of kynge Rycharde the comyns aroſe vp in dyuers partyes of ẏ realme & dyd moche harme/ the whiche tyme they called ẏ hurlynge tyme. ¶ And they of Kent & of Eſſex made theym two capitaynes for to rule & for to gouerne the company of Kent & of Eſſex. That one was called Jacke ſtrawe and that other Watte Tyler/ and they came & aſſembled them vpō blacke heth in Kente. And on Corpus chriſti daye after they came downe in to Southwerke/ & brake vp the pryſon hous/ that is to ſaye the kynges benche and the marchelſee & delyuered out all the pryſoners. And ſoo the ſame daye they came in to London & there they robbed the people/ and ſlewe all the alyens that they myght fynde in ẏ cyte and about the cyte and diſpoyled all theyr goodes and made [illegible]. And on ẏ frydaye nexte folowynge after that was on the morowe & that they came to ẏ toure of London & ẏ kyng beynge therin/ they fette out of ẏ toure the archebyſſhoppe of Caunterbury/ ſyr Symonde Sudbery/ and ſyr Robert halys hoſpytler pryoure and mayſter of ſaynt Johns houſe/ & a whyte frere ẏ was confeſſoure vnto kynge Rycharde/ & brought them to ẏ toure hyll and there ſmote they of theyr hedes and came agayne in to London & ſlewe moche people of the cyte. And than they wente vnto ẏ dukes place of Lancaſtre beyonde ſaynt Mary of the Stronde that was called the Sauoy and there they deuoured and diſtroyed all the goodes that they therin myght fynde and bare them awaye/ and than they brente vp the place/ & than afterwarde they wente to ſaynt Johns without Smythfelde & deſtroyed [illegible] there and brent vp that hous [illegible] and wente to [illegible] [illegible] and [illegible] ſpoyled the [illegible]/ and made them go out of ẏ ſentuary all that were within for any maner of gyrth. And than came vnto the Temple & to all other Innes of men of lawe & theſe people theym robbed them of theyr goodes and alſo tore theyr bokes of lawe/ and than they came to London & brake vp the pryſon of Newgate & toke out all the priſoners felons and other/ and of bothe countres and all the people that were within them/ & deſtroyed all ẏ bokes of the countres. And thus they contynued bothe ſaterday & ſonday vnto ẏ monday nexte after in all theyr malyce & wrechednes. ¶ And than on monday kynge Rycharde & his lordes ẏ were with hym that tyme/ & with ẏ mayer of London Wyllyam walworth ẏ was that tyme came to the aldermen & ẏ comyns of the cyte/ and they came in to Southwerke to here and to knowe ẏ intencyon of theſe rebelles & myſgouerned people. And this Jacke ſtrawe made ther a crye in ẏ felde that all ẏ people of acorde ſholde come nerer and here his clamours & his crye & his wyll. And the lordes & mayre and ẏ aldermen with the comynaltie hauynge indygnacyon of his couetyſe & falſneſſe & his foule preſumpcyon. Anone Wyllyā walworth ẏ tyme beynge mayre drewe out his knyfe and ſlewe Jacke ſtrawe & anone ryght ſmote of his heed & ſette it vpon a ſpere/ & ſo it was borne thrugh London & ſette vpon London brydge. Anone theſe ryottes & myſgouerned people were vanyſſhed as it had not be they/ & then ẏ kynge of his grete goodneſſe & by prayer of his lordes made there .vi. knyghtes of good & worthy men of ẏ cyte of London/ ẏ is to ſay/ Wyllyam walworth at ẏ tyme mayre and ſlewe Jacke ſtrawe & ẏ ſeconde Johan Nicholas brembre/ & the thyrde John Phylpot and the fourth Nycholas twyforde/ and ẏ fyfth Robert launde/ and the ſyxth Robert gaytoñ. And than the kynge with his lordes ⁊ knyghtes retourned agayne to the toure of London ⁊ there he reſted tyll his peple were better ceſſed ⁊ ſet in reſt ⁊ peas. And thā by proceſſe of tyme as they myght take ⁊ gete theſe rebelles ⁊ ryſers they honge them vpō the nexte galowes thrugh out euery lordſhyp in yͤ realme of Englonde by.xl.by.xxx.by.x. and by.xii. euer as they myghte be goten ⁊ taken in ony partes. ¶ And in yͤ.v. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne was yͤ grete erthquake ⁊ was generall thrughout yͤ worlde yͤ wedneſday after whytſondaye in yͤ yere of our lord. M.CCC.lxxxi. wherfore all maner people were ſore agaſt and aferde longe tyme for drede of vengeaunce yͭ our lorde ſhewed ⁊ dyd. ¶ And in yͤ.vi.yere of kynge Rycharde/then ſyr Henry ſpenſer byſſhop of Norwiche went wͭ a grete company ouer ſee in to Flaunders ⁊ there they gatt yͤ towne of Grauenynge ⁊ the towne of burbrughe/Dunkerk/⁊ Newport/⁊ there they laded and fraughted.li. ſhyppes wͭ pelage for to haue comen in to Englonde wͭ theſe ſhyppes ⁊ godes. And yͤ byſſhop of Norwich ⁊ his coūſeyle lete brenne theſe ſhyppes wͭ all yͤ pelage in yͤ ſame hauen in to harde aſſhes/⁊ at Dunkerke was done a batayle bytwene yͤ Flemynges ⁊ yͤ Englyſſhe men. And at that batayle were ſlayne a grete multytude of the Flemynges ⁊ a grete nōbre. And thā went the byſſhop wͭ his retenue to ypres ⁊ beſyeged it a longe tyme but it myght not be goten/⁊ ſoo left that ſyege ⁊ come agayn in to Englonde/for our Englyſſh men were fouly deſtroyed/⁊ many dyed on the flyx. And in this yere came quene Anne in to Englonde for to be ſpouſed to kynge Rycharde. And her fader was emperour of Almayne ⁊ kynge of Beme/⁊ with her came yͤ duke of Taſſy her vncle and many other worthy lordes ⁊ knyghtes of her coūtre of Beme ⁊ of other duche tongues to do her reuerence ⁊ whorſhyp And ſyr Symōd beurtle a worthy knyght of the garter ⁊ other knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers yͭ were yͤ kynges embaſſatours brought her in to Englonde ⁊ ſo forth to London. And yͤ people of yͤ cyte/yͭ is to ſaye yͤ mayre ⁊ the aldermen ⁊ all the comyns rode agaynſt her to welcome her/⁊ euery man in good araye/⁊ euery crafte wͭ his mynſtralſy in yͤ beſt maner wyſe ⁊ mette with her on yͤ blacke heth in Kent/⁊ ſo brought her vnto London thrugh yͤ cyte ⁊ ſo forth vnto weſtmynſtre vnto yͤ kynges palays And there ſhe was ſpouſed vnto kynge Rycharde well ⁊ worthely in the abbaye of weſtmynſtre ⁊ there ſhe was crowned quene of Englonde. And all her frendes that came wͭ her had grete gyftes ⁊ were well cheryſſhed and refreſſhed as longe tyme as they abode there. ¶ And in yͤ ſame yere there was a batayle done in the kynges palays at weſtmynſtre for certeyne poyntes of treaſon of ſyr Johñ Anſley knyght defendaunt/and Carton ſquyer the appellaunt. But this ſyr Johñ Anſley ouercame this Carton/⁊ made hym to yelde hym withī yͤ lyſtes. And anone was this Carton dyſpoyled of his harneys ⁊ drawen out of yͤ lyſtes ⁊ ſoo forth vnto Tyburne ⁊ there he was hanged for his falſneſſe. ¶ And in yͤ.viii.yere of the reygne of kynge Rycharde ſyr Edmonde of Langley/the erle of Cambryge kynge Rychardes vncle went in to Portyngale with a fayre company of men of armes ⁊ archers in ſtrengthynge and helpynge yͤ kynge of Portyngale agaynſt the kynge of Spayne ⁊ his power/and there yͤ kynge of Portyngale had yͤ victory of his enmyes thrugh helpe ⁊ comforte of our Englyſſhe men. And whan yͤ Journey was done the erle of Cambrydge came home agayn with his people in to Englonde in hath bleſſyd by god ⁊ his bleſſyd gyftes. Amen. ¶ And this ſame yere kynge Rycharde helde his Cryſtmas in ẏ maner of Eltham. ¶ And the ſame yere ẏ kynge of Armony fled out of his owne lande ⁊ came in to Englonde foꝛ to haue helpe ⁊ ſocoure of our kynge agaynſt his enmyes that had dryuen hym out of his realme And ſo he was brought vnto ẏ kynge to Eltham there as ẏ kynge helde his royal feeſt of Cryſtmas. ¶ And there our kynge welcomed hym/ ⁊ dyd hym moche reuerence ⁊ woꝛſhyp ⁊ commaūded all his loꝛdes to make hym all ẏ chere that euer they coude. And than he beſought ẏ kynge of his grace ⁊ helpe ⁊ of his comfoꝛte in his nede/ ⁊ that he myght be broughte agayne to his kyngdome. Foꝛ ẏ Turkes had deſtroyed ẏ mooſt parte of his lande/ ⁊ how he fled foꝛ drede/ ⁊ came hyder foꝛ ſocour ⁊ helpe. And then ẏ kynge hauynge on hym pyte ⁊ compaſſyon of his grete myſchyef and greuous dyſeaſe anone he toke his counſeyle ⁊ aſked what was beſt to do. And they anſwered ⁊ ſayd yf it lyked hym to gyue hym ony good it were well done. And as touchynge his people foꝛ to trauayle ſo ferre in to our landes it were a grete Jeopardy. And ſo the kynge gaue hym golde ⁊ ſyluer and many other ryche gyftes ⁊ Jowels ⁊ betaughte hym to god/ ⁊ ſo he paſſed agayne out of Englonde. ¶ And this ſame yere kynge Rycharde wᵗ a royall power went in to Scotlande foꝛ to warre vpon the Scottes foꝛ the falſneſſe ⁊ deſtruccyon that ẏ Scottes had done vnto the Englyſſhe men in the marches. And than the Scottes came downe to ẏ kynge foꝛ to treate wᵗ hym and with his loꝛdes foꝛ trewes as foꝛ certayne yeres. And ſo our kynge ⁊ his counſeyle graunted them trewes foꝛ certayne yeres/ ⁊ our kynge tourned hym agayne in to Englonde. And whan he was come vnto Yoꝛke there he abode ⁊ reſted hym there. And there ſyr John Holonde ẏ erle of Kentes broder ſlewe the erles ſone of Stafforde ⁊ his heyre wᵗ a dagger in ẏ cyte of Yoꝛke/ wherfoꝛe the kynge was ſoꝛe anoyed ⁊ greued ⁊ remeued thens ⁊ came to London. And ẏ mayer with the aldermen ⁊ ẏ comyns wᵗ all ẏ ſolempnyte that myght be done rode agaynſt ẏ kynge and brought hym royally through ẏ cyte and ſo foꝛth to weſtmynſtre to his owne palays. ¶ And in the .ix. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he helde a parlyament at weſtmynſter/ ⁊ there he made two dukes and a markeys ⁊ fyue erles. The fyrſt ẏ was made duke was ẏ kynges vncle ſyr Edmonde of Langley erle of Cambrydge ⁊ hym he made of Yoꝛke/ ⁊ his other vncle ſyr Thomas of wodſtok ẏ was erle of Bukyngham hym he made duke of Gloucetre. And ſyr Lyonnel ẏ was erle of Oxfoꝛde hym he made markeys of Deuelyn And Henry of Bolyngbꝛoke ẏ dukes ſone of Lancaſtre hym he made erle of Derby. And ſyr Edwarde the dukes ſone of Yoꝛke hym he made erle of Rutlonde. And ſyr Johan Holonde that was the erle of Kentes broder he dyd make erle of Huntyngdon. And ſyr Thomas Mombraye hym he made erle of Notyngham/ and ẏ erle Marſhall of Englonde. And ſyr Mychell de la pole knyght hym he made erle of Southfolke ⁊ Chaunceler of Englonde. And ẏ erle of ẏ Marche at ẏ ſame parlyament holden at weſtmynſtre in playne parlyament amongeſt all the loꝛdes ⁊ comyns was proclamed erle of ẏ Marche and heyre parent to the crowne of Englande after kynge Rycharde/ the whiche erle of the Marche went ouer the ſee in to Irlande vnto his loꝛdſhyppes and landes/ foꝛ ẏ erle of Marche is erle of Vlſter in Irlande ⁊ by ryght lyne ⁊ herytage. And there at the caſtell of his he laye that tyme/ ⁊ there came vpõ hym a grete multytude in buſſhementes of wylde Iryſſh men for to take hym ⁊ deſtroye hym. And he came oute fyerſly of his caſtell wt his people ⁊ manly fought with thẽ ⁊ there he was taken ⁊ hewẽ all to pyeces ⁊ ſo he dyed vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy.

¶ And in the .x. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne ÿ erle of Arundell went to the ſee with a grete nauy of ſhyppes ⁊ armed wt men of armes ⁊ good archers. And whã they came in ÿ brode ſee they mette wt the hole flete ÿ came with wyne laden frõ Rochell/ the whiche wyne were enmyes goodes. And there our nauy ſet vpõ them ⁊ toke them all and brought them vnto dyuerſe portes ⁊ hauens of Englonde ⁊ ſome to London/ and there ye myght haue hadde a tonne of Rochell wyne of ÿ beſt for .xx. ſhellynge ſterlynge/ and ſo we had grete chepe of wyne in Englonde that tyme thanked be god almyghty.

¶ How the fyue lordes aroſe at Ratcote brydge.

AND in ÿ reygne of kynge Rychard ÿ .xi. yere then fyue lordes aroſe at Ratcote brydge in ÿ deſtruccyon of the rebelles ÿ were ÿ tyme in all ÿ realme ¶ The fyrſt of theſe fyue lordes was ſyr thomas of wodſtok ÿ kynges vncle ⁊ duke of Glouceſtre. And the .ii. was ſyr Rycharde erle of Arundell. And the .iii. was ſyr Rycharde erle of warwyke. The .iiii. was ſyr Henry bolynbrok erle of Derby. The fyfth was ſyr Thomas Mowbraye erle of Notyngham. And theſe fyue lordes ſawe ÿ myſcheef ⁊ myſgouernaunce ⁊ ÿ falſneſſe of ÿ kynges counſeyle/ wherfore they ÿ were ÿ tyme cheef of the kynges counſeyle fled out of this lande ouer ſee that is to ſaye ſyr Alyſander Neuell/ the Archebyſſhop of yorke/ ⁊ ſyr Robert Lere marques of Deuelyne ⁊ erle of Oxforde/ and ſyr Mychell de la Pole/ erle of Southfolke ⁊ Chaunceler of Englonde. And theſe thre lordes went ouer ſee ⁊ came neuer ayene for there they dyed. And than theſe fyue lordes aboue ſayd made a parlyamẽt at weſtmynſtre ⁊ there they toke ſyr Robert Treſylyam the Juſtyce/ ⁊ ſyr Nichol Brembre knyght ⁊ cytezeyn of London/ and ſyr Johñ Salyſbury a knyght of the kynge houſholde ⁊ vſke ſergeaunt of armes/ ⁊ many more of other people were taken ⁊ Juged vnto ÿ dethe by ÿ counſeyle of theſe fyue lordes in that parlyament at weſtmynſtre for ÿ treaſon that they put vpõ thẽ to be drawen from the toure of London thrugh out ÿ cyte ⁊ ſo forth vnto Tyburne ⁊ there they ſholde be hãged ⁊ theyr throtes to be cut and thus they were ſerued ⁊ dyed. And after that in this ſame parlyamẽt at weſtmynſtre was ſyr Symond Beuerle that was a knyght of ÿ garter/ and ſyr Johñ Beauchamp knyght ÿ was Stewarde of ÿ kynges houſholde/ ⁊ ſyr James Berners were for Juged vnto ÿ deth ⁊ than they were ledde on fote to ÿ toure hylle and there were theyr hedes ſmyte of ⁊ many other more by theſe .v. lordes. ¶ In this ſame parlyament ⁊ in the .xii. yere of kynge Rychardes regne he lete crye ⁊ ordeyne a generall Juſtes ÿ is called a tornement of lordes ⁊ knyghtes/ ⁊ this Juſtes ⁊ tornemẽt were holde at Londõ in ſmythfelde of all maner of ſtraũgers of what lande or coũtree ÿ euer they were ⁊ thyder they were ryght welcome ⁊ to thẽ ⁊ to all other was holden opẽ houſholde ⁊ grete feeſtes/ and alſo grete gyftes were gyuẽ to all maner of ſtraũgers. And of the kynges ſyde were all of one ſuite theyr cotes theyr armure ſheldes horſe trappures ⁊ all was whyte hertes with crownes about theyr neckes ⁊ chaynes of golde hangynge there vpõ and ÿ crowne hangynge lowe before the hertes body/ the whiche herte was ye kynges leueraye ye he gaue to lordes & ladyes knyghtes and ſquyres for to knowe his houſholde from other people. And in this feeſt came to ye Juſtes .xxiiii. ladyes & ledde .xxiiii. lordes of ye garter wt chaynes of golde & all ye ſame ſutes of hertes as it is before ſayd frō ye toure on horſbacke thurgh the cyte of London in to Smythfelde there that ye Juſtes ſholde ben holde. And this feeſt & Juſtes was holden generall for all tho ye wolde come theder of what lande & nacyon ye euer they were. And this was holden durynge .xxiiii. days of ye kynges coſtes/ & theſe .xxiiii. lordes to anſwere al maner people ye wolde come thyder/ & thyder came ye erle of ſaynt Poule of Fraunce & many other worthy knyghtes wt hym of dyuerſe partyes full worthely arayed. And out of Holande & Henaude came the lorde Oſtreuaūt ye was the dukes ſone of Holande & many other worthy knyghtes wt hym of Holande full well arayed. And whan this feeſt & Juſtynge was ended ye kynge thanked this ſtraungers & gaue them many ryche gyftes/ & ſoo they toke theyr leue of ye kynge & other lordes & ladyes & went home ayen in to theyr owne countrees wt grete loue & moche thanke.

¶ And in ye .xiii. yere of kyng Rychardes regne there was a batayle done in ye kynges palays at Weſtmynſtre bytwene a ſquyer of Nauerne ye was wt kynge Rycharde/ & an other ſquyer ye was called Johan walſhe for poyntes of treaſon ye this Nauerne put vpō this walſhe man/ but this Nauerne was ouercome and yelde hym recreaūt to his aduerſary. And anone he was dyſpoyled of his armure and drawen out of the palays to Tyborne & there was hanged for his falſnes.

¶ And in ye .xiiii. yere of kyng Rychardes regne ſyr Johan of Gaūt duke of Lancaſtre went ouer ſee in to Spayne for to chalenge his ryght ye he had by his wyfes ryght vnto ye crowne of Spayne wt a grete hooſt of people/ & he had wt hym ye ducheſſe his wyfe & his thre doughters ouer ſee in to Spayne/ & there they were a grete whyle/ & at ye laſt ye kynge of Spayne began to treate wt ye duke of Lancaſtre & they were accorded togyder though theyr bothe conſeyle in this manere ye ye kynge of Spayne ſholde wedde ye dukes doughter ye was ye ryght heyre of Spayne/ & he ſholde gyue vnto the duke golde & ſyluer ye were caſte in to grete wedges & many other Jewels as moche as .viii. charyettes myght carye. And euery yere after durynge the dukes lyfe & ye ducheſſe his wyfe .x. M marke of golde of whiche golde ye auenture ſholde be to the of Spayne & yerely brynge vnto Bayon to ye dukes allygates by ſurete made. And alſo ye duke maryed another of his doughters vnto ye kyng of Portyngale the ſame tyme/ & whan he had done ſo he came home agayne in to Englonde. and his good lady his wyfe alſo/ but many worthy men dyed vpon ye flyx.

¶ In the .xv. yere of kynge Rychardes regne he helde his Cryſtmaſſe in the manere of Wodſtok & there ye erle of Penbroke a yonge lord and tendre of age wolde lerne to Juſte wt a knyght ye was called ſyr Johan of ſaynt Johan and rode togyder in ye parke of Wodſtoke/ & there this worthy erle of Penbroke was ſlayne with that other knyghtes ſpere as he caſte it frome hym whan that they hadde coupled/ and thus the good erle made there his ende/ & therfore the kynge and the quene made moche ſorowe for his dethe. ¶ And in ye .xvi. yere of kynge Rychardes regne Johan hende beynge that tyme mayre of London and Johan walworth & Henry vamer beynge ſheryfes of London/ that ſame tyme a bakers man bare a baſket of horſe brede in to Fleteſtrete towarde an hoſtel and there came a yonge man of ẏ byſſhop of Salyſbury that was called Romayne and he toke a hors lofe out of the baſket of the bakers ⁊ he aſked hym why he dyd ſo and this Romayne tourned agayne ⁊ brake ẏ bakers bred ⁊ neyghbours came out and wolde haue areſted this Romayne ⁊ he brake from them ⁊ fledde to his lordes place ⁊ the Conſtable wold haue had hym out / but the byſſhops men ſhette faſte the gates ⁊ kepte the place ẏ noo man myght entre / ⁊ than moche more people gadred thyder ⁊ ſayd ẏ they wolde haue hym out or elles they wolde brenne vp the place ⁊ all that were within. And than came the Mayre and ſhreues with moche other people ⁊ ceſed the malyce of the comyns ⁊ made euery man to go home to theyr houſes ⁊ kepe peas. And this Romayns lorde the byſſhop of Salyſbury mayſter Johñ Waltham that at that tyme was treſourer of Englonde wente to ſyr Thomas Arondell archebyſſhop of yorke and Chaunceler of Englonde ⁊ there ẏ byſſhop made his cōplaynt vnto ẏ Chaūceler on the people of the cyte of Londō. And than theſe two byſſhops of grete malyce ⁊ vengeaūce came vnto ẏ kyng at wyndſore ⁊ made a grete cōplaynt vpon the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues. And anone all ẏ Cyte afterwarde came before the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle / ⁊ they caſt vnto the cyte a greuous herte ⁊ a wonders grete malyce. And anone ſodeynly ẏ kynge ſent for the Mayre of London ⁊ the ſhreues / ⁊ they came to hym to ẏ caſtell of wyndſore And the kynge rebuked the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues full foule for the offence that they had done agaynſt hym and his offycers in his chambre at London / wherfore he depoſed and put out the Mayre ⁊ bothe ſhreues / and this was done the .xiiii. daye before ẏ feeſt of ſaynt Johñ Baptyſt. And than ẏ kynge called to hym a knyght ẏ was called ſyr Edwarde dalyngrygge and made hym wardeyne ⁊ gouernour of the cyte ⁊ chambre of London ⁊ ouer all his people therin / ⁊ ſo he kepte that offyce but foure wekes bycauſe that he was too gentyll ⁊ tendre to the cytezyns of London / wherfore the kynge depoſed hym and made ſyr Bawdewyne radyngton knyghte ẏ was Controller of the kynges houſholde wardeyne ⁊ gouernour of his chambre and of his people therin / ⁊ choſe to hym two worthy men of ẏ cyte to be ſhreues with hym to gouerne ⁊ kepe ẏ kynges lawes in the cyte / ẏ one was called Gylbert mawefeld ⁊ that other Thomas newenton ſhreues. And than the Mayre ⁊ the two ſhreues ⁊ all the aldermen with al ẏ worthy craftes of London wente on fote to the Toure of London / ⁊ there came out the Conſtable of the Toure ⁊ gaue the Mayre ⁊ ſhreues theyr othe ⁊ charge as they ſhold haue taken in ẏ eſcheker of weſtmynſter / in ẏ kynges courte of his Juſtyces ⁊ Barons of ẏ eſcheker / ⁊ than wente they home agayne And than the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle for the grete malyce ⁊ deſpyte ẏ they had to ẏ cyte of London remeued all his courtes frō weſtmynſter vnto ẏ cyte of yorke / that is to ſaye ẏ chaunceler / ẏ eſcheker / ẏ kynges benche / ⁊ the comyn place / and there they helde all theſe courtes of lawe fro mydſomer / that is to ſay the feeſt of ſaynt Johñ Baptyſt vnto ẏ feeſt of Cryſtmaſſe nexte comynge. And than the kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle ſawe it not ſo profytable there as it was at London / than anone he remeued it agayne to London ⁊ ſo to weſtmynſter for grete eaſe of his offycers ⁊ a vauntage to ẏ kynge ⁊ all the comyns of the reame. And whan the people of London ſawe ⁊ knewe ẏ theſe courtes were come agayne and the kynge ⁊ his people alſo / than the Mayre ⁊ the aldermen with the chefe comyns of the cyte let gadre a grete ſomme of golde of all the comyns of the cyte / and ordeyned & made grete ryaltees agaynſt his comynge to London to haue his grace & good lordſhyp / & alſo theyr lybertees & fraūchyſes graūted to them agayne as they were wonte to haue afore tyme. And though grete inſtaūce & prayer of ye quene & of other lordes & ladyes the kynge graūted them grace / & this was done at Shene in ſothery. And than the kynge within two dayes after came to Londō / and the Mayre of the cyte with the ſhreues aldermen & al the worthy men of the cyte afterwarde rode agaynſt hym in good aray to the heth on this ſyde of Shene / ye Mayre ſubmyttynge them humbly & mekely wt all maner obeyſaunce vnto hym as they ought to doo. And thus they brought the kynge & the quene to London / & whan the kynge came to the gate of Londō brydge there they preſented hym wt a mylke whyte ſtede ſadled & brydled / & trapped with cloth of golde and reed partyed togyder / and the quene a palfrey all whyte in the ſame araye trapped with whyte & reed / & all the cōdytes of London ranne wt wyne bothe whyte & reed / for all maner people to drynke who wold. And bytwene ſaynt Poule & the croſſe in chepe there was made a ſtage a ryall ſtandynge vpon hygh / & therin were many aūgelles with dyuers melodyes and ſonges. And than an aungell came downe from the ſtage on hygh by a vyce and ſet a crowne of golde pyght with riche perles & precyous ſtones vpon the kynges heed & an other vpon the quenes heed. And ſoo the cytezyns brought ye kynge & the quene to Weſtmynſter in to theyr palays. And than on ye morne after the Mayre & the ſhreues & the aldermen of London came vnto the kyng to his palays at Weſtmynſter & preſented hȳ with two baſyns of ſyluer & ouergylted full of coyned golde the ſomme of .xx. hondred poūde prayenge hym of his hyghe mercy and grace & lordſhyp and ſpecyally grace that they myght haue his good loue with theyr lybertees & fraūchyſes lyke wyſe as they were wonte for to haue before tymes and by his lettres patentes & his chartre confermed. And the quene & other worthy lordes & ladyes fel on theyr knees & beſought the kynge of grace to cōferme this. ¶ Than the kynge toke vp the quene & graunted her all her aſkynge. And than they thanked the kynge & the quene & wente home agayne. ¶ And in the .xvi. yere of kynge Rychardes regne certayn lordes of Scotlonde came in to Englond for to gete worſhyp as by fayte of armes / this were the perſones. ¶ The erle of Marre & he chalenged ye erle Marſhal of Englonde to Juſte with hym certayne poyntes on horſbacke with ſharpe ſperes. & they rode togider as two worthy knyghtes & lordes certayne courſes / but not the ful chalenge that the ſcottyſſhe erle made / for he was caſt both hors & man & two of his rybbes broken wt ye fall & ſo he was borne thens out of ſmythfelde home to his inne / & whan a lytel tyme after he was caryed home in a hors lytter & at yorke he dyed. And ſyr wyllyam Darell knyght & the kynges baneret of Scotlonde than made an other chalenge wt ſyr Peers courtayne knyght & the kynges baneret of Englonde of certayn courſes yet on horſbacke in the ſame feilde / & whan he had ryden certayne courſes & aſſayed he myght not haue the better he gaue it ouer & wolde no more of his chalenge with ſyr Peers courtayne knyght & the kynges baneret of Englonde & turned his hors and rode home to his inne. And one Cokbourne a ſquyer of Scotlond chalenged ſyr Nycholl hawberke a knyght of certayn courſes yet with ſharpe ſperes & rode .v. courſes togyder & at euery courſe the Scotte was caſte downe bothe horſe and man and thus our Englyſſhe lordes thanked he god had the ſelde. ¶ And in the .xvii. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne dyed ẏ good gracyous quene Anne that was wyfe to kynge Rycharde in ẏ manoyr of Shene in the ſhyre of Surrey on Wytſondaye/ & than was ſhe brought to London & ſo to weſtmynſter/ & there was ſhe buryed and worthely enteryed beſyde ſaynt Edwardes ſhryne/ on whoſe ſoule almyghty god haue pyte and mercy. Amen.

¶ How kynge Rycharde eſpouſed dame Iſabel the kynges doughter of Fraũce in the towne of Calays/ & brought her in to Englond & let her be crowned quene in ẏ abbaye of ſaynt Peters of weſtmynſter.

IN the .xx. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he wente hymſelfe ouer ſee to Calays with dukes/ erles/ lordes & barons & many other worthy ſquyres with grete araye & comyn people of the reame in good araye as longed to ſuche a kynge and prynce of his nobley and of his owne perſone to do hym reuerence & obſeruaũce as ought to be done to theyr lyege lord and ſo myghty a kẏge & Emperour in his owne to abyde & receyue there ẏ worthy & gracyous lady ẏ ſholde be his wyfe a yonge creature of .ix. yere of aege dame Iſabell ẏ kynges doughter of Fraũce & other worthy lordes of grete name both barons and knyghtes with moche other people ẏ came to the towne of Grauenynge & two dukes of Fraunce that one was the duke of Burgoyne and that other the duke of Barre that wolde no ferder leſſe thã they had pledges. And than kynge Rycharde delyuered two pledges for them for to go ſafe & come ſafe his two worthy vncles/ the duke of Glouceſtre & the duke of yorke & theſe two wente ouer ẏ water of Grauenynge & abode there as for pledges to the tyme that the maryage was done/ & that theſe two dukes of Fraunce were come agayne vnto Grauenyng water/ and than theſe two worthy dukes came ouer ẏ water at Grauenynge & ſoo to Calays with this worſhypfull lady dame Iſabell that was the kynges doughter of Fraũce and with her came many a worthy lorde & lady & knyghtes & ſquyres in the beſt araye that myght be & ſo brought her in to the towne of Calays/ & there ſhe was receyued with all ẏ ſolempnyte & worſhyp that myght be done to ſuche a lady. And than they brought her vnto the kynge/ and the kynge toke her & welcomed her & all her fayre cõpany & made there all ẏ ſolempnyte that myght be done. And than ẏ kynge & his cõſeyle aſked of the frenſſhe lordes whether all the couenaũtes & forwardes with the compoſycyon ẏ were ordeyned & made on bothe partyes ſholde be truely kepte and holde bytwene them. And they ſayd ye/ & there they ſwore and toke theyr charge vpon a boke and made theyr othe well & truly it to holde in all maner poyntes & couenaũtes wͭout contradyccyon or delay in ony maner wyſe. And than was ſhe brought to ſaynt Nicholas chirche in Calays & there ſhe was worthely wedded with ẏ mooſt ſolempnyte ẏ ony kynge or quene myght be/ wͭ archebyſſhops & byſſhops & al the mynyſtres of holy chirche/ & thã they were brought to ẏ caſtell & ſet to mete/ and were ſerued with all delycaſye of ryall metes & drynkes plenteuouſly to al maner of ſtraũgers & all other & no creature warned ẏ feeſt/ but al were welcome for there were grete halles and tentes ſet vpon the grene wͭout the caſtel to receyue all maner of people/ & euery offyce redy to ſerue them all. And thus this worthy maryage was ſolemply done & ended with al ryalte. And than theſe two worthy dukes of Fraunce with theyr people toke theyr leue of the kynge & of the quene & wente agayne vnto Grauenynge water/⁊ there the Frenſhe lordes/that is to ſaye yͤ two dukes and all theyr meyny were comen ouer the water to Grauenynge and they mette with our two dukes/⁊ eueryche one toke leue at other and ſo they departed/⁊ our lordes came agayne vnto Calays/⁊ the Frenſhe lordes went ouer the water and ſo home in to Fraunce agayne. And anone after the kynge made hym redy wͭ the quene and all his lordes and ladyes ⁊ al theyr people with them and came ouer the ſee in to Englonde and ſo vnto London/and the Mayre and the ſhreues with all the aldermen and worthy comyns rode agaynſt them vnto the blacke hethe in to Kente/and there they mette with the kynge and the quene ⁊ welcomed them ⁊ that in good araye/and euery man in the clothynge of his crafte ⁊ theyr mynſtrels before them. And ſoo they brought them vnto ſaynt Georges barre in ſouthwarke and there they toke theyr leue/⁊ the kynge ⁊ the quene rode to Kenyngton ⁊ than the people of London torned home agayne/⁊ in tornynge agayn to Londō brydge there was ſo grete preſe of people both on hors ⁊ on fote that there were deed on the brydge.xi. perſones of men ⁊ women and chyldren on whoſe ſoules god haue mercy and pyte. Amen. And than afterwarde the quene was brought to yͤ toure of Londō/⁊ there ſhe was all nyght/and on the morne ſhe was brought thrugh the cyte of London ⁊ ſo forth vnto weſtmynſter ⁊ there ſhe was crowned quene of Englonde/⁊ than ſhe was brought agayne vnto the kynges palays/and there was holden open courte ⁊ a ryall feeſt at her crownacyon of al maner people that thyder came And this was done the ſondaye nexte after the feeſt of ſaynt Clement/in the.xx. yere of kyng Rychardes reygne. And than the.xvi. day of Auguſt next after by euyll excytacyon and fals counſeyle ⁊ for grete wrathe ⁊ malyce yͤ the kynge had of olde tyme to his vncle yͤ good duke of Glouceſtre ⁊ to yͤ erle of Arundell ⁊ to yͤ erle of warwyk. Anone the kynge by his euyl excytacyon ⁊ his euyll coūſeyle ⁊ malyce late in the euenynge on yͤ ſame daye aboue ſayd made hym redy wͭ his ſtrength ⁊ rode in to Eſſex vnto the towne of Chelmeſforde and ſo came to Plaſſhe ſodeynly there ſyr Thomas of woodſtocke the good duke of Glouceſtre laye/⁊ the good duke came to welcome the kynge anone/⁊ the kynge areſted the good duke hymſelfe wͭ his own body/⁊ ſo he was ladde downe to yͤ water and anone put in to a ſhyppe ⁊ had to Calays ⁊ brought in to the capytayns warde to be kepte in holde by yͤ kynges cōmaūdement. And that tyme therle Marſhall was capytayne of Calays. And anone after by cōmaundement of the kynge ⁊ by his fals coūſeyle cōmaūded the capytayn to put hym to dethe. And anone certayne yemen that had yͤ good duke in kepynge toke theyr coūſeyle how that they ſholde put hym to deth. And this was theyr appoyntement yͤ they ſholde come vpon hym whan he were in his bedde and a ſlepe on a fether bedde/⁊ anone they bounde hym hande and fote ⁊ charged hym to lye ſtyll. And whan that they had done thus they toke two ſmall towelles ⁊ made on them two rydynge knottes ⁊ caſt the towelles aboute his necke/⁊ than they toke the fether bedde yͤ lay vnder hym ⁊ caſt it vpon hym/and than they drewe theyr towelles eche wayes/and ſome laye vpon yͤ fether bedde and vpon hym vnto the tyme that he was deed bycauſe that he ſholde make no noyſe/⁊ thus they ſtrangled this worthy duke vnto the deth/vpon whoſe ſoule god for his hygh pyte haue mercy. Amen

¶ And whan the kynge had areſted thus this worthy duke and his vncle and ſen hym to Calays he came agayne to Londõ in all the haſte with a wonders grete people. And as ſoone as he was come he ſent for the erle of Arundel / & for the good erle of Warwyke. And as ſoone as they came he areſted them hymſelfe / & ſyr John Cobham and ſyr John Cheyne knyghtes he areſted them in yͤ ſame maner tyll he made his parlyamẽt / & anone they were put in to holde / but the erle of Arundell went at large vnto yͤ parlyament tyme / for he founde ſuffycyent ſurety to abyde yͤ lawe & to anſwere to all maner poyntes that the kynge & his counſeyle wolde put vpon hym. ¶ And the .xxi. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne he ordeyned hym a parlyament at Weſtmynſter whiche was called the grete parlyament. And this parlyament was made for to Juge theſe thre worthy lordes & other moo as they lyſt at that tyme And for that Jugement yͤ kynge let make in al the haſte a longe hous & a large of tymbre the whiche was called an halle & couered with tyles ouer & it was open all aboute on bothe ſydes & at the endes yͭ all maner of men myght ſe through out / and there yͤ dome was holden vpon theſe foreſayd lordes & Jugement gyuẽ at this foreſayd parlyament. And for to come to this parlyament the kynge ſent his wrytes to euery lorde / baron / knyght / and ſquyre in euery ſhyre through out Englond yͭ euery lorde ſhold gadre & brynge his retenue wᵗ hym as ſhorte & in the beſt araye yͭ they myght gete in mayntenynge and in the ſtrengthynge of the kyng agaynſt them yͭ were his enemyes / & that this were done in all the haſte & come to hym on payne of deth. And the kynge hymſelfe ſente in to Cheſtreſhyre to the captaynes of yͤ coũtree / & they gadred & brought a grete & an huge company of people bothe of knyghtes and ſquyers & pryncypally of yemen of Cheſtreſhyre / whiche yemen & archers the kynge toke to his owne courte and gaue theym bowge of courte and good wages to be kepers of his owne body bothe by nyght & by daye aboue all other perſones & mooſt loued and beſt truſte / the whiche ſoone afterwarde tourned the kyng to grete loſſe & ſhame hyndrynge & his vtter vndoynge & deſtruccyon as ye ſhall here afterwarde. And that tyme came ſyr Henry of Derby with a grete meyny of men of armes & archers / and the erle of Rutlond came with a ſtronge power of people both of men of armes and archers / and the erle of Kent brought a grete power of men of armes & archers / the erle Marſhal came in yͤ ſame maner / & the lorde Spenſer in the ſame maner / the erle of Northumberlonde and ſyr Henry Percy his ſone / & ſyr Thomas Percy the erles broder / all theſe worthy lordes brought a fayre meyny & a ſtronge power / & eche man in his beſt araye / and the duke of Lancaſtre & the duke of yorke came in yͤ ſame maner wᵗ men of armes & archers folowynge yͤ kynge / & ſyr Wyllyã Scrope treſourer of Englonde came in the ſame maner. And thus in this aray came al the worthy men of this londe vnto our kynge / & all theſe people came to London in one daye / in ſo moche that euery ſtrete and lane in London and in the ſubarbes were full of them lodged .x. or .xii. myle aboute Londõ / on euery way. And theſe people brought yͤ kynge to Weſtmynſter and went home agayn to theyr lodgynge bothe hors & man / & than on the monday the .xii. day of Septembre yͤ parlyament began at Weſtmynſter whiche was called the grete parlyament. And on the fryday nexte after yͤ erle of Arũdell was brought in to the parlyament amonge all yͤ lordes and yͭ was on ſaynt Mathewes daye the apoſtle & euangelyſt / there he was for Juged vnto the deth in this halle that was made in the paleys at Weſtmynſter. And this was his Jugement/ he ſholde go on fote with his handes bounde behynde hym from the place that he was Juged in ⁊ ſo forth through the cyte of London vnto the Toure hyll ⁊ his heed to be ſmyten of/ ⁊ ſo it was done in dede in the ſame place. And .vi. of the grettest lordes that ſate on his Jugement rode with hym vnto the place there he was done to the deth/ ⁊ ſaw to ſe that the execucyon were done after the dome/ ⁊ by the kynges cõmaũdement with them wente on fote men of armes ⁊ archers a grete multytude of Cheſtreſhyre men in ſtrengthynge of the lordes that brought this erle to his deth/ for they were in drede leeſt the erle ſholde be reſcowed and taken from them whan they came in to London. Thus he paſſed forth through the cyte vnto his deth/ and there he toke it full pacyently/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. And than came the Auſtyn freres ⁊ toke vp ẏ body ⁊ the heed of this good erle ⁊ bare it home to theyr place ⁊ buryed hym in theyr quyer/ ⁊ on ẏ morne after was ſyr Rycharde erle of Warwyk brought in to the parlyament there as the erle of Arũdell was for Juged/ and they gaue the erle of warwyk the ſame Jugement that the forſayd erle had/ but ẏ lordes had cõpaſſyon of hym bycauſe he was of more gretter aege ⁊ releaſed hym in to perpetuall pryſon/ ⁊ put hym in to ẏ yle of Man. And than on the mondaye nexte after the lorde John Cobham of Kente/ ⁊ ſyr John Cheyn knyghtes were brought alſo in to the ſame parlyament in ẏ ſame hal/ ⁊ there they were for Juged for to be hanged ⁊ drawe/ but through ẏ prayers ⁊ grete inſtaunce of all the lordes that Jugement was forgyuen to them and releaſed into perpetuall pryſon. ¶ And in this ſame yere was Rycharde Whytyngton Mayre of London/ ⁊ John Wodecocke ⁊ Wyllyam Aſkam Shryues of London. And they ordeyned at euery gate of Londõ durynge this ſame parlyament ſtronge watche of men of armes ⁊ archers/ ⁊ through out euery warde alſo. And ẏ kynge made .v. dukes and one markeys ⁊ foure erles/ and the fyrſt of them was the erle of Derby ⁊ he was made duke of Herforde/ and the ſeconde alſo was the erle of Rutlonde ⁊ he was made duke of Albemarle/ ⁊ the thyrde was ẏ erle of Kent ⁊ he was made duke of Surrey/ ⁊ the fourth was the erle of Huntyngdon ⁊ he was made duke of Exceſtre/ ⁊ the fyfth was the erle of Notyngham ⁊ he was made duke of Northfolke And ẏ erle of Somerſet was made markeys of Dorſet/ ⁊ the lorde Spenſer was made erle of Glouceſtre/ ⁊ the lorde Neuyll of raby was made erle of Weſtmerlonde/ ⁊ ſyr Thomas percy was made erle of Worceſtre/ ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam ſcrope that was treſourer of Englõde was made erle of Wylſhyre/ ⁊ ſyr John montagu erle of Salyſbury. And whan ẏ kynge had thus done he helde the parlyament ⁊ ryall feeſt vnto all his lordes ⁊ to all maner of people that thyder wolde come. ¶ And this ſame yere dyed ſyr John of Gaūte ẏ kynges vncle ⁊ duke of Lancaſtre in the byſſhops Jnne in holborne/ ⁊ was brought fro thens to ſaynt Poule/ ⁊ there ẏ kynge made and helde his enterement well and worthely with all his lordes in ẏ churche of ſaynt Poule in London ⁊ there he was buryed beſyde dame Blaunce his wyfe ẏ was doughter ⁊ heyre vnto the good Henry that was duke of Lancaſtre. ¶ In the ſame yere there fel a dyſcencyon bytwene the duke of Herforde and the duke of Norfolke/ in ſo moche ẏ they waged batayle ⁊ caſt downe theyr gloues ⁊ than they were taken vp ⁊ conſeiled ⁊ ẏ batayle Joyned ⁊ the daye ſet/ ⁊ the place aſſygned where and whan/ ⁊ this ſholde be at Couentre. And thyder came the kynge wt all his lorthe North countre. And theſe thre lordes aboue ſayd for lucre of money had made a promeſſe vnto yͤ Frenſhe men for to haue ſlayne kynge Henry yͤ fyfth ⁊ all his bredern by a falſe trayne ſodaynly or they hadde be ware. But god almyghty helde his holy hande ouer theym ⁊ ſaued them frome theſe peryllous menye. And for to haue done this they receyued of yͤ frenſh men a myllyon of golde/and yͭ was there openly knowen/⁊ for theyr falſe treaſon they were all thre Juged vnto the dethe and this was yͤ Jugement yͭ they ſholde be lad through Hampton ⁊ without north gate there to be heded/and thus they ended theyr lyues for theyr falſe couetyſe ⁊ treaſon. And anone after as all this was done yͤ kynge ⁊ all his meny made theym redy ⁊ went to ſhyp ⁊ ſayled forthe wᵗ.xv. hondred ſhyppes ⁊ aryued within Seyn at Kydcauſe vpon our lady euen the Aſſumpcyon in Normandye wᵗ all his ordynaũce. And ſo went hym forth to Harflet ⁊ he beſyeged the towne all about by lande ⁊ eke by water ⁊ ſente to yͤ Capptayne of the towne ⁊ charged hym to delyuer yͤ towne. And yͤ Captayne ſayd yͭ he wolde delyuer hym none/ne none he wold hym yelde/but bad hym do his beſt. And than our kynge layd his ordynaũce vnto yͤ towne/that is for to ſay Gonnes/Engynnes ⁊ trypgettes ⁊ ſhotte ⁊ caſt at yͤ walles ⁊ eke vnto the towne/⁊ caſte downe bothe toures ⁊ towne ⁊ layd them vnto yͤ erthe and there he played at the tenes with his harde gonne ſtones. And they that were within yͤ towne whan they ſholde playe theyr ſonge was wel away ⁊ alas yͭ euer ſuche tenes balles were made/⁊ curſed all tho yͭ warre begã ⁊ yͤ tyme yͭ euer they were borne.

¶ And on yͤ morowe yͤ kynge dyd crye at euery gate of the towne that euery man ſholde be redy on the morowe erly to make aſſaute vnto yͤ towne. And Wyllyam Boucher ⁊ Johñ Graunt with xii. other burgeys worthy men came to yͤ kynge ⁊ beſought hym of his royall pryncehode ⁊ power to withdrawe his malyſce ⁊ deſtruccyõ yͭ he dyd to thẽ ⁊ beſought hym of.viii.dayes of reſpyte ⁊ trewes yf ony reſcowe myght come to them ⁊ elles to yelde vp the towne to hym wᵗ all their goodes/⁊ than yͤ kynge ſent forth yͤ capptayne ⁊ kept yͤ remenaũt ſtyll wᵗ hym ⁊ yͤ lorde Gancort yͭ was capytayne of yͤ towne wente forth to Royn in all yͤ haſt vnto the Dolphyn for helpe ⁊ ſocour but there was none ne noo man of reſcowe/for the Dolphyn wold not abyde/and thus this Capytayne came agayne vnto the kynge ⁊ yelded vp yͤ towne ⁊ delyuered hym yͤ keyes ⁊ bad hẽ go ⁊ put out all yͤ Frenſſh men both men women ⁊ childern ⁊ ſtuffe his towne of Harflet wᵗ Englyſſhe people And the kynge ſent in to Englonde ⁊ dyd crye in euery good towne of Englonde yͭ what crafty man wolde come thyder ⁊ enhabyte hym there in yͤ towne he ſholde haue houſe ⁊ houſholde to hym ⁊ to his heyres for euermore. And thyder wente many dyuerſe marchauntes ⁊ crafty men ⁊ enhabyte them there to ſtrength yͤ towne and were welcome. And whan the kynge ſawe yͭ this towne was well ſtuffed both of vytayls ⁊ of men this worthy prynce toke his leue ⁊ went to Calays warde by lande/⁊ the Frenſſhe men herde of his comynge they thought for to haue ſtopped hym his waye yͭ he ſholde not paſſe that waye/⁊ in all the haſt yͭ they myght brake all yͤ brydges where that as ony paſſage was for horſe ⁊ man in ſo moche that there myght no man paſſe ouer yͤ ryuers nother on horſe ne fote/but yf he ſholde haue be drenched. And therfore our kynge wᵗ all his people wente and ſought his way fer vp to Parys warde ⁊ there was all yͤ royall power of Fraunce aſſembled and redy to gyue hym bataylle & for to deſtroye all his people/ But almyghty god was his guyde & ſaued hym & all his meny & defended hẽ of his enmyes power & purpoſe thãked be god that ſaued ſo his owne knyght and kynge in his ryghtfull tytle. And than our kynge beholdynge & ſeynge ẏ grete multytude & nõbre of his enmyes to withſtande his waye & gyue hym batayle/than ẏ kyng wt a meke herte & a good ſpyryte lyfte vp his handes to almyghty god & beſought hẽ of his helpe/ and ẏ daye to ſaue his trewe ſeruauntes. Than oure kynge gadred all his lordes & other people aboute & bad thẽ all to be of good chere/for they ſholde haue a fayre and a gracyous vyctorye & ẏ better of all theyr enmyes/& prayed thẽ to make them redy vnto ẏ batayle/for he wolde rather be deed ẏ day in ẏ felde/than to be taken of his enmyes/for he wolde neuer put ẏ reame of Englonde to raunſome for his perſone. And the duke of yorke fell on his knees & beſought ẏ kynge of a bone ẏ he wolde graunte hym ẏ day ẏ auaũtwarde in his batayle/& ẏ kynge graũted hẽ his aſkynge & ſayd gramercy coſyn of yorke and prayed hym to make hym redy. And than bad he euery man to ordeyne hym a ſtake of tree & ſharpe bothe endes ẏ ẏ ſtake myght be pytche in the erthe a ſlope ẏ theyr enmyes ſhold not ouercome thẽ on horſbacke/for ẏ was theyr falſe purpoſe & arayed them for to ouer ryde our meny ſodaynly at ẏ fyrſt comyng on of them at the fyrſt brunte. And all ẏ nyght before ẏ batayle/ẏ Frenſſhe men made many grete fyers & moche reuell wt howtynge and ſhowtynge & played our kynge & his lordes at ẏ dyſe/and an archer alwaye for a blanke of theyr money/for they wende ẏ all had ben theyrs/ẏ mornẏ aroſe ẏ daye gaune ſprynge/& ẏ kynge by good auyſe lete araye his batayle & his wynges and charged euery man to kepe them hole togyder & prayed them all to be of good chere. And whanne they were redy he aſked what tyme of day it was & they ſayd pryme. Than ſayd our kynge now it is good tyme for all Englonde prayeth for vs/and therfore be of good chere & lete vs goo to our Journey. And thã he ſayd wt an hygh voyce in ẏ name of almyghty god & ſaynt George auaũte Baner and ſaynt George this day thyn helpe. And than ẏ Frenſſhe men came prykynge downe as they wolde haue ouer ryden all our meny/but god and our archers made thẽ ryght ſoone to ſtomble/for our archers ſhotte neuer arowe amyſſe/but it peryſſhed & brought vnto ẏ grounde bothe horſe & man/for they ſhotte that day for a wager. And our ſtakes made thẽ toppe ouer terue eche one ouer other ẏ they laye on hepes two ſperes length of hyghe. And our kynge with his meny/and with his men of armes & archers that ſmacked on them ſo thycke with arowes and layde on with ſtaues ẏ oure kynge wt his handes foughte manly that day. And thus god almyghty and ſaynt George brought our ennemyes to grõde & gaue vs ẏ day ẏ vyctory. There were ſlayne of Frenſſhe men that day in ẏ felde of Agyncourt more then .xi.M. without pryſoners ẏ were taken/& there were nombred that day of Frenſſhe men in ẏ felde more thã ſyxe ſcore .M. but god that daye fought for vs. And after came there tydynges to oure kynge that there was a newe batayl of Frenſſh mẽ ordeyned redy for to ſtele on hym & came towardes hym. And anone our kynge lete crye that euery man ſholde ſlee his pryſoners that he hadde taken/and anone to make theym agayne redy for to fyghte with the Frenſſhe men. And whan they ſawe that oure men kylled downe theyr pryſoners thanne they dyde withdrawe them ⁊ brake theyr batayle and all theyr araye. And thus oure kynge as a worthy conquerour had that daye the vyctory in the felde of Agyncourt in Pycardy. And than our kynge retourned agayne there that the batayle was for to ſe what peple were ſlayne of Englyſſhe men / ⁊ yf ony were hurte ẏ they myghte be holpen And there were deed in ẏ felde ẏ duke of Barrye / the duke of Alanſome / ẏ duke of Brabande / ẏ erle of Nauerne chyef conestable of Fraunce / ⁊ .viii. erles / ⁊ ẏ archebyſſhop of Sanſer / ⁊ of good barōs a .C. ⁊ more / ⁊ of worthy knyghtes of grete alyaunce of cote armures a .M. ⁊ .v.C. ⁊ 10 of Englyſſhe men was deed ẏ day the good duke of Yorke ⁊ ẏ erle of Southfolke / ⁊ of all other Englyſſhe men there were not deed paſſynge .xxvi. bodyes thanked be god. And this batayle was on frydaye whiche was ſaynt Cryſpyne ⁊ Cryſpinianes daye in ẏ moneth of Octobre / ⁊ anone ẏ kynge cōmaunded to bury them and ẏ duke of Yorke to be caryed forth wͭ hym ⁊ ẏ erle of Southfolke. And there were pryſoners ẏ duke of Orlyaūce / ẏ duke of Burbō ẏ erle of Vendome ẏ erle of Ewe the erle of Rychemonde ⁊ ſyr Burcygaūt Marchall of Fraunce / ⁊ many other worthy lordes were taken there in this batayle of Agyncourt ⁊ were brought vnto ẏ towne of Calays ⁊ ſo ouer ẏ ſee wͭ ẏ kynge in to Englonde ⁊ landed at Douer in Kent wͭ all his pryſoners in ſaufte thanked be god almyghty / ⁊ ſo came to Caunterbury ⁊ offred at ſaynt Thomas ſhryne / ⁊ ſo he rode forth though the coūtre of Kente ẏ next waye vnto Eltham ⁊ there he reſted tyll ẏ he wolde come to London And than the mayer of London ⁊ ẏ aldermen ſhyreues / with all the worthy comuners ⁊ craftes came to ẏ blacke heth well and worthely arayed for to welcome our kynge wͭ dyuerſe melodyes / ⁊ thanked almyghty god of his gracyous vyctory ẏ he ſhewed for hȳ. And ſo ẏ kynge ⁊ his pryſoners paſſed forth by them tyll he came to ſaynt thomas waterynge / ⁊ there met with hym all relygyous men with proceſſyon ⁊ welcomed hym / ⁊ ſo ẏ kyng came rydynge wͭ his pryſoners through ẏ cyte of London where ẏ thē was ſhewed many a fayre ſyght at all ẏ conduytes ⁊ at ẏ croſſe in chepe as in heuenly aray of aungelles / archaungelles patryarkes prophetes ⁊ virgynes wͭ dyuerſe melodyes ſenſynge ⁊ ſyngynge to welcome ẏ kynge ⁊ all the conduytes rennynge wͭ wyne ⁊ ẏ kynge paſſed forth to ſaynt Poules and there met wͭ hym .xiiii. byſſhoppes all reueſted ⁊ myered wͭ ſenſers to welcome ẏ kyng ⁊ there they ſonge for his gracyous vyctory Te deū laudam'. And there the kynge offred ⁊ toke his horſe and rode to weſtmynſtre / ⁊ than ẏ mayer toke his leue of ẏ kynge ⁊ rode home ayene.

¶ And in ẏ .iii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fyfth came ẏ Emperour of Almayne kynge of Rome ⁊ of Hungrye in to Englonde ⁊ ſo to ẏ cyte of London. And ẏ mayer and ẏ aldermen wͭ ẏ ſhreues and worthy craftes of London by ẏ kynges cōmaundement met with hym on ẏ blacke hethe in ẏ beſt aray ẏ they coude on horſbacke. and there they welcomed hym ⁊ brought hym vnto London wͭ moche honour and grete reuerence. And at ſaynt Thomas waterynge there met wͭ hym ẏ kynge wͭ all his lordes in good araye. And there was a worthy metynge bytwene ẏ Emperoure ⁊ kynge Henry ẏ fyfth ⁊ there they kyſſed togyder ⁊ enbraced eche other and than ẏ kynge toke ẏ Emperour by ẏ hande ⁊ ſo they came rydynge through ẏ cyte of London vnto ſaynt Poules and there they alyghted ⁊ offred ⁊ all ẏ byſſhoppes ſtode reueſted wͭ ſenſers in theyr handes ſenſynge to thē. And than they toke their horſes ⁊ rode vnto Weſtmynſtre. And ẏ kynge lodged ẏ Emperoure in his owne palays ⁊ there he reſted hym a grete whyle ⁊ all at ẏ kynges coſte. ¶ And ſoone after came ẏ duke of Holande in to Englonde to come ⁊ ſe there ẏ emperour ⁊ to ſpeke with hym ⁊ wt our kynge Henry of Englond/ ⁊ he was worthely receyued ⁊ lodged in ẏ byſſhoppes Inne of Ely/ ⁊ all at ẏ kynges coſte. And whan ẏ Emperoure had well reſted hym ⁊ ſeen ẏ londe in dyuerſe partyes ⁊ knewe the commodytees than by proceſſe of tyme he toke his leue of ẏ kynge/ but or he yode he was made knyght of ẏ garter ⁊ receyued ⁊ wered ẏ lyueraye. And than he thanked ẏ kynge ⁊ all his lordes. And than ẏ kyng ⁊ he went ouer ẏ ſee vnto Calays ⁊ abode there longe tyme to haue an anſwer of ẏ Frenſſhe kynge/ ⁊ at ẏ laſte it came ⁊ pleaſed hym ryght nought. And ſo the Emperour toke his leue of the kynge ⁊ paſſed forth in goddes name/ and our kynge came ouer agayne in to Englonde in all ẏ haſt that he myght/ ⁊ ẏ was on ſaynt Lucas euen that he came to Lamberth/ ⁊ in ẏ monday nexte he came in to ẏ parliament at Weſtmynſter. ¶ And in the ſame yere was a grete derth of corne in Englonde/ but thãked be god it laſted not longe.

AND in the .iiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fyfth he helde his parlyamẽt at Weſtmynſtre in ẏ begynnynge of Octobre ⁊ laſt to ẏ puryfycacion of of our lady thã next after. And there was graunted vnto hẏ to mayntayne his warres both of ſpiritualte ⁊ of tẽporalyte an hole taxe ⁊ a dyme/ ⁊ than ẏ kynge prayed all his lordes to make theym redy to ſtrength hym in his ryght. And anone he lete make a newe retenue and charged al his men to be redy at Hampton in whyteſonweke next after without ony delaye. And there ẏ kynge made ẏ duke of Bedforde protectoure ⁊ defender of his realme of Englond in his abſence ⁊ charged hym to kepe his lawes ⁊ mayntayn both ſpirituall ⁊ temporall. And whã ẏ kynge had thus done ⁊ ſet all thynge in his kynde. On ſaynt Markes daye he toke his horſe at Weſtmynſtre ⁊ came rydynge to Poules ⁊ there he offred ⁊ toke his leue/ ⁊ ſo rode forth through ẏ cyte takynge his leue of all maner of people as well pore as ryche prayenge theym all in generall to pray for hym. And he rode forth to ſaynt Georges ⁊ there offred ⁊ toke his leue of the mayre chargynge hym to kepe well his chambre. And ſo he rode forth to Hampton/ ⁊ there abode tyll his retenue were redy ⁊ comen/ for there was all his nauye and ſhyppes at his ordynaũce gadred togyder ⁊ well ſtuffed as longed to ſuche a a ryall kynge wt all maner of vitayles for ſuche a royall people as well for horſe as for man as longed for ſuche a warryour/ that is to ſay gonnes trypgettes engynes ſowes baſtyles brydges of lether ſcalynge ladders malles ſpades ſhouelles pyckes pauys bowes ⁊ arowes bowe ſtrynges ⁊ tonnes cheſtes ⁊ pypes full of arowes as neded for ſuche a worthy warryour that no thynge was to ſeche whan tyme came/ thyder came to hym ſhyppes laden with gonnes ⁊ gonpoudre. And whã this was redy ⁊ his retenue came ẏ kynge ⁊ all his lordes with all his ryall hooſt wente to ſhyp ⁊ toke the ſee ⁊ ſayled in to Normandy ⁊ landed at Towke vpõ lammaſſe daye than next after/ ⁊ there he made .xlviii. knyghtes at his landynge/ and than the kynge herynge of many enmyes vpon ẏ ſee/ ẏ is for to ſay .ix. grete Carackes hulkes Galays ⁊ ſhyppes ẏ were comynge to deſtroye his nauye. And anone he cõmaũded ẏ erle of Marche to be chyef cheftayne/ ⁊ many other worthy lordes wyth hym ⁊ wͭ men of armes ⁊ archers to go to the ſee ẏ none enmyes defouled his nauy ne entred his lande in no partye for to dyſtroble his vyage. And anone ẏ erle toke his meny ⁊ went to ſhyp ⁊ ſcōmed ẏ ſee ⁊ kepe the ſee coſtes ẏ no maner of enmyes durſt route vpō ẏ ſee/ and anone ẏ kynge ſente his haraudes vnto ẏ Capytayne of Touke ⁊ charged hym for to delyuer hym his caſtell ⁊ his towne ⁊ els he wolde neyther leue man ne chylde alyue/ ⁊ anone ẏ Capytayne ⁊ foure other burgeyſes of ẏ towne broughte ẏ keyes to ẏ kynge ⁊ beſought hym of grace/ ⁊ ẏ kynge delyuered ẏ keyes to ſyr Johñ kykeleye ⁊ made hym captayne ⁊ cōmaunded hym for to put oute all the Frenſſhe men bothe of ẏ caſtell ⁊ of ẏ towne. And there beſyde was ẏ caſtell of Louers ⁊ thyder the kynge ſent ẏ erle Marchall wͭ a fayre meny ⁊ aſſauted ẏ towne/ ⁊ anone it was yolden to ẏ erle ⁊ brought hym ẏ keyes ⁊ he brought them to ẏ kynge ⁊ the kynge toke them to hym agayne ⁊ made hym capytayne of the caſtell of Louers ⁊ of all ẏ longed therto/ ⁊ charged hym to delyuer out all ẏ Frenſſhe men. And than ẏ kynge helde forth his waye to Cane that was a ſtronge towne ⁊ a fayre and a ryall caſtell therin/ ⁊ anone he ſente his Heraudes to the capytayne ⁊ charged hym to delyuer the towne ⁊ his caſtell or els he wolde gete thē wͭ ſtrength of hande. And they anſwered ⁊ ſayd ẏ he toke them none to kepe ne none they wolde delyuer to hym. And ſo anone he layde his ſyege vnto ẏ towne ⁊ layd gonnes on euery ſyde ⁊ bete downe bothe walles ⁊ toures/ ⁊ ſlewe moche people in theyr houſes ⁊ alſo in ſtretes. And ẏ good duke of Clarence layde downe ẏ walles on his ſyde vnto ẏ bare grounde. And ſo within a whyle ẏ kynge by his counſeyle aſſauted the towne all about. And anone the duke of Clarence was entred in to ẏ towne ⁊ ſlewe downe ryghte tyll he came to the kynge ⁊ ſpared nother man nor chylde/ ⁊ euer they cryed a Clarence/ a Clarēce and ſaynt George. And there was deed on ẏ walles on ẏ kynges ſyde a worthy man ẏ was called ſprynges ẏ whiche ẏ kynge cōmaūded to be buryed in ẏ abbay of Cane faſt by wyllyam cōquerour/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amē. And than ẏ kynge came in to the towne wͭ his broder ẏ duke of Clarence/ and many other worthy lordes wͭ moche ſolempnyte ⁊ myrthe. And than ẏ kynge commaunded ẏ Captayne for to delyuer hym his caſtel/ ⁊ he beſought ẏ kynge to gyue hym .xiiij. days of reſpyte yf ony reſcowe wolde come/ ⁊ yf none wolde come to delyuer hym ẏ keyes ⁊ ẏ caſtell at his commaūdemēt. And vnder this compoſycyon was ẏ towne ⁊ ẏ caſtell of Bayous with other townes fortreſſes ⁊ vyllages in to ẏ nombre of .xiiij. vpō ẏ hylle before the caſtel of Cane our kynge pyght all his tentes ẏ ſemed a towne as moche as Cane/ ⁊ by that tyme came tydynges ẏ none reſcowe wolde come there. And ſo at the .xiiij. dayes ende the capytayne of the caſtell came out and delyuered ẏ keyes and the caſtell to our kynge/ ⁊ Bayous/ ⁊ the other .xiiij. townes were delyuered vnto hym alſo/ ⁊ anone ẏ kynge delyuered the keyes to ẏ duke of Clarence ⁊ made hym Capitayne bothe of the towne ⁊ alſo of ẏ caſtell/ ⁊ made hym Capytayne of Bayous ⁊ of all the other townes alſo. And ſoo he entred ẏ towne ⁊ the caſtell/ ⁊ there he helde Saynt Georges feeſt/ and there he made .xv. knyghtes of the bathe there was ſyr Lewys Roberte Salyn Chayny Mongomery ⁊ many other worthy men And ẏ kynge cōmaunded them for to put out all the Frenſſhe men ⁊ women/ ⁊ noo man ſo hardy to defoule no woman ne take no maner of good awaye frome them but lette them paſſe in peas on payne of dethe. And there paſſed out of the towne in one day more thã .xv.C. women. And the kynge lete ſtuffe yͤ towne ⁊ caſtell wᵗ Englyſſhe men ⁊ ordeyned there two capytaynes / yͤ one for yͤ towne ⁊ yͤ other for the caſtell / ⁊ charged them vpon theyr lyues to kepe well yͤ towne ⁊ yͤ caſtell. And or that our kyng went thens he gate Valeys Mewelyn and layd a ſyege to Chyrburch / ⁊ yͤ ſyege layde yͤ duke of Glouceſtre wᵗ a ſtronge power ⁊ a myghty / ⁊ by proceſſe of tyme ⁊ made there a Capytayne of the ſame towne. ¶ And this ſame tyme the good erle of warwyke layde a ſyege vnto Dounffronte ⁊ gate it ⁊ put therin a Capytayne. And for to ſpeke more of the erle of Marche that the kynge ordeyned tho to ſcomme the ſee ⁊ to kepe the coſtes of Englonde for all maner of Enmyes / yͤ wynde aroſe vpon them yͤ they wende all to haue ben loſte / but through the grace of almyghty god ⁊ good gouernaũce they rode afore yͤ yle of wyght al yͤ ſtorme. And there was loſte two Carackes ⁊ two Balyngers wᵗ marchaũdyſe ⁊ other goodes ⁊ all yͤ people yͤ were wᵗin them / ⁊ an other Caracke broke vp before Hampton and threwe his maſte ouer the walles of the towne / and this was on ſaynt Bartholomeus daye. And whan all this ſtorme was ceſſed this worthy erle of the Marche toke his ſhyppes wᵗ his meny ⁊ wente to the ſee and landed in Normandye at Hogges ⁊ ſoo rode forth towardes yͤ kynge / ⁊ euer as he came yͤ frenſſhmen fled. And there came to them an anthony pygge ⁊ folowed yͤ hooſt all the waye tyll they came to a grete water / ⁊ there they dradde to haue be drenched for the water cloſed them ſo yͤ they myghte noo where gete out. But at the laſte god almyghty and this pygge brought theym all ſaufe oute / and there they caught them a gyde that knewe all the countre aboute and he broughte theym through a quyche ſande and ſoo in to an yle / and they toke many pryſoners by the way towarde the kynge in theyr Iourney / and ſo they came vnto Cane. And there yͤ kynge welcomed hym ⁊ toke his way at Argentun / ⁊ anone tho it was yolden to the kynge ⁊ they hadde theyr lyues ⁊ wente theyr waye. And than our kyng remeued vnto a ſtronge towne that tho was called Ceſe / and there was a fayre mynſter and they yolde it vp anone vnto the kynge. And than the kynge wente frome thens to alaunſome ⁊ wan the towne and the brydge / and the kynge ſent the erle of warwyke to a towne that was called Beleſme wyth a grete ⁊ ſtronge power / and anone they yolde it ⁊ put them all to the kynges grace ⁊ in his mercy / ⁊ ſo dyde many ſtronge townes ⁊ caſtels yͤ were in tho partyes. And fro this they went in to Vernyll in Perche / ⁊ anone it was yolden to yͤ kynge bothe yͤ towne ⁊ the caſtell / ⁊ bodyes ⁊ goodes to kynges grace / ⁊ ſo yͤ kynge gate ⁊ conquered all yͤ townes and caſtelles pyles ſtrengthes and abbayes vnto to yͤ cyte of Rone.

¶ And in the fyfth yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fyfth / ſyr Iohan Oldcaſtell yͤ was the lorde cobham was areſted for heryſye ⁊ brought vnto the Toure of London / and anone after he brake the Toure and wente in to wales and there he kepte hym longe tyme. And at the laſt the lorde powys toke hym but he ſtode at grete defence longe tyme ⁊ was ſore wounded or he wolde be taken / ⁊ ſo yͤ lorde Powys men brought hym out of wales vnto London ayen in a whyrlecole ⁊ ſo he was brought to Weſtmynſtre / and there was examyned of certayne poyntes that were put vpõ hym / and he ſayd noe naye / and ſo he was conuycte of the clergye for his heryſye / ⁊ dampned before the Iuſtyces wa to the deth for treaſon. And than he was ladde to the Toure agayne/and there he was layd on an hurdell ⁊ drawen thrugh the Cyte to ſaynt Gyles felde/and there was made a newe payre of galowes and a ſtronge chayne ⁊ a coller of yren for hym and there he was hanged ⁊ brente on the galowes and al for his lewdneſſe and his fals opynyons.

AND in the .vi. yere of kynge Henryes ẏ fyfth/he ſent his vncle ſyr Thomas Beauforde duke of Exceſtre wͭ a fayre meyny of men of armes ⁊ archers before the cyte of Rone ⁊ there dyſplayed his baner ⁊ ſente his herawdes vnto the towne and badde them yelde that cyte vnto our kynge theyr lyege lord/⁊ they ſayd he toke them none to kepe ne none he ſholde haue there but yf it were dere bought and meued with theyr hondes/for other anſwere wolde they none gyue but gonnes. And there the duke toke good auyſement of the groũde all aboute. And anone there yſſued out of the cyte a grete meyny of men of armes bothe on horſbacke ⁊ on fote/⁊ anone our meyny mette with them and ouerthrewe a grete hepe of them/⁊ there were taken ⁊ ſlayne .xxx. perſones of full ryght good mennes bodyes ⁊ the remenaunt fledde agayne in to the towne/⁊ the duke went to Pount de larche vnto ẏ kynge/and tolde hym all how that he had ſpedde and how that he lyked the groũde And anone as ẏ duke was gone they caſt downe all the ſubbarbes aboute the cyte vnto the harde grounde/for bycauſe the kynge ſholde there no refreſſhynge haue at his comynge. And vpon the frydaye before Lãmaſſe daye than nexte folowynge our kynge wͭ his hooſt came before Rone/ and anone he ſet his ſyege rounde aboute that cyte/and anone he let laye his ordynaunce to the towne. And the kynge with his lordes were lodged within the chartrehous and grete ſtrength aboute them/ and that was in the eeſt partye of ẏ cyte/ and than ẏ duke of Clarence lodged hym with all his ſtrength ⁊ power at the weſt ende in a waſte abbaye before the porte Chaux. And the duke of Exceſtre with his meyny in the north ſyde before the porte Beauuoyſyn. And bytwene the duke of Clarence and the duke of Exceſtre was ẏ erle Marſhall lodged with moche people and a ſtronge power before ẏ caſtell gate. And than the erle of Ormonde with the lorde Haryngton/and alſo the lorde Talbot with theyr retenue and cõpany nexte to hym. And than ſyr Iohñ Cornewayle with many other noble knyghtes ⁊ ſquyres of name with all theyr retenue laye with ẏ noble duke of Clarence. And than from the duke of Exceſtre towardes the kynge were lodged the lorde Roos/⁊ the lorde wyllybe with the lorde Phehewe/ and ſyr wyllyam porter knyght with all theyr retenewe before the porte of ſaynt Hylary. And than was the erle of Mortayne with his retenue lodged in the abbaye of ſaynt Katherynes. And the erle of Salyſbury with his retenue laye on that other ſyde of ſaynt Katherynes/and ſyr Iohñ Gray knyght was lodged at the abbaye that is called le mount de ſaynt Mychell. And ſyr Phylyp Leche knyght the kynges treſourer was lodged bytwene ẏ water of Seyne and the abbay and kepte the warde vnder the hyll. And the baron of Carowe was lodged vnder the water ſyde for to kepe the paſſage. And Ienyco the ſquyre laye nexte hym on the water ſyde/and theſe two ſquyres kepte manly the water of Seyne ⁊ fought with theyr enemyes oftentymes. And on ẏ other ſyde of Seyne lay the erle of Hontyngdon and mayſter Neuyl the erles ſone of weſtmerlonde/and ſyr Gylbert Umfreuyll erle of mente/ ⁊ ſyꝛ Rycharde erle of Arundell/ ⁊ the loꝛde Ferrers with theyꝛ retenue befoꝛe the poꝛte du pount/ and eche of theſe loꝛdes had ſtronge oꝛdynaunce/ and the kynge dyde make at Poſt de larche ouer the water of Seyn a ſtronge ⁊ a myghty chayne of yꝛen ⁊ put it thꝛugh grete pyles faſt pyght in the grounde ⁊ that went ouer the ryuer of Seyne that no veſſel myght paſſe that in no kynde. And aboute that chayne the kynge let make a bꝛydge ouer the water of Seyne that men ⁊ hoꝛs ⁊ all other caryage myght go to ⁊ fro at all tymes whan nede were. And than came the erle of warwycke ⁊ had goten Domfronte vnto kynge Henry of Englonde. And anone the kynge ſent the erle of warwycke to Cawdebecke foꝛ to beſyege it. And whan he came befoꝛe the towne he ſente his Herawdes to the capytayne and badde hym yelde vp the towne vpon payne of deth/ ⁊ anone he layde his ſyege. And the capytayne beſought the erle that he myght come vnto his pꝛeſence and it pleaſed hym and ſpeke with hym. And ſo the good erle graũted hym foꝛ to come/ ⁊ than he came out and foure other burgeys came with hym and entreated ſo with this erle that this ſame towne was vnder compoſycõn to be done as the cyte of Rone dyde/ ⁊ the erle graunted and conſented therto vpon this condycyon that the kynges nauye of Englonde with his oꝛdynaunce myghte paſſe vp by them in ſaufte without ony maner of lette oꝛ diſturbaunce/ and to his compoſycyon they ſet to theyꝛ ſeales/ and the ſhyppes paſſed vp by them in ſaufte ⁊ came befoꝛe the cyte of Rone vnto an hondꝛed ſhyppes and there they caſt theyꝛ ankers/ ⁊ than this cite was beſyeged bothe by londe and by water. And whan all this was done ⁊ the ſhyppes comen vp/ than came the erle of warwycke agayne to the kynge ⁊ lodged hym bytwene the abbaye of ſaynt Katheryns ⁊ the kynge tyll that the abbaye entreated ⁊ ſo was yolden vnto the kynge. And than he remeued hym thens ⁊ lodged hym befoꝛe ẏ poꝛte Martynuylle/ ⁊ tho was the erle of Saleſbury cõmaũded by the kynge foꝛ to make hym redy foꝛ to ryde/ but there came haſty tydynges ⁊ made hym to abyde/ ⁊ ſo he retourned agayne ⁊ lodged hym beſyde the good erle of Huntyngdon tyll ẏ the ſyege was ended. And than came ẏ good duke of Glouceſtre the kynges bꝛoder from the ſyege of Chyꝛbourgh the whiche he had wonne ⁊ goten ⁊ ſtuffed it agayne vnto ẏ kynges behoſe ⁊ pꝛofyte vnto the crowne of Englonde/ ⁊ whan he was comen to ẏ kynge befoꝛe Rone he lodged with grete oꝛdynaũce befoꝛe the poꝛte ſaynt Hylary moꝛe nerer the towne ⁊ his enemyes than ony other lay by .xl. roddes of length with in ſhotte of quarell/ ⁊ with hym lay ẏ erle of Suffolke ⁊ the loꝛd of Burgeyny with all theyꝛ retenue ⁊ ſtronge oꝛdynaunce ⁊ manly ⁊ pꝛoudly fought euery daye with theyꝛ enemyes euer whan they yſſued out of the cyte. And than came the pꝛyour of Kylmayne of Irlonde ouer the ſee to the kȳge with a fayꝛe meyny of men of armes after theyꝛ owne coũtre gyſe to ẏ nombꝛe of .xvi. hondꝛed good mennes bodyes/ ⁊ ẏ kynge welcomed them ⁊ made them good chere. ¶ And than came tydynges to the kynge that the kynge of Fraũce ⁊ the Dolphyn with the duke of Burgoyne wolde come downe ⁊ reſcowe the Cyte of Rone with a ſtronge power of all maner of nacyons ⁊ breke the ſyege/ ⁊ caſteth hym to entre on the noꝛth ſyde of ẏ hooſt bycauſe that there was the beſt entrynge ⁊ mooſt playne/ ⁊ therfoꝛe the kynge aſſygned the pꝛyour of Kylmayn with his power ⁊ lodged hym on the noꝛth ſyde of the hooſt for to ſtoppe theyꝛ paſſage/ ⁊ was by ẏ foreſt of Lyons/ ⁊ of this oꝛdynaũce they were full glad ⁊ ſo they went forth in all haſt ⁊ kepte yͤ grounde ⁊ the place yͭ the kynge ⁊ his counſeyle had aſſygned / ⁊ they quytte them as good warryoures to theyr kynge.

¶ Now wyll I tell you whiche were the chefe capytaynes ⁊ gouernours of yͤ cyte of Rone. Mon ſyr Guy Boteler was chefe capytayne both of yͤ cyte ⁊ of the caſtell / ⁊ Mon ſyr Termygan he was capytayn of porte Caux. Mon ſyr de la Roche he was capytayne of the dyſners. Mon ſyr Anthony he was Lewtenaunt to Mon ſyr Guy Boteler. Henry Chancſyen he was the capytayne of yͤ porte de la poũt. Johñ Mantreuas was capytayne of the porte de la caſtell. Mon ſyr de Preaux he was capytayne of yͤ porte of ſaynt Hylary. The baſtarde of Tyne he was capytayne of the porte Martynuylle. And graund Jakes a worthy warryour he was capytayne of all men of warre / and he was gouernour outwarde bothe on horſbacke and on fote of al men of armes / whan they yſſued out of the cyte of al the portes than he arayed them as they ſholde encountre with our meyny. And eche of the capytaynes ladde fyue thouſande men of armes ⁊ ſome mo And at yͤ fyrſt comynge of our kyng there were nombred by Herawdes to thre hondred thouſande men ⁊ women ⁊ chyldren what yonge and olde / ⁊ amonge all theſe was many a manfull man of his handes / and ſo they proued them whã they yſſued out of yͤ cyte bothe on horſbacke ⁊ on fote / for they came neuer at one gate alone but at thre or foure gates ⁊ at euery gate two or thre thouſand of good mennes bodyes armed ⁊ manfully encoũtred wͭ our Englyſſhmen ⁊ moche people ſlayne dyuerſe tymes with gonnes / quarelles ⁊ other ordynaũce. And this ſyege dured .xx. wekes and euer they of yͤ towne truſted to haue be reſcowed but there came none / ſo at yͤ laſt they kepte the towne ſo longe yͭ there dyed many a thouſande within the towne for defaute of mete of men ⁊ chyldren / for they had eten theyr horſes / dogges / ⁊ cattes that were in the towne. And oftentymes the men of armes droue out yͤ poore people at the gates of the towne for ſpendynge of vytayles / ⁊ anone our Englyſſh men droue them in to the towne agayne. So at the laſt the capytayne of the towne ſawe the myſchefe and that they were not reſcowed / ⁊ alſo the ſcarſete of vytayle / ⁊ that yͤ people dyed ſo for defaute of mete euery day many thouſandes / ⁊ alſo ſawe yonge chyldren lye ⁊ ſouke theyr moders pappes and were deed. Than anone they ſente to the kynge beſechynge hym of his grace ⁊ mercy ⁊ brought yͤ keys of yͤ towne vnto the kynge ⁊ delyuered the towne to hym and all the ſowdyours voyded the towne with theyr horſes ⁊ harneys / ⁊ the comyns of the towne for to abyde ⁊ dwell ſtyll in the towne yerely to paye to hym ⁊ to his ſucceſſours for all maner cuſtomes and fee fermes ⁊ kateremes. And than yͤ kynge entred in to yͤ towne ⁊ reſted hym in the caſtell tyl the towne was ſet in rule and in gouernaunce.

¶ How the kyng of Englonde was made enherytour and regent of Fraũce / ⁊ how he wedded quene Katheryne.

AND anone after yͤ Rone was goten. Depe ⁊ many other townes in the baſe Normandye gaue them ouer without ſtroke or ſyege whan they vnderſtode that the kynge had goten Rone. Alſo this yere had be a peas made ⁊ ſworne bytwene yͤ duke of Burgoyne ⁊ the Dolphyn whiche were ſworne on goddes body that they ſholde loue and aſſyſte eche other agaynſt theyr enemyes. And after this contrary to this othe the duke Johñ of Bourgoyne was ſlayne and pyteouſly murdred in the preſence of the Dolphyn wherfore yͤ Frenſſhmen were gretly deuyded / & of very neceſſyte laboured to haue a treaty with the kynge of Englonde / for the kyng of Englond wanne of them day by day townes / caſtelles / & fortreſſes. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere was quene Jane areſted & brought in to yͤ caſtell of Ledes in Kent. And one frere Randulfe a doctour of dyuinyte her cõfeſſour whiche afterward was ſlayne by yͤ perſone of the Toure fallynge at wordes & debate. And afterwarde quene Jane was delyuered. ¶ And in yͤ .vii. yere bothe the kynge of Frãce & of Englonde were accorded & kynge Henry was made heyre & regent of Frãce & wedded dame Katheryne the doughter of Frãce at Troyes in champayne / on Trinite ſonday. And this was made by the meane of Phylyp newe made duke of Burgoyne whiche was ſworne to kynge Henry to auenge his faders deth & was become Englyſſhe. And than the kynge with his newe wyfe went to Parys where as he was ryally receyued / & from thens he went with his lordes & the duke of Burgoyne & many other lordes of Fraunce & layde ſyege to dyuerſe townes & caſtels yͭ helde of the Dolphyns partye & wanne them / but the towne of Mylon helde lõge tyme for therin were good defenders. ¶ In the .viii. yere the kynge & the quene came ouer ſee & londed on Candelmaſſe daye in yͤ mornynge at Douer. And the .xiiii. daye of Feuerer the kyng came to London / & the quene came the .xxi. daye of the ſame moneth / and the .xxiiii. of the ſame ſhe was crowned at Weſtmynſter. ¶ Alſo that ſame yere anone after Eſter the kyng helde a parlyament at Weſtmynſter / at whiche parlyament it was ordeyned yͭ golde in Englyſſhe coyne ſholde be weyed / & none receyued but by weyght. And anone after Whitſontyde the kyng ſayled to Calays & paſſed forth ſo in to Frãce. And in the .xxii. day of Marche before the kynge came ouer yͤ duke of Clarence was ſlayne in Fraunce & dyuerſe other lordes taken pryſoners as the erle of Huntyngton / the erle of Somerſet with dyuerſe other / & al was bycauſe they wolde not take none archers with them / but thought to haue ouercome yͤ Frenſſhmen themſelfe without archers. And yet whan he was ſlayne yͤ archers came & reſcowed the body of the duke whiche they wolde haue caryed with them / god haue mercy on his ſoule he was a valyaunt man. And the ſame yere bytwene Cryſtmaſſe & cãdelmaſſe the towne of Mylon was yelden vnto the kynge. ¶ In the .ix. yere on ſaynt Nycholas daye in Decembre was borne Henry the kynges fyrſte begoten ſone at Wyndſore / whoſe godfaders at yͤ font ſtone was ſyr Henry byſſhop of Wyncheſtre and John duke of Bedforde / & yͤ ducheſſe of Holonde was godmoder / & Henry Chychely archebyſſhop of Cãterbury was godfader at cõfermynge. ¶ And in the .x. yere the cyte of Meaus in Brye was gotten whiche had ben longe beſyeged. And this ſame yere yͤ quene ſhypped at Hampton & ſayled ouer to the kynge in Frãce where ſhe was worſhypfully receyued of yͤ kyng & alſo of the kynge of Frãce her fader & of her moder / & thus kynge Henry wanne faſt Frãce & helde grete eſtate & ſate at a grete feeſt in Parys crowned & the quene alſo whiche had not ben ſeen before / & all people reſorted vnto his courte / but as to the kyng of Fraunce he helde none eſtate ne rule but was lefte almooſt alone. ¶ Alſo this yere the wedercocke was ſet vpon Poules ſteple at Londõ. And this yere in the moneth of Auguſte the kynge waxed ſeke at Boys de vyncent / & whan he ſawe he ſholde dye he made his teſtament & ordeyned many noble thynges for his ſoule and deuoutly receyued all the ryghtes of holy chirche/in ſoo ferre forth that whan he was anoynted he ſayd the ſeruyſe with the preeſt/ ⁊ at the verſe of the pſalme of (Miſerere mei deus) that was (Benigne fac dn̄e in bona voluntate tua ſyon: vt edificentur muri hieruſalem) he badde tary there ⁊ ſayd thus. O good lorde thou knoweſt ŷ myn entent hath ben ⁊ yet is yf I myght lyue to reedyfye the walles of Jheruſalē. And than the preeſt proceded forth and made an ende. And anone after this mooſt noble prynce and vyctoryous kynge floure in his tyme of cryſten chyualrye/ whome all the worlde doubted gaue his ſoule in to the handes of god and dyed ⁊ made an ende of his naturall lyfe at the forſayd Boys de vyncēne beſyde Parys the.xxxvi.yere of his aege/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. Than was the body enbawmed ⁊ cered and layd in a ryall chare ⁊ an ymage lyke to hym was layde vpon the corps open with dyuerſe baners ⁊ horſes couered rychely with the armes of Englonde ⁊ Fraūce/ ⁊ alſo the olde armes of ſaynt Edwarde/ſaynt Edmonde/ ⁊ other with grete multytude of torches/ with whome went ŷ kynge of Scotlonde and many other lordes whiche accompanyed ŷ body tyll it came to Weſtmynſter by London in Englond/ ⁊ in euery towne by the way he had ſolempnely his dyryge on the euen ⁊ maſſe on the morne ⁊ moche almes was gyuen to poore people by the waye. And the.vii.daye of Nouembre after ŷ corps was brought thrugh London with grete reuerēce ⁊ ſolempnyte to Weſtmynſter where as he now lyeth/it was worſhypfully buryed/ ⁊ after was layde on his tombe a ryall ymage lyke hymſelfe of ſyluer ⁊ gylte whiche was made at the coſt of quene Katheryne. And thus ended and is entered ⁊ buryed the noble kynge Henry the fyfth/vpon whoſe ſoule and al cryſten ſoules god haue mercy. Amen.

¶ Of the lawde of kynge Henry the fyfth/ and what he ordeyned for kynge Rycharde and for hymſelfe after his deth.

HEre is to be noted that this kynge Henry the fyfth was a noble prynce after he was kynge ⁊ crowned how be it before in his youth he had ben wylde recheles ⁊ ſpared no thynge of his luſt ne deſyres but accōpliſſhed them after his lykynge but as ſoone as he was crowned anoynted ⁊ ſacred anone ſodeynly he was chaūged in to a new man ⁊ ſet al his entent to lyue vertuouſly in mayntenynge of holy chirche deſtroyenge of heretykes/kepynge Juſtyce ⁊ defendynge of his reame ⁊ ſubgectes And for as moche as his fader had depoſed by his labour ŷ good kynge Rycharde ⁊ pytouſly made hȳ to dye/ ⁊ for ŷ offence done to hym agaynſt his legeaūce he had ſent to Rome to be aſſoyled therof/for whiche offēce our holy fader the pope enioyned hym to make hȳ to be prayed for perpetually/ ⁊ lyke as he had done to be takē from hym his naturall lyf therfore he ſholde do foūde.iiii.tapers to brenne perpetually aboute his body ŷ for ŷ extynccyon of his bodely lyf his ſoule may euer be remēbred ⁊ lyf in heuen in ſpirituall lyf/ ⁊ alſo that he ſholde euery weke on ŷ daye as it came aboute of his deth haue a ſolempne maſſe of requi[illegible] ⁊ on ŷ euen afore a dirige with.ix.leſſons ⁊ a dole to poore people al way on ŷ day of a.xi.ſhyllynges and.vii. pens to be deled peny mele/ ⁊ ones in the yere at his annyuerſary his enteremēt to be holden in ŷ mooſt honeſt wyſe/ ⁊ to be deled ŷ day.xx.poūd in pens to poore people/ ⁊ to euery monke.xx.ſhyllynges/whiche al theſe thynges perfourmed this noble kynge for his fader/for kynge Henry the fourth his fader ꝑfourmed it not durynge his lyfe/of whome as it is ſayd ŷ god dyd touche hym ⁊ was lepre or that he dyed.

¶ And alſo this noble prynce let do call all the abbottes & pryours of ſaynt Benettes ordre in Englonde & had al them in to the chapytre hous of weſtmynſter for ŷ reformacyon of theyr ordre wherin he had comunycacyon/ & alſo with byſſhops & men of the ſpyrytualte/ in ſo ferre forth ŷ they doubted ſore as that he wolde haue had ŷ temporaltees out of theyr hondes/ wherfore by ŷ aduyſe labours & procurynge of ŷ ſpyrytualte encouraged the kynge for to chalenge Normandy & his ryght in Fraūce to ŷ entent to ſet hym a werke there ŷ he ſholde not ſeke none occaſyons to entre in to ſuche maters/ & than all his lyf tyme afterwarde he laboured & was beſye in the warre in cōquerynge a grete parte of the reame of Fraūce/ & ſo afterwarde that by the grement of the kynge Charles he had the gouernaūce & the rule of the reame of Fraūce/ & he was proclamed regent and heyre of Fraūce. And ſoo notwithſtandynge for al this grete warre that he had/ neuertheleſſe yet he remembred his ſoule & alſo thought ŷ he was mortall & nedes muſte dye/ for whiche cauſe he ordeyned by his lyfe tyme ŷ place of his ſepulture where as he is buryed/ and hath euery day thre maſſes perpetually ſongen in a chapell ouer his ſepulture of the whiche ŷ myddle maſſe & the fyrſte & the laſte maſſe ſhall be as it is aſſigned by hym as it appereth by theſe verſes folowynge.

Henrici miſſe quinti ſunt hic tabulate.
Que ſucceſſiue ſūt ꝑ monachos celebrate

¶ Die dñica.

Prima ſit aſſūpte de feſto virginis alme.
Poſcit poſtremā xp̄s de morte reſurgens

¶ Feria ſecunda.

Prima ſalutare de feſto virginis errat
Nūciat angelicis laudē poſtrema choreis

¶ Feria tercia.

Eſſe deum natū de virgine prima fatetur
Cōmemorat natū ſic vltima miſſe mariā

¶ Feria quarta.

Prima celebret ad honorē neumaticis al
Ultima prepiā dominacionē et vnitā (mi

¶ Feria quinta.

Semper prima coli debet de corpore xp̄i
Ultima ſit facta de virgine purificata.

¶ Feria ſexta.

Concedet vt prima celebret de cruce ſctā
Atq ſalutare fiet poſtrema maria.

¶ Sabbato.

Oēs ad ſctōs eſt prima colenda ſupernos
Ultima de requie ꝓ defunctis petit eſſe
Semper erit media de ꝓpiciate dei.

¶ And yet the noble kynge Henry ŷ fyfth founded two houſes of relygyon one is called Syon beſyde Braynforde of the ordre of ſaynt Brygytte bothe of men & women & on ŷ other ſyde of the ryuer of Tamyſe an hous of monkes of Chartrehous/ in whiche two places he is contynually prayed for nyght & daye/ for euer whan they of Syon reſt than they of ŷ Chartrehous do theyr ſeruyce/ and in lyke wyſe whan they of ŷ Chartrehous reſt ŷ other gooth to/ & by ryngynge of the belles of eyther place eche knoweth whā they haue ended theyr ſeruyce whiche be nobly endowed/ & do dayly there grete almes dedes/ as in ŷ Chartrehous certayne chyldren be foūde to ſcole/ & at Syon certayn almes gyuen dayly. And yet beſyde all this he founded a recluſe the whiche ſhall be alway a preeſt to praye for hym by the ſayd Chartrehous whiche preeſt is ſuffycyently endowed for hym & a ſeruaunt. Loo here may all prynces take enſample by this noble prynce ŷ reygned ſoo lytell tyme not fully .x. yere & dyde ſo many noble actes as well for his ſoule to be perpetually remembred & prayed for/ as in his cōqueſtes & he beynge in his moſt luſty age dyſpyſed & chaſtyſed ſyn & was a grete Juſtycer/ in ſo moche ŷ all ŷ prynces of cryſtendome drad hym & alſo des at yͤ day ⁊ was ſet in yͤ felde ⁊ thã theſe .ii. worthy lordes came in to yͤ felde wel and clene armed ⁊ well arayed wᵗ al their wepen ⁊ redy to don theyr batayle ⁊ were redy in yͤ place for to fyght at vtteraũce. But yͤ kynge bad them ceſſe ⁊ toke yͤ quarell in to his hande. And forth with ryght there preſente exyled yͤ duke of Herforde for terme of .x. yere / ⁊ the duke of Norfolke for euermore. And ſyr Thomas of Arũdell archebyſſhoppe of Caũterbury was exyled the ſame tyme for euer ⁊ depoſed out of his ſee for malyce of yͤ kynge. And anone theſe thre worthy lordes were commaunded ⁊ defended the kynges realme And anone they gate them ſhyppes at dyuerſe hauens ⁊ went ouer ſee in to dyuerſe landes eche his waye. And the duke of Norfolke wente to Venece ⁊ there he dyed on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. amen And than kynge Rycharde made a clerke of his ſyr Roger walden archebyſſhop of Caũterbury. ¶ And in yͤ .xxii. yere of kynge Rychardes reygne by falſe coũſeyle ⁊ ymagynacyon of coueytous men yͭ were about hȳ were made ⁊ ordeyned blanke chertres ⁊ made to be enſealed of all maner ryche men through out yͤ realme. In ſo moche yͭ they cõpelled dyuerſe peple to ſet theyr ſeales therto. And this was done for grete coueytyſe / wherfore all good hertes of the realme were clene tourned away fro yͤ kynge for euer after. And that was vtterly his deſtruccyon ⁊ ende to hȳ that was ſo hygh ⁊ ſo excellente prynce ⁊ kynge ⁊ through couetous ⁊ falſe coũſeyle falſly betrayed. Alas for pyte that ſuche a kynge myght not ſe. And than kynge Rycharde ſet his kyngdome ⁊ his royall lande of Englonde to ferme vnto foure perſones / whiche were theſe. Syr wyllyam ſcrop erle of wyltſhyre ⁊ treſourer of Englonde / ⁊ ſyr Iohñ Buſſhe / ⁊ Henry grene / ⁊ ſyr Iohñ Bagot knyghtes yͭ whiche tourned them to myſchyef ⁊ dethe win a lytell tyme as ye ſhal fynde here after wryten. ¶ And than kynge Rycharde made grete ordynaunce ⁊ wente hymſelf ouer ſee in to Irlonde ⁊ many grete lordes wᵗ hym wᵗ a grete hoſte for to ſtrength theyr kynge wᵗ men of armes / archers / ⁊ moche grete ſtuffe ⁊ right good ordynaunce as longed vnto warre / and or he paſſed ouer ſee he ordeyned ⁊ made ſyr Edmond of Langley yͤ duke of yorke his lyftenaũt of Englonde in his abſence wᵗ the gouernaũce ⁊ coũſeyle of theſe .iiii. knyghtes that had taken Englonde to ferme of the kynge. And thã he paſſed yͤ ſee ⁊ came in to Irlande ⁊ there he was well ⁊ worthely receyued. And theſe rebelles yͭ ben called wylde Iryſſhmen came downe to the kynge ⁊ yolde thẽ to hym bothe body and goodes all at his owne wyll / ⁊ ſwore vnto hym to be his liege men / ⁊ there dyd to hym homage ⁊ feaute ⁊ good ſeruyce / ⁊ thus he cõquered yͤ mooſt parte of Irlande in a lytell tyme. And whyle that kynge Rycharde was thus in Irlande ſyr Henry of Balyngbroke erle of Derby yͭ yͤ kynge had made before duke of Herforde / yͤ whiche duke the kynge had exyled out of this lande was comen agayne in to Englande for to chalenge yͤ dukedom of Lancaſtre as for his ryght ⁊ trewe herytage / ⁊ he came downe out of Fraũce vnto Calays. And there mette hym ſyr Thomas of Arundell yͭ was archebyſſhop of Caũterbury yͭ was exyled out of Englonde / ⁊ with hym came yͤ erle of Arũdell his ſone ⁊ heyre the whiche was in kepynge of ſyr Iohñ Shelley knyght ſomtyme wᵗ the erle of Huntyngdon ⁊ wᵗ yͤ duke of Exceſtre yͤ whiche was tho in yͤ caſtel of Reygate in ſouthſex / ⁊ there he ſtale hym away ⁊ came to Calays ⁊ there he was keped well and worthely tyll theſe other two lordes were comen to Calays. ¶ And than this worthy duke & ſyr Thomas of Arundell Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ſhypped into ẏ hauen of calays & drewe theyr cours northwarde & aryued in yorke ſhyre at Rauenſpore faſt by Bydelyngton/ & there he came & entred fyrſt ẏ lande & two lordes wt hym & theyr nauy. And ſo than mo the people of ẏ reame ẏ whan they herde of his comynge & knewe where ẏ he was and anone they drewe vnto hym & welcomed theſe lordes & ſo gaue them courage in all maner thynge & ſoo paſſed forth into ẏ lande & gadred moche peple to them And whan kynge Rycharde herde & wyſt that theſe two lordes were comen agayne in to Englonde and alſo were landed. Than the kynge lefte his ordynaunce in Irlande & came in to englande warde in all the haſte that he myght & came to ẏ caſtell of flynte & there he abode to take his counſeyle & what myght he done/ but to hym came none. And than ſyr Thomas Percy erle of worceſtre that was ẏ kynges ſtewarde wyſt & knewe all this/ anone he came in to ẏ halle amonge all ẏ people/ & brake ẏ yerde of the royall kynges houſholde/ & anone euery man was diſppled & went his way & forſoke theyr mayſtre & ſouerayne lorde & lefte hym alone And thus was kyng Rycharde brought downe & deſtroyed & ſtode hymſelf alone wtout comforte or ſocour or of ony good coūſeyle of ony man/ alas for pyte of this royall kynge. And anone came worde ẏ ſyr Henry of Bolyngbroke was vp with a ſtronge power of people and that all ẏ ſquyers of Englonde ryſe vp the ſhyres in ſtrengthynge of hym agaynſt kynge Rycharde. And thus ſoone he was come out of the North countre to Bryſtowe & there he mette with ſyr wyllyam Scrope erle of wyltſhyre & treſourer of Englonde and with ſyr Johan Buſſhe & ſyr Henry grene/ & Johan Bagot but he eſcaped frome thē & went ouer ſee in to Irlande/ & theſe thre knyghtes were taken & theyr heedes ſmyten of/ & thus they deyed for theyr falſe couetyſe. And than was kyng Rycharde taken & brought vnto ẏ duke/ and anone ẏ duke put hym in faſt warde and ſtronge holde vnto his comynge to London. And thā was there a rumore in London & ſtronge noyſe ẏ kynge Rycharde came to Weſtmynſtre/ & the people of London roſe thyder & wolde haue done moche harme & hurte in theyr woodneſſe had not ẏ mayre & aldermen & other worthy men called them wt fayre wordes and torned them home agayne vnto London And there was ſyr Johan ſlake deane of ẏ kynges chapell of Weſtmynſtre taken & brought to London and put in pryſon in Ludgate. And after that Johan Bagot was taken in Irlande and ſo brought to London & put in priſon in Newgate there to be kepte & abyde his anſwere. And ſoone after the duke brought kynge Rycharde pryuely vnto London & put hym in ẏ toure vnder ſure kepynge as a pryſoner. And than came ẏ lordes of the reame wt all theyr coūſeyle vnto ẏ toure to kynge Rycharde & ſayd to hym of his myſgouernaunce & extorcyon ẏ he had done made and ordeyned to oppreſſe all ẏ comyn people & alſo to all ẏ reame. Wherfore all ẏ comyne people of ẏ reame wolde hym haue depoſed of his kyngdome. And ſoo he was depoſed at ẏ tyme in ẏ toure of London by all his lordes coūſeyle & commune aſſent of all the reame. And than he was put frome ẏ toure vnto ẏ caſtell of Ledes in Kent/ and there he was kept a whyle. And than he was had frome thens vnto ẏ caſtell of Pountfreet in the North countre to be kepte in pryſon/ & ryght ſoone after there he made his ende. And than whan kynge Rycharde was depoſed & had reſygned his crowne & his kyngdome ẏ was kept faſt in holde/than all ẏ loꝛdes of the reame wͭ the comyns aſſent ⁊ by accoꝛde choſe this woꝛthy loꝛde ſyꝛ Henry of Bolynbꝛoke erle of Derby/duke of Herfoꝛd and duke of Lancaſtre by ryght lyne and herytage ⁊ foꝛ his ryghtfull manhode ẏ the people founde in hym befoꝛe all other they choſe hym ⁊ made hym kynge of Englonde amonges them.

INnocencius ẏ.vii. was choſen at Rome ⁊ lyued but two yere. And than Gregoꝛy the.xii. was after hym.ij yere ⁊ euer was debate. Than was Alexander choſen in ẏ coūſeyle of Pyſan and he was called fyꝛſt Petrus de candyda ⁊ ſo was put ſtryfe to ſtryfe euerychone of these thre ſayde he was pope/than was there a coūſeyle at Pyſan where they began to make a concoꝛde ⁊ there they depoſed the two ⁊ the thyꝛde ſtode/⁊ ſoo was worſe deuyſyon made than befoꝛe/foꝛ ẏ they oꝛdeyned pꝛeuayled not. ¶Roberte was Emperour after Wenſlaus.ix.yere this man was duke of Bauary ⁊ erle of Palatyn a Juſt man and a good/⁊ was crowned of Boneface the.ix. This man entred ytaly wͭ a grete hooſte of almayns agaynſt Johan the duke of Galyas/but with an heuy hooſt he tourned agayne ⁊ was hadde woꝛthy to ſuffre foꝛ his ryghtwyſnes. ¶Johan the.xxiii. ſucceded Alexander.iiii.yere/⁊ fyꝛſt he began well foꝛ an vnyte/⁊ he was in ẏ coūſeyle at Conſtantis ⁊ offred hym to reſygne the popehede ⁊ after ſecretly ⁊ vntruely he fledde awaye/but it pꝛofyted hȳ not/foꝛ he was taken ⁊ conſtreyned to peas ⁊ was made a Cardynal ⁊ buryed at Floꝛens. Sygyſmundus was Emperoure after Roberte.xxvii.yere/⁊ he was ſone to Karolus ⁊ kynge of Hungary ⁊ mooſt cryſten pꝛynce and he was ſo deuoute to god that he deſerued to be canonyſed. This man holpe the chyꝛche though his merueylous pꝛudence ⁊ wytte/foꝛ he ſpared no labour ne nothynge ẏ he hadde tyll he had made a ful peas amonge ẏ clergy. And he had.ix batayles agaynſt ẏ turke/⁊ euer he had the victoꝛy/⁊ what moꝛe all thynge that euer was wꝛyten in louynge to Conſtantyne Theodoſio Karolo Otto may truely be wꝛyten of hym. And he was crowned in Vngary ⁊ deceſſed a bleſſed man.

¶Circa annū dn̄i. M.CCCC.vii.

¶Of ſyꝛ Henry of Bolyngbꝛoke erle of Derby ẏ rygned after kynge Rycharde/ whiche was ẏ.iiii. Henry after ẏ cōqueſt

AND after kynge Rycharde ẏ ſecōde was depoſed ⁊ out of his kyngdome ẏ loꝛdes ⁊ ẏ comyns all with one aſſent and other woꝛthy of the reame choſe Henry of Bolyngbꝛoke erle of Derby ſone ⁊ heyꝛe of Johñ duke of Lancaſtre foꝛ his woꝛthy manhode that ofte tyme had be founde in hym ⁊ in dedes pꝛeued vpō ſaynt Edwardes day ẏ cōfeſſour he was crowned kynge of Englonde at weſtmynſtre by aſſent of all ẏ reame next after the depoſynge of kynge Rycharde. Than he made Henry his eldeſt ſone pꝛynce of wales ⁊ duke of Coꝛnewayle and erle of Cheſtre. And he made ſyꝛ Thomas of Arundell Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury agayne as he was befoꝛe. And ſyꝛ Roger walden that kyng Rycharde had made archebyſſhop of Caūterbury he made byſſhop of London/foꝛ that tyme it ſtode voyde. And he made the erles ſone of Arundell that came wͭ hym ouer the ſee frome Calays in to Englande erle of Arundell as his fader had ben ⁊ put hym in poſſeſſyon of all his londes. And he made homage ⁊ feaute vnto his lyege loꝛde the kynge as all other loꝛdes had done. And than anone deyed kynge Rycharde in the caſtell of

Pountfret in the North coũtre/ for there he was enfamed vnto dethe by his keper/ For he was kept there .iiii. or .v. days frõ mete or drynke/ ⁊ ſo he made his ende in this worlde/ yet moche people in Englonde and in other landes ſayd he was alyue many a yere after his deth/ but whether he was alyue or deed yͤ people helde their falſe opinion ⁊ byleue yͭ many had ⁊ moche people came to grete myſchyef ⁊ foule dethe as ye ſhall here afterwarde. And whan kynge Henry wyſt yͭ he was deed he lete ſyre hȳ in yͤ beſt manere ⁊ cloſed it in a fayre cheſt wͭ dyuerſe ſpyces ⁊ bawmes ⁊ cloſed hȳ in a lynen clothe all ſauf his viſage and yͭ was lefte open yͭ all men myght ſe his perſone frome al other men And ſo he was brought to London wͭ torche lyghte brennynge to ſaynt Poules chirche ⁊ there he had his maſſe ⁊ dirige with moche reuerence ⁊ ſolempnyte of ſeruyce. And whan all this was done than he was brought frome ſaynt Poules in to yͤ abbay of weſtmynſtre ⁊ there he had his holy ſeruyce agayn. And fro weſtmynſtre he was brought to Langley and there he was buryed/ vpõ whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amẽ.

¶ And in yͤ fyrſt yere of kynge Henryes reygne he helde his criſtmas in the caſtell of wyndeſore. And on yͤ .xii. euen came yͤ duke of Awmarle vnto the kynge ⁊ tolde hym yͭ he ⁊ yͤ duke of Surrey ⁊ yͤ duke of Exceſtre ⁊ yͤ erle of Saleſbury ⁊ the erle of Glouceſtre/ ⁊ other more of theyr affynyte were accorded to make a mommynge vnto yͤ kyng on .xii. day at nyght/ ⁊ there they purpoſed to ſle the kynge in the reuelynge. And thus the duke of Awmarle warned the kynge. And than the kynge came to London pryuely in all the haſt yͭ he myght to gete hym helpe ſocoure ⁊ comforte and coũſeyle. And anone theſe other yͭ wold haue put yͤ kynge to dethe fled in all yͤ haſt yͭ they myght for they knewe well that theyr counſeyle was bewrayed. And than fled yͤ duke of Surrey ⁊ the erle of Saleſbury with all theyr menye vnto yͤ towne of Chycheſtre And there the people of the towne wolde haue areſted them/ ⁊ they wolde not ſtande to theyr areſtynge/ but ſtode at defence and fought manly/ but at the laſt they were ouercomen ⁊ taken. And there they ſmote of yͤ dukes heed of Surrey ⁊ yͤ erles heed of Saleſbury/ and many other more/ and there they put theyr quarters in to ſackes ⁊ theyr hedes on pooles borne on hye ⁊ ſo they were brought through the cyte of London to London brydge/ ⁊ there theſe hedes were ſet vpon hyghe/ theyr quarters were ſente to other good townes and Cytees of Englonde and ſet vp there. At Oxforde was taken Blounte knyght/ and Benet Cely knyght/ and Thomas wynterſell ſquyre and there byheded ⁊ quartred ⁊ the knyghtes hedes were ſet vpõ pooles and brought to London and ſet vpõ London brydge/ and the quarters ſent forth to other good townes

¶ And in yͤ ſame yere at Pryttelwell in a mylle in Eſſex there ſyr Johan Holande the duke of Exceſtre was taken wyth the comyns of the countre/ and they brought hym frome the mylle to yͤ Plaſſhe and to the ſame place yͭ kynge Rycharde had reſted ſyr Thomas of wodſtok the duke of Glouceſtre ⁊ ryghte there in yͤ place they ſmote of the dukes heed of Exceſtre and broughte it vnto London vpon a poole/ and it was ſette vpon London brydge.

¶ And in yͤ ſame yere at Bryſtowe was taken the lorde Spenſer that kynge Rycharde had made erle of Glouceſtre/ and the comyns of the towne of Bryſtowe toke hym and brought hym in to yͤ market place of the towne/ and there they ſmote of his hed and ſent it vnto London/ and there it was ſet vpõ Londõ brydge And in this ſame yere was ſyr Bernarde Brokeys knyght taken ⁊ areſted ⁊ put in the tour of London/ ⁊ ſyr Johñ Shelly knyght and ſyr Johñ Mawdelyn ⁊ ſyr Wyllyam Ferybe perſones of kynge Rychardes/ ⁊ they were areſted ⁊ put in to the toure of London/ ⁊ thyder came ẏ kynges Juſtices ⁊ ſatte vpon them in ẏ toure of London/ ⁊ there they were dampned al foure vnto deth/ ⁊ ẏ dome was gyuen vnto ſyr Bernarde Brokeys that he sholde goo on fote frome ẏ toure through the cyte of London vnto Tyburne ⁊ there to be hanged and after his hed ſmyten of/ ⁊ ſyr Johñ Shelly knyght/ ⁊ ſyr Johñ Mawdelyn ⁊ ſyr Williã Ferybe perſones were drawen through out ẏ cyte of Londõ to Tyburne and there they were hãged ⁊ theyr hedes ſmyten of ⁊ ſet on London brydge/ ⁊ in ẏ ſame yere kynge Henry ſente quene Jſabell home agayne in to Fraũce ẏ whiche was kynge Rychardes wyfe/ ⁊ gaue her golde ⁊ ſyluer ⁊ many other Jewels ⁊ ſo ſhe was diſcharged of all her power and ſent out of Englonde. And in ẏ ſeconde yere of kynge Henry the fourth was ſyr Roger Claryngton knyght ⁊ two of his men and ẏ pryoure of Launde/ ⁊.viii. freres mynors ⁊ ſome mayſters of dyuynyte ⁊ other for treaſon ẏ they wrought agaynſt the kynge were drawen ⁊ hanged at Tyburne all.xii.perſones. And there began a grete dyſcenſyon ⁊ debate in the coũtre of Wales bytwene ẏ lorde Grey rythen ⁊ Owen of Glendre ſquyer of Wales/ and this Owen arered a grete nombre of the walſſhe men/ ⁊ kept all that coũtre about ryght ſtrongely ⁊ dyd moche harme ⁊ deſtroyed ẏ kynges townes ⁊ lordeſhyppes through out all wales ⁊ robbed ⁊ ſlewe ẏ kynges people bothe Englyſſh ⁊ walſſhe and thus he endured a.xii. yere largely. And he toke the lorde Grey rythen pryſoner ⁊ kepte hym faſt in holde tyll he was raunſomed of pryſoners of the marche/ ⁊ kepte hym longe tyme in holde. And at ẏ laſt he made hȳ wedde one of his doughters/ ⁊ kepte hym there ſtyll with his wyfe ⁊ ſoone after he dyed. And than kynge Henry knowynge this myſchyef deſtrucyon ⁊ treaſon ẏ this Owẽ had wrought ⁊ anone he ordeyned a ſtronge power of men of armes ⁊ archers and moche other ſtuffe ẏ longed to warre for to abate ⁊ deſtroye ẏ malyce of this falſe walſſhe man And than ẏ kyng came in to wales wᵗ his power for to deſtroy this Owẽ ⁊ other rebelles falſe walſſhe men/ and anone they fledde in to ẏ mountayns/ ⁊ there myght ẏ kynge do them no harme in no manere wyſe for ẏ moũtayns/ ⁊ ſo ẏ kynge came agayne in to Englonde for leſynge of moche of his people/ ⁊ thus he ſped not there

¶ In the ſame yere was grete ſcarſyte of whete in englond for a quarter of whete was at.xvi.ſhellynge/ ⁊ there was marchaundyſe of Englonde ſente in to Pruce for whete/ ⁊ anone they had laden and fraught ſhyppes ynough ⁊ came home in ſauftee thanked be god of all his gyftes.

¶ And in the.iij.yere of kynge Henryes regne there was a ſterre ſeen in ẏ fyrmamente ẏ ſhewed hymſelfe through all the worlde for dyuerſe tokens ẏ ſholde befall ſoone after/ ẏ whiche ſterre was named by clergye Stella cometa/ ⁊ on ſaynt mary mawdelenes day next folowynge in ẏ ſame yere was ẏ batayle of Shrowceſbury/ ⁊ thyder came ſyr Henry Percy the erles ſone of Northumberlande wᵗ a grete multytude of men of armes and archers and gaue a batayle to kyng Henry ẏ.iiij. through ẏ falſe ⁊ wycked coũſeyle of ſyre Thomas Percy his vncle erle of Worceſtre/ ⁊ there was ſyr Henry Percy ſlayne ⁊ the mooſt parte of his people in ẏ felde and ſyr Thomas Percy taken ⁊ kept faſt in holde two dayes tyll ẏ kynge hadde ſet intent his people on both ſydes. And than ſyr Thomas Percy was Juged to be drawe ⁊ hanged ⁊ his heed ſmyten of for his falſe treaſon at Shroweſbury ⁊ his heed brought to London ⁊ ſet on london brydge. And yͤ other people yͭ there was ſlayn on bothe partyes yͤ kynge lete bury. And there was ſlayne on yͤ kynges ſyde in yͤ batayle yͤ erle of Staffordе/ and ſyr Walter Blunte in yͤ kynges cote armure vnder yͤ kynges baner/ ⁊ many more worthy men vpō whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amen.

¶ And in yͤ .iiii. yere of kynge Henryes regne came yͤ Emperour of Conſtantynople with many grete ſolaces ⁊ knyghtes ⁊ moche other people of his coūtre in Englonde to kynge Henry wͭ hym to ſpeke ⁊ to dyſporte ⁊ to ſe yͤ good gouernaunce ⁊ condicions of our people ⁊ to knowe yͤ cōmodytees of Englonde/ ⁊ our kyng wͭ all his lordes goodly ⁊ worſhypfully receyued ⁊ welcomed hym ⁊ all his meny yͭ came wͭ hym ⁊ dyd hȳ all yͤ worſhyp yͭ they coude ⁊ myght. And anone yͤ kynge commaūded all maner offycers yͭ he ſholde be ſerued as royally as it longed to ſuche a worthy lorde ⁊ Emperoure on his owne coſt as longe as he ⁊ his men were in Englond. ¶ And yͤ ſame yere came dame Jane yͤ duches of Brytayne in to Englonde and landed at Falmouth in Cornewayle/ and fro thens ſhe was brought to yͤ cyte of Wyncheſtre ⁊ there ſhe was wedded to kynge Henry yͤ .iiii. in yͤ abbay of ſaynt Swythnes with all yͤ ſolēpnyte yͭ myght be done ⁊ made/ and ſoone afterward ſhe was brought frome thens to London/ ⁊ the mayre ⁊ yͤ aldermen wͭ yͤ comyns of yͤ cyte of London rode agaynſt her ⁊ welcomed her ⁊ brought her through yͤ cyte of London to Weſtmynſtre ⁊ there ſhe was crowned quene of Englonde ⁊ there the kynge made a royall feeſt for her ⁊ for all maner of men that thyder wolde come.

¶ And in yͤ ſame yere dame Blaunche yͤ eldeſt doughter of kynge Henry the .iiii. was ſent ouer ſee wͭ yͤ erle of Somerſet her vncle ⁊ wͭ mayſter Rycharde Clyfforde than byſſhop of Worceſtre ⁊ wͭ many other lordes knyghtes ladyes/ ⁊ worthy ſquyers as longed to ſuche a noble kynges doughter ⁊ came in to Coleyne. And thyder came yͤ dukes ſone of Barre with a fayre meny ⁊ receyued this worthy lady/ ⁊ yͤ byſſhop of worceſtre wedded ⁊ ſacred them togyder as holy chyrche it wolde. And there was made a ryall feeſt ⁊ a grete Juſtynge in yͤ reuerēce ⁊ worſhyp of them ⁊ all yͤ peple yͭ thyder came. And whan this maryage ⁊ feeſt was done the erle ⁊ yͤ byſſhop ⁊ al their meny toke their leue of yͤ lorde and the lady ⁊ came home agayn in to Englonde in ſauffe thanked be god. ¶ And in yͤ .v. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the lorde Thomas his ſone went ouer ſee ⁊ yͤ Erle of Kente and many other lordes and knyghtes with men of armes and archers a grete nombre to chaſtyſe the rebelles that afore had done moche harme to our Englyſſhe men and marchaūtes/ ⁊ to many townes ⁊ portes in Englande on the ſee coſtes. And yͤ lorde Thomas the kynges ſone came in to Flaundres before a towne that is called Scluſe amonge all yͤ ſhyppes of dyuerſe nacyons yͭ were there/ ⁊ after there they rode with theyr ſhyppes amonge them ⁊ wente on lande ⁊ ſported them there two dayes ⁊ came agayne to theyr ſhyppes ⁊ toke the brode ſee ⁊ there they mette with thre Carackes of Jene yͭ were laden with dyuerſe marchaūdyſe ⁊ wel manned and they fought togyder longe tyme/ but the Englyſſhe men had yͤ vyctory ⁊ brought the Carackes in to the Cambre before Wynchelſe and there they caried all theſe goodes/ and one of theſe Carackes was ſodaynly brent there. And the lordes and theyr people torned them home agayne ⁊ wente no ferder at yͤ tyme. ¶ And yͤ ſame tyme Serle yeman of kynge Rychardes robes came in to Englonde out of Scotlonde ⁊ tolde to dyuerſe people that kyng Rycharde was on lyue in Scotlonde ⁊ ſo moche people byleued his wordes/wherfore a grete parte of the people of yͤ reame were in grete errour ⁊ grutchynge ayenſt the kynge thrugh informacyon of fals leſynges that this Serle had made/for moche people truſted ⁊ byleued his ſayenge. But at the laſt he was taken in the northcōtre ⁊ there by lawe Juged to be drawē thrugh euery cyte ⁊ good bourgh towne in Englonde/⁊ ſo he was ſerued/⁊ at the laſt he was brought to London to yͤ gylde hal before the Juſtyce ⁊ there he was Juged for to be brought to yͤ Toure of London ⁊ there to be layd on an hurdle ⁊ thā to be drawen thrugh yͤ cyte of London to Tyburne ⁊ there to be hāged ⁊ than quartred ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ ſet on London brydge ⁊ his quartres to be ſente to foure good townes of Englonde ⁊ there ſet vp ⁊ thus was he rewarded for his fals treaſon. ¶ And in the .vi. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the erle of Marre of Scotlonde by ſafe conduyte came in to Englonde to chalenge ſyr Edmonde erle of Kente to certayne courſes of warre on horſbacke. And ſo this chalēge was accepted ⁊ graūted ⁊ the place takē in ſmythfelde at London/⁊ this erle of Marre came proudly in to the felde as his chalenge aſked/and anone came the erle of Kent ⁊ rode to the ſcotte ⁊ manly rode togyder wͭ ſharpe ſperes dyuerſe courſes/but the erle of Kente had the felde ⁊ gate hym moche worſhyp and thanke of all maner men for his manfull dedes. ¶ And in the .vii. yere of kyng Henryes reygne ſyr Rycharde Scrop archebyſſhop of yorke ⁊ the erle Marſhall of Englōde gadred to them a ſtronge power ayenſt kyng Henry. And the kynge herynge therof in all the haſte that he myght cōme with his power Northwarde ⁊ mette with them at yorke ⁊ there were theſe two lordes taken ⁊ brought to the kynge. And anone the Juges were ſet ⁊ theſe two lordes brought forth ⁊ there they were Juged to deth ⁊ bothe theyr hedes ſmyten of and there they made an ende/on whoſe ſoules god for his pyte haue mercy. Amē And whan this was done the kyng came to London agayne and there reſted hym. Anone god of his grete goodneſſe wrought and ſhewed many grete myracles for this worthy clerke archebyſſhop of yorke that thus was done to deth. ¶ And in the .viii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne dame Luce the dukes ſyſter of Mylan came in to Englonde ⁊ ſo to London/⁊ there was wedded to ſyr Edmonde erle of Kente in the pryory of ſaynt Mary oueres in ſouthwarke with moche ſolempnyte and grete worſhyp/the kynge was there hymſelfe ⁊ gaue her at the chirche dore/⁊ whan that they were wedded ⁊ maſſe was done the kynge his owne perſone brought ⁊ ladde this worthy lady in to yͤ byſſhops place of Wyncheſtre ⁊ there was a wonders grete feeſt holden to all maner of people yͤ wolde come. ¶ And the ſame yere ſyr Roberte Knolles knight a worthy warryour dyed at his manoyr in Norfolke/⁊ from thens he was brought to Londō on a hors bere with moche torche lyght/and ſo he was brought to the white freres in Fleteſtrete and there was done ⁊ made for hym a ſolempne feeſt ⁊ a ryall enterement for tho that thyder wolde come bothe ryche and poore/⁊ there lyeth buryed by dame Conſtance his wyfe in the myddes of the body of the chirche vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amē. ¶ And in this ſame yere ſyr Thomas Rampſton knyght ⁊ Conſtable of the Toure of London was drenched at

London brydge as he came fro Weſtmynſter inwardes to the Toure in a barge/ ⁊ all thrugh lewdneſſe. And in the ſame yere dame Phylyp the yonger doughter of kynge Henry was ladde ouer ſee with ſyr Rycharde the dukes broder of yorke/ ⁊ ſyr Edmonde Courteney byſſhop of Norwyche ⁊ many other lordes knyghtes ⁊ ſquyres ladyes ⁊ gentylwomen that apperteyned to ſuche a kynges doughter ⁊ came in to Denmarke/ ⁊ the kynge receyued this worthy lady for his wyfe/ and welcomed theſe worthy lordes ⁊ dyd to them moche worſhyp/ ⁊ they were brought to a towne that was called London in Denmarke ⁊ there was this lady wedded ⁊ ſacred to yͤ kynge of Denmarke/ Norway/ ⁊ Swythen ⁊ there was crowned quene of Denmarke with moche ſolempnite/ and there was made a ryal feeſt. And whā this feeſt and maryage was done ⁊ ended theſe lordes ⁊ ladyes toke theyr leue of the kynge and yͤ quene ⁊ came agayne in to Englonde in ſauftie thanked be god. ❡ And in the viii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne there was a man that was called yͤ walſhe clerke/ ⁊ he apeled a knyght yͭ was called ſyr Perceuale Snowdon of treaſon/ ⁊ there they were Ioyned to fight to yͤ vtteraūce within lyſtes/ ⁊ the day and place ⁊ tyme aſſigned ⁊ lymytted to be done ⁊ ended in ſmythfelde/ at whiche daye tho two perſones came in to the felde ⁊ foughte ſore ⁊ myghtely togyder/ but at yͤ laſt yͤ knyght ouercame yͤ clerke ⁊ made hym yelde hym as recreaūt of his fals empechement yͭ he had ſayd on hȳ/ ⁊ than was he dyſpoyled of his armure ⁊ drawen out of the felde to Tyburne ⁊ there was he hanged and the knyght taken to grace ⁊ was a good man ❡ And in yͤ ſame yere yͤ erle of Northumberlonde ⁊ the lord Bardolfe came out of Scotlonde in preiudyce ⁊ deſtruccyon of kynge Henry/ wherfore they of the North countree aroſe vpon them ⁊ fought with them ⁊ dyſcomfyted them ⁊ toke them ⁊ ſmote of theyr hedes ⁊ quartred theyr bodyes ⁊ ſent the hede of the erle ⁊ a quarter of the lord Bardolfe to London and there they were ſet vpon Londō brydge for fals treaſon that they had purpoſed agaynſt yͤ kynge. ❡ And in the .ix. yere of kyng Henryes reygne was ſyr Edmonde Holonde erle of Kent made Amerall of Englonde for to kepe the ſee/ and he wente to the ſee with many ryall ſhyppes that were full well arayed and apparayled ⁊ enarmed with many a good man of armes and archers and of good defence of warre in the kynges name of Englond/ ⁊ ſo he londed at the laſt in the coſte of Brytayne in yͤ yle of Bryak with all his folke/ ⁊ he beſyeged the caſtell ⁊ aſſauted it/ ⁊ they withſtode hym with grete defence ⁊ ſtrength. And anone he layde his ordynaunce/ ⁊ in the lyenge of a gonne there came a quarell ⁊ ſmote the good erle Edmonde in the hede and there he caught his deth wounde/ but yet they lefte not tyll that they had goten the caſtell ⁊ all that were therin. And there this good lorde dyed vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amē/ ⁊ than this meyny came home agayne in to Englonde wͭ the erles body ⁊ was buryed amonge his aūceſtres ryght worthely. ❡ And in yͤ ſame yere was a grete froſt in Englonde yͭ dured .xv. wekes longe. ❡ And in the .x. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fourth came the Seneſſhall of Henaude wͭ other meyny in Englonde to ſeke auentures and to gete hȳ worſhyp in dedes of armes bothe on horſbacke ⁊ on fote at all maner poyntes of warre. And the Seneſſhall chalenged yͤ erle of Somerſet/ ⁊ the erle delyuered hym full manfully of all his chalēges and put his aduerſary to the worſt in all poyntes ⁊ wanne there grete worſhyp ⁊ yͤ degre of yͤ felde. And on yͤ nexte daye after came in to the feld an other man of armes of the Seneſſhals partye/ ⁊ agaynſt hym came ſyr Rycharde of Arundell knyght/ ⁊ the Henaude had the better of hym on fote in one poynt/ for he brought hym on his knee. And on the thyrde daye came in an other man of armes in to ẏ felde/ ⁊ ayenſt hym there came ſyr Johñ Cornewayle a knyght and manly ⁊ knyghtly he quytte hym in all maner poyntes ayenſt his aduerſary ⁊ had the better in the felde. And on the fourth daye came an other man of armes of Henaude in to the felde/ ⁊ ayenſt hym came ſyr Johñ Chaynes ſone ⁊ manly quytte hym agaynſt his aduerſary/ for he caſte hors and man in to the felde/ and the kynge for his manhode at that tyme dubbed hym knyght. And on ẏ fyfth daye there came an other man of armes of the Henaudes partye in to the felde/ ⁊ to hym came in ſyr Johñ Stewarde knyght/ and manfully he quytte hȳ in all maner poyntes ⁊ had the better. And on ẏ ſyxth daye after came an other Henaude/ and to hym came Wyllyam porter ſquyre ⁊ manfully he quytte hym and had the better in the felde/ and the kynge dubbed hym knyght that ſame tyme. And on the ſeuenth daye after came an other man of armes of Henaude in to the feld/ ⁊ to hym came Johñ Standyſſhe ſquyre ⁊ manfully he quytte hym on his aduerſary and had the better of hym in the felde/ and there the kynge dubbed hym knyght that ſame daye. And on the ſame day came an other man of armes of Henaude/ ⁊ to hym came a ſquyre of Gaſcoyne/ and proudly and manly he quytte hym of his aduerſary and had the better of hym in the felde/ and anone the kynge dubbed hȳ knyght. And on ẏ.viii. day came in to the felde two other men of armes of Henaude/ and with them mette two ſowdyours of Calays ẏ whiche were two bretherne ẏ were called Burghes/ ⁊ they well ⁊ manly quytte themſelfe vpon theyr aduerſaryes ⁊ had ẏ better of them in the felde/ ⁊ thus ended theſe chalenges with many grete worſhyppes. And than the kynge at ẏ reuerence of theſe worthy ſtrāgers made a grete feeſt and gaue to them many grete ⁊ ryche gyftes/ ⁊ than they toke theyr leue ⁊ went home agayne in to theyr owne coūtree. ¶ And in the.xi. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fourth there was a grete batayle done in Smythfelde bytwene two ſquyres/ that one was called Gloueceſtre that was the appellaūt and Arthur was the defendaunt/ ⁊ well and manly they fought togyder longe tyme/ and the kynge for theyr manfulneſſe and of his grace toke theyr quarell in to his hande ⁊ made them to goo out of the felde at ones and ſo they were deuyded of the batayle ⁊ the kynge gaue them grace ¶ And in the.xii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne ẏ fourth Ryſdye a ſquire of wales that was a rebell a ryſer and ſupporter to Owen of Glendre ẏ dyde moche deſtruccyon to the people of wales was taken ⁊ brought to London ⁊ there he came afore the Juſtyces ⁊ was dampned for his treaſon/ ⁊ than he was layd on an hurdle ⁊ ſo drawen to Tyburne thrugh ẏ cyte ⁊ there he was hanged ⁊ let downe agayne ⁊ his heed ſmyten of ⁊ the body quartred ⁊ ſent to foure townes ⁊ his heed ſet vpon London brydge. ¶ And in the.xiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne tho dyed ſyr Johan Beauforde erle of Somerſet that was capytayne of Calays ⁊ was buryed at the abbaye of the Toure hyll/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy amen. And in ẏ ſame yere the lorde Thomas kyng Henryes ſone wedded the coūteſſe of Somerſet. ¶ And in this ſame yere came ẏ enbaſſatours of Fraūce in to Englonde fro ẏ duke of Burgoyne vnto the prȳce of Englonde kynge Henryes ſone ⁊ heyre for to haue helpe ⁊

ſocour of men of armes & archers ayenſt the duke of Orlyaunce. And tho went ouer ſee the erle of Arundell, ſyr Gylberte Umfreuyll erle of Kente, & the lorde Cobham ſyr Johñ Oldcaſtell, & many other good knyghtes & worthy ſquyres & men of armes & good archers in to Fraunce & came to Parys to ẏ duke of Burgoyne, & there he receyued & welcomed theſe Englyſſhe men ẏ lordes & all other meyny. And than it was done hym to wete that the duke of Orlyaunce was come in to Seyntclowe faſt by Parys ẇ a grete nombre of men of armes and arbalaſtres, & thyder went our Englyſſhmen & fought with them & gate the brydge of Seyntclow and there they ſlewe many Frenſſhmen & arbalaſtres, & the remenaũt fledde & wolde no lenger abyde. And than our Englyſſhmen came agayne to Parys & there they toke theyr leue of the duke & came ſafe agayne in to Englonde, & ẏ duke gaue them grete gyftes, & anone after the duke of Orlyaunce ſent enbaſſatours in to Englond to kyng Henry the fourth beſechynge hym of his helpe & ſocour ayenſt his dedly enemy ẏ duke of Burgoyne. And than the kynge made Thomas his ſone duke of Clarence & his other ſone Johñ duke of Bedforde & his other ſone Umfrey duke of Glouceſtre, & ſyr Thomas Beauforde erle of Dorſet, & the duke of Awmarle he made duke of yorke. And than the kyng ordeyned his ſone ſyr Thomas the duke of Clarẽce Thomas Beauforde erle of Dorſet, & ſyr Johñ Cornwayll with many other lordes knyghtes & ſquyres & men of armes & archers for to go ouer ſee in to Frãce in helpynge & ſtrengthynge of the duke of Orlyaunce. And theſe worthy lordes ẇ theyr retenue ſhypped at Hampton and ſayled ouer the ſee in to Normandy & londed at Hogges. And there were with them the ſame tyme at theyr londynge with .viii. thouſande men of armes of Frenſſhmen & the ſergeauntes of armes with them, & all were put to flyght & taken of them .vii. hondred men of armes and .iiii. hondred horſes without tho that were ſlayne in ẏ felde. And ſoo they rode forth through out all Frãce & toke caſtels & townes & ſlewe many Frenſſhmen that withſtode them, and toke many pryſoners as they rode, & ſo they paſſed forth tyll they came to Burdeux and there they reſted them a whyle & ſet ẏ cuntre in peaſe reſted tyll the wynde was redy for to ſayle. And than ẏ duke with his meyny came home in to Englonde in ſauſte thanked be god. ¶ And in the ſame yere was ẏ kynges coyne chaunged thrugh out Englonde by the kynge & his coũſeyle, ẏ is to ſay the noble, halfe noble & ferthynge of golde. ¶ And the .xiiii. yere of kynge Henryes reygne the fourth he let make galayes of warre, for he had hoped to haue paſſed the grete ſee & ſo forth to Jheruſalẽ, & there to haue ended his lyfe, but god viſyted hym ſo ſoone after with infyrmyte & grete ſekeneſſe ẏ he might not wel endure no whyle ſo feruently he was taken & brought in bedde at weſtmynſter in a fayre chambre, & as he lay in his bedde he aſked his chamberlayn what he called the chambre ẏ he lay in. And he anſwerd & ſayd Jheruſalẽ. And than he ſayd that the prophecy ſayd ẏ he ſholde make an ende & dye in Jheruſalẽ. And than he made hym redy vnto god & diſpoſed all his thynges. And ſoone after he dyed & was caryed by water from weſtmynſter in a barge vnto Feuerſham, & from thens he was caryed to Caũterbury by londe ẇ moche torche lyght brennynge in to the abbay of Cryſtchurche & there he was enterred & buryed beſyde ſaynt Thomas of Caũterburyes ſhryne & thus ended ẏ worthy kynge Henry aboute mydlente ſondaye, in the yere of our lorde a. M. CCCC. and .xii. vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen.

Martin the .v. was pope after Johñ .xxiii. yere/ this man was choſen by the coūſeyle of Cōſtantynoble ⁊ the other was depoſed that ſtroue/ ⁊ ſo came peas in the churche the whiche longe tyme afore was deſyred ⁊ neceſſary for the defence of the fayth. ¶ This was the myghtyeſt pope that euer was of rycheſſe/ and a grete Juge/ he edyfyed townes/ walles/ ⁊ ſtretes/ ⁊ he deſtroyed hereſyes/ and he dyde moche good thurgh the noble prynce Sygyſmonde. And he gadred moche money for to gete the holy londe agayn/ but deth came vpon hym ⁊ letted hym/ ⁊ he made a coūſeyle afore his deth for that mater ⁊ there he deceaſed ¶ Eugenius was pope after Martin .xvii. yere. This Eugenius was choſen peaſybly after ẏ deth of Martyn ⁊ no man doubted but he was pope/ but ſoone after he was expulſed from Rome/ for it was ſo that he fledde naked/ alſo he was cyted to ẏ coūſeyle of baſylyens and depoſed/ but he dyſcharged hym not ⁊ for that began ẏ ſtryfe agayne ẏ whiche ſtode to his deth/ ⁊ thoſe ẏ fauoured hym ſayd he was worthy moche louynge/ ⁊ the contrary ſayd thoſe ẏ were agaynſt hym but what ſomeuer he was after he had taken ẏ dygnyte vpon hym afore he was of grete abſtynaūce ⁊ good fame/ ⁊ what he dyd after ẏ I leue to ẏ Jugement of god.

¶ Circa anno dñi. M.CCCC.xxi.

¶ Of kynge Henry the fyfthe that was kynge Henryes ſone.

And after the deth of kyng Henry the fourth reygned kynge Henry his ſone that was borne at Monmouth in Wales that was a worthy kynge ⁊ a gracyous man and a grete conquerour. And in the fyrſt yere of his reygne for grete loue and goodneſſe he ſente to the freres of Langley there as his fader had do burye kynge Rycharde the ſeconde ⁊ let take his body out of ẏ erth agayne ⁊ dyde brynge it to weſtmynſter in a ryall chare couered with blacke veluet ⁊ baners of dyuerſe armes aboute ⁊ all the hors drawynge the chare were trapped in blacke ⁊ betē with dyuerſe armes/ ⁊ many a torche brennynge by all the way tyll he came to weſtmynſter/ ⁊ there he let make for hym a ryall ⁊ ſolempne entyerement ⁊ buryed hym by quene Anne his wyfe as his owne deſyre was on ẏ ferther ſyde of ſaynt Edwardes ſhryne in ẏ abbay of ſaȳt Peters in weſtmynſter on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. ¶ And in this ſame yere were a certayne of lollers taken ⁊ fals heretykes that had purpoſed thrugh fals treaſon for to haue ſlayne our kynge/ ⁊ for to haue deſtroyed all ẏ clergy of ẏ reame ⁊ they myght haue had theyr fals purpoſe. But our lord god wolde not ſuffre it/ for in haſte our kynge had warnynge therof ⁊ of all theyr fals ordynaūce ⁊ werkynge ⁊ came ſodeynly wᵗ his power to ſaȳt Johñs wᵗout ſmythfelde ⁊ anone they toke a certayn of ẏ lollers ⁊ fals herytykes ⁊ brought them to ẏ kynges preſence/ ⁊ there they tolde all theyr fals purpoſe ⁊ ordynaūce how they wolde haue done ⁊ wrought yf they myght haue reygned ⁊ had theyr wyll/ ⁊ there they tolde whiche were theyr capytayns ⁊ gouernours/ ⁊ than ẏ kȳge cōmaūded them to ẏ toure of London/ ⁊ than toke mo to them bothe wᵗin the cyte ⁊ wᵗout ⁊ ſent them to Newgate ⁊ to bothe coūters/ ⁊ than they were brought in examynacōn afore ẏ clergy ⁊ ẏ kȳges Juſtyces ⁊ there they were cōuycte for theyr fals hereſy/ ⁊ dampned before ẏ Juſtyce for theyr fals treaſon/ ⁊ this was theyr Jugemēt ẏ they ſholde be drawē frō ẏ toure of London to ſaynt Gy les felde ⁊ there to be hanged ⁊ brent on yͤ galowes. And there was taken ſyꝛ Roger Acton knyght foꝛ hereſye ⁊ eke foꝛ treaſon agaynſt the kynge ⁊ the reame/ ⁊ he came afoꝛe yͤ clergy ⁊ was cõuycte foꝛ his hereſye ⁊ dampned befoꝛe yͤ Juſtyce to be drawen from yͤ toure of London thꝛugh the cyte to ſaynt Gyles ⁊ to be hãged ⁊ brent.

¶ And in yͤ ſeconde yere of kyng Henryes reygne he helde a coũſeyle of all the loꝛdes of the reame at Weſtmynſter and there he put hym this demaunde and prayed ⁊ beſoughte them of theyꝛ goodneſſe ⁊ of theyꝛ good coũſeyle ⁊ good wyll to ſhewe hȳ as touchynge the tytle of yͤ right that he had to Noꝛmandy Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyen yͤ whiche yͤ kynge of Frãce whelde wꝛongfully ⁊ unryghtfully/ the whiche his aũceſtres befoꝛe hym had by true tytle of cõqueſt ⁊ ryght herytage/ the whiche Noꝛmandy/ Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyen yͤ good kynge Edwarde of Wyndſoꝛe ⁊ his aũceſtres befoꝛe hȳ had holden all theyꝛ lyues tyme. And his loꝛdes gaue hym coũſeyle to ſend enbaſſatours to yͤ kynge of Frãce ⁊ his coũſeyle that he ſholde gyue vp vnto hȳ his ryght herytage/ yͤ is to ſay Noꝛmandy Gaſcoyne ⁊ Guyen the whiche his pꝛedeceſſours had holden afoꝛe hym/ oꝛ elles he wolde it wynne with ſtrength of ſwerde in ſhoꝛte tyme with yͤ helpe of almyghty god. And than the Dolphyn of Frãce anſwered to our enbaſſatours ⁊ ſayd in this maner/ yͤ the kynge was ouer yonge ⁊ to tendre of age to make ony warre as agaynſt hym ⁊ was not lyke yet to be a good warryour to do ⁊ make ſuche a conqueſt there vpon hym. And ſomwhat in ſcoꝛne ⁊ deſpyte he ſente to hym a tonne full of tenes balles bycauſe he wolde haue ſomwhat to playe withall foꝛ hym ⁊ foꝛ his loꝛdes/ foꝛ that wolde become hym better than to maynteyne ony warre. And than anone our loꝛdes that were enbaſſatours toke theyꝛ leue ⁊ came in to Englonde agayne ⁊ tolde the kynge ⁊ his counſeyle of yͤ vngoodly anſwere that they had of the Dolphyn/ ⁊ of the preſent yͤ whiche he had ſent to our kynge. ¶ And whan the kynge had herde theyꝛ woꝛdes and the anſwere of the Dolphyn he was wonder ſoꝛe agreued ⁊ ryght euyll apayed towarde the Frenſſhemen ⁊ towarde the kynge ⁊ the Dolphyn/ and thought to auenge hym on them as ſone as god wolde ſende hym grace ⁊ myght/ ⁊ anone let make tenes balles foꝛ the Dolphyn in all the haſte that he myght/ ⁊ they were grete gonſtones foꝛ the Dolphyn to playe withall. And than anone the kynge ſente foꝛ all his loꝛdes ⁊ helde a grete coũſeyle at Weſtmynſter ⁊ tolde to them yͤ anſwere yͤ they had of the Dolphyn ⁊ of his woꝛthy pꝛeſent yͤ he ſente to hym ⁊ to his loꝛdes to playe wyth. And there the kynge ⁊ his loꝛdes were accoꝛded that they ſholde be redy in armes wᵗ theyꝛ power in the beſt araye yͤ myght be done/ ⁊ gete all the men of armes ⁊ archers yͤ myght be gote and all other ſtuffe that longed to warre ⁊ to be redy wᵗ all theyꝛ retenue to mete at Southhampton by Lammaſſe nexte folowynge without ony delay/ wherfoꝛe yͤ kyng oꝛdeyned his nauy of ſhyppes with all maner ſtuffe ⁊ vytayle that longed to ſuche a warryour of all maner oꝛdynaũce in the hauẽ of Southhampton vnto the nombꝛe of. CCC. and. xx. ſayles. And thã fell there a grete dyſeaſe and a foule myſchefe/ foꝛ there were thꝛe loꝛdes whiche that the kyng truſted moche on/ ⁊ thꝛugh falſe coueytyſe they had purpoſed ⁊ ymagyned the kynges deth ⁊ thought to haue ſlayne hym ⁊ all his bꝛetheren oꝛ he had taken yͤ ſee/ whiche thꝛe loꝛdes were named thus/ ſyꝛ Rycharde erle of Cambꝛydge bꝛother to yͤ duke of yoꝛke/ the ſeconde was yͤ loꝛde Scrope treſourer of Englonde/ the thyꝛde was ſyꝛ Thomas Gray knyght of alſo of hethenes/⁊ he had determyned in hymſelfe yͭ god wolde haue ſpared hym to haue warred on yͤ ſaraſyns and foꝛ to knowe yͤ ayde of other pꝛynces ⁊ all yͤ paſſages in yͤ Journeye he ſente a knyght of Henaude named Hugh de Lanoye vnto Jheruſalem/but oꝛ he retoꝛned he deyed at Boys de Vyncenne in the.xxxvi. yere of his age/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amen.

FElix yͤ.v. was pope whan Eugenius was depoſed.ix.yere. This felix was duke of Sauoye a deuoute pꝛynce and an olde man/and he ſawe his chyldes chylde. This man whan he lyued an holy lyfe was choſen pope of yͤ coũſeyl of Baſyle/⁊ Eugeny was depoſed. ⁊ there was ſtryfe longe tyme/⁊ he had no grete obedyence foꝛ yͤ depoſycyon of Eugenye. And at yͤ laſt Eugeny deceſſed/⁊ than Felyx reſygned to Nicholas foꝛ fauoure of peas to be had ⁊ he was made Legate of Fraunce ⁊ Cardynall of Sabianꝰ. This was yͤ.xxiiij. ſtryfe bytwyxt Eugeny ⁊ Felix ⁊ it dured.xvi.yere ⁊ this was a newe cauſe ⁊ neuer ſeen before/foꝛ yͤ coũſeyle of Baſyle depoſed Eugeny yͤ very pope/and there was no moꝛe foꝛ he obeyed not yͤ decrees of yͤ coũſeyle of Cõſtantinople as they ſayde ne he charged not to obeye yͤ coũſeyle of Baſyle/but he ſayd rather the contrary ſholde be done than as they decreed. Wherfoꝛe there aroſe a grete altercacion in that mater/foꝛ ſome ſayd one way ⁊ ſome an other ⁊ coude not accoꝛde in this day/foꝛ yͤ one partye ſayd yͭ yͤ coũſeyle was aboue yͤ pope/⁊ an other party ſayd yͤ contrary yͭ the pope was aboue yͤ coũſeyle/but they lefte it vndetermyned and therfoꝛe god muſt diſpoſe foꝛ yͤ beſt. ¶ Albert was Emperoure after Sygyſmonde one yere. This Albert was yͤ duke of Auſtre ⁊ neuewe to Sygyſmonde/and therfoꝛe he was kynge of Beme ⁊ of Vngary foꝛ his doughter/foꝛ other heyre he lefte none. This man was Emperour of Almayne/but anone he was poyſoned ⁊ dyed/and he was in all thynge a vertuous man yͭ all men ſayd yͭ he was a pꝛeſydent of all kynges. ¶ Fredericus yͤ thyꝛde was Emperoure after hym. This Frederyke was duke of Oſteryke ⁊ choſen Emperoure of Almayne/but it was longe oꝛ he was crowned of yͤ pope foꝛ deuyſyon/and at yͤ laſt there was made an vnyte/and he was crowned wͭ a grete honoure of yͤ pope in yͤ cyte ⁊ was a peaſyble man ⁊ a quyete ⁊ of a ſynguler pyte ⁊ he hated not the clergy he wedded the kynges doughter of Poꝛtyngale/⁊ in his tyme whyles yͭ he reygned he made a grete conuocacyon of pꝛynces in Ratiſpona foꝛ yͤ Incours of yͤ Turkes/⁊ ſhewed vnto them yͭ now wͭin.xx.yere cryſtendome was made laſſe by.ij.C.myle.⁊ he warned thẽ yͭ they ſholde be redy to reſyſte hȳ And yͤ imperyall cyte of Conſtantynople was taken at the ſame tyme of yͤ myſbyleuynge Turkes ⁊ betrayed by a Januens whome foꝛ his laboure yͤ Turke made a kynge as he pꝛomyſed hym/⁊ yͤ.iiii. daye he called hym to hym ⁊ dydde hange hym foꝛ his diſceyte to his mayſter. And there was grete ſoꝛowe ⁊ wepȳge amonge the cryſten people foꝛ yͤ loſſe of yͤ noble cyte/foꝛ many cryſten was ſlayne ⁊ innumerable were ſolde/⁊ the Emperoure was ſlayne/⁊ foꝛ enuye yͤ Turke cauſed his heed to be ſmytẽ of whã he was deed And almooſt all yͤ fayth in yͤ lande of greke fayled. ¶ Nicholas the.v.a Januens was pope after Felix.viii.yere. This Nicholas was choſen at Rome in the place of Eugeny/⁊ yet yͤ ſtryfe henge ſtyll/and a lytell ⁊ a lytell they obeyed hym/and all men merueyled yͭ a man of ſo poꝛe a nacyon ſholde obteyne agaynſt yͤ duke of Sauoy yͭ whiche was coſyn ⁊ alyed almooſt to all the prynces of cryſtendome and eueryche one left hym. ¶Than in the yere after there was a peas made/ ⁊ Felix reſygned for it pleaſed our lorde his name to be gloryfyed by an obiecte of yͤ worlde as yͤ Januens was in cõparyſon of yͤ pope. ¶This Nicholas was a mayſter in dyuynyte/ ⁊ an actyf man ⁊ a ryche man in conſeytes and many thynges yͭ were fallen he buylded agayne. And all the walles of Rome he renewed for drede of the Turke. And there was a verſe made of this vnyte ⁊ publyſſhed in the cyte (Lux fulſit mũdo: ceſſit felix Nicholao) And that in the yere of oure lorde. M.CCCC.xix. The yere of grace with a grete deuocyon was conferrined ⁊ Innumerable people wente to the apoſtles ſetes

¶How kynge Henry the ſyxte reygned beynge a chylde not one yere of aege/ ⁊ of the batayle of Vernoyle in Perche.

After kynge Henry the fyfth reygned Henry his ſone but a chylde ⁊ not fully one yere of aege/ whoſe reygne began yͤ fyrſt daye of Septẽbre in yͤ yere of our lorde. M.cccc.xxii. This kynge beynge in his cradell was moche doubted ⁊ dradde bycauſe of yͤ grete cõqueſt of his fader and alſo the wyſdome and guydynge of his vncles yͤ duke of Bedforde ⁊ the duke of Glouceſtre. ¶This yere the .xxi. daye of Octobre deyed Charles yͤ kynge of Fraunce/ ⁊ lyeth buryed at ſaynt Denys. And yͤ duke of Bedforde was made regent of Fraũce/ ⁊ yͤ duke of Glouceſtre was made protectour ⁊ defendour of Englande. ¶And in yͤ fyrſt daye of Marche after was ſyr Wyllyam Tayloure preeſt degraded of his preeſthode/ ⁊ on yͤ morowe after he was brente in Smythfylde for hereſy. ¶This yere ſyr James Stewarde kynge of Scottes maryed dame Jane yͤ ducheſſe doughter of Clarẽce yͤ whiche ſhe had by her fyrſte huſbande yͤ erle of Somerſet at ſaynt Mary ouerys. ¶Alſo this yere yͤ .xvii. daye of Auguſt was yͤ batayle of Vernoyll in Perche bytwene yͤ duke of Bedforde regẽte of Fraũce ⁊ yͤ duke of Alaũſome whiche was a ful grete batayle. The duke of Bedford had on his ſyde yͤ erle of Saleſbury Moũtagu ⁊ yͤ lorde Tolbot ⁊ al yͤ power yͭ he coude make in Normãdye ⁊ yͤ garyſons kept and alſo many Captayns wᵗ moche people of yͤ duke of Burgoyne. And on that other ſyde was yͤ duke of Alaũſone/ yͤ duke of Turon yͭ was yͤ erle of Douglas/ ⁊ yͤ erle of Boughan wᵗ many erles of Fraũce ⁊ a grete cõpany of Scottes ⁊ armynakes. And thã yͤ erle Douglas called yͤ duke of Bedforde in ſcorne Johñ wᵗ yͤ leden ſwerde. And he ſente hym worde agayne yͭ he ſholde fynde yͤ day yͭ his ſwerde was of ſtele. And yͤ batayle Joyned on bothe ſydes ⁊ fought longe tyme yͭ there wyſt no mã who ſholde haue yͤ better a grete whyle/ but at yͤ laſt as god wolde yͤ victory fel vnto the Englyſſhe partie/ for there were ſlayne yͤ erle Douglas whiche a lytell before was made duke of Turõ/ yͤ erle Boughan/ yͤ erle Almarre/ yͤ erle of Tonnar/ yͤ erle of Vantedor ⁊ yͤ Vyſcoũte of Narbon whiche was one of the yͭ ſlewe yͤ duke Johñ of Burgoyn knelynge before yͤ Dolphyn ⁊ many more vnto yͤ nombre of x.M. ⁊ more. And there was taken pryſoners yͤ duke of Alaũſone and many other lordes ⁊ gentylles of Fraunce/ but Scottes that daye were ſlayne downe ryghte the ſubſtaunce of theym all. ¶And the thyrde yere of kynge Henry the ſyxte the duke of Glouceſtre maryed the ducheſſe of Hollande and wente ouer ſee with her in to Henaude for to take poſſeſſyon of his wyues enheritaũce where he was honourably receyued and taken for lorde of that lande/but ſoone after he was fayne to retourne home agayne in to Endlonde and lefte his wyfe ⁊ all his treſoure ẏ he hadde brought wͭ hym in a towne that is called Mounſe in Henaude/whiche promyſed to be trewe to hym. Notwithſtandynge they delyuered ẏ lady to ẏ duke of Burgoyne whiche ſent her to Gaunt. And frõ thens ſhe eſcaped in a mannes clothynge and came in to zelande to a towne of her owne called Myrʒyre. And frome thens ſhe wente to a towne in Hollande called ẏ Gowde/⁊ there ſhe was ſtronge ynough and withſtode the forſayde duke of Burgoyne. ¶ And ſoone after ẏ duke of Glouceſtre ſente ouer ſee in to zelande ẏ lorde Fytzwater with certayne men of armes and archers for to helpe ⁊ ſocoure the forſayd ducheſſe of Holande/whiche landed in a place in zelande called Brewers haue/where ẏ lordes of ẏ coũtre came downe ⁊ fought wͭ hȳ/⁊ in cõcluſyon he was fayne to withdrawe hym ⁊ his meny to ẏ ſee agayn. But yet he ſlewe kylde ⁊ hurte dyuerſe lordes ⁊ moche peple of ẏ ſame coũtre/⁊ ſo retourned home agayn in to Englond wͭ his meny ⁊ preuayled nothyng ¶ And alſo this ſame yere the erle of Saleſbury/ẏ erle of Suffolke/ẏ lorde Wylleby/⁊ the lorde Scales wͭ theyr retenue layd ſyege to ẏ cyte of Mauns ẏ whiche cyte was yolden to theym wͭ many other ſtronge townes ⁊ caſtelles to ẏ nombre of xxxvi. ¶ This tyme all Normandye ⁊ a grete parte of Fraunce vnto Orlyaunce was vnder the obeyſſaunce of ẏ kynge of Englande/⁊ all the remenaunt of Fraunce was in grete trybulacyon ⁊ myſchyef.

¶ How there was lyke to haue ben a grete fraye bytwene the Cardynall ⁊ the duke of Glouceſtre. And of ẏ coronacyon of kynge Henry ẏ ſyxte bothe in Englande and in Fraunce.

IN ẏ fourth yere ẏ ſame nyght ẏ ẏ mayer of London Johñ Couentre hadde taken his charge was a grete watche in London for a fraye ẏ was bytwene ẏ byſſhop of wyncheſtre/⁊ the duke of Glouceſtre protectour.⁊c. For ẏ mayer wͭ the people of ẏ cyte wolde abyde by ẏ duke of Glouceſtre as protectoure ⁊ defendour of ẏ reame/but by laboure of lordes that went bytwene/and in eſpecyal by ẏ laboure of ẏ prynce of Portyngale/there was a poyntement taken ẏ there was no harme. ¶ And after ẏ batayle of Vernoyle in Perche/the duke of Bedforde came ouer in to Englonde. And on whytſondaye this ſame yere at Leyceſtre he dubbed kyng Henry knyght/⁊ forth wͭ ẏ ſayd kynge Henry dubbed all theſe knyghtes whoſe names folowe/ẏ is to wyte ſyr Rycharde duke of yorke/alſo ẏ ſone ⁊ heyre of Northfolke/ẏ erle of Oxforde/the erle of weſtmerlande/ẏ ſone ⁊ heyre of the erle of Northumberland/ẏ ſone ⁊ heyre of the erle of Vrmonde/ẏ lorde Roos/ſyr James botterlar/ẏ lord Matrauas/ſyr henry gray of gankeruyle/ſyr willyã neuyll/lorde Fawconkrydge/Syr George Neuyll/lorde Latymer/ẏ lorde wellys/ẏ lorde Barkle/ẏ ſone ⁊ heyre to ẏ lorde Tolbot/ſyr Rauſe gray of werke/ſyr Robert veer/ſyr Rycharde Graye/ſyr Edmonde hongerforde/ſyr Johñ bottelar/ſyr Raynolde Cobham/ſyr Johan paſſheley/ſyr Thomas tũſtall. Johñ chydiok/ſyr Rauf langeford/ſyr Wyllyam drury/ſyr wylliam Thomas/Rycharde carbonel/ſyr Rycharde wydewyle/ſyr Johñ ſhyrdelowe/Syr wyllyam Chayn/ſyr wyllyam Badyngton/ſyre Johñ June/⁊ ſyr Gylbert beauchãpe. ¶ Itẽ in ẏ .v. yere ẏ duke of Bedforde wͭ the ducheſſe his wyfe wente ouer ſee to Calays/⁊ a lytell before went ouer ſee Henry byſſhoppe of wyncheſtre. And on ẏ day of ẏ Annuncyacyon of our lady in our lady chyrche at Calays ÿ byſſhoppe of wyncheſtre as he hadde ſongen maſſe was made Cardynall & he knelynge before ÿ hygh awter the duke of Bedforde ſet the hat vpon his hede/and there were his bulles redde aſwell of his charge as of the releyſynge of his benefyces ſpirituall & temporall. ¶ And this ſame yere was grete haboūdaunce of rayne/ÿ the ſubſtaūce of heye & alſo of corne was deſtroyed/for it rayned almooſt euery other day. ¶ And this ſame yere ÿ good erle of Saleſbury ſyr Thomas of Moutagu layde ſyege vnto Orlyaunce/at ÿ whiche ſyege he was ſlayne with a gonne ÿ came out of ÿ towne on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amen. For ſyth that he was ſlayne Englyſſhe men neuer gate nor preuayled in Fraunce/but euer after began to leſe lytell and lytell tyll all was loſte.

¶ Alſo this ſame yere a Brytō murthred a good wedowe in her bedde wout algate whiche wedowe founde hym for almeſſe and he bare away all ÿ ſhe hadde/& after this he toke the gyrthe of holy chyrche at ſaynt George in Southwarke and there he toke ÿ croſſe & forſwore this land/and as he went it happened ÿ he came by the place where he dyd this curſed dede in ÿ ſubarbes in London. And ÿ women of ÿ ſame paryſſhe came out wᵗ ſtaues & canel donge & ſlewe & made an ende of hȳ there. Notwithſtandynge ÿ conſtables and many other men beynge preſent for to kepe hym/for there were ſoo many women and had no pyte. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere ÿ duke of Northfolke wᵗ many gentylmen and yomen toke his barge/ÿ .viii. daye of Nouembre at ſaynt Marye ouerey for to haue gone through London brydge/and thrugh myſgydynge of the barge it ouerthrewe on ÿ pyles/& many men drowned but the duke hymſelf wᵗ two or thre leped vpon pyles and ſo were ſaued wᵗ helpe of men that were aboue ÿ brydge wᵗ caſtynge downe ropes/by ÿ whiche ropes they ſaued themſelf. ¶ This ſame yere on ſaynt Leonardes day kynge Henry beynge .vii. yere of age was crowned at Weſtmynſtre at whoſe coronacyon were made .xxxvi. knyghtes. ¶ This yere on ſaynt Georges day he paſſed ouer ſee to Calays towarde Fraūce. ¶ About this tyme & afore ÿ reame beynge in grete myſery & trybulacyon the Dolphyn began to make warre & gate certayne places & made dyſtreſſes vpō the Englyſſhe men by ÿ meane of his Capytaynes/ÿ is to ſaye la Here & Poton de ſayntrayles/& in eſpecyall a mayde the whiche they named la pucelle de dieu.

¶ This mayde rode lyke a woman and was a valyaūt Capytayne amonge them and toke vpon her many grete enterpryſes in ſo moche ÿ they had a byleue for to haue recouered al theyr loſſes by her. Notwithſtandynge at ÿ laſt after many grete feates/by the helpe & prudence of ſyr Johan Luxemburgh ÿ whiche was a noble Capytayne of ÿ duke of Bourgoyn & many Englyſſhmen Pycardes & Burgoynons whiche were of our partye before ÿ towne of Compyne ÿ .xxiii. daye of Maye the forſayd pucelle was taken in the felde armed lyke a man & many other capitaynes wᵗ her & were all brought to Rone & there ſhe was put in to pryſon. And there ſhe was Juged by lawe to be brent. And thā ſhe ſayd ÿ ſhe was wᵗ chylde/wherby ſhe was a whyle reſpyted. But in concluſion it was founden ÿ ſhe was not with chylde/& than ſhe was brente in Rone/and ÿ other Capytayns were put to raunſome and entreted as men of warre ben accuſtomed. ¶ And this ſame yere about candelmaſſe Rycharde hunder a wulle packer was dampned for an herytyke & brent at toure hylle. ¶ And aboute mydlenten ſyr Thomas baggely preeſt & vycary of the

Mauen in Essex besyde Walden was dysgraded & dāpned for an heretyke & brente in Smythfelde. ¶ And also in the same yere whyles ẏ kynge was in Fraūce there were many heretykes & lolardes ẏ had purposed to make a rysynge & caste byllys in dyuerse places/but blessyd by almyghty god ẏ capytayne of thē was taken whose name was Wyllyā Maūdeuyll a weuer of Abyndon & bayly of ẏ same towne/whiche named hym selfe Jacke Sharpe of Wygmorislande in Wales. And afterwarde he was beheded at ẏ forsayd Abedon in ẏ Whytsonweke on ẏ tewesday. ¶ In this same yere the .vi. daye of Decembre kynge Henry the .vi. was crowned kynge of Fraunce at Parys in the chyrche of our lady w grete solempnyte/there beynge presente ẏ Cardynall of Englande/ẏ duke of Bedforde/& many other lordes of Fraūce & of Englande. And after this coronacyon & grete feest holden at Parys the kynge retorned frome thens to Roan/and so towarde Calays/& ẏ .ix. day of Feuerer landed at Douer/whome all ẏ comunes of kent met at Beramdon bytwene Caunterbury & Douer all in reed hodes/and so came forth tyll he came to the blacke hethe where he was mette with ẏ mayer Johñ Welles with all ẏ craftes of London clothed all in whyte/and so they brought hym vnto London ẏ .xxi. day of the same moneth. ¶ And this same yere was a restraynte of the woulles of Calays made by ẏ souldyours bycause they were not payed of theyr wages/wherfore ẏ duke of Bedforde regent of Fraūce beynge than Capytayne came to Calays the tewesday in the Esterweke. And than on the morowe after many souldyours of ẏ towne were arested and put in to warde And in ẏ same weke he rode to Terrwyn/and by ẏ meane of the byshop of Terrewyn he wedded ẏ erles doughter of saynt Poule & came agayne to Calays/& than the .xi. daye of June on saynt Bernabeys daye there were foure souldyours of Calays ẏ were ẏ chief causers of ẏ restraynte of ẏ woulles byheded that is to wyte Johñ Madderley/Johñ Lauday/Thomas palmer/& Thomas Talbot/& an hondred & ten banysshed out of ẏ towne that same tyme/and before were banysshed an hondred & .xx. souldyours. And on mydsomer euen after came ẏ lorde regent & his wyfe to London.

And than aboute this tyme deyed pope Martyn/and after hym Eugeny the .iiii. was pope. This man was peasably chosen in ẏ court of Rome by ẏ Cardynalles & was very & Indubytate pope/but wtin a shorte tyme after he was put and expulsed out of Rome in suche a manere ẏ he was fayne for to flee naked. ¶ In this same tyme was ẏ coūseyle of Basyle to the whiche coūseyle Eugeny ẏ pope was cyted to come/and bycause ẏ he came not they deposed hȳ/but he rought not ne set not the by but gate ẏ cyte of Rome and abode styll pope .xii. yere. ¶ This tyme about Whytsontyde ẏ heretykes of Praghe were destroyed/for at two Iourneys were destroyed of theym more than .xxiiii. M. with theyr Capytaynes ẏ is to wete Procapius Saplico & Lupus presbyter. ¶ There was taken on lyue mayster Peers clerke an Englysshe man & an heretyke. ¶ And also the same yere was a stronge frost & longe durynge the whiche lasted .xi. wekes/for it began vpon saynt Katherynes euen and lasted vnto saynt Scolasticus day in Feuerer/in the whiche tyme the vyneage ẏ came frome Burdeux came ouer shoters hylle. ¶ This yere was the counseyle of Aras & a grete treate bytwene ẏ kynge of Englonde and the kynge of Fraunce where were assem that many grete lordes of bothe partyes at whiche counseyle was offred to ẏ kynge of Englonde grete thynges by ẏ meanes of a Legate that came fro Rome ẏ whiche was Cardynall of saynt Crosse/ whiche offres were refused by the Cardynall of Englonde/ & other lordes ẏ there were for ẏ kynge/ wherfore ẏ duke of Burgoyne ẏ whiche hadde ben longe Englysshe sworne forsoke our partye and retorned Frensshe by ẏ meane of ẏ forsayd Legate/ & made a peas wt the Frensshe kynge receyuynge of ẏ kyng for recompensynge of his faders deth ẏ conte of Pontu/ ẏ lordshyp of Macon wt moche other as is specifyed in ẏ sayd treaty. And so our embassatours came home agayne in worse case than they went out. For they left there the duke of Burgoyne whiche had ben wt his Burgoynons & pycardes a synguler helpe in all ẏ conquest of Normandy & of Fraunce. ¶ This same yere was a grete batayle on the see bytwene ẏ Ieneweys & the kynge of Aragon of whiche batayle the Ieneweys hadde ẏ vyctory/ for they toke ẏ kynge of Aragon/ ẏ kynge of Nauerne/ & the grete mayster of saynt James in Galyce wt .iii. C. knyghtes & squyers and moche other people/ & this was on saynt Dominicus day. And this same yere were seen thre sonnes at ones/ and anone folowed ẏ thre folde gouernaunce in the chyrche/ ẏ is to wete of Eugeny of ẏ counseyle and of neutralyte. ¶ And this same yere M.cccc.xxxiiii. was a passyng grete wynde by whiche steples houses & trees were ouerthrowen. ¶ About this tyme was an holy mayde in Hollande called Lydwith whiche lyued only by myracle not etynge ony mete. ¶ This yere the duke of Burgoyne began his ordre at Lyle of the golden Flees & ordeyned certayne knyghtes of ẏ same ordre/ & made statutes & ordynaunces moche accordynge vnto the ordre of ẏ garter. And this same yere ẏ Frensshemen had enterpryse to take Calays wt treason/ for many women of Fraunce had bespoken to come to Calays for to take pylgrymage. And ẏ Englysshmen of ẏ towne had a knowlege to come to ẏ chyrche & there they founde harnes at ẏ chyrche dore/ whiche harnes ẏ Frensshe women that were arayed lyke pylgrymes had purposed for to haue taken theyr harnes & wepen for to haue wonne so ẏ towne/ but one of them lay wt a comune woman ẏ nyght before/ & he tolde her theyr counseyle/ & she on the morowe tolde it to ẏ lyeutenaunt whiche forthwith all comaunded ẏ euery man shalde kepe his wepen in his hande lokynge tyme or other. And whan ẏ Frensshemen perceyued this ẏ they were myspoynted they seyled streyght to Depe & there toke that towne. And on newe yeres daye after they toke Harflete. And thus ẏ Englysshmen began to lese a lytell & lytell in Normandye.

¶ How Calays & Guynes were besyeged by ẏ duke of Burgoyn/ & how they were rescowed by ẏ duke of Glouceter.

THis yere was a grete noyse all Englande though how ẏ duke of Burgoyn wolde come & besyege Calays/ wherfore ẏ erle of Mortayne wt his armye ẏ he had to haue go wt hym in to Fraunce was comaunded & charged ẏ he sholde go to Calays/ whiche was at ẏ tyme well vitayled and manned/ for syr Johñ Ratclyfe was lyeutenaunt of ẏ towne for ẏ kynge/ & ẏ baron of Dudley lyeutenaunt of the castell. ¶ And the .ix. day of July ẏ duke of Burgoyne with all ẏ power of Flaunders and moche other people came before Calays and leyde his syege aboute ẏ towne/ and euery towne of Flaunders hadde theyr tentes by themself. And this syege endured this yere. In the meane whyle the duke of Glouceſtre beynge protectour of Englonde toke ye mooſt parte of all the lordes of Englonde & went ouer ye ſee to Calays for to reſcowe the towne as for to fyght wt the duke & his hooſt yf they wolde haue byden. This tyme London and euery good towne of Englonde ſente ouer the ſee to this reſcowe certayne people well arayed of the beſt & choſen men for ye warre. And the ſeconde daye of Auguſt ye forſayd duke of Glouceſtre aryued at Calays wt all his army and .v. hondred ſhyppes & mo. And ye duke of Burgoyne & all his hooſt ye laye in the ſyege / as ſoone as they eſpyed the ſayles in ye ſee / before they approched Calays hauen ſodeynly in a mornynge departed from the ſyege / leuynge behynde hym moche ſtuffe & vytayle & fledde in to Flaundres & Pycardy. And in lyke wyſe dyde the ſyege that laye before Guynnes where as they of Guynnes toke the grete gonne of braſſe called Dygeon & many other grete gonnes & ſerpentynes / & whan the duke of Glouceſtre was aryued with his hooſt he went in to Flaundres / & there he was .xii. dayes & dyde but lytell harme excepte that he brente two fayre vyllages Poperynge & Belle / & other houſes whiche were of no ſtronge buyldynge / & ſo he retourned home agayn. ¶ And this ſame yere ye kynge of Scotlonde beſyeged Rokeſbourgh wt moche people. But ſyr Rafe Gray departed from ye caſtell & ordeyned for a reſcowe. But as ſoone as ye kynge of Scotlonde vnderſtode his departynge ſodeynly he brake his ſyege & went his way and lefte moche ordynaūce behynde hym where he gate hym no worſhyp. ¶ This ſame yere the ſeconde daye of Janyuere quene Katheryne the whiche was ye kynges moder and wyfe to kynge Henry the fyfth dyed & departed out of this worlde and was brought ryally thrugh London & ſo to weſtmynſter & there ſhe lyeth worſhypfully buryed in our ladyes chapell. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere the fourth daye of Janyuere fell downe ye gate with ye toure on it on London brydge towarde Southwerke wt two arches & all ye ſtode theron. ¶ This ſame yere was a grete treaty holden bytwene Grauelynge and Calays bytwene the kynge & the duke of Burgoyne where was in the kynges name the Cardynall of Englonde / the duke of Norfolke and many other lordes / & for the duke of Burgoyne was the ducheſſe hauynge full power of her lorde as regent & lady of his londes where was taken by the aduyſe of bothe partyes an abſtynence of warre for a certayne tyme in ye name of ye ducheſſe & not of the duke bycauſe he had gone from his othe & legeaunce that he had made to kynge Henry the fyfth / therfore the kynge neuer wolde wryte ne appoynt ne haue to do with hym after / but all in the ducheſſe name. ¶ Alſo this ſame yere quene Jane dyed the ſeconde day of Julii whiche had ben wyfe to kynge Henry ye fourth & was caryed from Bermondſey to Caūterbury where ſhe lyeth buryed by kynge Henry her huſbonde. ¶ This ſame yere dyed all the lyons in ye Toure of London / the whiche had not ben ſeen many yeres afore.

¶ How Owen a ſquyre of wales that had wedded quene Katheryne was areſted / & of the ſcyſme bytwene Eugeny & Felix.

IN the .xv. yere of kynge Henry the ſyxth dyed Sygiſmōde Emperour of Almayne & knyght of ye garter / whoſe terement the kynge kepte at ſaynt Poule in London ryally / where was made a ryall herſe / & the kynge in his eſtate clad in blewe was at euen at dirige & on ye morne at maſſe. &c. And after hȳ was electe & choſen Alberte duke of Oſtryche whiche had wedded Sygyſmundes doughter for to be Emperour. This man was taken & crowned to be kynge of Beme & Hungary bycauſe of his wyfe that was Sygyſmundes doughter whiche left none other heyre after hym. This Albert was Emperour but one yere / for he was poyſoned & ſo dyed / ſome ſayd yͭ he dyed of yͤ flyxe / but he was a vertuous man & pyteful / ſo moche yͭ all the people that knewe hym ſayd that the worlde was not worthy to haue his preſence. ¶ This yere one Owen a ſquyer of Wales a man of lowe byrthe / whiche had many a daye before ſecretly wedded quene Katheryne / & had by her thre ſones & one doughter / & he was taken & commaunded to Newgate to pryſon by my lorde of Glouceſtre protectour of the realme. And this yere he brake yͤ pryſon by the meane of a preeſt yͭ was his chapelayne / & after was taken agayn by my lord Bemonde & brought agayn to Newgate / & afterwarde delyuered at large / & one of his ſones afterwarde was made erle of Rychemonde & an other erle of Penbroke / & the thyrde a monke of weſtmynſter / whiche monke dyed ſoone after. ¶ This ſame yere alſo on Newe yeres day at Bernardes caſtell fell downe a ſtake of wood ſodeynly at after none & ſlewe thre men myſcheuouſly & foule hurte other. ¶ Alſo at Bedforde on a ſhertburſday were .xviii. men murdred without ſtroke by fallynge downe a ſtayre as they came out of yͤ comyn hall & many ſore hurte. ¶ In yͤ .xviii. yere ſyr Rycharde Beauchamp the good erle of warwyk dyed at Rone he beynge that tyme lewtenaunt of the kynge in Normandye / & from thens his body was brought to Warwyk where he lyeth worſhypfully in a newe chapell on yͤ ſouth ſyde of yͤ quere. ¶ And this yere was a grete derthe of corne through out all Englande / for a buſſhell of whete was worth .ii. ſ. in many places of Englande & yet had they not ynough / wherfore Steuen Broune yͤ tyme mayre of London ſente in to Pruce & brought to London certayne ſhyppes laden with rye whiche dyd moche good to the poore people / for corne was ſo ſcarſe in Englande yͭ in ſome places of Englande poore people made them brede of ferne rotes. ¶ This yere yͤ generall counſeyle of Baſyle depoſed Eugeny & they choſe Felix yͭ was duke of Sauoy / & than began yͤ ſcyſme whiche endured vnto the yere of our lorde. M.CCCC.xlviii. This Felix was a deuoute prynce & lefte his ſones lone / & after lyued an holy lyfe / and was choſen pope of yͤ counſeyle of Baſyle & Eugeny depoſed. And ſo yͤ ſcyſme was longe tyme / & this Felix had but lytell obedyence bycauſe of yͤ naturalyte / for yͤ mooſt parte & well nyghe all cryſtendome obeyed & reputed Eugeny for very pope of them both / for both occupyed duryng yͤ lyfe of Eugeny. ¶ This ſame yere ſyr Rycharde yͭ was vycar of Hermetſworth was degraded of his preeſthode at Poules & brent at Toure hyll as for an heretyke on ſaynt Botulphes daye / how well at his deth he dyed a good cryſten man / wherfore after his deth moche people came to yͤ place where he was brent & offred & made an heype of ſtones & ſet vp a croſſe of tree & helde hym for a ſaynt tyll yͤ Mayre & ſhereues by yͤ kynges commaundement & of byſſhops dyſtroyed it & made there a dunge hyll. Alſo this yere yͤ ſheryfes of London fet out of ſaynt Martyns yͤ graunde of yͤ ſentuary .v. perſones whiche afterwarde were reſtored agayne to yͤ ſentuary by yͤ kynges Juſtyces. ¶ And after Alberte yͤ thyrde Frederik was choſen Emperour / this Frederyke duke of Oſtryche was made Emperour & deſired to be crowned at Rome bycauſe of yͤ ſcyſme / but after that peace was had he was crowned with the imperyall dyademe with grete glory and triumphe of pope Nicholas the .iiii. This was a peaſyble man/quyete ⁊ of ſinguler pacience not beſyge ẏ chirche/he wedded the kynges doughter of Portyngale.

¶ How the ducheſſe of Glouceſtre was areſted for treaſon and cōmytted to perpetuall pryſon in the yle of Man/and of the deth of mayſter Roger Bolyngbroke.

IN this ſame yere Elynor Cobham ducheſſe of Glouceſtre was areſted for certayne poyntes of treaſon layde agaynſt her/wherupon ſhe was examyned in ſaynt Steuens chapel at weſtmynſter afore the Archebyſſhop of Caūterbury/⁊ there ſhe was enioyned to open penaunce to go thrugh chepe berynge a taper in her hande ⁊ after to perpetuall pryſon in the yle of Man vnder ẏ kepynge of ſyr Thomas ſtanley. Alſo ẏ ſame tyme was areſted mayſter Thomas ſouthwel a chanon of weſtmynſter/mayſter Iohn̄ hume a chapelayne of ẏ ſayd lady/mayſter Roberte Bolynbroke a clerke vſynge Nygromancy/⁊ one Margery Iourdemayne called ẏ wytche of Eye beſyde weſtmynſter/there were areſted as for beynge of coūſeyle wᵗ the ſayd ducheſſe of Glouceſtre/⁊ for mayſter Thomas ſouthwell dyed in ẏ Toure the nyght before he ſholde haue be reyned on ẏ morne/for he hȳſelfe ſayd ẏ he ſholde dye in his bedde ⁊ not by Iuſtices. ¶ And in ẏ .xx. yere mayſter Iohn̄ hume ⁊ mayſter Roger Bolynbroke were brought to the gylde hall in London/⁊ there before ẏ Mayre ẏ lordes ⁊ chefe Iuſtyces of Englonde were reyned ⁊ dampned bothe to be drawen/hanged ⁊ quartered/but mayſter Iohn̄ hume had his chartre ⁊ was pardoned by the kyng/but mayſter Roger was drawen to Tyborne where he confeſſed ẏ he dyed gyltles of this mater ⁊ neuer had treſpaſſed in that he dyed fore. Notwithſtandynge he was hanged heded ⁊ quartred/vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen. And Margery Iourdemayne was brent in ſmythfelde ¶ Alſo this yere was a grete fraye in London in Flete ſtrete by nyght tyme bytwene men of courte ⁊ men of London/⁊ dyuerſe men ſlayne ⁊ ſome hurte/⁊ one Herbotell was the chefe cauſer of the myſgouernaūce ⁊ affray. ¶ Alſo this yere at the cheſynge of the Mayre of London the comyns named Robert Clopton ⁊ Raulyn Holande tayler/⁊ the aldermen toke Roberte Clopton and brought hym at the ryght hande of the Mayre/as cuſtome is. And than certayne taylers ⁊ other hande crafty men cryed nay nay not this man but Raulyn Holande/wherfore the Mayre that was Padyſſye ſent them that ſo cryed to Newgate/where they abode a grete whyle and were punyſſhed. ¶ In this ſame yere were dyuers enbaſſadours ſent in to Guyen for a maryage for the kynge for the erles doughter of Armynak the whiche was concluded/but by ẏ meanes of ẏ erle of Suffolke it was let ⁊ put a parte. And after this the ſayd erle of Suffolke wente hȳſelfe ouer ſee in Fraūce ⁊ there he treated the mariage bytwene the kyng of Englōde ⁊ the kynges doughter of Cecyle and of Iheruſalem. And the nexte yere it was cōcluded fully that maryage/by whiche maryage ẏ kynge ſhold delyuer to her fader the duchy of Angeo and the erledome of Mayne whiche was the key of Normandye. Than departed ẏ erle of Suffolke with his wyfe ⁊ dyuerſe lordes ⁊ knyghtes in ẏ mooſt ryall eſtate that myght be out of Englōde with newe chares and palfreys whiche went thrugh the chepe and ſoo wente ouer the ſee and receyued her/and than after in the lente brought her to Hampton where ſhe landed/⁊ there was ryally receyued. ¶ And vpon Candelmaſſe euen before by a grea tempeſt of thondre and lyghtnynge at after noone Poules ſteple was ſet on fyre in the myddes of the ſhafte in yͤ tymbre/ whiche was quenched by force of labour/ & ſpecyally by the morowe maſſe preeſt of the Bowe in chepe whiche was thought impoſſyble ſaue onely the grace of god. ¶ This yere was the erle of Stafforde made & create duke of Buckyngham/ the erle of warwyk duke of warwyk/ the erle of Dorſet markys of Dorſet/ & the erle of Suffolke was made markys of Suffolk

¶ How kyng Henry wedded quene Margarete/ and of her crownacyon.

This yere kynge Henry maryed at Southwyk quene Margarete/ & ſhe came to London yͤ .xxviii. day of May And by the waye all yͤ lordes of Englonde receyued her worſhypfully in dyuers places/ & in eſpecyall the duke of Glouceſtre And on the blacke hethe the Mayre with all the aldermen/ & al the craftes in blewe gownes browdred with yͤ deuyſe of their crafte that they myght be knowen/ mette with her with reede hodes & brought her to London/ where were dyuers pagentes & countenaũce of dyuers hyſtoryes ſhewed in dyuerſe places of yͤ cyte ryally & coſtly. And the .xxx. daye of Maye the forſayd quene was crowned at weſtmynſter/ and there was Juſtes thre dayes durynge wͭ in the Sentuary before yͤ abbay. ¶ This yere the pryour of kylmayn apeled yͤ erle of Ormonde of treaſon/ whiche had a day to them aſſygned for to fyght in Smythfelde/ & the lyſtes were made/ & the felde dreſſed. But whan it came to poynt/ the kynge cõmaũded yͭ they ſholde not fyght/ but toke the quarell in to his hande. And this was done at the inſtaũce & labour of certayne prechers & doctours of London as mayſter Gylbert worthyngton perſone of ſaynt Andrewes in Holborne/ & other. ¶ Alſo this yere came a grete enbaſſadoure in to Englonde out of Fraũce for to haue concluded a perpetuall pees/ but in cõcluſyon it torned vnto a trewes for a yere. ¶ Aboute this tyme dyed ſaynt Barnardyne a gray frere whiche began the newe reformacion of that ordre in many places in ſo moche that they that were reformed ben called Obſeruaũtes/ whiche Obſeruaũtes ben gretly encreaſed in ytaly and in Almayn. This Barnardyne was canonyſed by pope Nicholas the .v. in the yere of our lorde. M.CCCC.l. Johannes de Capiſtrano was his dyſcyple/ whiche profyted moche to the reformacyon of yͤ ordre for god hath ſhewed many a fayre myracle ¶ Alſo here is to be noted that from this tyme forwarde kynge Henry neuer profyted ne went forwarde/ but fortune began to torne from hym on all ſydes/ as well in Fraũce/ Normandye/ Guyen/ as in Englonde. Some men holde opinyon yͭ kynge Henry gaue commyſſyon plenarly to ſyr Edwarde Hull/ ſyr Robert Roos deane of ſaynt Seuerynes/ & other to conclude a maryage for hym with the erle of Armynakes ſyſter/ whiche was promyſed as it was ſayd & cõcluded/ & after broken/ & he wedded quene Margarete as is ſayd afore/ & a full dere maryage for the reame of Englonde/ for it was knowen verely that for to haue her delyuered was yͤ duchy of Angeo & the erledome of Mayne/ whiche was yͤ key of Normandy for yͤ Frenſhmen to entre. And aboute this the ſayd Markys of Suffolke aſked in playne parlyament a fyftene & an halfe to fetche her out of Fraũce. Loo what a maryage was this as to the comparyſon of yͤ other maryage For there ſholde haue be delyuered ſo many caſtels & townes in Guyen/ & ſo moche golde ſholde haue be gyuen with her that all Englonde ſholde haue be therby enryched/but contrary wyſe fell/wherfore euery grete prȳce ought to kepe his promeſſe For bycauſe of brekynge of this promeſſe ⁊ for maryage of quene Margarete what loſſe hath the reame of Englonde had/by leſynge of Normandye ⁊ Guyen/by dyuyſyon in ẏ reame/the rebellynge of comȳs agaynſt theyr prynce ⁊ lordes/what dyuyſyon amonge ẏ lordes/what murdre ⁊ ſleynge of them/what feldes fought ⁊ made/in concluſyon ſo many ẏ many a man hath loſt his lyfe/⁊ in cõcluſyon ẏ kynge depoſed/⁊ the quene with her ſone fayne to flee in to Scotlonde/⁊ from thens in to Fraũce/⁊ ſoo to Loreyne the place that ſhe came fyrſt fro. Many men deme that the brekynge of ẏ kynges promeſſe to the ſyſter of ẏ erle of Armynak was cauſe of his grete loſſe and aduerſyte.

¶ How the duke of Glouceſtre the kynges vncle was areſted at the parlyament of Bury/and of his deth/and how Angeo in Mayne was delyuered.

IN ẏ.xxvi.yere of kinge Henry was a parlyament at Bury called ſaynt Edmondes bury/aboute whiche was cõmaũded all the comyns of ẏ countre to be there in theyr mooſt beſt defenſyble araye for to wayte vpon the kynge. To whiche parlyament came the duke of Glouceſtre Vmfrey ẏ kynges vncle/whiche had ben protectour of Englonde all ẏ noncage of the kynge. And anone after as he was in his lodgynge he was areſted by ẏ Vycoũt Beaumont ẏ Cõſtable of Englonde/whome accõpanyed ẏ duke of Buckyngham/⁊ many other lordes. And forth wͭ all his ſeruaũtes were cõmaũded to departe frõ hym/⁊.xxxii.of the chefe of them were areſted ⁊ ſente to dyuerſe priſons/⁊ anone after this ſayd areſte ẏ ſayd duke was on the morowe deed/on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy/but how he dyed ⁊ in what maner ẏ certente is not knowẽ/ſome ſayd he dyed for ſorowe/ſome ſayd he was murdred bytwene two federbeds/ſome ſayd ẏ a ſpit was put in his foũdement/but how he dyed god knoweth/to whome no thȳge is hyd/⁊ thus deed he was layde open ẏ all men myght ſe hym/⁊ ſo bothe lordes ⁊ knyghtes of the ſhyre with burgeyſes came ⁊ ſawe hym lye deed/but woũde ne token coude they not perceyue how he dyed Here may men marke what this world is This duke was a noble man and a grete clerke/⁊ ruled worſhypfully ẏ reame to ẏ kȳges behofe/⁊ neuer coude be foũde faute in hȳ. But enuy of them ẏ were gouernours ⁊ had promyſed ẏ duchy of Angeo ⁊ the erledome of Mayn cauſed ẏ deſtruccyon of this noble man/for they drad ẏ he wolde haue empeſſhed ẏ delyueraunce/⁊ after they ſente his body to ſaynt Albons with certayne lyghtes to be buryed. And ſo ſyr Geruays of Clyftõ had than ẏ charge to cõuey the corps/⁊ ſo it was buryed at ſaynt Albons in the abbaye. And fyue perſones of his houſholde were ſente to London/⁊ there were they tryed ⁊ Iuged to be drawen ⁊ hanged/⁊ alſo quartred. Of whome the names were/ſyr Roger chambrelayn a knyght/⁊ one Mydelton a ſquyre. Arthur a ſquyre/⁊ Richarde Nedhã/whiche.v.perſones were drawen fro ẏ Toure of London thrugh Chepe to Tyborne/⁊ there let downe quycke/and than ſtrypped to haue ben heded and quartred. And than the Markys of Suffolke ſhewed there for them ẏ kynges pardon vnder his grete ſeale/⁊ ſo they were pardoned of the remenaunt of all that other execucyon/and had theyr lyues/⁊ ſo they were brought agayne to London/and after freely delyuered. Thus began grete trouble in this reame of Englond for the dethe of this noble duke of Glouceſtre/⁊

all the comynes of the reame began foꝛ to murmure foꝛ it yͤ were not content.

¶ After that pope Eugeny was deed Nicholas yͤ fyfth was elect pope/this Nicholas was choſe foꝛ Eugeny yet hauynge the ſcyſme/notwithſtandynge he gate yͤ obedyence of all cryſten reames/foꝛ after he was electe ⁊ ſacred pope/certayne loꝛdes of Fraūce ⁊ of Englonde were ſente in to Sauoye to pope Felix/foꝛ to entreate hȳ to ceaſe of the papacy. And by the ſpecyall labour of the byſſhop of Noꝛwyche ⁊ the loꝛde of ſaynt Iohñs he ceaſed yͤ ſeconde yere after yͤ pope Nicholas was ſacred/⁊ the ſayd Felix was made Legate of Fraūce ⁊ cardynall of Sauoy/⁊ he reſygned yͤ hole papacy to Nicholas/⁊ after lyued an holy lyfe and dyed an holy man/⁊ as it is ſayd almyghty god ſhewith myꝛacles foꝛ hym. This was the.xxiii.ſcyſme bytwene Eugeny ⁊ Felyx/⁊ dured.xvi.yere. The cauſe was this/the generall counſeyle of Baſile depoſed Eugeny/whiche was onely pope ⁊ indubytate/foꝛ as moche as he obſerued not ⁊ kepte the decrees ⁊ ſtatutes of the counſeyle of Conſtance/as it is ſayd befoꝛe/neyther he ought not to gyue obedyence to yͤ generall coūſeyle in no maner wyſe/wherfoꝛe aroſe a grete alteracyon amonge wryters of this mater (ꝓ et ꝯtra) whiche can not accoꝛde vnto this daye/one partye ſayth yͤ the coūſeyle is aboue yͤ pope/⁊ yͤ other partye ſayth nay/but yͤ pope is aboue yͤ coūſeyle. God bleſſed aboue al thynge gyue ⁊ graūt his peas in holy chirche ſpouſe of cryſt. Amē. This Nicholas was of Iene comen of lowe degre/a doctour of dyuynyte/an actyf man he reedyfyed many places yͤ were broke ⁊ ruynous/⁊ dyde make a wall aboute the palays/⁊ made the wall newe aboute Rome foꝛ drede of yͤ turkes. ¶ And yͤ people wondred ⁊ gretly merueyled of yͤ ceaſynge ⁊ reſygnynge of pope Felix to pope Nicholas/conſyderynge that Nicholas was a man of ſo homely a byrthe/⁊ that other was of affynyte to all the mooſt partye of cryſtē prynces/wherfoꝛe there was a verſe publyſſhed as aboue is ſayd.

¶ How ſyꝛ Fraunſoys Aragonoys toke Fogyers in Noꝛmandye. And of the loſſe of Conſtantynople by the Turke.

IN the yere of kynge Henry.xxvii. beynge trewes bytwene Fraunce ⁊ Englonde/a knyght of the Englyſſhe partye named ſyꝛ Fraunces Aragony toke a towne in Noꝛmandye named Fogyers agaynſt the trewes/of whiche takynge began moche ſoꝛowe ⁊ loſſe/foꝛ this was yͤ occaſyon by yͤ whiche yͤ Frenſſhmen gate all Noꝛmandye. ¶ Aboute this tyme the cyte of Conſtantynople/whiche was the imperyall cyte of all Grece was taken by the Turkes infydeles/whiche was betrayed as ſome holde opynyon/⁊ the Emperour taken ⁊ ſlayne/⁊ that ryall chirche of ſaynt Sophia robbed ⁊ dyſpoyled/⁊ the relykes and ymages and the rode drawen aboute the ſtretes/whiche was done in deſpyte of Cryſten fayth/⁊ ſoone after all cryſten fayth in Grece peryſſhed ⁊ ceaſed There were many cryſten men ſlayne/⁊ innumerable ſolde and put in captyuyte. By the takynge of this towne the Turke gretely was enhaūced in pryde/⁊ a grete loſſe to all cryſtendome. ¶ In the.xxviii. yere was a parlyament holden at weſtmynſter/⁊ from thens adiourned to the blacke freres at London/⁊ after criſtmas to weſtmynſter agayne. ¶ And this ſame yere Roberte of cane a man of yͤ weſtcoſte with a fewe ſhyppes toke a grete flete of ſhyppes comynge out of yͤ bay lade wͭ ſalte/whiche ſhyppes were out of Pruce/Flaūders/Hollonde/⁊ zelonde/⁊ brought them to Hampton/wherfoꝛe yͤ marchaū tes of Englond beynge in Flaūders/ were areſted in Brydges. Ipre ⁊ othere places ⁊ myght not be delyuered tyl theyr dettes dyſcharged/ tyll they hadde made apoyntmēt for to paye ẏ hurtis of thoſe ſhyppes/ whiche was payde by ẏ marchauntes of ẏ ſtaple euery peny/ and in lyke wyſe ẏ marchaūtes ⁊ goodes beynge in Danſke/ were alſo areſted. And made grete amendes. ¶ This ſame yere ẏ Frenſſhmē in a mornyng toke by a trayne the towne of Poūte all Arche. ⁊ therin ẏ lord Fawconbrydge was taken pryſoner. and after ẏ in Decembre Rone was taken ⁊ loſt, beynge therin the Edmonde duke of Somerſet/ ⁊ the erle of Shrewſbury/ ẏ whiche by a poȳtment left pledges and loſt all Normandye ⁊ came home in to Englonde ⁊ durynge ẏ ſayd parlyamēt ẏ duke of Suffolke was areſted/ ⁊ ſent in to ẏ toure ⁊ there he was a moneth. and after ẏ kynge dyd do fetche hym oute. for whiche cauſe al ẏ comunes were in a greate rumoure/ what for the delyueraūce of Angeo ⁊ Mayn ⁊ after leſynge of all Normandye and in eſpecyall for ẏ dethe of the good duke of Glouceſtre/ in ſo moche in ſome places men gadred and made them Capytayns/ as Blewberde ⁊ other/ whiche were takē ⁊ putte to dethe. ⁊ then ẏ ſayd parlyament adiourned was to Leyceſtre. And theder the kynge brought with hym ẏ duke of Suffolk. and whan ẏ comyns vnderſtode that he was oute of ẏ Toure and comē thyder/ they deſyred for to haue execucyon on them that were cauſe of the delyueraunce of Normādye / and hadde be cauſe of the dethe of the duke of Glouceſtre: and hadde ſolde Gaſcoyn and Guyan/ of ẏ whiche they named to be gylty/ the duke of Suffolk as chyef/ the lorde Saye. the byſſhop of Salyſbury/ Danyel ⁊ many mo. And for to peaſe the comyns. ẏ duke of Suffolke was exyled out of Englonde for. v. yere. ¶ And ſo durynge the parlemente he wente in to Norfolke. and there he toke his ſhyppynge/ for to goo out of the reame of Englonde in to Fraunce. ¶ And this yere as he ſayled on the ſee a ſhyp of warre called Nicholas of ẏ toure mete wᵗ his ſhyp ⁊ foūde hȳ therin/ whome they toke out/ and brought hym in to theyr ſhyp to ẏ mayſter ⁊ to ẏ capytayne ⁊ there he was exampned ⁊ at ẏ laſte Iuged to deth. And ſo they put hym in a caban ⁊ his chapelayn wᵗ hym for to ſhryue hym. And that done they brought hym into Douer rode/ ⁊ ſet hym in to the bote/ ⁊ ſmote there of his heed. And brought the body a lande vpon ẏ ſandes / ⁊ ſet ẏ heed therby. And this was done ẏ fyrſt day of Maye. Lo what auayled hym all his delyueraūce of Normandye. And there may ye ſe how he was rewarded for ẏ deth of the duke of Glouceſtre/ thus began ſorowe vpon ſorowe/ and dethe for dethe.

¶ How this yere was Inſurreccyon in Kente of ẏ comyns/ of whome Iacke Cade an Iryſſhe man was Capytayne.

THe yere of oure lorde. M.cccc. ⁊ .l. was ẏ grete grace of ẏ Iubyle at Rome/ where was grete pardon in ſo moche ẏ from all places in cryſtendome/ grete multytude of people reſortyd thyder. And in this ſame yere was a grete aſſemble ⁊ gaderynge togyder of the comunes of Kent/ in to grete nombre. And made an inſurreccyon/ ⁊ rebelled agaynſt ẏ kynge and his lawes/ ⁊ ordeyned them a Capytayne called Iohan Cade an Iryſſhman whiche named hymſelfe Mortymer/ coſyn to the duke of Yorke. And this Capytayne helde them togyder / ⁊ made ordynaunces amonge them ⁊ brought theym to the blacke hethe/ where he made a byll of petycyons to the kynge/ ⁊ his coūſeyle ſhewed what Iniuryes ⁊ oppreſſyons the powre comyns ſuffred/⁊ vnder colour for to come to his aboue/⁊ he had a grete multytude of people. ¶ And ẏ .xxvii. day of June ẏ kynge ⁊ many lordes Capytaynes/⁊ men of warre went towarde hym to ẏ blacke hethe. And whan ẏ Capytayne of Kente vnderſtode ẏ comynge of the kynge with ſo grete puyſſaunce/he withdrewe hym ⁊ his people to ſenoke a lytell vyllage. ¶ And the .xxviii. daye of June he beynge withdrawe ⁊ gone ẏ kynge came wͭ his armye ſet in ordre ⁊ enbatayled to ẏ blacke hethe/⁊ by aduys of his counſeyle/ſent ſyr Umfrey ſtafforde knyghte and Wyllyam Stafforde ſquyer two valyaunt Capytaynes/with certayne people for to fyght wͭ ẏ capytayne ⁊ to take ⁊ brynge hym ⁊ his acceſſaryes to ẏ kynge whiche wente to Senoke. And the capytayne with his felawſhyp ⁊ mette wͭ thē/and fought agaynſt thē/⁊ in concluſyon ſlewe them bothe/⁊ as many as abode ⁊ wolde not yelde them were ſlayn. ¶ Durynge this ſkyrmyſſhe fell a grete variaūce amonge ẏ lordes men ⁊ comyne people beynge on blacke heth agaynſt theyr lordes ⁊ capytaynes ſaynge playnly ẏ they wolde go vnto ẏ Capytayne of Kente/to aſſyſt ⁊ helpe hym/but yf they myght haue execucyon on ẏ traytours beyng about the kynge. Whereto ẏ kyng ſayd nay. And they ſayd playnly ẏ ẏ lorde Saye treſourer of Englonde/⁊ ẏ byſſhop of Salyſbury/⁊ ẏ baron of Dudly/the abbot of Glouceſtre/Danyell/⁊ Treuilyon/⁊ many more were traytours/⁊ worthy to be deed. Wherfore to pleaſe ẏ lordes meny ⁊ alſo ſome of ẏ kynges hous ẏ lorde Saye was areſted ⁊ ſent to ẏ toure of London And then ẏ kynge herynge tydynges of the dethe ⁊ ouerthrowynge of ẏ Staffordes he withdrewe hī to London/⁊ frome thens to Kelyngeworth/for the kynge ne lordes durſt not truſt theyr owne houſholde men. ¶ Then after that the Capytayne had hadde this vyctory vpon the Staffordes anone he toke ſyr Umfreyes ſalet ⁊ his bryganddynes ſmytē full of gylte nayles/⁊ alſo his gylte ſpores/⁊ arayed hym lyke a lorde ⁊ capytayne and retorned with all his meny ⁊ alſo more than he had before to ẏ blacke hethe agayne. To whome came ẏ Archebyſſhop of Cāterbury/and the duke of Bokyngham to the blacke hethe/and ſpake with hym. And as it was ſayd they founde hym wytty in his talkynge and his requeſt/and ſo they departed. ¶ And the thyrde daye of July he came and entred in to London with al his people. And there dyd make cryes in the kynges name ⁊ in his name that noo man ſholde robbe/nor take noo manere goodes/but yf he payed for it. And came rydynge through the cyte in grete pryde/and ſmote his ſwerde vpon London ſtone in canwyk ſtrete. And he beynge in ẏ cyte ſent to ẏ toure for to haue ẏ lorde Say. And ſo they fette hym/and brought hym to the yelde halle before ẏ mayre ⁊ the aldermen/where ẏ he was examyned. And he ſayd he wolde ⁊ ought to be Juged by his peryes. And ẏ comyns of kent toke hī by force frome the Mayer ⁊ offycers that kepte hym/⁊ toke hym to a preeſt to ſhryue hym. And or he myght be halfe ſhryuē they brought hym to the ſtanderde in the Chepe ſyde/and there ſmote of his hed on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy Amen. And thus dyed ẏ lorde Saye treſourer of Englonde. After this they ſet his hed vpon a ſpere/and bare it all about ẏ cyte And ẏ ſame day about myle ende Cromere was beheded. And the daye before afte after noone/the Capytayne with a certayne of his men went to Phylyppe Malpas houſe/⁊ robbed hym/⁊ toke awaye moche good. And frome thens he wente to ſaynt Margaretes patens to one Ge tes hous/⁊ robbed hym/⁊ toke away fro hym moche good alſo/at whiche robbynge dyuerſe mē of London of theyr neyghbours were at ⁊ toke parte wͭ theym. For this robbyng yͤ peoples hertes fell frome hym/⁊ euery thryfty man was aferde/for to be ſerued in lyke wyſe. For there was many a man in London that awayted ⁊ wolde fayne haue ſeen a comyn robbery whiche almyghty god forbyd. For it is to ſuppoſe yͭ he had not robbed/he myghte haue gone ferre/or he had be withſtande For the kynge ⁊ all yͤ lordes of the realme of Englande were departed/except yͤ lorde Scales/yͤ kepte the toure of London

¶ And the fyfth daye of July he dyd do ſmyte of a mannes heed in Southwerke And yͤ nyght after the Mayre of London with yͤ aldermen ⁊ comyns of yͤ cyte concluded to dryue awaye yͤ Capytayne and his hooſt/⁊ ſente to yͤ lorde Scales to the toure ⁊ to Mathe gough a Capytayne of Normandye/that they wolde that nyght aſſayle yͤ Capytayne with them of Kente And ſo they dyd ⁊ came to London brydge/in Southwerke or yͤ Capytayne had ony knowlege therof/⁊ they fought with them yͤ kept the brydge. And yͤ Kentyſſh men wēt to harneys/⁊ came to yͤ brydge and ſhot ⁊ fought with them and gate yͤ brydge/⁊ made theym of London to flee and ſlewe many of them/⁊ this endured all the nyght to ⁊ fro/tylle one of yͤ clocke of the morowe. And at yͤ laſte they brente the drawe brydge/where many of theym of London were drowned. In yͤ whiche nyght ſuton an aldermā of London was ſlayne Roger Heyſaunt/Mathe gough/and many other. And after this the chaūceler of Englande ſent to yͤ Capytayne a pardon generall for hym ⁊ for his meny And then they departed fro Southwerke euery mā to his owne hous. And whā they were all departed ⁊ gone there was proclamacyons made in Kente/Southſex and other places that what man coude take yͤ capitayne quycke or deed ſholde haue a thouſande pounde. And after this Alexander yden a ſquyer of Kente toke hym in a garden in Southſex. And in yͤ takynge Johñ cade capytayne was ſlayne/⁊ beheded ⁊ his heed ſet vpō London Brydge. And anone after the kyng came in to Kent/and dyd his Juſtyces ſytte at Caunterbury/⁊ enquered who were cauſers ⁊ chyef cauſe of this Inſurreccyon. ⁊ there were .viii. mē iuged to deth in one day/⁊ in other places more. And fro thēs the kynge went in to Southſex/⁊ in to yͤ weſt countree/where a lytell before was ſlayne the byſſhoppe of Salyſbury. And this ſame yere were ſoo many Juged to deth that thre heedes ſtode vpon London brydge at ones.

¶ Of the felde yͭ the duke of Yorke toke at Brentheth in Kente/and of yͤ byrth of prynce Edwarde/⁊ of the fyrſt batayle at ſaynt Albons/where the duke of Somerſet was ſlayne.

IN the .xxx. yere of yͤ kynge yͤ duke of Yorke came out of yͤ Marche of Wales/with the erle of Deuenſhyre and the lorde Cobham ⁊ grete puyſſaunce for reformacyon of certeyne Iniuryes and wronges/⁊ alſo to haue Juſtyce vpon certayne lordes beynge about the kynge/and toke a felde a brentheth beſyde Detforde in kent/whiche was a ſtronge felde for whiche cauſe yͤ kynge with all his lordes went vnto yͤ blacke heth wͭ a ſtronge and a grete multytude of people armed and ordeyned for yͤ warre in the beſt wyſe. And whan they hadde muſtred on the hethe/certayn lordes were tho ſent to hȳ for to trete ⁊ make apoyntmēt with hym whiche were the byſſhop of Ely/the byſ ſhop of wyncheſtre/ therles of Salyſbury ⁊ of warwyke/ ⁊ they concluded that yͤ duke of Somerſet ſholde be had to warde/ ⁊ to anſwere to ſuche artycles as the duke of Yorke ſholde put on hym/ ⁊ than the duke of Yorke ſholde breke his felde/ and come to yͤ kynge/ whiche was all promyſed by the kynge. And ſo the kynge cōmaunded yͤ the duke of Somerſet ſholde be hadde in to warde. And then yͤ duke of yorke brake vp his felde ⁊ came to yͤ kynge. And whan he was come contrary to yͤ promyſe afore made yͤ duke of Somerſet was preſent in the felde awaytynge and there about yͤ kyng/ ⁊ made yͤ duke of yorke ryde before as a pryſoner thurgh London. And they wolde haue put hȳ in holde. But a noyſe aroſe yᵗ yͤ erle of Marche his ſone was commynge with .x. M. mē to London warde/ wherfore yͤ kynge ⁊ his coūſeyle feryd. And then they concluded that the duke of yorke ſholde departe at his owne wyll. ¶ About this tyme began grete deuyſyon in Spruce bytwene yͤ grete mayſter ⁊ the knyghtes of yͤ duchye or ordre/ whiche were lordes of yͤ countre/ for the comyns ⁊ townes rebelled agaynſt yͤ lordes and made ſoo grete warre that at the laſte they called the kynge of Pole to be theyr lorde/ the whiche kynge came ⁊ was worſhypfully receyued. And beſyeged the caſtell of Marienburgh/ whiche was the chyef caſtell of ſtrength of all the londe/ and whan it/ and droue out yͤ mayſter of Danſke/ ⁊ all other places of that londe/ and ſoo they that hadde ben lordes many yeres loſt all theyr owne ſeygnourye and poſſeſſyons in tho londes. ¶ And in the yere of the Incarnacyon of our lorde. M.CCCC.liii. on ſaynt Edwardes day quene Margarete was delyuered of a fayre prynce whiche named was Edwarde. That ſame day Iohan Norman was choſen to be Mayer of London. And the daye that he ſholde take his othe at Weſtmynſtre he went thyder by water wᵗ all yͤ craftes/ where afore tyme yͤ mayer aldermen ⁊ yͤ craftes rode on horſbacke yͤ whiche was neuer vſed after. For ſyth yͤ tyme they haue euer gone by water in botes ⁊ barges. ¶ Ye haue wel vnderſtande before how yͤ contrary of yͤ promyſe of yͤ kynge ⁊ alſo yͤ concluſyons takē bytwene yͤ kynge ⁊ yͤ duke of yorke at brentheth yͤ duke of Somerſet wēt not to warde/ but abode about yͤ kynge/ ⁊ had grete rule/ ⁊ anone after he was made Capytayne of Calays/ ⁊ ruled yͤ kynge ⁊ his realme as he wolde/ wherfore yͤ grete lordes of the realme ⁊ alſo yͤ comyns were not pleaſed. For whiche cauſe yͤ duke of yorke/ yͤ erle of warwyke/ yͤ erle of Salyſbury wᵗ many knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers/ and moche other people came to remeue yͤ ſayd duke of Somerſet/ ⁊ other fro yͤ kynge. And yͤ kynge heryng of their commynge thought by his counſeyle for to haue gone weſtwarde ⁊ not for to haue met wᵗ theym. And had wᵗ hym yͤ duke of Somerſet/ yͤ duke of Bokyngham/ the erle of Stafforde/ yͤ erle of Northūberlonde/ yͤ lorde Clyfforde/ ⁊ many other. ¶ And what tyme that yͤ duke of yorke ⁊ his felawſhyppe vnderſtode yͤ the kynge was departed with the lordes frome London/ anone he chaunged his waye/ ⁊ coſted the coūtre ⁊ came to ſaynt Albons yͤ .xxiii. day of Maye/ ⁊ there met with yͤ kynge/ to whome the kynge ſente certayne lordes/ and deſyred them to kepe yͤ peas and departe/ but in concluſyon whyle they treated on yͤ one ſyde/ yͤ erle of warwyke wᵗ the Marche men ⁊ other entred in to the towne on that other ſyde/ and fought agaynſt the kynge ⁊ his partye/ ⁊ ſo began yͤ batayle and fyghtynge/ whiche endured a grete whyle/ But in cōcluſyon the duke of yorke obteyned/ and hadde the vyctory in that Iourneye/ In whiche was ſlayne yͤ duke of Somerſet/ the erle of Northumberlande/ yͤ lorde of Clyfforde/ ⁊ many knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers/ ⁊ many more hurte/ ⁊ on yͤ morowe after they brought the kynge in grete eſtate to London/ whiche was lodged in the byſſhops palays of London. And anone after was a grete parliament at London/ in whiche parliament the duke of Yorke was made protectour of Englande/ and the erle of Warwyke Capytayne of Calays/ the erle of Salesbury Chaunceler of Englande. And all ſuche perſones as had the rule before about the kynge were ſet a parte/ ⁊ myght not rule as they dyd before. ¶ And this ſame yere deyed pope Nicholas the fyfte/ ⁊ after hym was Calyxte the thyrde. This Calyxte was a Catalane/ ⁊ the actes of hym ſhal be ſhewed here after folowynge. ¶ In this ſame yere felle a grete affraye in London agaynſt yͤ Lombardes/ the cauſe began bycauſe of a yonge man toke a dagger frome a Lombarde ⁊ brake it/ wherfore yͤ yonge man on yͤ morowe was ſent for to come before the mayer ⁊ the aldermen/ ⁊ there for the offence he was cõmytted to warde/ and then yͤ mayer departed fro the yelde halle for to go home to his dyner/ but in yͤ chepe the yonge men of the mercerye for the mooſt partye prentyſes helde yͤ Mayre ⁊ Shyrefs ſtyll in chepe ⁊ wolde not ſuffre them to departe vnto yͤ tyme yͭ theyr felowe/ whiche was cõmytted to warde were delyuered/ ⁊ ſo by force they reſcowed theyr felowe frome pryſon. And that done yͤ Mayre departed ⁊ yͤ ſhyrefs alſo ⁊ yͤ pryſoner delyuered/ whiche yf he had be put to pryſon he had be put in Jeopardy of his lyfe. And then began a rumoure in the cyte agaynſt the Lombardes. And yͤ ſame euenynge the handcrafty men of yͤ towne aroſe/ ⁊ came to the Lombardes houſes ⁊ dyſpoyled ⁊ robbed dyuerſe of theym/ wherfore yͤ Mayer ⁊ yͤ aldermen came with the honeſt people of the cyte/ ⁊ droue them thens ⁊ ſent ſome of them yͭ had ſtolen to Newgate. And yͤ yonge mã that was reſcowed by his felowes ſawe this grete rumoure affraye ⁊ robbery enſewed of his fyrſt meuynge to yͤ Lombarde departed and went to Weſtmynſter to ſayntwary/ or els it had coſt hym his lyfe for anone after came downe an Oyer determyne/ for to do Juſtyce on all them yͭ ſo rebelled in the cyte agaynſt the Lombardes/ on whiche ſate wͭ the Mayre yͤ tyme Wyllyam marowe yͤ duke of Bokyngham/ ⁊ many other lordes to ſe execucyon done/ but yͤ comyns of yͤ cyte ſecretely made them redy aud dyd arme theym in theyr houſes ⁊ were in purpoſe to haue rongen the comyn belle/ whiche is called bowe belle/ but they were lete by ſad men whiche came to yͤ knowlege to the duke of Bokyngham ⁊ other lordes. And incontynent they aroſe/ for they durſt noo lenger abyd. for they doubted that the hole cyte ſholde haue ryſen agaynſt them. But yet neuertheleſſe.ii. or.iii. of yͤ cyte were Juged to dethe for this robbery/ ⁊ were hanged at Tybourne. ¶ And anone after the kynge ⁊ yͤ quene/ and other lordes rode to Couentre and withdrewe them fro London for this cauſe. And a lytell before the duke of yorke was ſent for to grenewych ⁊ there was dyſcharged of yͤ protectourſhyp/ ⁊ yͤ erle of Salyſbury of his Chaunceler ſhyp. And after this they were ſente fore by preuy ſeale for to come to Couentre/ where they were almooſt dyſceyued and the erle of Warwyke alſo ⁊ ſholde haue ben deſtroyed yf they had not ſeen well to.

¶ How the lorde Egremonde was taken by the erle of Salyſbury ſones/ and of yͤ robbynge of Sandwytche.

This yere were taken .iiii. grete fyſſhes bytwene Ereth ⁊ London. That one was called Moꝛs maryne / yͤ .ii. was a ſwerde fyſſhe / and yͤ other twayne were whales. ¶ In this ſame yere foꝛ certayne effrayes done in yͤ noꝛth coūtre bytwene loꝛde Egremond ⁊ yͤ erle of Salyſburyes ſones yͤ ſaid loꝛde Egremonde whome they had condempned in a grete ſomme of money to yͤ ſayd erle of Salyſbury / ⁊ therfoꝛe he was commytted in to pryſon in Newgate in London / where whan he had be a certayne ſpace he bꝛake the pryſon / ⁊ thꝛe pꝛiſoners with hym and eſcaped ⁊ went his way. ¶ Alſo this yere yͤ erle of Warwyke ⁊ his wyfe wente to Calays wͭ a fayꝛe felawſhyp ⁊ toke poſſeſſyon of his offyce. ¶ Aboute this tyme was a grete refoꝛmacyon of many monaſteryes of relygyon in dyuerſe partyes of yͤ woꝛlde / whiche were refourmed after the fyꝛſt Inſtitucyon / ⁊ contynued in many places. ¶ This ſame yere was a grete batayle in the marches bytwene yͤ londe of Hungry and Turkey at a place called Septedꝛad / where Innumerable turkes were ſlayne moꝛe by myꝛacle thā by mannes honde / foꝛ onely yͤ hande of god ſmote them. Saynt Iohn of Capiſtrane was there pꝛeſent ⁊ pꝛouoked yͤ cryſten people beynge then aferde foꝛ to purſue after yͤ Turkes / where an Infynyte multytude were ſlayn ⁊ deſtroyed / ⁊ yͤ Turkes ſayd that a grete nombꝛe of armed men folowed them that they were aferde to tourne agayne / ⁊ they were holy aungelles. ¶ This ſame yere the pryſoners of Newgate in London bꝛake theyꝛ pryſon / and went vpō yͤ ledes ⁊ fought agaynſt them of yͤ cytee ⁊ kepte yͤ gate a longe whyle / but at the laſt yͤ towne gate yͤ pryſon on them And than they were put in fettres ⁊ yꝛōs and were ſore punyſſhed in enſample of other. ¶ In this yere alſo there was a grete erthquake in Naples in ſo moche that there peryſſhed .xl. M. people that ſanke there in to the erthe. ¶ Alſo in the .xxxvi. yere ſaynt Oſmonde ſomtyme byſſhop of Salyſbury was canonyſed at Rome by pope Calixt. ⁊ the .x. day of Iuly he was tranſlated at Salyſbury by yͤ byſſhop of Caunterbury and many other byſſhops. ¶ And in Auguſte after ſyꝛ Pers de bꝛaſay ſeneſchall of Noꝛmandye wͭ yͤ Capytayne of Depe ⁊ many other Capytaynes ⁊ men of warre wente to the ſee with a grete Nauy / ⁊ came in to yͤ downes by nyght. And on the moꝛne erly befoꝛe day they londed ⁊ came to ſandwyche / bothe by londe ⁊ water ⁊ toke yͤ towne / ⁊ ryfled and dyſpoyled it. And toke many pryſoners / ⁊ left yͤ towne all bare / whiche was a ryche place / ⁊ moche good therin. And ladde with them many ryche pryſoners. ¶ In yͤ ſame yere in many places of Fraunce / Almayne / Flaundꝛes / Holonde ⁊ Zelonde / chyldern gadꝛed them togyders by grete companyes foꝛ to go on pylgrymage to ſaynt Myghels mount in Noꝛmandy / whiche came fro ferre coūtrees / wherof yͤ people merueyled. And many ſuppoſed yͤ ſome wycked ſpyꝛyte moued them to do ſoo / but it dured not longe bycauſe of the longe way ⁊ alſo foꝛ lacke of vytayle as they went. ¶ In this yere Reynold Pecoke byſſhop of Cheſtre was founde an heretyke / ⁊ yͤ thyꝛde day of Decēbꝛe was abiured at Lambeth in pꝛeſence of the Archebyſſhop of Caunterbury ⁊ many other byſſhops doctours ⁊ loꝛdes tempoꝛall / and his bokes bꝛente at Poules croſſe. ¶ And ye haue herde befoꝛe how certayne loꝛdes were ſlayne at ſaynt Albons / wherfoꝛe was alwaye a grucchynge / and wrathe hadde by yͤ heyꝛes of the that ſoo were ſlayne agaynſt the duke of Yoꝛke / the erles of Warwyke ⁊ of Salyſbury / wherfoꝛe the kynge by the aduys oꝛ his counſeyle ſent foꝛ them vnto London to whiche place the duke of Yoꝛke came yͤ .xxvi. day of January wͭ .iiii.C. men ⁊ lodged hym at Baynerdes caſtell in his owne place. ¶ And yͤ .xv. day of January came yͤ erle of Salyſbury with .v.C. mē ⁊ was lodged in therber his owne place. ¶ And the came yͤ duke of exceſtre ⁊ of Somerſet wͭ .viii.C. men. ⁊ laye without temple barre. ¶ And yͤ erle of Noꝛthumberlonde / ⁊ yͤ loꝛde Egremonde / yͤ loꝛde Clyffoꝛde wͭ .xv.C. men / ⁊ lodged wͭout yͤ towne. ¶ And yͤ Mayꝛe yͭ tyme Geffraye Boloyne / kept grete watche with the comyns of the cyte / ⁊ rode about the cyte by Holboꝛne and Fleteſtrete / wͭ a .v. M. men well arayed ⁊ armed foꝛ to kepe yͤ peas. ¶ And the .xxviii. day of Feuerer yͤ erle of Warwyke came to London fro Calays well beſeen ⁊ worſhypfully wͭ .v.C. men. in reed Jakettes bꝛoudꝛed with a ragged ſtaffe behynde ⁊ befoꝛe / ⁊ was lodged at the gray freres. ¶ And yͤ .xv. day of Marche yͤ kynge came to London ⁊ yͤ quene. And there was accoꝛde and peas made amonge the loꝛdes / and they were ſet in peas. And on our lady daye yͤ .xv. daye of marche / in the yere of our loꝛde. M.cccc. and .lviii. the kynge ⁊ the quene ⁊ all the loꝛdes wente on pꝛoceſſyon at Poules in London / ⁊ anone after yͤ kynge ⁊ the loꝛdes departed / ⁊ in this yere was a grete fray in Fleteſtrete bytwene men of court and men of the ſame ſtrete. In whiche fraye the quenys Attourney was ſlayne.

¶ How yͤ kynges houſholde made a fraye agaynſt the erle of Warwyke / and of the Journeye at bloꝛeheth.

ALſo this ſame yere as the erle of Warwyke was at coūſeyl at weſtmynſter all the kynges houſholde meny gadꝛed theym togyder / foꝛ to haue ſlayne the erle / but by yͤ helpe of god ⁊ his frendes he recouered his barge / and eſcaped theyꝛ euyll enterpꝛyſe / how well yͤ cokes came rennynge oute wͭ ſpyttes ⁊ peſtels agaynſt hym. And yͤ ſame day he rode towardes Warwyke / ⁊ ſoone he gate hym a commyſſyon ⁊ went ouer yͤ ſee towarde Calays. ¶ Soone after this yͤ erle of Salyſbury comynge to London was encoūtred at Bloꝛeheth wͭ yͤ loꝛde Audley / ⁊ moche other people oꝛdeyned to diſtroy hym but he hauynge knowelege yͭ he ſholde be mette with was accompanyed with his two ſones ſyꝛ Thomas ⁊ ſyꝛ Johan Neuell / and a grete felawſhyp of good men: And ſo they fought togyder / where therle of Salyſbury wanne the felde. And the loꝛde Audley was ſlayne / ⁊ many gentyl men of Cheſſhyꝛe / ⁊ moche people hurte and the erles two ſones were hurte / ⁊ goynge homewarde afterwarde they were taken ⁊ had to Cheſtre by yͤ quenes meny ¶ After Calixte Pius was pope / ⁊ was choſen this yere. M.CCCC.lviii. and he was called befoꝛe eneas an eloquēt man and a poete laureate. He was embaſſatour of yͤ Empꝛours befoꝛe tyme. And he wꝛote in yͤ coūſeyle of Baſyle a noble treatyſe foꝛ yͤ auctoꝛyte of the ſame. Alſo he canonyſed ſaynt Katherine of Senys This pope oꝛdeyned grete indulgence ⁊ pardon to them that wolde go and warre agaynſt the Turke / and wꝛote a pyſtle to the grete Turke exhoꝛtynge hym to become Cryſten. And in the ende he oꝛdeyned a paſſage agaynſt yͤ Turke at Ankon / to whiche moche people dꝛewe out of all partyes of cryſtendome / of the people he ſent many home agayne bycauſe they ſuffyſed not / ⁊ anone after he dyed at the ſayd Ankon / the yere of our loꝛde. M.CCCC. lxiiii. the .xiiii. daye of Auguſt.

¶ How Andꝛewe Trollop and yͤ ſouldyours of Calays foꝛſoke the duke of yoꝛke and theyr [illegible] the erle of Warwyke in the weſt countree.

The duke of Yorke/ þ erles of Warwyke ꝛ of Salyſbury ſawe þ gouernaūce of þ realme ſtode mooſt by the quene ꝛ her coūſeyle/ ꝛ how þ grete prynces of þ londe were not called to counſeyle but ſet a parte/ and not onely ſo/ but it was ſayd through the realme þ tho ſayd lordes ſholde be deſtroyed as openly was ſhewed at Bloreheth by them þ wolde haue ſlayne þ erle of Salyſbury. Then for ſaluacyon of theyr lyues ꝛ alſo for the comyn wele of the realme thought for to remedy theſe thynges aſſembled theym wͭ moche people/ ꝛ toke a felde in þ weſt coūtre to whiche þ erle of warwyke came fro Calays wͭ many of þ olde ſouldyours/ as Andrewe Trollop ꝛ other/ in whoſe wyſdome as for the warre he truſted moche vpon. And whan they were thus aſſembled ꝛ made theyr felde/ þ kynge ſent out his cōmyſſyons ꝛ preuy ſeales vnto all þ lordes of his realme/ to come ꝛ wayte on hym in theyr mooſt beſt defenſable araye And ſo euery man came in ſuche wyſe þ þ kynge was ſtronger ꝛ had more people than þ duke of yorke ꝛ therles of Warwyke ꝛ of Salyſbury/ for it is here to be noted þ euery lorde in Englonde durſt not dyſobeye þ quene/ ſoo ſhe ruled peaſybly all that was done about þ kynge whiche was a good ꝛ a well dyſpoſed man. And then whan þ kynge was come to þ place where they were þ duke of yorke ꝛ his felawſhyp made their felde in þ ſtrōgeſt wyſe/ ꝛ purpoſed verely to abyde and haue foughten/ but in þ nyght Andrewe Trollop ꝛ all þ olde ſouldyours of calays wͭ a grete felawſhyp ſodeynly departed out of the dukes hooſt/ ꝛ wente ſtrayte vnto the kynges felde/ where they were receyued Ioyouſly/ for they knewe the entent of the other lordes/ ꝛ alſo the maner of theyr felde. And then þ duke of yorke wͭ the other lordes ſeynge the dyſceyued/ toke a counſeyle ſhortly in þ ſame nyght/ ꝛ departed frome þ felde/ leuynge behynde them the mooſt party of theyr people to kepe þ felde tyll on þ morowe. Then þ duke of yorke wͭ his ſeconde ſone departed through wales towarde Irlonde/ leuynge his eldeſt ſone the erle of Marche wͭ therles of Warwyke ꝛ of Salyſbury/ whiche rode togyder wͭ thre or foure perſones ſtreyght in to Deuēſhyre/ ꝛ there by helpe ꝛ ayde of one Denham gate a ſhyp whiche coſte .xi. ſcore nobles/ ꝛ wͭ the ſame ſhyp ſayled fro thēs in to gerneſey/ ꝛ there refreſſhed them/ ꝛ fro thens ſayled to Calays/ where they were receyued in to þ caſtell by þ poſtern or they of þ towne wyſt of it. And þ duke of yorke toke ſhyppynge in Wales and ſayled ouer in to Irlonde/ where he was well receyued.

¶ How þ erles of Marche/ Warwyke/ ꝛ Saleſbury entred in to Calays/ ꝛ how þ erle of Warwyke wente in to Irlonde.

When kynge Henry wͭ his hooſt in þ felde not knowynge of this ſodeyne departynge/ on þ morowe founde none in þ felde of þ ſayd lordes ſente oute in all þ haſt mē for to folowe ꝛ purſue after to take theym/ but they met not wͭ thē as god wolde. And then þ kyng wente to ludlowe/ ꝛ diſpoyled þ caſtell ꝛ þ towne. and ſent þ ducheſſe of yorke ꝛ her chyldern to the ducheſſe of Bokyngham her ſyſter/ where ſhe was kepte longe tyme after. And forthwith the kynge ordeyned þ duke of Somerſet to be Capytayne of Calays/ and theſe other lordes ſoo departed as afore is ſayd were proclamed rebelles ꝛ grete traytours. Then the duke of Somerſet toke to hym all þ ſouldyours that departed frō the felde/ and made hym redy in all the haſt for to go to Calays ⁊ take poſſeſſyon of his offyce. And whan he came he founde therle of warwyk therin as Capytayne/ ⁊ the erles of Marche ⁊ of Salyſbury alſo/ ⁊ than he londed by Scales ⁊ went to Guynnes ⁊ there he was receyued. And it fortuned that ſome of the ſhyppes ẏ came ouer with hym came in to Calays hauen by theyr fre wyl/ for ẏ ſhyp men ought more fauour to therle of warwyk than to ẏ duke of Somerſet/ in whiche ſhyppes were taken dyuerſe men/ as Jenyn Fynkle/ Johñ felowe/ Kaylles/ ⁊ Purſer/ whiche were beheded ſoone after in Calays/ and after this came men dayly ouer ẏ ſee to theſe lordes to Calays/ ⁊ began for to were ſtronger ⁊ ſtrōger/ ⁊ they borowed moche good of the Staple. And on ẏ other ſyde ẏ duke of Somerſet beynge in Guynnes gāte people to hȳ whiche came out ⁊ ſcarmyſſhed with them of Calays/ ⁊ they of Calays with them/ whiche endured many dayes. Durynge this ſcarmyſſhynge moche people came ouer dayly vnto theſe lordes. Than on a tyme by thaduyſe ⁊ coūſeyle of ẏ lordes at Calays ſent ouer mayſter Denham with a grete felyſhyp to Sandwytche/ whiche toke ẏ towne ⁊ therin ẏ lorde Ryuers ⁊ the lorde Scales his ſone/ ⁊ toke many ſhyppes in the hauen/ ⁊ brought them all to Calays with whiche ſhyppes many maryners of theyr free wyll came to Calays to ſerue ẏ erle of warwyk. And after this the erle of warwyk by ẏ aduyſe of the lordes toke all his ſhyppes ⁊ manned them well ⁊ ſayled hymſelfe in to Irlonde for to ſpeke wᵗ the duke of yorke/ ⁊ toke his aduyſe how they ſholde entre in to Englond. And whan he had be there ⁊ done his erandes/ he retourned agayne towardes Calays/ ⁊ brought with hym his moder ẏ coūteſſe of Saleſbury. And commynge in ẏ weſt countre on the ſee the duke of Exceſtre Admyrall of Englonde beynge in ẏ grace of deu accōpanyed wᵗ many ſhyppes of warre met wᵗ the erle of warwycke ⁊ his flete/ but they fought not/ for ẏ ſubſtaūce of ẏ people beynge wᵗ the duke of Exceſtre ought better wyll ⁊ fauoure to ẏ erle of warwyk than to hym/ ⁊ they departed ⁊ came ſafe to Calays. ¶ Than ẏ kynges coūſeyle ſeynge ẏ theſe lordes had goten thoſe ſhyppes fro Sandwytche ⁊ takē ẏ lord Ryuers ⁊ his ſone/ ordeyned a garnyſon at Sādwitche to kepe ẏ towne/ ⁊ made one Moūford capytayne of ẏ towne/ ⁊ ẏ no man/ vytaylene marchaūt ẏ ſholde go to Flaūdres ſholde go to Calays. Thā they of Calays ſeynge this/ made Denham and other to go to Sandwitche ⁊ aſſayled ẏ towne by londe ⁊ by water ⁊ gate it/ ⁊ brought ẏ capytayne ouer ſee ⁊ ſmote of his heed/ ⁊ yet dayly men came ouer to them fro all partyes.

¶ How therles of Marche/ of warwyk/ ⁊ of Saleſbury entred in to Englonde/ ⁊ of the felde of Northampton where dyuerſe lordes were ſlayne.

AND after this the forſayd erles of Marche/ warwyk/ ⁊ Saleſbury came ouer to Douer with moche people ⁊ there londed/ to whome al ẏ coūtre drewe ⁊ came to London all armed/ ⁊ for to let ẏ lordes of ẏ kynges coūſeyle knowe theyr treuth ⁊ alſo theyr entent/ aſſembled them and tolde them ẏ they entended no harme to ẏ kynges perſone ſaue that they wolde put from hym ſuche perſones as were aboute hym. And ſo departed frō London with a grete puyſſaunce towarde Northhampton/ where ẏ kynge was accompanyed wᵗ many lordes/ and made a ſtronge felde wᵗout ẏ towne. And there bothe partyes mette ⁊ was fought a grete batayle: In whiche batayle were ſlayne the duke of Bokyngham ⁊ ẏ erle of Shrewesbury the lorde Beamonde/ ẏ lord Egremonde ⁊ many other knyghtes ⁊ ſquyers/ ⁊ other alſo/ ⁊ the kynge hymſelfe was taken in ẏ felde/ ⁊ afterwarde brought to London. And anone after was a parliamẽt at weſtmynſter/ durynge whiche parlyament ẏ duke of yorke came out of Irelonde/ ⁊ the erle of Rutlonde/ rydinge w a grete felawſhyp in to ẏ palays at weſtmynſter/ ⁊ toke the kynges palays ⁊ came in to ẏ parlyament chambre/ ⁊ there toke ẏ kẏges place ⁊ claymed ẏ crowne as his propre enherytaūce ⁊ ryght/ ⁊ caſt forth in wrytynge his tytle/ ⁊ alſo how he was ryghtfull heyre/ wherfore was moche to do/ but in concluſyon it was apoynted ⁊ cõcluded ẏ kyng Henry ſholde reygne ⁊ be kynge durynge his naturall lyfe/ for as moche as he had be kynge ſo longe ⁊ was poſſeſſed/ ⁊ after his deth the duke of yorke ſhold be kynge and his heyres kynges after hym/ ⁊ forthwith ſholde be ꝓclaymed heyre apparaūt and ſholde alſo be protectour ⁊ regent of Englonde durynge the kynges lyfe with many other thynges ordeyned in ẏ ſame parlyament/ ⁊ yf kynge Henry durynge his lyfe wente from this apoyntement or ony artycle cõcluded in ẏ ſayd parliament he ſholde be depoſed/ ⁊ the duke ſholde take ẏ crowne ⁊ be kynge. All whiche thynges were enacted by thauctoryte of the ſame/ at whiche parlyament ẏ commyns of the reame beynge aſſembled in the comyn hous comonynge ⁊ treatynge upon ẏ tytle of ẏ forſayd duke of yorke/ ſodeynly fell downe the crowne whiche henge than in the myddes of the ſayd hous whiche is the fraytor of the abbaye of weſtmynſter whiche was taken for a prodyce or token that ẏ reygne of kynge Henry was ended And alſo the crowne whiche ſtode on the hygheſt toure of the ſteple in the caſtell of Douer/ fell downe this ſame yere.

¶ How ẏ duke of yorke was ſlayne/ ⁊ of ẏ felde of wakefelde/ ⁊ of ẏ ſecond Iourney at ſaynt Albons by ẏ quene ⁊ the prynce.

BEcauſe ẏ quene with ẏ prynce her ſone was in the north/ ⁊ abſent her fro the kynge/ ⁊ obeyed not ſuche thynges cõcluded in ẏ parlyament/ was apoynted that the duke of yorke as protectour ſhold go northwarde to brynge ẏ quene/ ⁊ ſubdue ſuche as wold not obey/ with whome went the erle of Salyſbury/ ſyr Thomas Nevyll his ſone/ with moche people. And at wakefelde in Crymas weke/ they were overthrowẽ ⁊ ſlayne by lordes of ẏ quenes partye/ ſo to wete/ the duke of yorke was ſlayne/ the erle of Rutlonde/ ſyr Thomas Nevyll ⁊ many mo/ ⁊ the erle of Saleſbury was taken ⁊ other/ as Iohn Harrowe of London capytayne ⁊ ruler of the comynes ⁊ hanſon of Hull/ whiche were brought to Pomfret/ ⁊ there beheded and theyr hedes ſent to yorke/ ⁊ ſet upon ẏ gates/ ⁊ thus was the noble prynce the duke of yorke ſlayne/ on whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. And thus tyme the erle of Marche beynge in Shrewſbury heryng ẏ deth of his fader/ deſyred ayde of the townes to avenge his faders deth/ ⁊ fro thens went to wales/ ⁊ at Candelmaſſe after he had a batayle at Mortymers croſſe agaynſt the erle of Penbroke ⁊ of wylſhyre/ where the erle of Marche had the vyctory. Than the quene with thoſe lordes of the north after that they had oppreſſed ⁊ ſlayne the duke of yorke ⁊ his felyſhyp came ſouthwarde with a grete multytude of people for to come to the kynge ⁊ undo ſuche cõclucyons as had be taken before by the parlyament. Agaynſt whoſe comynge ẏ duke of Norfolke/ the erle of warwyke with moche peple ⁊ ordynaūce went to ſaynt Albons/ ⁊ had kynge Henry w them/ ⁊ there encountred togyder in ſuche wyſe/ ⁊ fought ſo ẏ.

the duke of Norfolke ⁊ therle of Warwyk with many other of theyr party fled ⁊ loſt that Journey/ where yͤ kynge Henry was taken wͭ the quene ⁊ prynce Edwarde his ſone/ whiche two had gotẽ yͤ felde. Than the quene ⁊ her partye beynge at her aboue/ ſent anone to London/ whiche was on an aſſhewenſdaye the fyrſt daye of Lente for vitayle/ for whiche yͤ Mayre ordeyned by thaduyſe of yͤ aldermen yͭ certayne cartes lade wͭ vytayle ſholde be ſent to ſaynt Albons to them/ ⁊ whan the cartes came to Crepelgate/ yͤ comyns of yͤ cytye yͭ kepte the gate toke yͤ vytayle fro yͤ cartes ⁊ wolde not ſuffre it to paſſe. Than were there certayne aldermen ⁊ comyns apoynted to go to Bernet to ſpeke wͭ the quenes counſeyle to entreate yͭ the northerne men ſholde be ſent home agayne in to theyr contree for yͤ cytye of London drad to be dyſpoyled yf they had come. ¶ And durynge this treatyſe tydynges came yͭ the erle of Warwyk had mette wͭ the erle of Marche on Cotteſwolde commynge out of Wales with a grete meyny of Walſſhmen/ and that they bothe were commynge to Londonwarde. Anone as theſe tydynges were knowen the treatyſe was broken/ for yͤ kyng/ quene/ prynce ⁊ all yͤ other lordes yͭ were wͭ them departed fro ſaynt Albons northwarde with all theyr people/ yet or they departed thens they beheded yͤ lorde Bonuyll ⁊ ſyr Thomas Kyryell whiche were take in yͤ Journey done on Shroftewedenſdaye. ¶ Than yͤ ducheſſe of Yorke beynge at London/ herynge of yͤ loſſe of yͤ felde of ſaynt Albons ſent ouer ſee her two yonge ſones George ⁊ Rycharde/ whiche wente to Utreght/ ⁊ Philip Malpas a ryche marchaũt of London/ Thomas Vaghan ſquyre/ mayſter William Hatclyf ⁊ many other/ ferynge of yͤ commynge of yͤ quene to London/ toke a ſhyppe of Andwerpe to haue gone in to Zelande/ ⁊ on yͤ other coſte were taken of one Colompne a Frenſſhman a ſhyppe of warre/ and he toke them pryſoners/ and brought them in to Fraunce/ where they payed grete good for theyr raũſon/ ⁊ there was grete good ⁊ rycheſſe in that ſhyppe.

¶ Of the depoſynge of kynge Henry the vi. And how kynge Edwarde the fourth toke poſſeſſyon/ ⁊ of the batayle on Palm ſondaye/ and how he was crowned.

Than whan yͤ erle of Marche ⁊ the erle of Warwyk had mette togyder on Cotteſwold/ incontynent they concluded to go to London/ ⁊ ſent worde anone to the Mayre and to the cyte that they wolde come/ ⁊ anone the cyte was gladde of theyr commynge/ hopynge to be releued by them/ ⁊ ſo they came to London. And whan they were come ⁊ had ſpoken with the lordes ⁊ eſtates beynge there/ concluded for as moche as kynge Henry was gone with them northward/ that he had forfeyted his crowne ⁊ ought to be depoſed accordynge unto the actes made ⁊ paſſed in the laſt parlyament. And ſo by the aduyſe of the lordes ſpyrytuall ⁊ temporall than beynge at London/ the erle of Marche Edwarde by the grace of god eldeſt ſone of yͤ duke Rycharde of Yorke/ as ryghtfull heyre/ and nexte enherytour to his fader/ the fourth daye of Marche/ the yere of our lorde god. M.CCCC.lxi. toke poſſeſſyon of the reame at Weſtmynſter in yͤ chirche of the abbay/ and offred as kynge with the ceptre ryall. To whome all the lordes ſpyrytuall and temporall dyde homage as to theyr ſouerayne lord ⁊ kynge. And forthwith it was proclamed thrugh the Cyte kynge Edwarde the fourth by name. And anone after the kynge rode in his ryall eſtate northwarde with all his lordes to ſubdue his ſubgectes that tyme beynge in the north/ and for to auenge his faders deth. And on Palmſondaye after he had a grete batayle in the northcōtre at a place called Towton/ not ferre from yorke/ where with the helpe of god he gaue the felde ⁊ had the vyctory/ where were ſlayne of his aduerſaryes .xxx. thouſande men ⁊ moo/ as it was ſayd by them that were there. In whiche batayle was ſlayne the erle of Northumberlonde/ the lorde Clyfforde/ ſyr John Neuyll the erle of weſtmerlōdes broder/ Andrewe Trollop and many knyghtes and ſquyres. Than kynge Henry that had ben kynge/ beynge with the quene and the prynce at yorke herynge the loſſe of that felde and ſo moche people ſlayne ⁊ ouerthrowen/ anone forthwith departed all thre with ẏ duke of Somerſet/ the lorde Roos/ ⁊ other towarde Scotlonde. And ẏ nexte daye after kynge Edwarde with all his armye entred in to yorke/ ⁊ was there proclamed kynge and obeyed as he ought to be. And the Mayre and comyns ſwore to be his lyege men/ ⁊ whan they had taryed a whyle in ẏ north and that all the north cōtre had tourned to hym he retourned ſouthwarde/ leuȳge behynde hym the erle of warwycke in tho partyes to gouerne and rule that cōtre. And aboute Mydſomer after/ the yere of our lorde .M.cccc.lx. and the fyrſt yere of his reygne he was crowned at weſtmynſter/ ⁊ anoynted kynge of Englonde/ hauynge poſſeſſyon of all the reame.

Calixtus the thyrde was pope after Nicholas thre yere ⁊ .v. monethes. This Calixte was an olde man whan he was choſen pope/ ⁊ was contynuelly ſeke ne he myght not fulfyll his deſyre whiche he entended to do agaynſt ẏ Turkes/ for deth came vpon hym. And he was choſen in the yere of our lorde .M.cccc.lv. and he dyed the .vi. daye in the whiche he made the fyguracyon/ ⁊ alſo he canonyſed ſaynt Vyncent a frere precher/ and there was a grete reformacyon of many monaſteryes in dyuerſe partyes of the worlde/ ⁊ theſe reformacyons were made many tymes/ but almooſt none abode/ but they retourned agayne as they were afore by ſucceſſyon of tyme after the deth of the worſhypfull faders. The feeſt of the Transfyguracyon was ordeyned of Calixte/ for ẏ gyfte of grace of the meruaylous vyctory done agaynſt the Turke in Hungary on ſaynt Sixtus daye .M.cccc.lvi. For there was a meruaylous vyctory gyuen to ẏ cryſten men in Hungary agaynſt ẏ grete Turke and there he loſt many a man and fledde ſhamefully for drede of his enemyes/ and no man folowed hym/ but alone ẏ honde of god fered the Turke and his hooſt on ſaynt Calixtes daye. Saynt Johñ de Capiſtrano was there ſeen preſent/ ⁊ he prouoked the people that were aferde to folowe the myſbyleuynge Turkes/ ⁊ there fell a grete vengeaunce on them/ for the Turkes ſayd ẏ there was ſo grete a nombre of knyghtes that folowed them that vnneth they durſte loke backwarde/ and therfore they fledde and lefte all theyr treſour behynde them/ ⁊ they were angelles that cauſed them to flee. Nota.

Pryntters of bokes were myghtely multyplyed in Magūce/ ⁊ thrugh out ẏ worlde/ ⁊ there began fyrſt/ ⁊ there helde theyr craftes/ and this tyme many men began to be more ſubtyll in craftes ⁊ ſwyfter than euer they were afore.

Pius ẏ ſeconde was pope after Calixte .vi. yere. This Pius was choſen in the yere of our lorde .M.cccc.lviii. ⁊ he was called Eneas an eloquent man a grete oratour a laureate poete/ ⁊ in the counceyle of Baſyle he wrote a noble tretyſe for thauctoryte of ẏ ſame. This man deſyꝛed to haue a paſſage to the Turke ⁊ moche people of dyuerſe countrees came to Rome/and he gaue them his bleſſynge and ſente them home agayne/foꝛ they were not ſuffycyent foꝛ the Turkes hooſt/⁊ anone after he deceaſed.

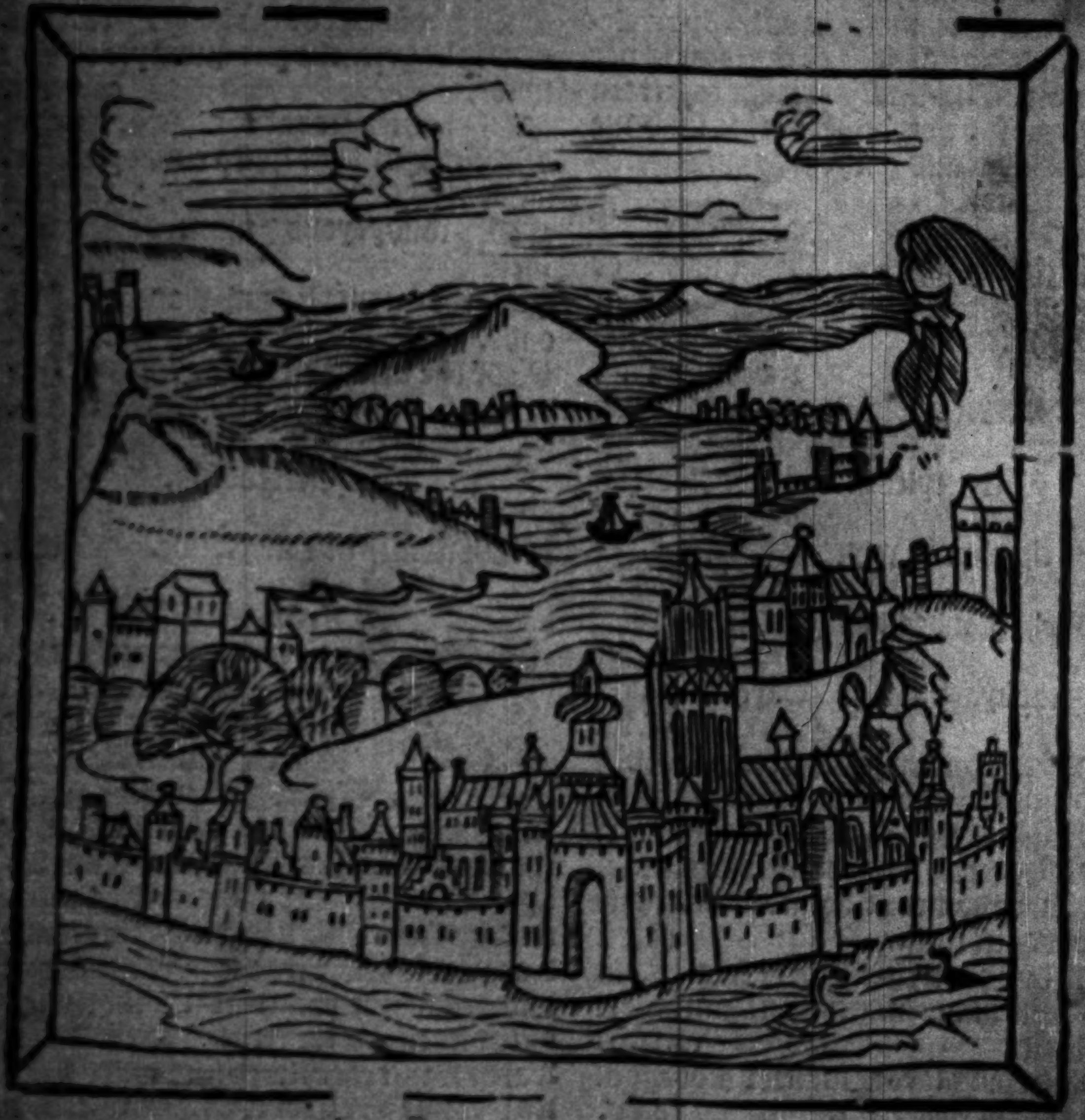
Paulus a venicyan was pope after Pius.vii.yere/this Paulus was choſen in yͤ yere of our loꝛde.M.CCCC.lxiiii. And anone he halowed the feeſt of the pꝛeſentacion of our lady as Pius dyd This man was a tough man in ryghtwyſneſſe/and he ſayd it was better to make fewe thynges ⁊ kepe them ſtedfaſtly than foꝛ to make many/⁊ ſoone reuoke them. And he made a grete palays at ſaynt Markes/and he deceaſed oꝛ he had ended it in the yere of our loꝛde.M.cccc.lxxi. ¶ Leodii.the lõde of Luke was oppꝛeſſed with many trybulacyons/and after in the yere of our loꝛde.M.cccc.lxviii. vtterly it was deſtroyed by Karolum the duke of Burgoyne/the whiche wedded dame Margarete ſyſter to kynge Edwarde the fourth of Englonde. Alſo the ſame Karolum entred in yͤ londe of Geldꝛe/and conquered it all. The yere of grace alſo was chaunged by pope Paule foꝛ fauour of mannes ſoule from.xxv.yere to.xxv.yere. And bycauſe that curſedneſſe abounded ſo ſoꝛe/grace abounded alſo ſoꝛe.

Sixtus the fourth a Jeneuoys ⁊ a frere mynoꝛ was pope after Paule This man was generall in the oꝛdꝛe of yͤ frere mynoꝛs oꝛ he was Cardynall. And he was choſen in the yere of our loꝛde.M.cccc.lxxi. And was called Frauncíſcus de Sanona/of good fame and vertuous/he was choſen Cardynall without his knowlege tyll he was made/and the ſame yere that he was choſen pope/the Turke had taken from cryſten men two Empyꝛes ⁊ foure kyngdomes.xx.pꝛouynces/⁊ two hondꝛed cytees/and had deſtroyed men ⁊ women without nombꝛe/and that meued the pope that he ſholde dyſpoſe hym to go to withſtonde hym. And foꝛ an armye to be made agaynſt the Turke the pope gaue grete indulgences of pardon of the treſoꝛy of the chirche vnto al cryſten reames that he myght oꝛdeyne ſome treſoure to withſtande that miſbyleued Turke. And in the reame of Englonde Johñ abbot of Abyngdon was the popes Legate to dyſpoſe this goodly treſoure of the chirche to euery faythfull man that was dyſpoſed ⁊ that wolde able hym to receyue it.

¶ Here endeth this pꝛeſente Cronycle of Englonde with the fruyte of tymes/compyled in a boke/and alſo enpꝛynted by one ſomtyme ſcole mayſter of ſaynt Albons/vpon whoſe ſoule god haue mercy. Amen ¶ And newly enpꝛynted in Flete ſtrete at the ſygne of the ſonne/by me Wynkyn de worde. In the yere of our loꝛde god.M.CCCCC.and.xv.

The deſcrypcyon of Englonde

There foloweth a lytell treatyſe the which treateth of the deſcrypcyon of this londe whiche of olde tyme / was called Albyon / and after Brytayne / & now is called Englonde / and ſpeketh of the nobleſſe and worthyneſſe of the ſame.



¶ It is ſo that in many and dyuerſe places the comyn Cronycles of Englonde ben hadde and alſo now late Enprynted in the ſouthwerke in the ſygne of the [illegible]. And for as moche as the deſcrypcyon of this londe/whiche of olde tyme was named Albyon/and after Brytayne/is not deſcryued ne comynly hadde/ne yͤ nobleneſſe and worthyneſſe of the ſame is not knowen. Therfore I entende to ſette in this boke yͤ deſcrypcyon of this ſayd Yle of Brytayne and with the commodytees of the ſame.

¶ In the fyrſt ſhall be tolde the names of the yonde Ca.i.
¶ Of the ſettynge boundynge length and brede. ca.ii.
¶ Of the worthyneſſe ⁊ perogacyons. Capitulo iii.
¶ Of yͤ merueyles and of the grete wonders. ca.iiii.
¶ Of the chyef partyes of the ſame londe. ca.v.
¶ Of the yondes that ben therto adiacent. ca.vi.
¶ Of the kynges hyghe wayes and ſtretes. ca.vii
¶ Of yͤ famous ryuers ⁊ ſtremes. ca.viii
¶ Of auncyent cytyes and townes. ca.ix.
¶ Of prouynces ⁊ ſhyres. ca.x.
¶ Of yͤ lawes ⁊ names of yͤ lawes. ca.xi.
¶ Of kyngdomes of boundes and markes bytwene them. ca.xii
¶ Of byſſhopryches ⁊ theyr ſees. ca.xiii
¶ Of how many maner peple haue dwelled therin. ca.xiiii.
¶ Of the langages of maners ⁊ uſage of the people of that londe. ca.xv.
¶ Of the londe of wales. ca.xvi.
¶ Of yͤ name and whye it is named wales. ca.xvii.
¶ Of the commodytees of the londe of [illegible]. ca.xviii
¶ Of the maners and rytes of yͤ walſſhe men. ca.xix.
¶ Of the merueyles and wondres of wales. ca.xx.
¶ Of the deſcrypcyon of Scotlonde ſomtyme named Albanya. ca.xxi.
¶ Of yͤ deſcrypcyon of Irlonde. ca.xxii.
¶ Of yͤ bondage of Irlonde. ca.xxiii.
¶ Of the gretneſſe and quantyte of that londe. ca.xxiiii.
¶ Of the defautes of the londe. ca.xxv.
¶ Of theym that fyrſt enhabyted Irlonde. ca.xxvi.
¶ Of yͤ condycyons ⁊ maners of Iryſſhe men. ca.xxvii.
¶ Of the merueyles and wondres of Ironde. ca.xxviii.
¶ Of the merueyles of ſayntes of Irlonde. ca.xix.

¶ Explicit tabula.

¶ The names of this yonde. ca.i.

FIrſte as Galfridus ſayth this londe was called Albyon after yͤ name of Albyne yͤ eldeſt doughter of Dyocleſyan ⁊ had .xxxii. ſyſter ⁊ they were fyrſt yͤ enhabyted this londe/⁊ bycauſe ſhe was the eldeſt ſyſter ſhe named this londe Albyon after her owne name as the Cronycle reherſeth. Other ſaye that this londe was named Albyon as it were the whyte londe of whyte rockes aboute the clyues of the ſee that were ſeen fro ferre. Afterwarde Brute conquered this londe ⁊ called it Brytayn after his owne name. And then Saxons or Engylſſhe men conquered this londe and called it Anglia that is Englonde. Or it is called anglia of a quene that owed this londe that was named Angela ⁊ was a noble dukes doughter of the Saxons.Or as Yſyd.ſayde Ethi.xv. anglia hath ŷ name as it were an angle ⁊ a corner of the worlde.Or elles as Beda ſayth li.i.Saint gregory ſawe englyſſhe childern to ſelle at Rome ⁊ he acorded to ŷ name of ŷ londe/⁊ ſayd they ben ſothely aūgelles/for theyr faces ſhyne as aungelles/for the nobylyte of the londe ſhone in the chyldern faces.¶ Alfre.The Bryttyſſhe anglia is called the other worlde/⁊ for grete plente of all good ŷ grete Charles called it his owne chābre.¶ Solinus The edge of ŷ Frenſſhe clyf ſholde be the ende of ŷ worlde/yf ŷ ylonde of Brytaynne were not/whiche is worthy to haue ŷ name of an other worlde.¶ Alfry.This ylonde is called inſula/for it is in ſalo/ŷ is ŷ ſee/⁊ is beten of ŵ dyuerſe cours of waters ŵ ſtremes ⁊ ŵ wawes of ŷ ſee.

¶ Of the ſettynge boundynge length ⁊ brede of this londe. ca.ii.

This Brytayne is acoūted a noble londe bothe in our ſtoryes ⁊ alſo in ŷ ſtoryes of Grekes/⁊ it ſet ayenſt Germania/Gallia/Fraūce/⁊ ſpayne bytwene ŷ north ŷ weſt ⁊ ŷ ſee bytwene.This londe is fyfty myle frō ŷ clyf of the men ŷ be called morini greſſorico.¶ Beda lib.i. And for this ylonde lyeth vnder the north heed of ŷ worlde/⁊ it hath lyght ⁊ bryght nyghtes in ŷ ſomer tyme/ſo ŷ oftentyme at mydnyght men haue queſtyōs ⁊ doubte whether it be euentyde or dawynge/ŷ is for ŷ tyme of the yere ŷ ŷ ſonne goeth not ferre vnder ŷ erth by nyght but paſſeth by ŷ north ſyde ⁊ cometh ſoone in to ŷ eeſt agayn. And therfore in ŷ ſomer ben theyr dayes full longe of.xviii.houres ⁊ the nyghtes of.vi.houres.And after in ŷ wynter ben longe nyghtes of.xviii.houres and ſhorte days of.vi.houres.Alſo in Armenia/Macedonia/Italia ⁊ in other londes of ŷ ſame lyne ŷ lengeſt daye and lengeſt nyght alſo is of.xv.houres/⁊ the ſhorteſt day or nyght is of.ix.houres.Plinius in metor. That ylonde is chyef of blacke men/there is ŷ lengeſt day.xii.houres. In Alexandre in Egypte of.xiiii.houres. In ytaly of.xv.houres. In Brytayn of.xviii.houres. In ŷ ylonde named Tyle all ŷ.vi.ſomer monethes is day/⁊ all ŷ vi.wynter monethes is nyght.¶ Iſyd. li.xiii.Brytayne is ſette wīn Occean as it were wout ŷ worlde/⁊ is ſet ayenſt fraūce ⁊ Spayne.¶ Giraldus.Brytayne is endlonge ⁊ larger in ŷ myddell than in ŷ endes.¶ Oroſius.Brytayne ſtretched in length out of ŷ ſouth in to ŷ north/⁊ in ŷ ſoutheſt it hath fraūce/in ŷ ſouth Spayne/in ŷ north Norway/⁊ in ŷ weſt Hibernia ŷ is Irlonde whan ŷ ſhypmen paſſe ŷ next clyf of ŷ londe they ſe a cyte ŷ hyght rupty mouth.¶ Beda.li.i.ŷ cyte is now called of Englyſſhmē Reptaceſtre.¶ Solinus.Brytayne is.viii.C myle of length and it be met from ŷ clyf of Totneſſe to the angle of calidon.¶ Alfre.That is frō ŷ withſtrete.xv.myle beyōde Myghels ſtowe in Cornewayle vnto Catneſſe ŷ is beyonde Scotlonde/⁊ Brytayne is more than.ii.C.myle brode frō Meneuia ŷ is the vttermeſt place in Wales vnto Yarmouth in northfolke.¶ Beda.Onely out take ŷ lengeſt out ſhetynge of dyuerſe forlondes with the whiche Brytayne is all about.xlviii.ſythe.lxx.thouſande paſce.

Of ŷ worthyneſſe ⁊ perogationes. ca.iii

As Fraunce paſſeth Brytayne ſo Brytayne paſſeth Irlonde in fayre wedder and nobylyte/but not in helth.¶ Beda lib.i.For this ylonde is beſte for brynge forth trees ⁊ fruytes.Rutherne ⁊ beeſtes.And wyne groweth therin in ſome places.The londe hath plente of fowles ⁊ of beeſtes of dyuerſe maner of kynde. The londe is plenteuous ⁊ ẏ ſee alſo. The londe is noble copyous ⁊ ryche of noble welles and ryuers wᵗ plente of fyſſhe. There is grete plente of ſmal fyſſhe ⁊ of ſamon and of eles. ¶ Wyllel. de. pon. li. iii. So ẏ the people in ſome place fede theyr ſwyne with fyſſhe. Beda li. i. There ben oftentymes taken dolphyns / ſee calues ⁊ Balayns grete fyſſhes as whales kynde / ⁊ dyuerſe maner ſhelfyſſhe / amonge the whiche ſhelfyſſhe ben muſkles ẏ wᵗin them haue Margery perles of all maner of coloure ⁊ hewe of rody ⁊ reed purpure and of blewe / ⁊ ſpecyally ⁊ mooſt of whyte. There is alſo plente of ſhelfyſſhe ẏ men dye therwith fyne reed / ẏ reedneſſe therof is wonder fayre ⁊ ſtable / ⁊ ſtayneth neuer with colde nor with hete / with wete nor with drye / but euer ẏ older the colour is the fayrer. There ben alſo ſaltewelles / and hote welles therof rennynge ſtremes of hote bathes departed in to dyuerſe places accordyng / for man ⁊ womā of all manere age olde or yonge. ¶ Baſilius ſayth That the water ẏ renneth and paſſeth by vaynes of certayne metall taketh in his courſe grete hete. This ylonde is plenteuous of vaynes of metalles / braſ of yron of leed of tyn / ⁊ of ſyluer alſo. ¶ Plinius li. vi. ca. vi. In this ylonde vnder ẏ turfe of ẏ londe is founde good merle / ẏ thyckty of ẏ fatneſſe dryeth hyſelfe therin / So that euer ẏ thycker ẏ felde is merled the better corne it wyll bere. There is alſo an other manere whyte merle ꝥ ẏ londe is ẏ better foure ſcore yere ẏ therwith is merled. ¶ Solinus. In this ylonde groweth a ſtone ẏ is called Gagates / yf ye wyl knowe his fayrneſſe / it is blacke as gemmes ben / yf ye wyll knowe his kynde / it brenneth in water ⁊ quencheth in oyle ⁊ as to his myght / yf the ſame be frotyd ⁊ chafed it holdeth what hym neygheth as Succinus a ſtone ẏ is ſo named. ¶ Yſydo. li. xv.

There ben ſhepe ẏ bere good woll. There ben many hertes ⁊ wylde beſtes and fewe wolues / therfore ſhepe ben ẏ ſuker withoute kepynge lefte in ẏ felde. ¶ B. In this ſame ylonde alſo ben many cytees ⁊ townes fayre ⁊ noble ⁊ ryche / many grete ryuers ⁊ ſtremes wᵗ grete plente of fyſſhe / many fayre wodes and grete / with ryght many beeſtes tame ⁊ wylde. The erthe of that londe is copyous of metall ore / and ſalte welles / of quarreyes / of marbyll of dyuerſe maner ſtones / of reed / of whyte / of ſofte ⁊ of harde / of chalke and of whyte lyme. There is alſo whyte clay ⁊ reed for to make pottes / crockes ſtenes and other veſſell / and brente tyle to couer ẏ houſes and chirches as it were in ẏ other ſamia / ẏ is named ſamos alſo. Flaundres loueth well ẏ woll of this londe. And Hollonde ẏ ſkynes ⁊ felles of all maner of beſtes. Guyan ẏ yrō ⁊ ẏ leed. Irlonde ẏ or ⁊ ẏ ſalte. All Europa loueth ⁊ deſyreth the whyte metall of this londe. ¶ Alfre. Brytayne hath ynough of mater that there nedeth to bye ⁊ ſell / or is nedefull to mannes vſe there lacketh neyther ſalte nor yrō. Therfore a verſefyour in his metre prayſeth this londe in to this manere. Englonde is a good londe fruytfull of woll / but it is a corner. Englonde is full of play free men well worthy to playe / fre men / fre tonges fre hertes / ⁊ fre ben al theyr thȳges their honde is more free and better than theyr tongue. Alſo Englonde is beauteuous of londe floure of londes all aboute / ẏ londe is full payed with fruyte and good of his owne / that londe releueth ſtraunge men that hath nede therto. And whan hunger greueth other londes that Londe fedeth theym. That londe bereth fruyte ⁊ corne grete plente ynough. That londe is well at eaſe as longe as men lyue in peas / eſt ⁊ weſt in eche londe ben knowe well ẏ hauens of Englonde / Theyr ſhyppes ſal des and ofte helpeth many londes. Theyr mete and money men haue there more comyn alwaye. And for to lerne men gladly gyue gyftes. In londe ⁊ ſtronde wyde ſpeke men of Englonde. Londe hony mylke cheſe this ylonde therof ſhall bere ẏ pryce This ylonde hath no nede of other londes all londes muſte ſeke helpe at this alone. Of ẏ lyuynge of theyr wom̄ myght wonder kynge Salomon. The rycheſſe ẏ there is an wolde deſyre Octauyan.

¶ Of the meruayles ⁊ wondres. ca. iiii.

IN Brytayne ben hote welles well arayed ⁊ dreſſed to ẏ vſe of manhode / mayſtres of thylke welles is the grete ſpyryte minerua. In her hous the fyre endureth alwaye that neuer chaūgeth in to aſſhes / but there ẏ fyre ſlaketh / it chaūgeth in to ſtone clottes. ¶ Alfre. In Brytayne ben many wondres / neuertheleſſe four ben mooſt wonderfull / the fyrſt is at Pecton there bloweth ſoo ſtronge wynde out of ẏ chynes of the erth yͭ it caſteth vp agayne clothes that men caſt in. The .ii. is at Stonhenge beſyde Salyſbury there ben grete ſtones ⁊ wonder huge / ⁊ ben rered on hygh as it were gates ſette vpō other gates. Neuertheleſſe it is not knowen clerely ne aperceyued how and wherfore they ben ſo arered and ſo wonderfull honged. The thyrde is at Cherdhoke there is a grete holownes vnder the erthe often many men haue walked therin / ⁊ haue ſeen ryuers ⁊ ſtremes / but noo where coude they fynde none ende. The fourth is that rayne is ſeen reyſed vpon hylles ⁊ none ſpronge about in ẏ feldes. Alſo there is a grete ponde yͭ conteyneth .lx. ylondes couenable for men to dwell in / ẏ ponde is beclypped about wᵗ ſyx ſcore roches and vpon euery roche an egles neſt ⁊ thre ſcore ryuers renne in to ẏ ponde / ⁊ none of them all renne in to ẏ ſee but one. There is a ponde cloſed about with wall of tyle ⁊ of ſtone. In that pounde men waſſhe and bathe ryght ofte / ⁊ euery man feleth the water hote or colde ryghte as he wyll hymſelf. There ben ſalte welles ferre frō the ſee ⁊ ben ſalte all the weke longe vnto ſaterday at noone / ⁊ freſſhe fro ſaterday at noone vnto monday. The water of theſe welles whan it is ſoden tourneth in to ſmalle ſalte fayre and whyte. Alſo there is a ponde the water therof hath wonder werkynge / for though all an hooſt ſtode by the ponde and torned theyr faces thyderwarde ẏ water wolde drawe thē vyolently towarde the ponde ⁊ wete all their clothes / ſoo ſholde a horſe ben drawen in the ſame wyſe. And yf the face be torned awaye fro the water ẏ water noyeth not. There is a well that noo ſtreme renneth fro ne neyther therto / ⁊ yet four maner of fyſſhe be taken therin / that well is but .xx. fote longe / ⁊ .xx. fote brode / and not depe but to the knee / and cloſed with hye bankes on euery ſyde. In the countre about Wyncheſtre is a denne or a caue / oute of that caue bloweth alwaye a ſtronge wynde / ſo that noo man may endure to ſtonde tofore the ſame denne or caue. ¶ There is alſo a ponde that torneth tree in to yrō yf it be therin a yere. And ſoo trees ben ſhapen in to whetſtones. Alſo there is in the toppe of an hyll buryels euery man that cometh and meteth that buryell / he ſhall fynde it euen of his owne length ⁊ meſure. And yf a pylgryne knele therto anone he ſhall be all freſſhe ⁊ fele no greef of werynes. ¶ Gir. in. top. Faſt by the mynſter of Wymburney yͭ is not ferre fro bathe is a wode that bereth moche fruyte / yf the trees of ẏ wode falle in to water or groūde yͭ is nygh ⁊ lye there all a yere / ẏ trees tourne in to ſtones. ¶ Gir. in itinere. Vnder the cyte of Cheſtre renneth ẏ Ryuer

Dee that now departeth Englonde ⁊ Wales. That Ryuer chaunged euery moneth his fordes as men of ẏ countre telle/and leueth often the chanell/but whether the water by lawe more towarde Englonde or towarde Wales to what ſyde ẏ it be ẏ yere men of that ſyde haue the worſt ende ⁊ be ouerſet. And men of that other ſyde ſhall haue better ende and ben at theyr aboue. Whan the water ſo chaungeth his courſe it bodeth ſuche happes. This Ryuer Dee renneth ⁊ cometh oute of a lake ẏ hyght Pymblemere. In this ryuer is grete plente of ſamon/neuertheleſſe in ẏ lake is neuer ſamon founde. ¶ Wilhel.de.re.li.ii. Take hede how grete lyght ⁊ bryghtneſſe hath be ſheweth vpō Englyſſhemen ſyth they fyrſt tourned to ryght byleue. So ẏ of noo men in ony prouynce ben founden ſoo many hole bodyes of men after theyr deth in lykeneſſe of euerlaſtyngnes that ſhall be after the daye of dome/as it well ſemeth in theſe holy ſayntes Edeldrede/Edmonde ẏ kynge Elphege/Edgar/Cutberde/⁊ ſaynt Edwarde ⁊ many other I trowe that it be done by a ſpecyall grace of god almyghty for the nacyon that is ſet as it were without ẏ worlde ſholde take hede to buryenge of bodyes without corrupcyon and rottynge/and ben the more bolde and ſtedfaſte for to truſte on the fynall aryſynge of deed bodyes for to laſte euermore after the daye of dome.

¶ Of the chyef partyes of the ſame londe. ca.v.

After the fyrſt Brutes tyme ẏ ylonde of Brytayne began for to haue the pryncypall partyes that ben Loegria Cambria ẏ is Wales. And Albania ẏ is now Scotlonde. Loegria hath the name of Locrinus that was Brutes eldeſt ſone ⁊ hyght Loegria as it were locrin⁹ londe/But now Loegria is called Englonde. The bordes ⁊ Marches were there of ſomtyme ẏ Frenſſhe ſee bothe by eeſt and by ſouth. Beda li.i.ca.ii. ¶ And by north two armes of ẏ ſee ẏ breketh ferre in to the londe eyther agaynſt other. But they reche not togyder. The eeſt arme of thylke tweyne begynneth about a two lytell myle fro the mynſtre of Ebburcurnyge. In the weſt ſyde of Penulton in that arme is a towne that is called Guydy the weſte arme of thylke tweyne hath in the ryght ſyde a ſtronge Cyte that hyght Alcluid/whiche in theyr langage is called Clyncſtone ⁊ ſtondeth vpō a ryuer that is called clyut alſo. ¶ R. Some men wolde mene ẏ Loegria endeth at Humbre/and ſtretched no ferther northwarde. The ſeconde partye of Brytayne is called Albania ẏ is Scotlonde ⁊ hath ẏ name of Albanactus Brutes ſone ⁊ ſtretched fro the forſayd two armes of ẏ ſee Northwarde vnto ẏ ſee of Norwaye. Neuertheleſſe ẏ ſouth partyes of Albania where as Pyctes dwelled ſomtyme ẏ lyeth fromme ẏ water of Twede vnto ẏ Scotteſſhe ſee. All that longed ſomtyme to the kyngdom of Northūberlonde Brenycorne ẏ north ſyde of Northūberlonde fro ẏ fyrſt tyme of Englyſſhe kynges to ẏ tyme whan Kynadi⁹ kynge of Scotlonde ẏ was Alpin⁹ ſone dyd away ẏ Pyctes ⁊ ſo Ioyned ẏ contre to ẏ kyngdome of Scotlonde. The.iii. partye of Brytayne is Wales Wallia that hyght Cambria alſo/and hath that name Cambria of Cambre Brutes ſone/for he was prynce of Wales/in the eeſt ſyde Seuarne ſomtyme departed bytwene Englonde and Wales. But in the north ſyde ẏ Ryuer of Dee at Cheſtre/⁊ in the ſouth the ryuer ẏ is named Uaga at the caſtell of Stryguyl departeth Englonde and Wales. Alſo kynge Offa for to haue a dyſtynccyon for euermore bytwene the kyn ges of Englonde ⁊ of wales made a longe dytche that ſtretcheth forth out of yͤ ſouth ſyde by Bryſtowe vnder the hylles of wales Seuerne ⁊ Dee almooſt to the hedes and vnto the mouth of the Ryuer of Dee beyonde Cheſtre faſte by the caſtell it renneth bytwene Colehylle ⁊ the mynſtre of Baſyngwerke in to yͤ ſee. This dytche is yet in many places ſeen. In ſaynt Edwardes tyme walſſhmen ſhold not paſſe that dytche with wepen vpon a grete payne/ ⁊ that was at the erle Haroldes procurȳge as it ſhall be ſayd here after. But now in eyther ſydes bothe of that halfe ⁊ of this halfe the dytche/ ⁊ ſpecyally in the ſhyres of Cheſtre/ of Shroweſbury/ and of Herforde in many places ben Englyſſhmen ⁊ welſſhmen medled togyder.

¶ Of the ylondes that bē therto adiacent Capitulo. vi.

BRytayne hath thre ylondes that bē nygh ⁊ longȳge therto all without the ylondes Orcades/ as it were anſwerynge to the thre chefe partyes of Brytayne. For the yle of wyght longeth ⁊ lyeth to Leogrya that is Englonde. The ylonde Mon that is called Angleſeya alſo lōgeth to wales. And the ylonde Eubonia that hath two other names ⁊ is called Meneuia ⁊ Man alſo/ whiche longeth to Scotlonde. And all theſe thre ylondes wyght/ Mon/ and Man bēn almooſt alyke moche and of the quantite/ of the whiche thre all a rowe foloweth our ſpeche. ¶ Beda. li. i. ca. iii. Claudius ſente Vaſpaſianus/ and Vaſpaſianus wanne wyght/ and wyght ſtretcheth out of yͤ eeſt in to the weſt. xxx. myle longe/ and out of the ſouth in to the north. xii. myle/ ⁊ is in the eeſt ſyde. vi. myle fro the ſouth clyffe of Brytayne/ ⁊ thre myle in the weſt ſyde. ¶ Beda. li. iiii. ca. v. The meſure of this ylonde as Englyſſhe men geſſe is a thouſande houſholdes and two hondred. ¶ Gir. in itinere. Mon yͤ is called Angleſeya alſo is depted frō north wales by a ſhorte arme of yͤ ſee as it were two myle brode. In Mon ben. ccc. townes lxiii. and ben accompted for Candredes yͤ ben. iii. hondredes. The ylonde is as it were. xxx. myle longe ⁊. xii. myle brode. Candredus is ſo moche londe as cōteyneth an hondred townes/ that name Candredus is made out of two langages of brytyſſhe ⁊ of Iriſſhe. In prayſynge of this ylonde walſſhmen were wont to ſaye a prouerbe and an olde ſawe. Mon Man kembri/ that is to ſaye in Englyſſhe yͤ londe is ſo good that it ſemeth that it wolde fynde corne ynough for all yͤ men of wales. Therfore Virgyls verſes may be accordynge therto/ as moche as gnawes/ beſtes longe In neth dawes. So moche eſte bryngeth colde dewe in a nyght. In that arme of yͤ ſee that departeth this londe ⁊ north wales/ is a ſwolowe that draweth ſhyppes to it that ſayleth by ⁊ ſwoloweth them ī ryght as dooth Cylla and Carybdis that bē two perylious places in the ſee of myddel erth Therfore men may not ſayle by this ſwalowe/ but ſlyly at a full ſee. ¶ R. Of the meruayles and wondres of the ylonde of Mon ye ſhall fynde in the chapytre of wales. ¶ Gir. in itinere. The thyrde ylonde yͤ is called bothe Eubonia ⁊ Meneuia that is Man ſtondeth in the myddell bytwene the Iryſſhe vlſtere ⁊ the ſcottyſſhe gallewaye/ as it were in yͤ nauell of the ſee. Beda. li. ii. ca. ix. This ylonde Man conteyneth as it were two ylondes. The fyrſt is ſouthwarde the more coūtre/ ⁊ the better corne londe ⁊ cōteyneth. ix. hondred ⁊. lx. houſholdes. The ſeconde conteyneth the ſpace of. CCC. and moo as Englyſſhmen geſſe. ¶ Gir. in top. Somtyme was ſtryfe whether this ylonde Man ſholde longe to Brytayn or to Irlōd/ ⁊ for as moche as ve nemous beſtes that were brought thyder lyued there/it was Juged that the ylonde of Man ſholde longe to Brytayne. ¶ R. In that ylonde is ſortylege ⁊ witchecrafte vſed. For women there ſell to ſhypmen wynde as it were cloſed vnder thre knottes of threde/ſo that the more wynde he wyll haue the moo knottes he muſt vndo. There often by daye tyme men of that londe ſeen men that ben deed tofore honde beheded or hole/⁊ what dethe they dyed. Alyens ſet theyr fete vpon the fete of men of that londe for to ſe ſuche ſyghtes as the men of that londe done. ¶ Beda li. ii. Scottes dwelled fyrſt in this ylonde ¶ Thanatos that is Tenet ⁊ is an ylonde beſydes Kente/and hath that name Thanatos of deth of ſerpentes/for there ben none/and the erth therof ſleeth ſerpẽtes borne in other lõdes. There is noble corne londe and fruytfull. It is ſuppoſed that this ylonde was halowed ⁊ blyſſed of ſaynt Auſtyn the fyrſt doctour of Englyſſhmen for there he aryued fyrſt.

¶ Of the kynges hye wayes and ſtretes. Capitulo. vii.

Molyuncius was the .xiii. kynge of Brytons/and was the fyrſt that gaue them lawe. He ordeyned that plowmen folowes/goddes temples/and hygh wayes that lede men to Cytees and townes ſholde haue the fredome of colour/ſo that euery man that went to ony of them for ſocour or for treſpaſſe that he had done ſholde be ſauf for pourſute of all his enemyes. But afterwarde for the wayes were vncertayne ⁊ ſtryfe was had. Therfore Belinus the kynge that was the forſayd Molunncius ſone for to put awaye all ſtryfe ⁊ doubte/made foure hygh kynges wayes preuyleged with al preuylege ⁊ fredome. And the wayes ſtretche through the ylonde. The fyrſte and grettest of the foure wayes is called Foſſe and ſtretcheth out of the ſouth in to the north/and begynneth from the corner of Cornewayle and paſſeth forth by Deuenſhyre by Someſete and forth beſydes Tetbury vpon Coteſwold beſyde Couentre vnto Leyceſtre and ſoo forth by wyde playnes towarde Newwarke and endeth at Lyncoln. The ſeconde chefe kynges hygh waye is named Watlyngſtrete ⁊ ſtretcheth thwarte ouer Foſſe out of the ſoutheeſt in to the northweſt/and begynneth at Douer ⁊ paſſeth by the myddell of Kente ouer Temſe beſyde Londõ by weſtmynſter/and ſo forth by ſaynt Albons in the weſt ſyde by Donſtaple by Stratforde by Towcetre by Wedon by ſouthe Lyllebourne by Atheryſtoon vnto Gylbertes hyll yͭ now is called Wrekene/and forth by Seuerne ⁊ paſſeth beſydes Wrokceſtre and than forth to Stratton and ſo forth by the myddell of Wales vnto Cardykan and endeth at yͤ Iryſſhe ſee. The thyrde waye is called Erymnyge ſtrete and ſtretcheth out of the weſt north weſt in to the eeſt ſoutheeſt/⁊ begynneth in Meneuia that is ſaynt Dauyds londe in weſt Wales and ſtretcheth forth vnto Southampton. The fourth is called Rykenyldeſtrete ⁊ ſtretcheth forth by Worceſtre by Wycombe ⁊ by Brymyngham by Lychefelde by Derby by Cheſtrefelde by Yorke and forth vnto Tynmouth.

¶ Of the famous Ryuers and ſtremes. Capitulo. viii.

There ben thre famous Ryuers rennynge through Brytayne by yͤ whiche thre Ryuers marchauntes of beyonde the ſee comen in ſhyppes in to Brytayne well nygh out of all maner of nacyons ⁊ londes. Theſe thre Ryuers ben Temſe/Seuerne/⁊ Humber. The ſee ebbeth and ſlowyth at theſe thre Ryuers/⁊ departeth the thre prouynces of the ylonde/as it were the thre kyngdomes aſondre. The thre partyes ben Loegria/Cambria/and Northumbria/that is myddell Englonde/wales/and Northumberlonde. ¶ R. This name Temſe ſemeth made one name of two names of two Ryuers that bē Tame and yſe/for the Ryuer of Tame renneth beſydes Dorcheſtre and falleth in yſe/therfore all ẏ Ryuer fro the fyrſt heed vnto the eeſt ſee is named Tampſe or Temſe. Temſe begynneth beſydes Tetbury/that is thre myle by northe Malmeſbury. There the Temſe ſpryngeth of a welle that renneth eeſtwarde and paſſeth the Foſſe/⁊ departeth Glouceſtre ſhyre ⁊ wylſhyre/and draweth with hym many other welles ⁊ ſtremes/and wexeth grete at Cereceſtre/and paſſeth forth than towarde Hampton and ſo forth by Oxenforde/by wallynforde/by Redynge/and by London. ¶ wilhelmus de pon. ca. ii. At ẏ hauen of Sandwytche it falleth in to the eeſt ſee/and holdeth his name. xl. myle beyonde London/⁊ departeth in ſome place Kent ⁊ Eſſex/weſtſex and Mercia/that is as it were a grete dele of myddell Englonde. ¶ R. Seuerne is a Ryuer of Brytayne ⁊ is called Haberne in brytyſſhe/and hath that name Haberne of Haberne that was Eſtrydes doughter. Guendolon the quene drenched this Haberne therin/therfore the Brytons called the Ryuer Haberne after ẏ woman ẏ was drowned therin/but by corrupte latyn it is called Sabrina/Seuerne in englyſſhe. Seuerne begynneth in ẏ myddell of wales/⁊ paſſeth fyrſt towarde the eeſt vnto Shrowesbury/and than turneth ſouthwarde vnto Bryggenorth/worceſtre and Glouceſtre/⁊ falleth in to ẏ weſt ſee beſydes Bryſtowe/⁊ departeth in ſome place Englonde ⁊ wales. ¶ wilhel. de pon. li. iii. Seuerne is ſwyft of ſtreme/moche fyſſhe is therin/woodneſſe of the ſwolowynge and of the whyrlynge water caſteth vp ⁊ gadre to hepe grete hepes of grauell. Seuerne ofte aryſeth ⁊ ouerfloweth the bankes. ¶ R. Humbre hath ẏ name of Humbre kynge of Hunes/for he was drowned therin/and renneth fyrſt a croke out of the ſouth ſyde of yorke/and than it departeth the prouynce of Lyndeſey ẏ longed ſomtyme to the Merces from the other countre Northumberlonde. Trente and Ouſe renne in to Humbre and make the Ryuer full grete. ¶ Treuiſa. The merces were men as it were of myddell Englonde/as it ſhall be ſayd here after.

¶ Of aūcyent cytees ⁊ townes. ca. ix.

The kyngdome of Brytayne was ſomtyme made fayre with. xxviii noble cytees without ryght many caſtels that were walled with toures/with gates and with barres ſtrōgly buylded. ¶ Alfre. These were the names of the cytees. Caerlud that is Londō. Caerbranck ẏ is yorke Caerkent that is Cāterbury. Caergorankon that is worceſtre. Caerlirion that is Leyceſtre. Caerclon ẏ is Gloceſtre. Caercolden ẏ is Colcheſtre. Caerrey that is Chicheſtre. Saxōs called it ſomtyme Ciſſonceſtre. Caercery ẏ is Circeſtre. Caerguent that is wyncheſtre. Caergrāte ẏ is Cambrydge. Caerleyll that is Lugubalia and Karlyll. Caerporis ẏ is Porcheſtre. Caerdrom that is Dorcheſtre. Caerludcoit ẏ is Lyncoln ⁊ Lyndecolne. Caermarthyn that is Merlyns cyte. Caerſegent ẏ is Sylceſtre ⁊ is vpon Temſe not ferre from Redynge. Leon ẏ is Caerlegion alſo ⁊ hyght fyrſt Legeceſtre ⁊ now is named Cheſtre. Caerbathon that is Bathe/⁊ hyght ſomtyme Athamannus cyte. Caerpalabour that is Septon that now hyght Shafteſbury. ¶ R. Other cytees ben foūde in cro nycles for vnderſtondynge of ſtoryes/ of whome it ſhal be ſayd. ¶ Wil. de pon. London is a ryall & a ryche cyte vpon Tamyſe of burgeyſes/ of ryches of marchaundyſes/ of chaffre & of marchaundyſe. Therfore it is that ſomtyme whan derth of vytayles is in all Englonde comynly at London it is beſt chepe bycauſe of the byers & ſellers ỹ ben at London. ¶ Gaufre. Brute the fyrſt kynge of Brytons buylded & edyfyed this cyte of London ỹ fyrſt cyte in remembraũce of the cite of Troye ỹ was deſtroyed & called it Troye newe & Trinouantũ that is new Troye. Afterwarde kyng Lud called it Caerlud after his owne name/ therfore ỹ Brytons had indygnacyon as Gyldas telleth. Afterwarde Englyſſhmen called ỹ cyte Londõ/ & yet after ỹ Normans called it Londres/ & is named in latyn London ia. Rudhudras kȳge Leyles ſone was the.viii.kȳge of Brytõs/ he buylded Canterbury ỹ chefe cyte of Kent and called it Caerkent. Afterwarde Englyſſhmen called it Dorobernia/ but ỹ is not Douer ỹ ſtondeth vpon ỹ clyf of ỹ Frenſſhe ſee & is frõ this Douer.xii.englyſſhe myle. Afterwarde this Dorobernia was & is called Cauterbury. The ſame kynge Rudhudibras buylded wyncheſtre/ & called it Caerguent/ & after Engliſſhmen called it went & wyncheſtre after the name of one wyne an Englyſſhe man that was byſſhop there All weſtſaxon was ſubgecte to hym/ the ſame kynge buylded Paladour ỹ is Septon ỹ now is called Shaftesbury. Brytõs telle ỹ an egle propheceyed there ſomtyme Bladud Leyles ſone a nygromancer was the.ix.kȳge of Brytõs/ he buylded Bathe & called it Caerbathon. Englyſſhmen called it after Akamannus cyte. But at the laſt men called it Bathonia that is Bathe ¶ Wyl. de pon.li.ii. In this cyte welleth vp & ſpryngeth hote bathes/ & men wene that Julius Cezar made there ſuche bathes. ¶ R. But Gaufre. maketh mencion in his bryttyſſhe boke ſayth that Bladud made thoſe bathes/ bycauſe william hath not ſeen that bryttyſſhe boke wrote ſoo by tellynge of other men/ or by his owne geſſynge as he wrote other thynges not beſt auyſedly. Therfore it ſemeth more ſothly that Bladud made not the hoote bathes/ ne Julius cezar dyd ſuche a dede/ though Bladud buylded & made the Cyte/ but it accordeth better to kyndly reaſon that the water cometh in ỹ erth by vaynes of brymſtone and ſulpher/ & ſo it is kyndly made hote in that courſe & ſpryngeth vp in dyuerſe places of the cyte. And ſo there ben hote bathes that waſſheth of tetres/ ſores ſcabbes. ¶ Treuiſa. Though men myght by crafte make hote bathes for to endure longe ynough/ this accordeth well to reaſon & to phyloſophy that treateth of hote welles & bathes that bẽ in dyuerſe londes thoughe the water of this bathe be more troubly & ſourer of ſauour & of ſmell than other hote bathes ben that I haue ſeen at Akon in Almayne. And cytyes in Sauoy whiche bẽ fayre & clere as ony well ſtreme I haue ben bathed therin & aſſayed them. ¶ R. Claudius Cezar maryed his doughter to Aruiragus kyng of Brytons. This Claudius Ceſar buylded Glouceſtre in ỹ weddynge of his doughter. Brytons called this cyte fyrſt after Claudiꝰ name/ but afterward it was called Gloceſtre after one Gloza whiche was duke of that cuntre/ & ſtondeth vpon Seuerne in the marche of Englonde & wales. Shroweſbury is a cyte vpon Seuerne in ỹ marche of englõde & wales & is ſet vpon the toppe of an hyll/ & it is called Shroweſbury of ſhrobbes & treyes ỹ grewe there ſomtyme on ỹ hyll. Brytons called it ſomtyme Pengwerne that is the hed of a fayre tree. Shroweſbury was ſomtyme the hed of Powerſye that ſtretcheth forth [illegible] ỹ [illegible] dell of wales vnto the Iryſſhe ſee. Notyngham ſtondeth vpon Trente/ & ſomtyme hyght Notyngham yͭ is the wonnynge of dennes/ for the Danes dwelled there ſomtyme & dygged dennes and caues vnder harde ſtones & rockes and dwelled there. ¶ R. Lyncolne is chefe of the prouynce of Lyndeſey and was called ſomtyme Caerludcoit & afterwarde Lyndecoln. It is vncertayne who buylded fyrſte this cyte but yf it were kyng Lud/ & ſo it ſemeth by menynge of yͤ name/ for Caer is brytyſſhe/ & is to ſaye a cyte/ & coit is a wood/ and ſo it ſemeth that Caerludcoit is to ſay Luddes wode towne. Kȳge Leyr was Bladuddes ſone & buylded Leyceſtre/ as it were in yͤ myddell of Englonde vpon yͤ Ryuer Sos and vpon Foſſe the kynges hye waye.

¶ Wylhel. de pon. li. iii.

YOrke is a grete cyte in eyther ſyde of the water of Ouſe that ſemed as fayre as Rome vnto the tyme yͭ the kynge Wylliam had wͭ brennynge & fyre defouled it & the coūtre aboute/ ſo yͭ a pylgrym wolde now wepe and he ſawe it/ yf he had knowen it tofore. ¶ Gaufre. Ebrancus yͤ v. kȳge of Brytons buylded yorke & called it after his owne name Caerbranke/ he alſo buylded two other cytees/ one in Scotlonde yͭ is called Edenburgh/ & an other towarde Scotlond in thende of Englond & is called Alclud. ¶ R. Edenburgh is a cyte in the lond of Pictes bytwene yͤ Ryuer of Twede & yͤ Scottyſſhe ſee & hyght ſomtyme the caſtell of Maydens & was called afterwarde Edenburgh of Edan kȳge of pictes yͭ reygned there in Egfridus tyme kynge of Northumberlond. Alclud was ſomtyme a noble cyte/ & is now well nygh vnknowen to all Englyſſhmen/ for vnder the Brytons & Pyctes & Englyſſhmen it was a noble cyte to yͤ comynge of yͤ danes But afterwarde aboute yͤ yere of our lord viii. C. lxx. it was deſtroyed whan the Danes deſtroyed the coūtre of Northumberlonde. But in what place of Brytayn that cyte Alclud was buylded Auctours tellē dyuerſly. ¶ Beda. li. i. ſayth yͭ it was buylded by weſt yͤ arme of the ſee yͭ departeth bytwene yͤ Brytons & yͤ Pictes ſomtyme there Seuerus famous wall endeth weſtwarde/ & ſo it ſemeth by hym that it is not ferre from Caerleyll/ for yͤ cyte is ſet at yͤ ende of yͤ wall. Other wryters of ſtoryes wryte that the cyte of Alclud is that cyte that now is called Aldburgh/ yͭ is to ſaye an olde towne/ & ſtandeth vpon yͤ Ryuer Ouſe not ferre fro Burghbrydge/ that is xv. myle weſtwarde out of yorke/ & it ſemeth that he preueth that by Gaufride in his boke of dedes of Brytons/ he wryteth that Elidurus kynge of Brytons was lodged at the cyte Alclud bycauſe of ſolace & huntynge/ & founde his broder Argalon maſkynge in a wode nygh there beſyde yͭ hyght Calatery/ but that wode Calatery whiche is caltres in Englyſſhe retcheth almooſt to yorke and ſtretcheth toward the north by Aldbourgh in length by ſpace of xx. myle/ the mooſt dele of yͤ wode is now throwen downe & the londe tylled. Other men wolde ſuppoſe yͭ Alclud was yͤ cyte that now is called Burgham in the north countre of weſtmerlonde faſt by Comberlonde/ & ſtādeth vpon the Ryuer Eden/ yͤ cite is there wōderſly ſeen. Deme ye now where it is buylded. ¶ Treuiſa. It is not harde to aſſoyle yf men take hede/ yͭ many townes bere one name/ as Cartago in Affrica & Cartago in Spayne. Newport in wales & Newport in the paryſſhe of Barkeley/ Wotton vnder egge & Wotton paſſeth/ wykwar wyk payne & wyk in the paryſſhe of Barkeley/ and two ſhyre townes eyther is called Hampton/ as Southhampton & Northampton/ ſo it ſemeth by yͤ Ra cytes that one Alclud was in yorke ſhyre/ an other in weſtmerlonde/ ⁊ one faſt by yͤ ryght ſyde of yͤ weſt arme of yͤ ſee that departeth Englonde ⁊ Scotlonde/ but yͭ Alcluid was a ryght ſtronge cyte/ as Beda ſayth/ ⁊ yͭ cyte ſtandeth faſt by a Ryuer yͭ is called Cluid/ ⁊ there is not ſuche a Ryuer in yorkſhyre nor in weſtmerlonde as men of yͤ coūtre tell me. Some men ſay yͭ the Ryuer Cluid is now named Sulwatche. Sulwatche is but .v. myle fro Carleyll whiche is a cyte in yͤ coūtre of north Englonde towarde the northweſt ⁊ hath an other name whiche is Luguball. Leyll the .vii. kynge of Brytons buylded Carleyll. ¶ R. In this cyte is ſomwhat of the famous wall yͭ paſſeth Northumberlōde ¶ Wilhel. de pon. In this cite is yet a thre chambred hous made of vawte ſtones yͭ neuer myght be deſtroyed wt tēpeſt of weder ne wt brennynge of fyre/ alſo in yͤ coūtre faſt by in weſtmerlonde in the fronte of a thre chambred place is wryten in this maner. Marti victori. what this wrytynge is to ſaye I doubte ſomwhat/ but yf it were ſo yͭ ſome of yͤ Combres laye there ſomtyme whan yͤ counſeyle Marius had put hȳ out of ytalye. But it ſemeth better yͭ it is wryten in mynde of Marius kyng of Brytons yͭ was Aruirag' ſone. This Marius ouercame in that place Rodryke kynge of Pictes/ ſo ſayth Gaufre in his brytyſſhe boke/ William malmeſbury ſawe neuer yͭ boke. At Hagulſtaldes chirche is a place .lxx. myle out of yorke northweſtwarde yͭ place is as it were dyſtroyed/ ſo ſayth wilhel. li. iii. de pon. That place longed ſomtyme to yͤ byſſhopryche of yorke/ there were ſomtyme houſes wt vyce arches ⁊ vautes in the manere of Rome. Now that place is called Hextoldeſham and Hegelſham alſo Beda li. iii. ca. i. ſayth/ that yͤ place is faſt by yͤ longe wall of the warde of Rome in the north ſyde. ¶ R. There is dyfference bytwene the prouynce of Lyndeſſar ⁊ the chirche Lyndefarne. For the prouynce of Lyndeſſar ⁊ Lyndeſey is all one/ ⁊ lyeth by eſt Lyncolne/ ⁊ Lyncolne is the heed therof/ of yͤ whiche ſayth Beda .li. iiii. ca. xi. yͭ Sexwulfus was fyrſt byſſhop there But Beda .li. iiii. ca. xxiii. ſayth that Lyndeſſar chirche is an ylonde yͭ is called holy ylonde in the Ryuer of Twede nere Barwyk. And ſo it is gadred of Bedaes ſawes that Twede renneth in to yͤ famous arme of the ſee yͭ now departeth Englyſſhmen and Scottes in the eſt halfe/ ⁊ in yͤ arme ben thre ylondes/ that one is Maylros yͭ now is called Menros. Than aboue towarde yͤ weſt is Lyndefarne chirche that is called holy ylonde. Than the thyrde is aboue vpwarde ⁊ is the ylonde Ferne/ ⁊ is called alſo ferny ylonde. Than vpwarde aboue that two myle is a ryall cyte vpon the brynke of Twede whiche ſomtyme hyght Bebanbourgh that is Bobbes cyte and now is called Bambourgh/ ⁊ hath a ryght ſtrōge caſtell. ¶ Gir. in itinere. Two cytees there ben eyther is called Caerlegyon and Caerleon alſo/ one is Demycya in ſouthwales that is called Carruſbe/ alſo there the Ryuer of Uſke falleth in to Seuerne faſt by Glamorgan. Belinus kȳge of Brytons ſomtyme buylded that cyte ⁊ was ſomtyme the chefe cyte of Demecia in ſouthwales. Afterwarde in Claudius ceſars tyme it was called yͤ cyte Legyons whan at the prayer of Genius the quene Uaſpaſianus and Aruiragus were accorded ⁊ Legyons of Rome were ſente in to Irlonde/ tho was Caerleon a noble cyte ⁊ of grete auctoryte/ ⁊ by the Romayns ryally buylded ⁊ walled aboute with walles of brent tyle/ grete nobleſſe that was there in old tyme is there yet in many places ſeen/ as yͤ grete palayſes/ gyauntes toures noble bathes/ relef of the temples places of the theeters/ that were places hyghe and ryall to ſtande and ſyt in / and to beholde aboute. The places were ryally cloſed wᵗ ryal walles ỹ yet ſomdele ſtondeth ryght nyghe cloſe. And within ỹ walles & with out is grete buyldynge under erthe water conduytes & wayes under erthe & ſtewes / alſo thou ſhalt ſe wonderly made wᵗ ſtrayte ſyde wayes of brethynge ỹ wonderly caſt up heet. In this cyte were ſom tyme .iii. noble chirches / one was of ſaynt Julius ỹ martyr & therin a grete company of virgyns. That other was of ſaynt Aaron that was of ỹ ordre of blacke chanon that chirche was ryght nobly abourned. The thyrde chirche was ỹ chyef moder chirche of wales & the chyef ſee. But afterwarde ỹ chief ſee was torned out of that cyte in to Meneuia ỹ is ſaynt dauyds londe in weſt wales. In this Carleõ was Amphibalus borne ỹ taught ſaynt albon There ỹ meſſengers of Rome came to grete Arthurs courte / yf it is leful to trowe. Treuiſa / yf Giraldus was in doubte whether it were leful for to trowe or not it were a wonder ſhewynge as men wolde wene for to haue euermore in mynde / & euer be in doubte yf all his bokes were ſuche what lore where therin and namely why ſe he maketh none euydence for in neyther ſyde he telleth what meueth hym ſoo to ſaye. ¶ R. There is another c[illegible] of Legyons there his cronycles where ouertrauayled as it is clerely knowen by ỹ fyrſt chapytre of this boke. ¶ Treuyſa. That is to underſtonde in ỹ latyn wrytynge / For he that made it in latyn tourned it not in to Englyſſhe in ỹ ſame place that it was fyrſt in latyn. The underſtondynge of hym that made this Cronycles is thus wryten in latyn in the begynnynge of this boke. ¶ Preſentem cronicam compilauit frater Ranulphus Ceſtrenſis monachus. ỹ is to ſaye in Englyſſhe. Brober Ranulph monke of Cheſtre compyled & made this boke of the Cronycles. ¶ R. The Cyte of Legyons ỹ is Cheſtre ſtondeth in ỹ Marche of Englonde towarde wales bytwene two armes of ỹ ſee ỹ ben named Dee & Merſee. This Cyte in tyme of Brytons was heed & chyef cyte of all Venedocia / that is Northwales. The foūder of this cyte is unknowen. For who ỹ ſeeth ỹ foūdementes of ỹ grete ſtones wolde rather wene ỹ it were Romaynes werke or werke of Gyaūtes / thā it were ſet by werkynge of Brytayns. This Cyte ſomtyme in Brytyſſhe ſpeche hyght Caertheleon Legeceſtria in latyn / & Cheſtre in Englyſſhe & ỹ cyte of Legyons alſo. For there laye a wynter ỹ legyons of knyghtes ỹ Juli⁹ cezar ſente for to wynne Irlonde. And after Claudius cezar ſent Legyons out of that Cyte for to wynne ỹ ylonde ỹ be called Orcades / what euer Wyllyam Malmeſbury by tellynge of other men mente of this cyte. This cyte hath plente of lyuelode of corne / of fleſſhe / of fyſſhe / & ſpecyally of pryce of ſamon. This cyte receyueth grete marchaundyſe & ſendeth oute alſo. Alſo nygh this cyte ben ſalte welles metall & oor. Northūbrers deſtroyed this cyte ſomtyme. But afterwarde Elfleda lady of Mercia buylded it agayn & made it moche more. In this ſame cyte ben wayes under ỹ erth wᵗ vowtes & ſtone werke wonderly wrought / thre chambre werkes / grete ſtones grauen with olde mennes names therin. There is alſo Julius cezars name wonderly in ſtones grauen / and other noble mēnes alſo with the wrytynge about. This is the cyte ỹ Ethelfride kynge of Northumberlonde diſtroyed and ſlewe there faſte by nyghe two thouſande monkes of the mynſter of Bangor. This is the cyte that kynge Edgar came theder ſomtyme with .vii. kynges ỹ were ſubget to hym. A metrer ſheweth oute in this maner in prayſyng this cyte. Cheſtre caſtell towne as it were / name taketh of Caſtell. It is vnknowen what man bylded this cyte now. The legecestria cheſter hyght now towne of Legyons. Now Walſhe and Englyſſhe holde this cyte of grete prys. Stones and walle / ſemeth werke of Hercules all. There longe with myght to dure that hepe is a hyght. Maſon in ſmall ſtones / ſette vpon grete ben at ones. Theyr vnder grounde lotynge double voute is founde. That helpeth with ſondes / many men of weſterne londes. Fyſſhe fleſſhe and corne lowe / this Cyte towne hath ynowe. Shyppes ⁊ chaffare / ſee water bryngeth ynowe thare. Godeſtall there is / ÿ was Emperour ere this. And forth Hery kyng / erth is there ryght dwellynge. Of kynge Heralde / poudre is there yet I halde. Bacchus and Mercurius / Mars and Venus. Alſo Lauerna / Protheus and pluta / reygne there in the towne. ¶ Treuyſa. God wote what this is to mene / but poetes in theyr maner ſpeche fayne as though euery kynde crafte ⁊ lyuynge had a dyuerſe god eueryche frō other. And ſo they feyned a god of batayle ⁊ of fyghtynge called hym Mars ⁊ a god of couetyſe ⁊ rycheſſe ⁊ marchaundyſe ⁊ called hȳ Mercuri⁹. Alſo Bachus is called god of wyne. Ven⁹ goddeſſe of loue ⁊ beaute. Lauerna god of thefte ⁊ of robbery. Prothe⁹ god of falſhede ⁊ of gyle / and Pluto god of helle. And ſo it ſemeth ÿ theſe verſes wolde mene / ÿ the forſayd goddes reygne ⁊ ben ſerued in Cheſtre. Mars ẇ fyghtyng ⁊ cockynge. Mercurius ẇ couetyſe ⁊ rycheſſe. Bachus ẇ grete drynkynge. Venus ẇ loue lewdly. Lauerna ẇ thefte ⁊ robbery. Protheus ẇ falſhede ⁊ gyle. Then is Pluto not vnſerued ÿ is god of hell. ¶ R. Ther Babylon lore more myght hath trouth the more.

¶ Of prouynces and ſhyres. ca.x.

Take hede that Englonde conteyneth .xxxii. ſhyres and prouynces ÿ now ben called Erldoms receyued Cornewayle ⁊ ÿ ylonde. ¶ Alur. Theſe ben ÿ names of ÿ erldoms ⁊ ſhyres. Kent / ſouſex / ſothery / hampſhyre / barokſhyre that hath his name of a bare oke ÿ is in the foreſt at wyndſore for at that bare oke men of that ſhyre were wonte to come togyder and make theyr treatys / and there take counſeyle ⁊ auyſe. Alſo wyltſhyre ÿ hyght ſomtyme the prouynce of Semetan / Somerſete / Dorſete / Deuenſhyre / that now is called deuonia in latyn. Theſe .ix. ſouth ſhyres ÿ Tamyſe departed frome ÿ other dele of Englonde whiche were ſomtyme gouerned ⁊ ruled by the Weſtſaxons lawe. Eſtſex / Myddelſex / Southfolke / Northfolke Herdeforth ſhyre / Huntyngdon ſhyre Northampton ſhyre Cambrydgſhyre / Bedforth ſhyre / Bukyngham ſhyre / Leyceſtre ſhyre / Derby ſhyre / Notyngham ſhyre / Lyncolnſhyre / Yorke ſhyre / Durham ſhyre / Northumberlonde / Caerleylſhyre ẇ Cumberlonde / Appelby ſhyre ẇ Weſtmerlonde / Lancaſtre ſhyre that conteyneth .v. lytell ſhyres. The .xv. north ⁊ eſt ſhyres were ſomtyme gouerned ⁊ ruled by ÿ lawe called mercia in latyn ⁊ marchene lawe in englyſſhe. It is to wyte ÿ Yorke ſhyre ſtretched frō the ryuer of Humbre vnto ÿ ryuer of Teyſe. And yet in Yorke ſhyre ben .xxii. hondredes / hondred and cantredes is all one. Cantrede is one worde made of walſhe and Iryſſhe ⁊ is to menynge a contre ÿ conteyneth an hondred townes / and is alſo in Englyſſhe called wapentak / for ſomtyme in the comynge of a newe lorde tenauntes were wonte to yelde vp theyr wepen in ſtede of homage. Durhamſhyre ſtretched fro the ryuer of Teyſe vnto the ryuer of Tyne. And for to ſpeke properly of Northumberlonde it ſtretched fro the ryuer of Tyne vnto the ryuer of Twede That is in the begynnyng of Scotlonde Then yf ẏ countre of Northumberlonde that was somtyme frome Humbre vnto Twede be now accompted for one ſhyre ⁊ one Erledome as it was somtyme. Then ben in Englonde but .xxxii. ſhyres / but if the countre of Northumberlonde be departed in to .vi. ſhyres that ben Euerwykeſhyre / Ducamſhyre / Northũberlonde / Caerleylſhyre / Appelbyſhyre / Lancaſtreſhyre / then ben in Englond .xxxvi. ſhyres without Cornewayle / and alſo withoute ẏ ylondes. Kynge Wyllyam made all theſe prouynces ⁊ ſhyres to be deſcryued ⁊ met. There were founden .xxxvi. ſhyres ⁊ halfe a ſhyre. Townes two ⁊ fyfty thouſande and foure ſcore. Paryſſhe chyrches .xlv. thouſande and two. Knyghtes fees .lxxv. thouſande / wherof men of relygyon haue .xxvii. thouſande / and .xv. knyghtes fees. But now ẏ wodes ben hewen downe and ẏ londe now tylled and made moche more than was at that tyme / and many townes and vyllages buylded / and ſo there be many mo vyllages and townes now thã were in that tyme. And were as afore is wryten that Cornewayle is not ſet amonge ẏ ſhyres of Englonde it may ſtonde amonge them well ynough for it is neyther in Wales ne in Scotlonde but it is in Englonde ⁊ it Joyned vnto Deuenſhyre / ⁊ ſo may there ben accompted in Englonde .xxxvii. ſhyres and an halfe with the other ſhyres.

¶ De legibus legumq; vocabulis.

Dunwallo that hyght Molinuci⁹ alſo made fyrſt lawes in Brytayne / the whiche lawes were called Moliũcius lawes / and were ſolempnely obſerued vnto Wyllyam Conquerours tyme. Moliſicius ordeyned amonge his lawes that Cytees Temples ⁊ wayes that lede men therto / ⁊ plowe men ſolowes ſholde haue preuylege ⁊ fredome for to ſaue all men that wolde flee therto for ſocour ⁊ refuge. Then after Mercia quene of Brytons that was Gwytelinus wyfe of her ẏ prouynce had the name of Mercia as ſome men ſuppoſe. She made a lawe full of wytte ⁊ reaſon / ⁊ was called Merchene lawe. ¶ Gildas that wrote ẏ Cronycles and hyſtories of ẏ Brytons tourned theſe two lawes out of Bryton ſpeche in to latyn. And after Aluredus tourned all out of latyn in to Saxons ſpeche / ⁊ was called Marchene lawe. Alſo the ſame kynge Aluredus wrote in Englyſſhe and put to an other lawe ẏ hyghte Weſtſaxon lawe. Than afterwarde Danes were lordes in this londe / and ſoo came forth the thyrde lawe that hyght Dane lawe. Of theſe .iii. lawes ſaynt Edwarde the thyrde made one commune lawe ẏ yet is called ſaynt Edwardes lawe. I holde it well done to wryte ⁊ expowne many termes of theſe lawes Myndebruch hurtynge of honoure and worſhyp. In frenſſhe bleſchur dhonour. Burbruck in Frenſſhe bleſchur de court ou de cloys. Grithbruche brekynge of peas / Myſkennynge chaungynge of ſpeche in court. Shewynge ſettynge forth of marchaundyſe. Hamſokne or Hamſare a rere made in hous. Forſtallynge wronge / or bette downe in the kynges hyghe waye. Frithſoken ſurete in defence. Sak Forfayte Soka ſute of court and therof cometh ſoken. Theam Sute of bondemen fyghtynge wytte A merſement for fyghtynge. Blodewytte A merſement for ſheddynge of blood. Flytwytte amendes for ſheddỹg of blood. Leyrwyt Amẽdes for lyenge by a boũde womã. Gultwytte. Amendes for treſpace. Scot. A gaderynge to werke of ballyes. Hydayge tayllage for hydes of londe. Daneghelde tayllage gyuē to ẏ Danes ẏ was of euery hous tatere. That is euery ere londe thre pens. A wyſt lande and an houſhyde is al one/ for the countre of colones were wonte to gyue vp that pen in ẏ comynge of a lorde. Leſtage cuſtome chalenged in cheyffyes fayres and ſtallage/cuſtome for ſtandynge in ſtretes in fayre tyme.

¶ Of kyngdomes of boundes and markes bytwene them. ca.xii.

The kyngdome of Brytayne ſtode without departynge hole & al one kyngdome to the Brytons frome the fyrſt Brute vnto Julius cezars tyme/& fro Julius cezars tyme vnto ſeuerus tyme this londe was vnder trybute to ẏ Romayns. Neuertheleſſe kynges they hadde of ẏ ſame londe from ſeuerus vnto the laſt prynce Gracian ſucceſſours of Brytayne fayled/and Romayns reygned in Brytayne. Afterwarde the Romayns lefte of theyr reygnynge in Brytayne/bycauſe it was ferre frome Rome/& for grete beſyneſſe ẏ they hadde in other ſyde. Then Scottes & Pyctes by myſledynge of Maxim⁹ ẏ tyraunt purſued Brytayne & warred there with grete ſtrength of mē of armes longe tyme vnto the tyme that the Saxons came at ẏ prayenge of ẏ Brytons agaynſt the Pyctes/and put oute Gurmonde the Iryſſhe kynge with his Pyctes and the Brytons alſo with theyr kyng that hyght Caretic⁹ & droue hym oute of Englonde in to Wales/and ſo the Saxons were vyctours & euery prouynce after his ſtrength made hym a kynge. And ſo departed Englonde in to ſeuen kyngdoms. Netheles afterwarde theſe ſeuen kyngdoms euerychone after other came al in to one kyngdome. Al hole vnder the prynce Adelſtane. Netheles ẏ Danes purſued this londe fro Athulwolfes tyme that was Aluredes fader vnto the thyrde ſaynt Edwardes tyme about a.C.lxx.yere ẏ reygned contynuelly therin.xxxiii.yere/& lytell more/& after hym Heralde helde ẏ kyngdom ix.monethes. And after hym Normās haue reygned vnto this tyme/but how longe they ſhall reygne he woote to whome nothynge is vnknowen. ¶ B. Of ẏ forſayd ſeuen kyngdoms & theyr markes mares & boundes whan they began & how longe they endured here ſhall I ſomwhat ſhortely tel. ¶ Alure. The fyrſt kyngdom was the kyngdome of Kent/ẏ ſtretched fro ẏ eeſt Occyan vnto the ryuer of Tamyſe. There reygned the fyrſt Hengyſtus/& began to reygne by the acomptynge of Dyonyſe/ẏ yere of oure lorde a.C.lv. ẏ kyngdom dured.iii.C.& lxviii.yere.xv. kynges vnto the tyme that kynge Baldrede was put out and Egbert kynge of weſt ſaxon ioyned that kyngdom to his owne. The ſeconde kyngdome was at Southſaxon that had in ẏ eeſt ſyde Kent/in ẏ ſouth ẏ ſee & ẏ yle of wyght/in ẏ weſt Hampſhyre/and in ẏ north ſothery there Ella reygned fyrſt with his thre ſones/and began to reygne ẏ yere after the comynge of the Angles euen .xxx. But that kyngedome within ſhorte tyme paſſed in to the other kyngdomes. The thyrde kyngdome was of eeſtſaxon/and had in the eeſt ſyde the ſee/in the weſte the countre of London/in the ſouth Temſe/and in ẏ north ſouthfolke. The kynge of this countre of weſt ſaxon fro ẏ fyrſte Sebertes tyme vnto ẏ tyme of ẏ Danes were.x.kynges the whiche were ſubgette ſomdele to other kynges. Neuertheles afteſt and longeſt they were vnder ẏ kynges of Mercia and vnto ẏ tyme that Egbert the kynge of weſt ſaxon ioyned that kyngdom to his owne. The fourth kyngdome was of Eeſt Angles/and conteyned Northfolke & Southfolke/and had in the eeſt ſyde/and in the north ſyde ẏ ſee/and in ẏ northweſt Cambryggeſhyre/in ẏ weſte ſaynt Edmondes dyche and Herforde ſhyre/and in the ſouth Eſſex. And this kyngdome dured vnder twelue kynges vnto the tyme that kynge Edmonde was ſlayne. And then the Danes toke wrongfully bothe ẏ kyngedoms of eeſt Angles and of eeſtſaxon. Afterwarde the Danes were put out and dryuen away or made ſubgecte. And then ẏ elder kynge Edwarde Joyned bothe the kyngdomes to his owne. The fyfth kyngdome was of weſtſaxon ⁊ dured lengeſt of all theſe kyngdoms/and hadde in the eeſt ſyde ſouthſaxon/in the north Tamyſe/in the ſouth and in the weſt the ſee Occean. In that kyngdome reygned Cerdyke with his ſone Kenryke/and began to reygne the yere of oure lorde fyue hondred and .xix. and then after the comynge of Angles .lxxi. ſo ſayth Denys the other kyngdomes paſſed in to this kyngdome The ſyxte kyngdom was of Mercia and was greteſt of all. The markes ⁊ the meres therof were in the weſt ſyde of the ryuer Dee faſt by Cheſtre and Sauarne/faſt by ſhrowſbury vnto Bryſtowe in ẏ eeſt the eeſt ſee/in the ſouth Tamyſe vnto London/in the north ẏ ryuer of Humber/and ſo weſtwarde and downewarde vnto the ryuer Merſee vnto the corner of Wyrhall/there Humbre falleth in to the weſte ſee. Penda Wybbes ſone reygned fyrſt in this kyngdome in the yere of our lorde Jheſu Cryſte .vi.C.xxvi. ſoo ſayth Dyonys ⁊ fro the comynge of Angles an honderd .lxxv. yere. This kyngdome dured vnder .xviii. kynges about two hondred .lxiii. yere vnto the laſt Colwulfe the Danes betoke ẏ kyngdom to kepe whan Burdred the kynge was put out/but the elder Edwarde ẏ kynge put out the Danes and Joyned the kyngdom of Mercia to his aboue kyngdom. Netheles at ẏ begynnynge this kyngdom of Mercia was departed in to thre. In weſte Mercia/in myddell Mercia/⁊ eeſt Mercia. The .vii. kyngdom was Northamhymbror ẏ is ẏ kyngdom of Northũberlonde/ẏ meres ⁊ Markes therof were by weſt ⁊ by eeſt ẏ ſee Occean/by ſouth ẏ ryuer of Humbre and ſoo downwarde towarde the weſt by the ende of the ſhyres of Notynghã ⁊ of Derby vnto ẏ ryuer of Merſe ⁊ by north the Scottes ſee that hyght forth in Scottes/Weres in Brytyſſhe/the Scotteſſhe ſee in Englyſſh. This kyngdom of northhũberlonde was fyrſt dealed in two prouynces. That one was ẏ ſouth ſyde and hyght Deyra/⁊ that other was the north ſyde ⁊ hyght brenicia/as it were .ii. kyngdomes/⁊ ẏ ryuer departed theſe .ii. kyngdomes ẏ tyme/For ẏ kyngdome of Deyra was frome ẏ ryuer of Humbre vnto ẏ ryuer of Tyne. The kyngdome of Brenicia was fro Tyne to the Scottyſſhe ſee. And whan Pyctes dwelled there as Beda ſayth .li.iii.ca.ii. That Ninian ẏ holy man conuerted men of ẏ ſouth ſyde. Ida the kynge reygned there fyrſt/⁊ began to reygne ẏ yere of our lorde .v.C.xlvii. ſoo ſayth Dyonys. In Deyra reygned kyng Elle ẏ yere of our lorde .v.C.xlix. Theſe two kyngdoms were otherwhyle as it is ſayd departed bytwene two kynges and ſomtyme all hole vnder one kynge/⁊ dured as it were .xx. Englyſſhe kynges .ccc.xxi. yere. At laſt Oſbartus and Elle were ſlayne in the .ix. yere of theyr kyngdome the Danes ſlewe theym/⁊ Northumberlonde was voyde without kynge .viii. yere. Then afterwarde the Danes reygned in Northumberlonde .xxxvi. yere vnto ẏ comynge of the kyngdome Adelſtone/he made ſubgecte the kynges Danes Scotteſſhe and walſſhe ⁊ reygned fyrſt alone in Englonde and helde the kyngdome of Englonde all hole and all one kyngdome [illegible] was ÿ yere of our lorde. viii. C. & .xxviii. That ryuer of Merse was somtyme that marke & mere bytwene the kyngdome of Mercia and the kyngdome of Northumberlonde ÿ may be shewed in this manere. Fyrst by this properte of this Merse / ÿ is as moche to say as a see ÿ is a bodine and a mere for it departed one kyngdome fro an other. Also it is wryten in Cronycles of Henry & Alfrede ÿ kynge Edwarde ÿ elder fastned a castel at Mancestre in northhumberlonde / but ÿ cyte Mancestre is fro the ryuer of Merse scarsely thre myle.

¶ Of bysshopryches & theyr sees. ca. xiiii.

Lucius was the fyrst kynge crystened of the Brytons / in this tyme were. iii. archebysshops sees in Brytayn one was at London / an other at Yorke / & ÿ. iii. at Caerusk ÿ cyte Legyons in Glamorgā / ÿ cyte is now called Carlion. To these Archebysshops sees were subgecte. xxviii. bysshops ÿ were called Flambes. To the archebysshops see of London were subgecte Cornewayle / & all myddell englonde vnto Hūbre. To Yorke all Northhumberlonde from ÿ bowe of Humbre w all Scotlonde. To Carrleon all Wales / there were in wales. vii. bysshoppes / and now ben but. iiii. The Seuarne departed Englonde & wales. ¶ Wilhel. de pon. li. i. But in ÿ Saxons tyme though saynt Gregory had graunted London ÿ pryuylege of ÿ archebysshops see. Neuertheles saynt Austen ÿ was sent in to Englonde by saynt Gregory torned ÿ archebysshops see out of London in to Caunterbury. After saynt Gregoryes dayes at ÿ prayer of kyng [illegible] & cytezyns & burgeyses of Caunterbury there ÿ archebysshops see [illegible] [illegible] now is ÿ in the same tyme Offa kynge of Mercia was wroth with the see of Caunterbury & [illegible] them ÿ [illegible] & [illegible] Adulphe bysshop of Lychefelde to ÿ archebysshops palle by assent of Adrian ÿ pope vpō case by gyftes sent. Natheles vnder Kenulph the kynge it was restored to Caūterbury agayne. The worshyp of the see of Yorke hath dured there alwaye and yet dureth though Scotlonde be withdrawe fro his subieccyon by passynge of tyme. ¶ Gir. in itinere. li. i. The archebysshoppes see was torned out Carrleon in to Meneuia ÿ is ÿ in west syde of Demicia vpō ÿ Irysshe see in saynt Dauyds tyme vnder kynge Arthur. Fro saynt Dauyds tyme vnto Sampsons tyme were in Meneuia. xxiiii. archebysshops. Afterwarde fell a pestilence in all wales of the yelowe euyll / ÿ is called ÿ Ialidis. And then Sampson ÿ archebysshop toke w hym ÿ palle & wente in to Brytayne Armonica ÿ lasse Brytayne & was there bysshop of Dolensis fro ÿ tyme vnto ÿ fyrst Henryes tyme kynge of Englonde were at meneuia whiche is called saynt Dauyds. xxi. bysshops all without palle / whether it were for vncunnynge or for pouerte. Neuertheles alway fro ÿ tyme ÿ bysshops of wales were sacred of ÿ bysshop of Meneuia of saynt Dauyds / & ÿ bysshop of meneuia was sacred of ÿ bysshops of wales as of his suffrigans & made no ꝓfession ne subieccyon to none other chirche. Other bysshoppes ÿ came afterwarde were sacred at Caūterbury by the pellynge & hest of ÿ kynge in tokynge of ÿ sacrynge & subieccyon. Boneface archebysshop of Caūterbury ÿ was Legate of the Crosse songe in euery Cathedrall chirche of wales solempnely. And as he was the fyrst archebysshop of Caunterbury ÿ so dyd in wales / & that was done in the secunde Henryes tyme. ¶ R. But now ben but two prymates in all Englonde of Caūterbury and of Yorke. To the prymate of Caūterbury ben subgect. xiii. bysshops in

England and .iiii. in wales. The prymate of yorke hath but two ſuffrigans in Englonde that ben yͤ byſſhop of Carleyll ⁊ of Durham. Of all theſe ſees ⁊ chaūgynge of theyr places I ſhal ſhewe you here folowynge. Take hede in yͤ begynnynge of holy chyrche in Englond byſſhops ordeyned theyr ſees in lowe places ⁊ ſymple yͭ were couenable for cōtemplacyon for prayers ⁊ deuocyon. But in wylliam conquerours tyme by dome of lawe canon it was ordeyned yͭ byſſhops ſholde come out of ſmall townes in to grete cytees / therfore was yͤ ſee of Dorcheſtre chaunged to Lyncolne Lychefelde to Cheſtre. Tetforde to Norwitche. Shyrborne to Saleſbury. Welles to Bathe. Cornewayle to Exceſtre / ⁊ Seleſey to Chicheſtre. The byſſhop of Rocheſtre hath no paryſſhe but he is yͤ archebyſſhops chapelayn of Caūterbury. Syth yͤ ſee of Caūterbury was fyrſt ordeyned by ſaynt Auſtyn / it chaūged yet neuer his place. Chicheſtre hath vnder hym onely Suſſex ⁊ yͤ yle of wyght / ⁊ had his ſee fyrſt in Seleſey in yͤ tyme of yͤ archebiſſhop Theodore / ⁊ the ſee dured there. CCC.xxxiii. yere vnder .xx. byſſhops fro the fyrſt wilfrede vnto yͤ laſt Stygande at yͤ cōmaūdement of kynge william conquerour chaūged the ſee fro Seleſey to Chicheſtre.

¶ De epiſcopis occidētalibus wilhelm⁹.

HAue mynde that all yͤ prouynce of weſtſaxon had alwaye one byſſhop fro the begynnynge vnto Theodorus tyme / by graūte of kynge Iſlo kynge of weſtſaxon the fyrſt Birinus ordeyned a ſee at Dorcheſtre yͭ is a ſymple towne by ſouth Oxforde beſyde walyngforde bytwene yͤ merſyge togyder of Temſe ⁊ Tame whan Birinus was deed. Kenwalcus yͤ kynge ordeyned a ſee at wyncheſtre as his fader had purpoſed / there Agilberte a frenſſhe man was fyrſt biſſhop of all the prouynce of weſtſaxon / fro yͤ tyme yͤ cyte ⁊ the ſee of Dorcheſtre perteyned to the prouynce of Mercia / that cite ſtandeth within Temſe ⁊ the Temſe departeth bytwene Mercia ⁊ weſtſaxon. After yͤ Agylberte was put out of wyncheſtre that tho hyght wynton than was there an engylſſhe byſſhop that was called wyne / ſome men ſuppoſe that this cyte hath the name of this wyne / ⁊ is called wyncheſtre as it were wyne cite. At the laſt he was put out / ⁊ after hym came Leutherius yͤ forſayd Agilberts newewe. After Leutheri⁹ Hedda a whyle was byſſhop there / whā he was deed Theodorus the archebyſſhop ordeyned two byſſhops to the prouynce of weſtſaxon. Danyell at wyncheſtre to hȳ were ſubgecte two coūtrees Sothery ⁊ South hampſhyre / ⁊ to hym were ſubgecte ſyxe coūtrees / Barkſhyre / wylſhyre / Somerſet / Dorſetſhyre / Deuenſhyre / ⁊ Cornewayle. ¶ Treuiſa. It ſemeth by this that weſtſaxon conteyned Sothery / South hampſhyre / Dorſetſhyre / Deuenſhyre ⁊ Cornewayle. ¶ Wilhel. Afterwarde in elder Edwardes tyme to theſe two ſees were ordeyned by cōmaūdement of Formoſus the pope thre other ſees / at welles for Somerſet / at kyrton for Deuenſhyre / ⁊ at ſaynt Germayne for Cornewayle. Not longe afterwarde the ſyxth ſee was ſet at Rammeſbury for wilſhyre. At yͤ laſt by cōmaūdement of kynge william conquerour all theſe ſees ſaue wyncheſtre were tourned ⁊ chaūged out of ſmall Townes in to grete Cytees / for Shyrborne and Rammeſbury were tourned in to Saleſbury. Now to that ſee is ſubgecte Barkſhyre / wylſhyre / ⁊ Dorſet. The ſee of welles was tourned to Bathe therto is now ſubgecte all Somerſette. The ſees of kyrton ⁊ of Cornewayle were chaūged to Exceſtre / therto is ſubgecte Deuenſhyre and Cornewayle.

De eſtanglorum epiſcopis.

IT is wel ſene that the eeſt ſaxons alway fro the begynnynge to now were ſubgette to the byſſhop of London. But the prouynce of eeſt Angles þ conteyneth Northfolke and Southfolke had one byſſhop at Donwik/ the byſſhop hyght Felix þ was of Burgoyne ⁊ was byſſhop .xvii. yere. After hym Thomas was biſſhop .v. yere/ after hym Boniface .xvii. yere. Than Byſy afterwarde was ordeyned by Theodorus ⁊ ruled þ prouynce whyle he might endure by hymſelfe alone. After hym vnto Egbertes tyme kynge of weſtſaxon an hondred .xliii. two byſſhops ruled þ prouynce one at Donwyk ⁊ an other at Elyngham. Neuertheles after Ludecās tyme kynge of Mercia left ⁊ was onely one ſee at Elyngham vnto þ .v. yere of Wyllyam conquerour/ whan Herfaſtus the .xxiii. byſſhop of the eſtrene chaunged his ſee to Thetforde/ and his ſucceſſour Herbertus chaūged the ſee fro Thetforde to Norwyche by þ leue of kynge Wyllyam the reed. The ſee of Ely that is nygh therto þ fyrſt kynge Henry ordeyned the .ix. yere of his reygne/ and made ſubgecte therto Cambrygeſhyre that was tofore a parte of þ byſſhopryche of Lyncoln/ ⁊ for quytynge therof he gaue to the byſſhop of Lyncoln a good towne called Spaldynge.

¶ De epiſcopis Merciorum. Wilhelmus

HEre take hede þ as þ kyngdome of Mercia was alway greteſt for the tyme/ ſo it was deled in mo byſſhopryches ⁊ ſpecyally by grete hete by kynge Offa/ whiche was .xl. yere kynge of Mercia/ he chaunged the archebyſſhops ſee fro Caunterbury to Lycheſelde by aſſent of Adrian þ pope. Than þ prouynce of Mercia at [illegible] in the fyrſt begynnynge of theyr cryſtendome in kynge Wulferes tyme had one byſſhop of Lycheſelde/ the fyrſt byſſhop that was there hyght Dyuma/ the ſeconde hyght Celach ⁊ were both Scottes/ after them þ thyrde Trumhere/ the fourth Jarumanus/ the fyfte Chedde. But in Ethelredes tyme þ was Wulferes broder whan Chedde was deed Theodorus the archebyſſhop ordeyned there Wynfrede Cheddes dekan. Neuertheles a lytel tyme after þ/ for he was vnbuxom in ſome poynt/ he ordeyned there Sexwulfe abbot of Medamſtede þ is named burgh. But after Sexwulfes fourth yere Theodorus archebyſſhop ordeyned fyue byſſhops in the prouynce of Mercia/ ⁊ ſo he ordeyned Boſel at Worceſtre/ Cudwyn at Lychfelde/ þ foreſayd Sexwulfe at Cheſtre/ Eadwyn at Lyndeſey at þ cyte Sidenia/ ⁊ he toke Etta monke of þ abbaye of Hylde at Whytby ⁊ made hȳ byſſhop of Dorcheſtre beſyde Oxforde. Tho hyght this Dorcheſtre Dorkynge/ ⁊ ſo þ ſee of þ longed to weſtſaxon in ſaynt Byrynes tyme longed to Mercia from Theodorus þ archebiſſhops tyme. Ethelred kȳg of Mercia had deſtroyed Kent/ this biſſhop Sexwulfe toke Pictas byſſhop of Rocheſtre þ came out of Kent ⁊ made hȳ fyrſt byſſhop of Herforde. At laſt whan Sexwulfe was deed Hedda was byſſhop of Lycheſelde after hȳ/ ⁊ Wylfrede flemed out of Northumberlonde was byſſhop of Cheſtre. Neuertheles after two yere Alfrede kȳg of Northumberlonde dyed ⁊ Wylfred torned agayn to his owne ſee Hagultalden/ ⁊ ſo Hedda helde bothe þ byſſhopryches of Lychefelde ⁊ Cheſtre. After hym came Aldwyn þ hight Wor alſo/ ⁊ after hȳ came thre byſſhops. Torta at Cheſtre/ Witta at Lychefelde/ ⁊ Etta was yet at Dorcheſtre. After his deth byſſhops of Lyndeſey helde his ſee .ccc.liiii. yere vnto Remygius chaunged þ ſee to Lyncolne by leue of þ fyrſt kynge William. But in Edgares tyme biſſhop Leofwinus Joyned bothe byſſhopꝛyches togyder of Cheſtre ⁊ Lyndeſfar whyle his lyfe endured.

¶ De epiſcopis Noꝛthumbꝛan.
Wilhel. de pon. li. ca. xi.

AT yoꝛke was one ſee foꝛ all ẏ pꝛouynce of Noꝛthūberlonde Paulinus helde fyꝛſt ẏ ſee/⁊ was oꝛdeyned of ẏ byſſhop of Caunterbury/⁊ helde ẏ ſee of yoꝛke.vii.yere. Afterwarde whan kynge Edwyn was ſlayne and thynges were dyſtroubled Paulinus went thens by water awaye in to Kent frō whens he came fyꝛſt ⁊ toke with hym the pall. ¶ Wilhel.li.iii. And ſo ẏ biſſhopꝛyche of yoꝛke ceaſed.xxx. yere/⁊ the vſe of ẏ pall ceaſed there an.C.xxv.yere vnto ẏ Egbarte ẏ byſſhop ẏ was the kynges bꝛoder of ẏ londe recouered it by auctoꝛite of the pope. ¶ B. Whan ſaynt Oſwolde regned Aydanus a Scot was byſſhop in Bꝛenecia that is the noꝛth ſyde of Noꝛthūberlonde/after hym Finianus after hȳ Colmanus. ¶ Wilhel. vbi ſ. At laſt he wente in to Scotlonde wt grete indignacyon/foꝛ Wilfred vndertoke hȳ/foꝛ he helde vnlawfully Eeſter daye.xxx.yere after ẏ Paulinus was gone frō thens Wilfred was made byſſhop of yoꝛke. ¶ Beda li.iiii. But whyle he dwelled lōge in Fraūce aboute his ſacrȳge at receyuȳge of quartadecimanoꝛ/ẏ were they ẏ helde Eeſter daye the.xiiii.day of ẏ mone. Chedde was taken out of his abbaye of Lyſtynge and wrongfully put out in to ẏ ſee of yoꝛke by aſſent of kyng Oſwy. But thꝛe yere afterwarde Theodoꝛus the archebyſſhop dyde hym awaye ⁊ aſſygned hym to ẏ pꝛouynce of Mercia/⁊ reſtoꝛed Wilfred to the ſee of yoꝛke. But after bycauſe of wꝛath ẏ was bytwene hym ⁊ the kynge Egfryde was put out of the ſee by Theodoꝛus helpe ẏ archebyſſhop that was coꝛrupte wt ſome manere mede/this was done after ẏ Wilfred had ben biſſhop of yoꝛke/⁊ Cumbert at Haguſtalde chirche/and Eata at Lyndeſfar chirche ẏ now is called holy ylonde in the Ryuer of Twede. Aydanus foūde fyꝛſt ẏ ſee. And Theodoꝛus made Eadhedus byſſhop of Repoune that was comen agayne out of Lyndeſey. Wilfred had ben abbot of Repoune. Theodoꝛus ſent Trumwynus to ẏ londe of Pictes in thendes of Englonde faſte by Scotlonde in a place ẏ hight Cādida caſa ⁊ whitterne alſo/there ſaynt Nynyan a Bꝛyton was fyꝛſt foūder ⁊ doctour. But all theſe ſees out take yoꝛke fayled lytell ⁊ lytell/foꝛ the ſee of Candida caſa that is Gallewaye that tho longed to Englonde ⁊ dured many yeres vnder.x.byſſhops vnto that it had no power by deſtroyenge of the Pictes. The ſees of Haguſtalde ⁊ of Lindeſfar was ſomtyme alone vnder.ix.byſſhoppes aboute.lxxx. yere/and dured vnto the comynge of the Danes. In that tyme vnder Hyngar and Hubba Ardulf ẏ byſſhop yede longe aboute with ſaynt Cutbertes body vnto kynge Aluredes tyme kynge of weſtſaxon/⁊ the ſee of Lyndeſfar was ſet at Kunegeſtre ẏ is called Kunyngeſburgh alſo/that place is called now Ubbeſfoꝛd vpō Twede. At the laſt ẏ.xvii.yere of kynge Egberte kynge Edgares ſone that ſee was chaūged to Durham/⁊ ſaynt Cutbertes body was bꝛought thyder by ẏ doynge of Edmonde the byſſhop/⁊ frō ẏ tyme foꝛwarde ẏ ſees of Haguſtalde ⁊ Lyndeſfar fayled vtterly The fyꝛſt kynge Henry in ẏ.ix.yere of his reygne made the newe ſee at Carleyll. The archebyſſhop of Caunterbury hath vnder hym.xiii.byſſhops in Englonde/⁊ iiii.in wales/he hath Rocheſtre vnder hȳ ⁊ that ſee hath vnder hym a parte in Kent alone. London hathe vnder hym Eſſex/Myddelſex and halfe Hertfoꝛdſhyre. Chycheſtre hath vnder hym Southſex/⁊ the yle of wyght. Wynchestre hath vnder hym Southampshyre & Southerey. Salisbury hath vnder hym Barkshyre wylshyre Dorset. Excestre hathe vnder hym Deuenshyre & Cornewayle. Bathe hath vnder hym Somersetshyre alone. Worcestre hath vnder hym Gloucestreshyre / worcestreshyre and halfe warwykshyre. Herforde hath vnder hym Herfordshyre & some of Shropshyre. Chestre is bysshop of Couentre & of Lychfelde & hath vnder hȳ Chestreshyre / Staffordshyre / Derbyshyre / halfe warwykshyre / & some of Shropshyre / & some of Lancastreshyre fro þ Ryuer of Mersee vnto þ Ryuer Rypyll. Lyncolne hath vnder hym the prouynces þ ben bytwene Temse and Humbre þ ben the shyres of Lyncolne / of Leycestre / of Northampton / of Huntyngdon / of Bedforde / of Bokyngham / of Oxforde / & halfe Herfordshyre. Ely hath vnder hym Cambrygeshyre out take merionde. Norwyche hath vnder hȳ Merlonde Norfolke & Suffolk. Also tharchebysshop of Caũterbury hath foure suffrygans in Wales that ben Landaf / saynt Dauyes / Bangor / & saynt Asaph. The archebysshop of yorke hath now but two bysshops vnder hym that is Durham & Carleyll. ¶ W. And so be but two prymates in Englonde what of them shall do to the other & in what maner poynt he shal be obedyent & vnder hym. It is fully ordeyned within aboute the yere of our lord god. M.lxxii. tofore þ fyrst kynge william & þ bysshops of Englonde by cõmaundement of þ pope the cause was handled & treated bytwene the foresayd prymates & ordeyned and decreed that þ prymate of yorke shall be subgette to þ prymate of Caũterbury in thynges that longen to the worshyp of god & to the feythe of holy chirche / so that in what place so euer it be in Englonde þ the prymate of Caunterbury wyll holde and ordeyne to gadre a counseyll of clergy the prymate of yorke is holde with his suffrygans for to be there & for to be obedyent to the ordynaũce þ there shall be lawfully ordeyned. Whan þ prymate of Caũterbury is deed the prymate of yorke shall come to Caunterbury & wt other bysshops he shall sacre hym that is chosen / & so with other bysshops he shall sacre his other prymate yf the prymate of yorke be deed his successour shall come vnto the bysshop of Caũterbury & he shall take his ordynaunce of hym & take his othe with professyon & lawfull obedyence. After aboute þ yere of our lorde. xi.C.lxxxxv. in þ tyme of kynge Rycharde ben reasons set for þ ryght partye for eyther prymate / & what one prymate dyde to þ other in tyme of Thurstinus of Thomas and of other bysshops of yorke from the conqueste vnto kynge Henryes tyme the thyrde. Also there it is sayd how eche of them starte from other. This place is but a forspekynge & not a full treatyse therof / therfore it were noyfull to charge this place with all suche reasons.

¶ Of how many maner of people haue dwelled therin. ca.xiiii.

BRytons dwelled fyrst in this londe the. xviii. yere of Helye the prophete / the. xi. yere of Siluius postumus kynge of Latyns. xliii. after the takynge of Troye / tofore the buyldynge of Rome CCCC.xxxii. yere. ¶ Beda. li. i. They came hyder and toke theyr course from Armonyk that now is that other Brytayne they helde longe tyme the south coostes of þ londe. It befell afterwarde in Waspasianus tyme duke of Rome / that þ Pyctes shypped out of Sicia in to Occean / and were dryuen aboute with the wynde and entred in to the north endes of Irlonde and founde there Scottes and prayed them to haue a place to dwell in & myght were grete. For Irlonde as Scottes ſayd myght not ſuſtayne both peple. Scottes ſente the Pictes to the north ſyde of Englonde ⁊ behyght them helpe ayenſt ẏ Brytons ẏ were theyr enemyes yf they wolde aryſe/ ⁊ take them wyues of theyr doughters/ upon ſuche cõdycyons yf doubte fell who ſholde haue ryghte to be kynge they ſholde rather choſe them of ẏ moder ſyde than of the fader ſyde/ of ẏ women kynne rather than of the men kynne. ¶ Gaufre. In Vaſpaſyan ẏ Emperours tyme whã Marius Aruirag' ſone was kȳge of Brytons. One Rodryk kynge of Pictes came out of Scicia and began to deſtroy Scotlonde. Marius ẏ kyng ſlewe this Rodryk ⁊ gaue the north party of Scotlonde that hyght Catheneſia to the men that were come with Rodryk ⁊ were ouercome by hȳ/ for to dwell in. But theſe men had no wyues ne none myght haue of the nacyon of Brytons/ therfore they ſayled in to Irlonde ⁊ toke to theyr wyues Iryſſhe mennes doughters by ẏ couenaũt that ẏ moders blode ſholde be put tofore in ſucceſſyon of herytage. Gir. ca. xvii. Neuertheles Serinus ſup Virgiliũ ſayth ẏ Pictes agatyrſes ẏ had ſome dwellynge place aboute ẏ waters of Scicia/ ⁊ they bẽ called Pictes of peyntȳge ⁊ ſmytynge of woũdes/ therfore they are called Pictes as peyted men These men and theſe gothes ben all one peple. For whan Maximus the tyraunt was gone out of Brytayne in to Fraunce for to occupye the Empyre. Than Gracianus ⁊ Valentinianus ẏ were bretherne ⁊ felowes of the Empyre brought theſe gothes out of Scicia wͭ grete gyftes/ wͭ flaterynge and fayre beheſtes in to the north countre of Brytayne. For they were ſtalworth and ſtronge men of armes. And ſo theſe theues ⁊ robbours were made men of londe ⁊ of countre ⁊ dwelled in ẏ north countre/ ⁊ helde there cytees and townes

¶ Gaufre. Carancius the tyraunt ſlewe Baſſianus/ ⁊ gaue the Pictes a dwellȳge place in Albania that is Scotlonde/ there they dwelled longe tyme afterwarde and medled with Brytons. ¶ R. Than ſyth ẏ Pictes ocupyed fyrſt ẏ north ſyde of Scotlonde. It ſemeth that the dwellȳge place that this Carãcius gaue them is ẏ ſouth ſyde of Scotlonde that ſtretcheth from ẏ thwarte ouer wall of Romayns werke to the Scottyſſhe ſee/ and cõteyneth Galleway & Lodouia ẏ is Lodeway. ¶ Therfore Bede li. iii. ca. ii. ſpeketh in this maner. Ninian the holy man conuerted the ſouth Pyctes. Afterwarde the Saxons came & made ẏ countre longe to Brenicia the north partye of Northumberlonde vnto the tyme that Kynadius Alpinus ſone kynge of Scotlonde put out the Pictes & made ẏ countre ẏ lyeth bytwene Twede and the Scottyſſhe ſee longe to his kyngdome. ¶ Beda. li. i. ca. i. Afterwarde longe tyme ẏ Scottes were ledde by duke Renda & came out of Irlonde that is the propre countre of Scottes/ and with loue or with ſtrength made them a place faſt by the Pyctes in the north ſyde of the arme of the ſee/ that breketh in to the londe in ẏ weſte ſyde that departed in olde tyme bytwene Brytons & Pyctes. Of this duke Renda the Scottes had the name & were called Darlendinus as it were Rendaes parte/ for in theyr ſpeche a parte is called dall. ¶ Gir. xxi. The Pyctes myght haue no wyues of Brytõs/ but they toke them wyues of Iryſſhe Scottes and promyſed them fayre for to dwel wͭ them/ & graũted them a londe by ẏ ſee ſyde/ there ẏ ſee is narowe. That londe is now called Galleway. Marianus Iryſſhe Scottyſſhe londed at Regall ẏ is Scottes clyf for Scottes londed there for to do harme to ẏ Brytons/ for ẏ place is nexte to Irlonde for to come a londe in Brytayne. ¶ Beda. And ſo the Scottes after ÿ Brytons ⁊ Pictes made the thyrde people wonnynge in Brytayn. ¶ R. Than after ÿ came ÿ Saxons at ÿ prayenge of ÿ Brytons to helpe them ayenſt the Scottes ⁊ Pictes. And ÿ Brytons were ſone put out in to wales / and Saxons occupyed ÿ londe lytell ⁊ lytell / ⁊ eke more to the Scottyſſhe ſee. And ſoo Saxons made ÿ fourth maner of men in the ylonde of Brytayn. ¶ Beda. li. v. ca. ix. For Saxons ⁊ Angles came out of Germania / yet ſomme Brytōs that dwell nyghe call them ſhortly Germayns. ¶ R. Neuertheles aboute ÿ yere of our lorde. viii. C. Egbartus kynge of weſtſaxon cōmaūded ⁊ bad all men call ÿ men of ÿ londe Englyſſhmen. ¶ Alfre. Than after ÿ the Danes purſued the londe aboute a two honderd yere / ÿ is to ſay fro ÿ forſayd Egbartus tyme vnto ſaynt Edwardes tyme / ⁊ made ÿ fyfth maner of people in ÿ ylonde But they fayled afterwarde. At ÿ laſt came Normans vnto duke william ⁊ ſubdued Englyſſhmen / ⁊ yet kepe they ÿ londe / ⁊ they made ÿ ſyxth people in ÿ ylonde But in ÿ fyrſt kynge Henryes tyme came many Flemynges ⁊ receyued a dwellynge place for a tyme beſydes Maylros in the weſt ſyde of Englonde / ⁊ made ÿ ſeuenth people in the ylonde Neuertheles by commaūdement of the ſame kynge they were put thens ⁊ dryuē to Hauerfordes ſyde in the weſt ſyde of wales. ¶ R. And ſo now in Brytayne Danes ⁊ Pictes fayle al out and fyue nacyons dwelle therin that ben Scottes in Albania / that is Scotlonde. Brytons in Cambria ÿ is wales / but that Flemynges dwell in ÿ in weſt wales and Normans ⁊ Englyſſhmen ben medled in all ÿ ylonde. For it is now doubte in ſtoryes how ⁊ in what maner they were put away ⁊ deſtroyed out of Brytayne Sythe it is to wonder how ÿ Pyctes were deſtroyed and fayled. ¶ Gir. li. ca. xvi. Brytayne was ſomtyme occupyed of Saxons ⁊ peas was made ⁊ ſtablyſſhed with the Pictes / than the Scottes ÿ came with ÿ Pictes ſawe that ÿ Pictes were nobler of dedes ⁊ better men of armes though they were leſſe in nombre than ÿ Scottes. Than the Scottes hauynge theyr olde enuye tourned to theyr naturall treaſon ÿ they haue ofte uſed / for in treaſon they paſſe other men ⁊ ben traytours as it were by kynde for they prayed all ÿ Pyctes ⁊ ſpecyally ÿ grettest of them to a feeſt / ⁊ wayted theyr tyme whan the Pyctes were mery ⁊ had well dronke they drewe vp nayles ÿ helde vp holowe benches vnder the Pyctes / ⁊ the Pictes vnware ſodeynly fell in ouer ÿ hammes in to a wonderful pytfall. Than the Scottes fell on ÿ Pictes ⁊ ſlewe them and left none alyue. And ſo of tho maner people the better warryours were all deſtroyed. But the other ÿ ben the Scottes whiche ben traytours all vnlyke to ÿ Pyctes toke profyte by that fals treaſon / for they toke all that londe ⁊ holde it yet vnto this tyme ⁊ call it Scotlonde after theyr owne name. In kyng Edgarus tyme Kynadius Alpinus ſone was duke ⁊ leder of the Scottes ⁊ warred in Picte londe and deſtroyed ÿ Pictes / he warred ſyx ſythes in Saxon ⁊ toke all the londe that is bytwene Twede ⁊ the Scottyſſhe ſee with wronge and with ſtrength.

¶ Of the langages of maners and uſage of the people of that londe. ca. xv.

As it is knowē how many maner of people ben in this ylonde there ben alſo ſo many langages ⁊ tonges. Neuertheles walſſhmen ⁊ Scottes ÿ ben not medled with other nacyons kepe yet theyr langage ⁊ ſpeche / but yet ÿ Scottes that were ſomtyme confederate ⁊ wonned with Pictes drawe ſomwhat after theyr ſpeche

But the Flemynges that dwell in ỹ weſt ſyde of Wales haue lefte theyr ſtraūge ſpeche ⁊ ſpeke lyke to ſaxons/ alſo englyſſhe men though they had fro the begynnynge thre maner of ſpeches/ Southerne Northerne/ ⁊ myddell ſpeche in ỹ myddell of ỹ londe as they come of thre maner of peple Germania. Neuertheles by cōmyxtion ⁊ medlynge fyrſt with Danes/ ⁊ afterwarde wͭ Normans in many thynges the countre langage is appayred/ for ſome vſe ſtraūge wlaffynge chyterynge harrynge garrynge ⁊ gryſbytynge. This appayrynge of the langage cometh of two thynges one bycauſe ỹ chyldern ỹ go to ſcole lerne to ſpeke fyrſt Englyſſhe/ ⁊ then ben cōpelled to conſtrue theyr leſſons in Frenſſhe/ and ỹ hath ben vſed ſyth ỹ Normans came in to Englonde. Alſo gentylmens childern ben lerned ⁊ tought frō theyr youth to ſpeke Frenſſhe/ ⁊ vplondyſſhmen wyl cōtrefete ⁊ lyken hymſelf to gentylmen/ ⁊ are beſy to ſpeke frenſſhe for to be more ſet by/ wherfore it is ſayd by a comyn prouerbe. Jack wolde be a gentylman yf he coude ſpeke Frenſſhe. ¶ Treuyſa. This was moche vſed tofore ỹ grete deth/ but ſyth it is ſomdele chaūged/ for John Cornewayle a mayſter of gramer chaūged ỹ techynge of gramer ſcole ⁊ conſtruccyon of Frenſſhe in to englyſſhe. And other ſcole mayſters vſe ỹ ſame waye now/ in the yere of our lorde. M.CCC.lxxxv. ỹ .ix. yere of kynge Rycharde the .ii. and leue all Frenſſhe in ſcoles ⁊ vſe all conſtruccyon in englyſſhe wherin they haue auauntage one waye ỹ is ỹ they lerne the ſoner theyr gramer/ ⁊ in another diſauauntage/ for now they lerne no Frenſſhe/ ner can none whiche is hurte for them ỹ ſhall paſſe the ſee. And alſo gentylmen haue moche left to teche theyr chyldern to ſpeke Frenſſh ¶ R. It ſemeth a grete wonder that Englyſſhe men haue ſoo grete dyuerſyte in theyr owne langage in ſowne ⁊ in ſpekynge of it whiche is all in one ylonde. And ỹ langage of Normandy is come out of another londe and hath one maner ſowne amonge all them ỹ ſpeke it in Englonde/ for a man of kente ſoutherne weſterne ⁊ Northern men ſpeke Frenſſhe all lyke in ſowne and ſpeche/ but they can not ſpeke theyr Englyſſhe ſo. ¶ Treuiſa. Neuertheleſſe there ben as many diuerſe maner of Frenſſhe in ỹ reame of frāūce/ as diuerſe Englyſſhe men in ỹ realme of Englonde ¶ R. Alſo of ỹ forſayd tongue/ whiche is departed in thre is grete wonder/ for men of ỹ eeſt wͭ mē of ỹ weſt accorde better in ſownynge of theyr ſpeche/ than men of ỹ north wͭ men of ſouth. Therfore it is ỹ mē of Mercii ỹ ben of myddell Englonde as it were partiners wͭ ỹ endes/ vnderſtond better ỹ ſayd langages northern and ſoutherne than northern ⁊ ſoutherne vnderſtonde eyther other. ¶ Wilhel. de pō. li. iii. All ỹ langage of ỹ northūbres ⁊ ſpecyall at yorke is ſo ſharpe ſlyttynge frottynge ⁊ vnſhappe/ ỹ we ſouthern men may vnneth vnderſtonde that langage. I ſuppoſe ỹ cauſe by ỹ they be nygh to ỹ alyens ỹ ſpeke ſtraungely. Alſo ỹ kynges of Englonde abyde ⁊ dwelle more in ỹ ſouth cōūtre than in ỹ north countre/ for bycauſe ỹ there better corne londe more peple more noble cytyes ⁊ more profytable hauēs in the ſouth countre than in ỹ north cōūtre.

¶ De gentis huiꝰ moribꝰ. Gir. in itinere

For ỹ maners ⁊ doynge of Walſſhe men ⁊ of Scottes ben tofore ſomwhat declared. Now I purpoſe to telle ⁊ declare the condycyons of the medle peple of Englonde. But the Flemynges ỹ ben in ỹ weſte ſyde of Wales ben now al tourned as they were Englyſſhe men bycauſe they cōpanye with Englyſſhe [illegible] myghty & ſtronge to fyght/ and ben the mooſt enemyes that walſſhe men haue and vſe marchaundyſe and clothynge/ and ben full redy to put themſelf in auentures and to peryll in the ſee & londe bycauſe of grete wynnynge & ben redy ſomtyme to the plowe/ & ſomtyme to dedes of armes whan tyme & place axeth. It ſemeth of theſe men a grete wonder that in a bone of a wethers ryght ſholder whā the fleſſhe is ſoden awaye and not roſted they knowe what haue be done/ is done/ & ſhall be done as it were by ſpyryte of prophecye and a wonderfull crafte. ¶They tell what is done in ferre coūtrees tokenes of peas or of warre/ ÿ ſtate of ÿ royalme/ ſleynge of men & ſpouſebreche/ ſuche thynges they declare certayne of tokenes and ſygnes that is in ſuche a ſholder bone.

¶R. But the Englyſſhe men that dwelle in Englonde ben medled in ÿ ylonde and ben ferre fro the places that they ſpronge of fyrſt torne to the contrary dedes lyghtly without entyſynge of ony other men by theyr owne aſſent. And vneaſy alſo vnpacyent of peas/ enmyes of beſynes/ & ful of ſlouthe. ¶Wilhel. de pon. li. iii. ſayth. That whan they haue deſtroyed theyr enemyes all to the grounde/ then they fyght with themſelfe and ſlee eche other/ as voyde & an empty ſtomake werketh in it ſelfe.

¶R. Neuertheles men of the South ben eaſyer & more mylde than men of ÿ north For they be more vnſtable/ more cruell/ & more vneaſy. ¶The myddelmen ben parteners with bothe. Alſo they vſe them to glotony more than other men/ & ben more coſtleuous in mete and clothynge. Men ſuppoſe ÿ they toke ÿ vyce of kynge Herdeknut ÿ was a Dane. For he lyght ſette twyes double meſſe at Dyner and at ſouper alſo. Theſe men ben ſpedefull on horſe and a fote/ able & redy to all maner dedes of armes/ & ben wonte to haue vyctory & maystrye in euery fyght where no treaſon is walkynge/ & ben curyous & can well tell dedes & wonders that they haue ſeen. Alſo they gone in dyuerſe londes/ vnnethe ben ony mē rycher in theyr owne londe or more gracyous in ferre and in ſtraunge londe/ they can better wynne & gete newe thā kepe theyr owne herytage. Therfore it is ÿ they be ſprad ſoo wyde & wene ÿ euery londe is theyr owne. The men be able to all maner ſleyght & wytte but tofore ÿ dede blonderynge & haſty/ & more wyſe after ÿ dede than tofore/ & leue of lyghtely what they haue begonne.

¶Polimus. li. vi. Therfore Eugenius the pope ſayde ÿ Englyſſhe men were able to do what euer they wolde & to be ſet & put tofore all other/ ne were ÿ lyghte wyt letteth. And thus Hanyball ſayd that ÿ Romaynes myghte not be ouercome but in theyr owne coūtre/ ſo Englyſſhmen may not be ouercome in ſtraūge londes but in theyr owne coūtre they be lyghtly ouercome. ¶R. Theſe mē deſpyſe theyr owne & prayſe other men/ & vnneth be pleaſed wt theyr owne eſtate what befalleth other mē they wyll gladly take to thēſelf. ¶Therfore it is ÿ a yoman arayeth hȳ as a ſquyer/ a ſquyer as a knyght a knyght as a duke/ a duke of a kynge. Yet ſome go aboute & wyl be lyke to all maner ſtate & ben in no ſtate For they take euery degre that be of no degre/ for in berynge outward they be mynſtrels & herowdes in talkynge grete ſpekers. In etynge & drynkynge glotons/ In gaderynge of catell hucſters and tauerners. In aray tormentours. In wynnynges argi. In trauayle tantaly. In takynge hede dedaly. In beddes ſardanapaly/ In chirches mawmetes/ In courtes thondres only in preuylege of clergy & in prebendes they knowlege thēſelf clerkes. ¶Cupid. As touchynge termes of [illegible]/ as Argi/ tantaly/ Dedaly/ Sardanapaly/ ye muſt vnderſtonde them as yͭ poetes feyned of them. Argus was an herde ⁊ kepte beeſtes he had an hondred eyen/ ⁊ Argus was alſo a ſhyp/ a ſhypman/ ⁊ a chapman and ſo Argus myght ſe before ⁊ behynde and on euery ſyde. Therfore he yͭ is wyſe ⁊ ware ⁊ can ſe that he be not deceyued may be called Argus. And ſo the Cronycle ſayth in plurell nombre yͭ Englyſſhe men ben argy/ yͭ is to ſaye they ſe aboute where as wynnynge is. That other worde tantaly/ the poete ſeyneth that Tantalus ſlewe his owne ſone/ werfore he is dampned to perpetual penaunce/ and he ſtandeth alway in water vp to the nether lyppe and hath alwaye rype apples ⁊ noble fruyte hangynge downe to the ouer lyppe/ but the fruyte nor the water may not come wᵗin his mouth/ he is ſo holdē ⁊ ſtandeth bytwene mete and drynke/ and may neyther ete nor drynke/ ⁊ is euer an hongred and a thyrſt that wo is hym a lyue by this maner lykeneſſe of Tantalus theyyͭ do right nought there as is moche is to doo in euery ſyde ben called tantaly It ſemeth yͭ it is to ſaye in trauayle they be tantaly/ for they do ryght nought therto. The thyrde worde is dedale/ take hede that Dedalus was a ſubtyll ⁊ a ſlye man And therfore by lykeneſſe they yͭ ben ſubtyll ⁊ ſlye they be called Dedaly. And the fourth worde is ſardanapaly/ ye ſhall vnderſtonde that Sardanapalus was kynge of Aſſyryens and was full vnchaſte/ ⁊ vſed hym for to lye ſofte. And by a maner of lykenes of hym they that lyue vnchaſtly ben called ſardanapaly. R. But amonge all Englyſſhe men medled togyders is ſo grete a chaungynge and dyuerſyte of clothynge and of araye and ſo many maners ⁊ dyuerſe ſhapes yͭ well nygh is there ony man knowē by his clothynge and his araye of what ſome euer degree that he be. Therof prophecyed an holy Anker in kynge Egelredes tyme in this maner Henry.li.vi. Englyſſhe men for as moche as they vſe them to dronklewnes/ to treaſon and to rechcleſnes of goddes houſe/ fyrſt by Danes ⁊ then by Normans/ and at yͭ thyrde tyme by the Scotes that they holde the mooſt wretcheſt and leſte worth of all other they ſhall be ouercome. Then the worlde ſhall be ſo vnſtable and ſo dyuerſe and varyable that the vnſtablenes of thoughtes ſhall be betokened by many maner dyuerſytees of clothynge.

¶ Here foloweth the deſcrypcyon of the londe of Wales.

¶ Of the londe of Wales ca.xvi.

Now this boke taketh in honde
Wales after Englonde
So take I my tales
And wende in to Wales
To that noble blood
Of Priamus blood.
Knowlege for to wynne
Of grete Iupyter kynne
For to haue in mynde
Dardanus kynde
In theſe foure tytles I fonde
To telle theſtate of that londe
Cauſe of the man I ſhall telle
And then prayſe the londe and welle
Then I ſhall wryte with my penne
All the maners of the men
Then I ſhall fonde
To telle meruayles of the londe

¶ Of yͤ name and wherfore it is named Wales. ca.xvii.

Wales now is called Wallia
And ſomtyme it hyght Cambria
For Camber Brutes ſone
Was prynce and there hyde kynge.

Then wallis was to mene
For Gwalaes the quene
Kynge Gwancus chylde
Was wedded theder wylde
And of that lorde Gwalon
Wythdrawith of the soun
And put to l.i.s
And thou shalt fynde wallis
And though this londe
By moche lesse than Englonde
As good glebe is one as other
In the doughter as in the moder

Of the commodytees of the londe of Wales. ca.xviii.

Though that londe be lyyt
It is full of corne and of fruyte.
And hath grete plente ywys
Of flesshe and eke of fysshe
Of beestes tame and wylde
Of horse shepe oxen mylde
Good londe for all sedes
For corne gras & herbes that spredes.
There ben wodes and medes
Herbes and floures there spredes
There ben ryuers and welles
Valeys and also hylles
Valeyes brynge forth food
And hylles metals good
Cool groweth under londe
And gras aboue at honde
There lyme is copyous
And sclates for hous
Hony and mylke whyte
There is deynte and not lyte
Of braket mete and ale
Is grete plente in that wale
And all that nedeth to the lyue
That londe bryngeth forth ryue
But of [illegible] in be walles
And [illegible] in [illegible]
It is a [illegible] londe
[illegible] you [illegible] of all.

Made that londe so frie
To be feier & of all heie
Wales is deled by
A water that hyght Dy.
North wales fromme the south
Dy deleth in places full couth.
The south hyght Demecia
And the other Venedocia
The fyrste shoteth and arowes berys
That other deleth all with speres
In wales how it be.
Were somtyme courtes thre
At Carmerthyn was that one
And that other was in Mone
The thyrde was in Powys
In Pegweren that now is Shrewesbury
There were bysshops seuen
And now ben foure euen
Under Saxons all at honde
Somtyme under prynces of that londe

Of ẏ maners and rytes of the walshe men. ca.xix.

The maner lyuynge of that londe
Is well dyuerse from Englonde
In mete and drynke and clothynge.
And many other doynge
They be clothed wonder well
In a shyrte and in a mantell
A crysp breche well fayne
Bothe in wynde and in rayne
In this clothynge they be bolde
Though the wynder be ryght colde
Withoute shetes alway
Euermore in thus araye.
They go lyghte playe & lepe
[illegible] there lye and slepe
Withoute sherte gowne cote and kyrtell
Withoute [illegible] cloke or belle
Withoute lace ẏ chapelet that they lappes
[illegible] hode [illegible] cappes
[illegible] the lyppes
And alwaye [illegible]

They kepe none other kepynge
Though they were with the kynge
With arowes and ſhort ſperes
They fyght with them that them deres
They fyght better yf they nede
Whan they go than whan they ryde
In ſtede of caſtell and toure
They take wodes and mareys for ſocour
Whan they ſeen it is to do
In fyghtynge they wolde be a go
Gyldas ſayth they ben variable
In peas and not ſtable
yf men aſke why it be
It is no wonder for to ſe
Though men put out of londe
To put out other wolde fonde
But all for nought at this ſtonde
For all many wodes ben at gronde
And put the ſee amonge
Ben caſtels buylded ſtronge
The men may dure longe vn ete
And loue well comune mete
They can ete and ben mery
Without grete cury
They ete brede colde and hote
Of barly and of ote
Brode cakes rounde and thynne
As well ſemeth ſo grete kynne
Selde they ete brede of whete
And ſelde they done ones ete
They haue gruell to potage
And lekes kynde to companage
Alſo butter mylke and cheſe
y ſhape endlonge and ouer werſe
Suche meſſes they ete ſnell
And that maketh them drynke well
Mete and ale that hath myght
Theron they ſpende daye and nyght
Euer the reder in the wyne
They holde it the more fyne
Whan they drynke at ale
They telle many a lewde tale
For whan drynke is in handlynge
They ben full of Janglynge
At mete and after eke
Theyr ſolace is ſalte and leke
The huſholde in his wyſe
Telleth that a grete pryce
To gyue a gaudron with growele
To them that ſyt at his mele
He deleth his mete at mele
And gyueth euery man his dele
And all the ouer pluſe
He kepeth to his owne vſe
Therfore they haue wo
And myſhappes alſo
They ete hote ſamon alway
All though phyſyke ſaye nay
Theyr houſes ben lowe with all
And made of yerdes ſmall
Not as in cytees nygh
But ferre a ſonder and not to hygh
Whan all is eten at home
Thā to theyr neyghbours wyl they come
And ete what they may fynde and ſe.
And then come home aye
The lyfe is ydle that they ledes
In dremynge ſlepynge & ſuche dedes
Walſſhe men vſe with theyr myght
To weſſhe theyr geſtes fete a nyght
yf he weſſhe theyr fete all and ſomme
Then they knowe that they be welcome
They lyue ſo eaſely in a route
That ſelden they bere purſe aboute
At theyr breche out and home
They honge theyr money and combs
It is wonder they be ſo hende.
And hate crak at neuer ende
And without ony core
Make theyr wardrope at dore
They haue in grete mangery.
Harpe tabour & pype for mynſtralſy
They bere corps with ſorowes grete
And blowe lowde hornes of ghete
They prayſe faſt Troyan blode
For therof came all theyr brode
Nygh kyn they wyll be
Though they paſſe an hondred degre

Aboue other men they wyll them hyght
And worshyp preestes with theyr myght
Aungels of heuen ryght
They worshyp seruauntes of god almyght
Oft gyled was this kynde
And yerned batayle all for wynde
For Merlyns prophecye
And oft for sortelegye
Besse in maners of Brytons
For company of Saxons
Ben tourned to better ryght
That is knowen as clere as lyght
They tyll gardyns felde and downes
And drawe them to good townes
They ryde armed as wolde god
And go y hosed and y shodde
And sytten fayre at theyr mele
And slepe in beddes fayre and fele
So they seme now in mynde
More Englysshe men than walssh kynde
Yf men axe why they now do so
More than they wonte to do
They lyuen in more pees
Bycause of theyr ryches
For theyr catell sholde slake
Yf they vsed ofte wrake
Drede of losse of theyr good
Make them now styll of mode
All in one it is brought
Haue nothynge and drede nought
The poete sayth a sawe of prise
The fote man syngeth tofore the theef
And is bolder on the waye
Than the horse man ryche and gaye

¶ Of the meruaylis and wondres of wales. ca.xi.

There is a pole at brechenok
Therin of fysshe is many a flok
Oft he chaungeth his hewe on top
And bereth aboue a gardyn crop
Oft tyme hold it be
Shape of house there shall thou se
When the pole is frore it is wondre
Of the noyse that is there vnder
Yf the prynce of the londe here
Byddes syngne well mery note
As merely as they can
And syngen for none other man
Besydes Caerleon
Two myle fro the towne
Is a roche well bryght of leme
Ryght agaynst the sonne beme
Goldclyf that roche hyght
For it shyneth as gold full bryght
Suche a floure in stone is nought
Without fruyte yf it were sought
If men coude by craft kydde
The vaynes of therth and came therto
Many benefyce of kynde
Ben now hyd fro mannes mynde
And ben vnknowen yet
For defaute of mannes wytte
Grete tresoure is hyd in grounde
And after this it shall be founde
By grete study and besynes
Of them that come after vs
That olde man hath by grete nede
We haue by besy dede ¶ Treuisa.
In bokes ye maye rede
That kynde fayleth not at nede
When no man had craft in mynde.
Than of crafte halpe god and kynde
When no techer was in londe
Men of craft by goddes sonde
They that had crafte so than
Taught suche craftes to other men
Some crafte that came not yet in place
Some men shall haue by goddes grace
¶ R. In ponde is such noyse and stryfe
In west wales at Kerdyf
Faste by Seuarne stronde
Barry hyght that ponde
In that hyther syde in a stone
Shalt thou here wonder done
And bycause maye also
If thou put thyn ere to

Noyſe of leues and of wynde
Noyſe of metalles thou ſhalte fynde
Frotynge of yren & wepenes þ ſhalt here
Hetynge of ouens than with fyre
Al this may well be
By wawes of the ſee
That bycheth in thare
With ſuche noyſe and fare
At Penbroke in a ſtede
Fendes do ofte quede
And throweth foule thynges inne
And deſpyſeth alſo ſynne
Neyther crafte ne bedes may
Do thens that ſhowe alway
Whan it greueth ſoo
To the men it bodeth woo
At Cruernar in weſt wales
Is a wonder buryales
Euery man that cometh it to ſe
Semeth it euen as moche as he
Hole wepen there a nyght
Shall be broken or daye lyght
At Neuyn in north walys
A lytell ylonde there is
That is called Bardyſay
Monkes dwell there alway
Men lyue ſo longe in that hurſte
That the oldeſt dyeth furſte
Men ſaye that Merlyn there buryed is
That hyght alſo Siluestris
There were Merlyns tweyne
And prophecyed beyne
One hyght Ambroſe and Merlyn
And was geten by a gobelyn
In Demicia at Carmerthyn
Vnder kynge Wortygeryn
He tolde his prophecye
Euen in Snowdonye
At the hed of the water of Conewey
In the ſyde of mount Erery
Dynas embreys in walſſhe
Ambroſe hyll in Englyſſhe
Kynge Wortygere ſate on
The water ſyde and was full of mone
Than Ambroſe Merlyn prophecyed
Tofore hym ryght tho ¶ Treuiſa.
What wytte wolde wene
That a fende myght gete a chylde
Some men wolde wene
That he may no ſuche werke welde
That fende that gooth a nyght
Women full ofte to gyle
Incubus is named by ryght
And gyleth men other whyle
Succubus is that wyght
God graunte vs none ſuche vyle
Who that cometh in her gyle
Wonder happe ſhall he ſmyle
With wonder dede
Bothe men and women ſede
Fendes wyll kepe
With crafte and brynge an hepe
So fendes wylde
May make women bere chylde
yet neuer in mynde
Was chylde of fendes kynde
For without eye
There myght no ſuche chylde dye
Clergye maketh mynde
Deth ſleeth no fendes kynde
But deth ſlewe Merlyn
Merlyn was ergo no gobelyn
An other Merlyn of Albyon londe
That now is named Scotlonde
And he had names two
Siluestris and Calidonius alſo
Of that wode Calidonie
For there he tolde his prophecye
And hyght Siluestris as well
For whan he was in batell
And ſawe aboue a gryſely kynde
And fell anone out of his mynde
And made no more abood
But came anone vnto the wood
¶ Treuiſa. Siluestris is wood
Other wylde of mode
Other elles
That at the wood he dwelles

Th Siluestris Merlyn.
Telie prophecye well and fyn
And prophecyed well there
Under kynge Arthure
Openly and not ſo cloſe
As Merlyn Ambroſe
There ben hylles in Snowdonye
That ben wonderly hye
With hyght as grete a waye
As a man may go a daye
And hyght eryry in walſhe
Snowy hylles in Englyſſhe
In theſe hylles there is
Leeſe ynough for all beeſtes of walys
Theſe hylles on top beres
Two grete fyſſhe weares
Conteyned in that one ponde
Meueth with the wynde all flonde
As though it dyde ſwymme
And nygheth to the brymme
So that herdes haue grete wonder
And wene that the worlde meueth vnder
In that other is perche and fyſſhe
Euery one eyed is
So fareth all well
In Albania the mylwell
In Rutlonde by Terynwell
There is a lytell well
That floweth not alwaye
As the ſee twyes a daye
But ſomtyme it is drye
And ſomtyme full by the eye
There is in northwallia
In Mon that hyght Angleſia
A ſtone acordynge well nygh
As it were a mannes thygh
How ferre euer that it be
Be borne of ony man
On nyght it gooth home his waye
That he founde by aſſaye
Hughe therle of Shreweſbury
In tyme of the fyrſt Wyllyam
For he wolde the ſothe fynde
That ſtone to another he gan bynde
With grete cheynes of yren
And tyeng all I ſeen
Bounde at one hepe
In to a water depe
Yet on morowe that ſtone
Was ſeen erly in Mon
A chorle helde hymſelfe full ſlyghe
And bounde this ſtone to his thyghe
His thyghe was roten or daye
And the ſtone wente alwaye
If men done lechery
Nygh that ſtone by
Swote cometh of that ſtone
But chylde cometh there none
There is a roche ryght wonderly
The roche of harpynge by contrey
Though there crye ony man borne
And blowe alſo with an horne
Noyſe there though thou abyde
Thou ſhalte here none in this ſyde
There is an other ylonde
Faſt by Mon at honde
Heremytes there ben fyue
If ony of them done ſtryue
All the myce that may be gete
Come and ete all theyr mete
Than ceaſeth neuer that woo
Tyll the ſtryfe ceaſe alſo
As men in this londe
Ben angry as in Irlonde
So laymen of this contrey
Ben alſo wretchefull alway
Alſo in this londe
In Irlonde and in Scotlonde
Ben belles and ſtaues
That in worſhyp men haues
And ben worſhypped ſo then
Of clerkes and of lewde men
That ſweren alſo
To ſwere on ony of tho
[illegible]
As it were the goſpell
At Baſyngwerke is a well
That ſtreme ryght as a wall

It ſpryngeth ſo ſore as men may ſe
What is caſte in it throweth aye
Therof ſpryngeth a grete ſtronde
It were ynough for all that londe
Secke at that place
Haue bothe hele and grace
In the welles after than ones
Ben founde reed ſpercled ſtones
In token of the blode rede
That the mayde Wenefrede
Shadde at that pytte
Whan her throte was kytte
He that dyde that dede
Hath ſorowe on his ſede
His chyldren at all ſtoundes
Barke as whelpes and houndes
To praye to that mayde for grace
Ryght at that welle place
Eyther in Shroweſbury ſtrete
There that mayde reſteth ſwete.

¶ Of the deſcrypcyon of Scotlonde ſomtyme named Albania. ca.xxi.

IT is a comyn ſawe ÿ the coūtre whiche is now named Scotlōde is an outſtretchynge of ÿ north ſyde of Brytayn ⁊ is departed in ÿ ſouth ſyde frō Brytayn wͭ armes of ÿ ſee/ ⁊ in ÿ other ſyde it is beclypped wͭ the ſee. This londe hyght ſomtyme Albania/ ⁊ had ÿ name of Albanact' that was kynge Brutes ſone/ for Albanactus dwelled fyrſt therin/ or of ÿ prouynce Albania ÿ is a coūtre of Scicia ⁊ nygh to Amazonia/ therfore Scottes ben called as it were Scyttes/ for they came out of Scicia. Afterwarde ÿ londe hyght Pictauia for ÿ Pictes regned therin a.M.CCC.lx. yere. And at laſt hyght Hibernia as Irlōde hyght. ¶ Gir.i.top. For many ſkylles/ one is for affinite ⁊ alye ÿ was bytwene them ⁊ Iryſſhmen/ for they toke theyr wyues of Irlond/ ⁊ ÿ is openly ſeen in theyr lyuinge in clothynge/ in langage ⁊ ſpeche/ in wepen/ ⁊ in maners. An other ſkyll is/ for Iriſſhmen dwelled there ſomtyme. ¶ Beda li.i. Out of Irlonde ÿ is ÿ propre countre of Scottes came Iriſſhmen wͭ theyr duke that was called Reda/ ⁊ with loue ⁊ with ſtrength made them chefe ſees ⁊ cytees beſydes ÿ Pyctes in the north ſyde. ¶ Gir. Now ÿ londe is ſhortly called Scotlonde of Scottes ÿ came out of Irlonde ⁊ regned therin.CCC.xv. yere vnto reed Wylliams tyme ÿ was Malcolyns broder. ¶ R. Many euydences we haue of this Scotlonde ÿ it is ofte called ⁊ hyght Hibernia/ as Irlonde dooth. ¶ Therfore Beda.li.ii.ca.xi. ſayth that Laurēce archebyſſhop of Dunbar was archebyſſhop of Scottes ÿ dwelled in an ylonde ÿ hyght Hibernia/ ⁊ is nexte to Brytayne. Beda.li.iii.ca.xxvii. ſayth peſtilence of moreyn bare downe Hibernia. Alſo li.iii.ca.ii. ſayth ÿ ÿ Scottes that dwelled in ÿ ſouth ſyde of Hibernia. Alſo li.iiii.ca.iii. he ſayth ÿ Cladde was a yonglynge ⁊ lerned ÿ rule of mōkes in Hibernia. Alſo li.iiii.ca.xxii. Egfridus kȳge of Northumberlōde deſtroyed Hibernia. Alſo li.iiii.ca.xv. the mooſt dele of Scottes in Hibernia/ ⁊ in the ſame chappytre he called Hibernia proprely named/ ÿ weſte ylonde is an hondred myle from euerych Brytayne ⁊ departeth wͭ the ſee bytwene ⁊ called Hibernia that coūtre that now is called Scotlonde/ there he telleth that Adamnā abbot of this ylonde ſayled to Hibernia for to teche Iryſſhmen the lawfull Eſter daye/ ⁊ at laſte came agayne in to Scotlōde ¶ Yſy.ethi.li.xiiii. Men of this Scotlonde ben named Scottes in theyr owne lāgage ⁊ Pictes alſo/ for ſomtyme theyr bodyes were peynted in this maner they wolde ſomtyme with a ſharpe edged tole pryche ⁊ kerue theyr owne bodyes/ ⁊ make theron dyuerſe fygures ⁊ ſhapes/ ⁊ peynt them with ynke or with other peynture or colours/ and bycauſe they were ſo peynted they were called Picti / that is to saye peynted. ¶ Giraldus. Scottes ben lyght of herte / stronge ⁊ wylde ynough / but by medlynge of Englysshmen they be moche amended / they ben cruell vpon theyr enemyes ⁊ hateth bondage moost of ony thynge / ⁊ holde for a foule deeth yf a man dye in his bedde / ⁊ grete worshyp yf he dye in the felde. They ben lytell of mete ⁊ mowe fast longe / ⁊ ete selde whan ÿ sonne is vp ⁊ ete flesshe / fysshe / mylke / ⁊ fruyte more than brede / ⁊ though they be fayre of shape they ben defouled ⁊ made vnsemely ynough wt theyr owne clothynge / they prayse fast ÿ vsages of theyr owne forfaders ⁊ despyse other mennes doynge / theyr londe is fruytfull ynough in pasture gardyns ⁊ feldes. ¶ Gir.i.ca.xviii. The prynces of Scottes as ÿ kynges of Spayne ben not wont to be anoynted ne crowned. In this Scotlonde is solempne ⁊ grete mynde of saynt Andrewe ÿ apostle / for saynt Andrew had ÿ north partyes of ÿ worlde Scites ⁊ Pictes to his lot for to preche ⁊ conuerte ÿ people to crystes byleue / ⁊ at last he was martred in Achaia in Grecia in a cyte named Patras / ⁊ his bones were kepte. CClxii. yere vnto Cōstantinus themperours tyme / ⁊ thā they were translated in to Cōstantynople ⁊ kepte there. C.x. yere vnto Theodosius themperours tyme / ⁊ than Vngus kynge of Pictes in Scotlonde destroyed a grete parte in Brytayn ⁊ was beset wt a grete hoost of Brytons in a felde called Marche / ⁊ he herde saynt Andrewe speke to hym in this maner. Vngus Vngus here ÿ me crystes apostle. I promyse ÿ helpe ⁊ socour whan ÿ hast ouercomen thyn enemyes by my helpe. thou shalte gyue ÿ thyrde dele of thyn herytage in almesse to god almyghty / ⁊ in the worshyp of saynt Andrewe / ⁊ the sygne of ÿ crosse wente tofore his hoost / ⁊ the kynge hadde the victory ⁊ so comen home agayne ⁊ yaue his herytage as he was bode. And for he was vncertayne what Cyte he sholde bylde for saynt Andrewe he fasted thre dayes / he ⁊ his men prayed saynt Andrewe ÿ he wolde shewe hym what place he shold chese. And one of the wardeyns that kepte ÿ body of saynt Andrewe in Cōstantinople was warned in his slepe ÿ he sholde go in to a place whyder an aūgell wolde lede hym / ⁊ so he came in to Scotlōde with. vii. felawes to the toppe of an hyll named Ragmounte. The same houre lyght of heuen beshone ⁊ beclypped ÿ kynge of Pictes that was comynge with his hoost to a place called Carceuan. There anone were heled many seke men. There mette wt the kynge Regulus ÿ monke of Constantynople with the relykes of saynt Andrewe. There is founded a chirche in worshyp of saynt Andrewe that is heed of all ÿ chyrches in the londe of Pictes. To this chyrche come pylgrymes out of dyuerse londes. There was Regulus fyrst abbot ⁊ gadred monkes. And so all the tenth londe that the kynge had assygned hym he departed it in dyuerse places amonge abbayes.

¶ Of the descrypcyon of Irlonde. ca. xxii

Hibernia that is Irlonde / and was of olde tyme Incorporate in to the lordshyp of Brytayne / so sayth Gir. in sua pos. where he descryueth it at full. yet is it worthy ⁊ semely to prayse ÿ londe with large praysynge / for to come to clere ⁊ full knowlege of ÿ londe these tytles ÿ folowe open the waye. Therfore I shal tell of the place ⁊ stede of ÿ londe how grete ⁊ what maner londe it is / whereof that londe hath plente / and wherof it hath defaute / also of what men haue dwelled therin fyrst. Of maners of men of that londe. Of the wonders of that londe / ⁊ of worthynesse of his holyes and sayntes of that londe.

¶ Of the boundynge of Irlonde. ca. xxiii

IRlonde is the laſt of all ẏ weſt ylondes ⁊ hyght Hibernia of one Hiberus of Spayne that was Hermonius broder / for theſe two bretheren gate ⁊ wanne that londe by conqueſt. Or it is called Hibernia of ẏ Ryuer Hiberus yͭ is in ẏ weſt ende of Spayne / ⁊ that lōde hyght Scotlonde alſo / for Scottes dwelled there ſomtyme or they came in to ẏ other Scotlōde that longed to Brytayn / therfore it is wryten in ẏ Martiloge. Suche a day in Scotlonde ſaynt Bryde was borne / ⁊ that was in Irlonde. This lōde hath in ẏ ſoutheeſt ſyde Spayne thre dayes ſaylynge thens a ſyde halfe / ⁊ hath in ẏ eeſt ſyde the more Brytayne thens a dayes ſaylynge / in the weſt ſyde ẏ endles Occean / ⁊ in the north ſyde yſelonde thre dayes ſaylynge thens. ¶ Solinus. But ẏ ſee yͭ is bytwene Brytayne ⁊ Irlonde is all ẏ yere full of grete wawes ⁊ vneaſy yͭ men may ſelde ſayle ſekerly / bytwene ẏ ſee is. C. xx. myle brode.

Of ẏ gretnes ⁊ qualyte of ẏ lōde. ca. xxiiii

IRlonde is an ylōde greteſt after Brytayne / ⁊ ſtretcheth northwarde frō Brendas hylles vnto ẏ londe Colſbina / ⁊ cōteyneth. viii. dayes iourney euery iourney. xl. myle / ⁊ frō Deuelyn to Patryckes hylles ⁊ to ẏ ſee in ẏ ſyde in brede. iiii. iourneys / ⁊ Irlonde is narower in ẏ myddell than in ẏ endes / all otherwyſe than Brytayne is / as Irlonde is ſhorter northwarde than Brytayne / ſoo is it lenger ſouthwarde / the londe is not playne but full of mountaynes / of hylles / of woodes / of mareys / ⁊ of mores / the londe is ſofte raynywynde ⁊ lowe by the ſee ſyde ⁊ within hylly and ſondy. ¶ Solinus. There is grete plente of noble paſture ⁊ of leeſe / therfore the beeſtes muſt be ofte dryuē out of theyr paſture leeſt they ete ouermoche for they ſholde ſhende themſelfe yf they myght ete at theyr wyll. ¶ Gir. Men of that londe haue comynly theyr helth / and ſtraūgers haue ofte a peryllous fluxe bycauſe of the moyſture the of mete. The fleſſhe of kyen is there holſome / ⁊ ſwynes fleſſhe vnholſome. Men of ẏ londe haue no feuer / but onely the feuer ague and that ryght ſelde. Therfore ẏ holſomnes of that londe ⁊ the clenneſſe out of venym is worth all ẏ boſt and rycheſſe of trees of herbes of ſpycery of ryche clothes ⁊ of precious ſtones of the eeſt londes. The cauſe of the helthe ⁊ holſomneſſe of that londe is the attemperate hete ⁊ colde that is therin. In q̄bus rebus ſufficit. In this londe ben moo kyen than oxen / more paſture than corne / more gras than ſeed / there is plente of ſamon / of lamprays / of eeles / ⁊ of other ſee fyſſhe. Of egles / of cranes / of pecockes / of curlewes / of ſparowhawkes / of goſhawkes / ⁊ of gentyll fawcons. Of wolues ⁊ ryght ſhrewed myce / there bē attercoppes / blode ſoukers eftes yͭ do no harme / there bē fayres lytel of body ⁊ ful hardy ⁊ ſtrōge / there ben barnacles foules lyke to wylde ghees whiche growe wōderſly vpō trees / as it were nature wrought ayenſt kynde. Men of relygyon ete barnacles vpon faſtȳge dayes bycauſe they bē not engendred with fleſſhe / wherin as me thȳketh they erre for reaſon is ayenſt that. For yf a man had eten of Adams legge he had etē fleſſhe / ⁊ yet Adam was not engēdred of fader nor moder / but that fleſſhe came wonderly of ẏ tree. In this londe is plente of hony ⁊ of mylke / of wyne ⁊ of vyneyerdes. ¶ Solinus ⁊ yſid. wrytē that Irlonde hath no bees. Neuertheles it were better wryten yͭ Irlōde had bees ⁊ no vyneyerdes. ¶ Beda ſayth that there is grete hūtynge to roobuckes / ⁊ it is knowen yͭ there ben none. It is no wonder of Beda / for he ſawe neuer that londe [illegible] as it were the [illegible] that some tyme [illegible] & shall [illegible] there is also founden a stone that is called Gagates and whyte margery perles.

¶ Of the defautes of the londe. ca.xxv.

Where shepes ben there full smale unnethe clensed with wormes londe / beestes & men / all beestes be smaller there than in other londes. There lacketh well nygh al maner fresshe water fysshe that is not gendred in the see / there lacke wylde faucons gerfaucons / pertryches / fesauntes / nyghtyngales / and pyes / there lacke also roo & bucke / & Ilespyles / wontes / & other venemous beestes. Therfore some men feyne & that favourably that saynt Patryke clensed that londe of wormes and of venemous beestes / but it is more probable and more skylfull that this londe was from the begynnynge alwaye without suche wormes / for venemous beestes & wormes dye there assone as men brynge them thyder out of other londes. Also venym & poyson brought thyder out of other londes lese theyr malyce as sone as it passeth the myddle of the see. Also poudre & erth of that londe cast & strewen in other londes dryve away wormes so ferforth that yf a turfe of that londe be put aboute a worme it sleeth hym or maketh hym crepe & that with lyf to escape awaye. In the londe cockes crowe but lytell tofore day / so that the fyrst crowynge of cockes in that londe & the thyrde in other londes be lyke ferre tofore the daye.

¶ Of them that fyrst enhabyted Irelonde. ca. xxvi.

[illegible] Noes [illegible] this londe in the [illegible] men & fyfty women in to this londe & dwelled therin tyll the last yere tofore Noes flode. But afterwarde Bartholomus Serons sone that came of Japhet Noes sone came thyder with his thre sones by happe & by cace .ccc. yere after Noes flode & dwelled there & encreased to the nombre of .ix. M. men / and afterwarde for stenche of careyns of geauntes that they had slayne they dyed al save one Ruanus that lyved a .M. v.c. yere unto saynt Patrykes tyme / and enfourmed the holy man of the forsayd men and of all the kynges & dedes. Than the thyrde tyme came thyder Nimeth out of Scicia with his .iiii. sones & dwelled there .cc.xvi. yere. And at last of his ofsprynge by dyverse myshappes of warre & of morreyne they were clene destroyed & the londe lefte voyde .cc. yere after. The fourth tyme .v. lordes that were brethren Gandi / Genandus / Sagandus / Rutheragus / Slanius / of the sayd Nimethes successours came out of Grece & occupyed that londe & deled it in .v. partyes / & every partye conteyned .xxxii. Cantredes. A Cantrede is a countre that conteyneth an .C. townes / & they set a stone in the myddle of the londe as it were in the navell and begynnynge of .v. kyngdomes. At the last Slanius was made kynge of all the londe. The fyfth tyme when this nacyon was .xxx. yere togyder they herd telle. Foure noble men that were Milesius the kynges sones came out of Spayne with many other in a navy of .xl. shyppes / & two of the worthyest of these .iiii. brethern that hyght Hyberus & Hermon deled the londe bytwene them two. But afterwarde contencion was bytwene them bothe & Hyberus was slayne / than Hermon was kynge of al the londe. And from his tyme to the fyrst Patrykes tyme were kynges of that nacyon .C.xxxi. And so in the comynge of Hybernensis unto the fyrst Patrykes tyme .M. viii.C. yere.

They had that name Hiberneſis ⁊ Hibernia of ẏ brother Hiberus/ or els of Hiberus a ryuer of Spayne. They were called alſo gatels and Scottes of one Gaytelus that was Phenis neuewe. This Gaytelus coude ſpeke many langages after ẏ langages that were made at Nemprothes toure. And wedded one Scotta Pharoes doughter. Of theſe bothe came ẏ Hiberneuſis. Men ſaye ẏ this Gaytelus made the Iryſſhe langage ⁊ called it Gaytelak as it were langage gadred of all lãgages and tongues. At the laſte Belinus kynge of Brytayne had a ſone ⁊ hyght Gurguncius came oute of Denmarke at yondes Orcades he founde men that were called Baſclenſis/ and were come theder out of Spayne/ theſe mẽ prayed ⁊ beſought to haue a place to dwelle in. And the kynge ſente them to Irlonde that was tho voyde ⁊ waſte ⁊ ordeyned ⁊ ſente wᵗ them dukes ⁊ cappytaynes of his owne/ ⁊ ſoo it ſemeth ẏ Irlonde ſholde longe to Brytayne by ryght of olde tyme. Frome ẏ fyrſt ſaynt Patryke vnto Feldiundius ẏ kynges tyme. CCCC. yere reygned. xxxiii. kynges eueryche after other in Irlonde. In this Feldiũdius tyme Turgeſiꝰ duke ⁊ cappytayne of Norway brought theder men of Norwaye and occupyed that londe and made in many places deches and caſtels ſyngle double and treble and many wardes ſtrõgely walled ⁊ many therof ſtonde be yet all hole/ but the Iryſſhmen retche not of caſtelles/ for they take wodes for caſtels ⁊ marayes ⁊ moores for caſtel dyches but at laſte Turgeſius deyed by gylefulles of women/ ⁊ Engliſſhe mẽ ſaye ẏ Gurmundus wanne Irlonde ⁊ made ſuche dyches/ ⁊ made no mencyon of Turgeſiꝰ ⁊ Iryſſhmen ſpeke of Turgeſiꝰ ⁊ knowe not of Gurmũdus. Therfore it is to wete ẏ Gurmundus had wonne Brytayne and dwelled therin/ ⁊ ſente Turgeſiꝰ wᵗ grete ſtrength in to Irlonde for to wynne that londe/ bycauſe Turgeſiꝰ was cappytayne ⁊ leder of ẏ viage ⁊ Iourney ⁊ ſeen amonge thẽ/ therfore Iryſſhe men ſpeke moche of hym as a noble man ẏ was ſeen in that londe ⁊ knowẽ. At laſt whan Gurmũdus was ſlayne in Fraũce Turgeſius loued ẏ kynges doughter of Irlonde ⁊ her fader behyght Turgeſiꝰ ẏ he wolde ſende her hym to ẏ lowe latherin wᵗ. xv. maydens/ ⁊ Turgeſiꝰ promyſed to mete there wᵗ. xv. of the nobleſt men that he had/ ⁊ helde couenaũt ⁊ thought no gyle but there came. xv. yonge berdeles men clothed lyke womẽ wᵗ ſhorte ſwerdes vnder theyr clothes ⁊ fell on Turgeſiꝰ ⁊ ſlewe hym ryght there/ ⁊ ſo he was traytrouſly ſlayne after he hadde reygned. xxx. yere. Not longe after thre bredern Amelanus Siracus ⁊ Iuorus came in to Irlonde wᵗ theyr men out of Norway as it had ben for loue of peas ⁊ of marchaũdyſe ⁊ dwelled by the ſee ſydes by aſſente of Iryſſhe men ẏ were alwaye ydle as Poules knyghtes/ ⁊ ẏ Norwayes buylded there cyties Deuelyn Waterforde ⁊ Lymerycke ⁊ encreaced ⁊ after were rebell agaynſt men of ẏ londe and brought fyrſt ſparthes in to Irlonde. So fro Turgeſiꝰ tyme vnto Roderykes tyme kynge of Connacia ẏ was the laſt ẏ was kynge of all ẏ londe were. xvii. kynges in Irlonde/ ⁊ ſo ẏ kynges ẏ reygned in Irlonde frõ ẏ Hermons tyme vnto ẏ laſt Roderykes tyme were all. C. lxxxi. kynges ẏ were not crowned neyther enoynted nor by lawe of herytage/ but by myght maiſtrye and ſtrenght of armes. The ſeconde Henry kynge of Englonde made this Roderyke ſubgect ẏ yere of kynge Henrys age. xl. and of his reygne. xviii. ẏ yere of our lorde. xi. hondred. lxxii.

¶ Of the condycyons and maners of Irlonde. Ca. xx

[illegible] that men of this londe [illegible] ben straunge of maners houses [illegible] lyuen / & moche tyme and [illegible] one thynge / and ben lyghte of [illegible] / scarce of mete / scarce of herte angry of speche / & drynketh fyrst blode of deed men that ben slayn and then wasshe theyr visages therwith / & holde them payed [illegible] & crudde in stede of mete & in mylke in stede drynke & vse moche playenge & ydelnes & huntynge & trauayle but lytell. In theyr chyldhode they ben harde nourysshed and harde fed / and they be vnsemely of maners & of clothynge and haue breche and hosen alone of wolle & strayte hodes that stretcheth a cubyte ouer the sholders behynde and foldynges in stede of mantels & of clokes. Also they vse noo sadels bootes nor spores whan they ryde but they dryue theyr horses with a chambred yerde in ÿ ouer ende. In stede of bytes with trenches and of brydels of reen they vse brydels that let not theyr horses to ete theyr mete / they fyght vnwarned / naked in body / neuertheles with two dartes and speres / and with brode sparthes they fyght wt one honde. These men forsake tyllynge of londe and kepe pasture for beestes. They vse longe berdes and longe lockes hangynge downe behynde theyr heddes / they vse no crafte of flaxe / of wolle of metall / nor of marchaundyse / but gyue them to ydelnes and to slouth and taken rest for lykynge & for fredome for rychesse / And though Scotlonde the doughter of Irlonde vse harpe tymbre and taboure. Neuertheles Irysshe men be connynge in two maners Instrumentes of musyke / in harpe and tymbre that is armed wt wyre & strynges of bras / In whiche Instrumentes though they play hastely and swyftly they make ryght mery armonye [illegible] and [illegible] playnge secretly vnder bynne sowne in the grete strenges / and torne ageyn in to the same / so that the grettest partye of the crafte hydeth the crafte as it wolde seme as though the crafte sholde be ashamed yf it were take. These men ben of euyl maners in theyr lyuynge they paye no tythynges they wedde vnlaufully / they spare not theyr alyes / but ÿ broder wedde the broders wyf / they ben besy to betraye theyr neyghbours / & other they bere speres in theyr hondes in stede of staues / & fyght ageynst the ÿ truste moost to them / these men ben variable & vnstedfaste trechours and gyleful who that dealeth wyth them nedeth more to beware of gyle than of crafte of pees than of brennynge brondes of hony than of galle / of malyce than of knyghthode / they haue suche maners that they ben not stronge in warre and in batayle / nor trewe in pees / they become gossybs to them ÿ they wyll falsly betray in the gossybrede and holy kynred eueryche drynketh others blode whan it is shed they loue somwhat theyr norryce & theyr playfers whiche that souke ÿ same mylke that they souked whan they were chylderne. And they pursewe theyr bretherne / theyr cosyns / & theyr other kynne & despyse theyr kynne whyles they lyue / & auenge theyr deth whan they ben slayne. So longe hath ÿ vsage of euyl customs endured amonge them ÿ it hath gete ÿ maystry ouer them & torned treason in to kynde so ferforth that they ben traytours by nature. And alyens and men of straunge londes that dwelle amonge them folowynge theyr maneres that vnneth there is none but he is defouled with theyr treason also. Amonge them many men [illegible] and women [illegible]. There ben many men in that londe foule shapen in lymmes and in body for in theyr kynde they lacke the benefyce of kynde. So that noo where ben none better ſhapen than they ẏ ben there well ſhapen ⁊ none worſe ſhapē than they ẏ ben euyll ſhapē. And ſkylfully nature hurte ⁊ defouled by wyckednes of lyuynge bryngeth ſuche foule gromes ⁊ euyll ſhapen of them ẏ wͭ vnlawfull delynge wͭ foule maners ⁊ euyll lyuynge ſo wyckedly defouled kynde ⁊ nature. In this londe ⁊ in Wales olde wyues ⁊ womē were wont ⁊ ben yet as men ſay ofte for to ſhape themſelf in lykeneſſe of hares for to mylke theyr neyghbours kyen ⁊ ſtele theyr mylke/⁊ ofte grey houndes renne after them ⁊ purſue theym ⁊ wene ẏ they be hares. Alſo ſome by crafte of Nygromancy make fatte ſwyne for to be reed of colour ⁊ ſelle them in markettes ⁊ fayres but as ſoone as theſe ſwyne paſſe ony water they torne in to theyr owne kynde whether it be ſtrawe heye gras or torues/but theſe ſwyne may not be kepte by no craft for tendure in lykenes of ſwyne ouer thre days. Amonge theſe wondres ⁊ other takehede ẏ in ẏ vttermeſt ende of the world falleth newe meruayles and wōdres. As though kynde playde wͭ large loue ſecretly ⁊ ferre in the endes/than openly ⁊ nygh in the myddell/therfore in this ylonde be many gryſelye wondres ⁊ meruayles

¶ Of the meruayles ⁊ wonders of Irlonde. ca.xxviii.

MAny men tell ẏ in ẏ north ſyde of Irlonde is the londe of lyfe. In ẏ ylonde noo man may dye but whan they ben olde ⁊ vexed wͭ grete ſekeneſſe/they ben borne out in to the nexte londe ⁊ deye there. There is an other ylonde in ẏ noo womā therin may bere a chylde/but yet ſhe may conceyue Alſo there is an ylonde in whiche no deed body may rotte. In Vltonia ẏ is Vlſter is an ylonde ẏ in a lake wonderly departed in tweyne. In ẏ one part is grete diſturbaūce ⁊ diſcōfort of fendes/⁊ in that other partye grete lykynge ⁊ cōforte of holy aungels. There is alſo ſaynt patrykes purgatory ẏ was ſhewed at his prayer to conferme his prechynge ⁊ his lore whan he preched to myſbyleued men of ſorowe ⁊ payne ẏ euyll mē ſholde ſuffre for theyr euyll werkes. And of Joye and of blyſſe ẏ good men ſhall receyue for theyr holy dedes he telleth ẏ who that ſuffreth the paynes of purgatory yf it be enioyned hym for penaūce he ſhal neuer ſuffre ẏ paynes of hell/but he dye fynally wͭout repentaunce of ſynne as ẏ enſample is ſette more full at this chappytre ende.

¶ Treuiſa. But truely no man may be ſaued but if he be very repentaūt what ſomeuer penaūce he do/⁊ euery man ẏ is very repentaūt at his lyues ende ſhall be ſekerly ſaued though he neuer here of ſaīt Patrykes purgatory. There is an ylonde in cōnacte Sale/ẏ is in ẏ ſee of Conoccia halowed by ſaīt brandon ẏ hath no myſe there deed bodyes be not buryed but ben kepte out of the erth ⁊ rotte not. In Maſmonia is a welle/who ẏ waſſheth hym wͭ that water of ẏ welle he ſhall waxe hoore on his heed. There is another well in Vltonia who ſomeuer is waſſhen therin he ſhall neuer waxe hore afterwarde. There is a well in Moūſtre or Momonia/yf ony man touche that well anone ſhall fall grete rayne in all that prouynce ⁊ that rayne ſhall neuer ceſſe tyll a preeſt that is a clene mayden ſynge a maſſe in a chapel that is faſte by ⁊ bleſſe the water/⁊ with mylke of a cowe that is of one heer beſprynge ẏ welle/and ſoo reconcyle the welle in this ſtraunge manere. At Glyndalcan aboute the oratory of ſaynt Keywyn wytches bereth apples as it were apple trees ⁊ ben more holſome thā ſauery. That holy ſaīt brought forth theſe apples by prayers for to hele his chylde that was ſeke. There is a lake in Ulſter and moche fyſſhe therin/ whiche is.xxx.myle in length ⁊.xv. in brede. ¶The ryuer Ban renneth out of yͭ lake in to the north Occean ⁊ men ſaye yͭ this lake began in this manere. ¶There were men in yͭ countree yͭ were of euyll lyuynge (coeuntes cũ bruitis) And there was a well in yͭ londe in grete reuerence of olde tyme ⁊ alwaye couered/ yf it were lefte vncouered yͭ welle wolde ryſe ⁊ drowne all yͭ londe. And ſo it happed yͭ a woman went to yͭ well for to fetche water ⁊ hyed her faſte to her chylde yͭ wepte in the cradell/ ⁊ lefte the well vncouered/ then the welle ſprange ſo faſte yͭ it drowned the woman ⁊ her chylde and made all yͭ countre a lake and a fyſſhe ponde. For to preue yͭ this is ſouth it is a grete argument that whan yͭ weder is clere fyſſhers of yͭ water ſe in yͭ grounde vnder yͭ water rounde toures ⁊ hygh ſhapen as ſteples ⁊ chyrches of yͭ londe.

In the northſyde of Irlonde in the countre of Ullyryens euery.vii.yere at yͭ prayer of an holy Abbot/ tweyne yͭ ben wedded a man and a woman muſte nedes be exyled and forſhapen in to lykeneſſe of wolues and abyde out.vii.yere. And at ende of ſeuen yere if they lyue they come home agayne ⁊ take agayne theyr owne ſhape and then ſhall other tweyne goo forth in theyr ſtede and ſo forſhapen for other.vii.yere. ¶There is a lake in this londe yf a pole of tree pyght ⁊ ſtycked therin the parte of the ſhafte or pole that is in yͭ erthe ſhall tourne in to yron/ and that parte that abydeth in the water ſhall tourne in to ſtone/ and the parte that abydeth aboue ſhall be tree in his owne kynde. Alſo there is a lake that tourneth haſill in to aſſhe/ ⁊ aſſhe in to haſill yf it be done therin. Alſo in Irlonde ben.iii. ſamon lepes there as ſamons lepe ayenſt a roche a longe ſperes length. Alſo in Irlonde is a ponde there ben ſeen [illegible] lyknes/ the byrdes called [illegible]les and come homely to mannes honde/ but yf men doo theym wronge or harme/ they go awaye and come not agayne/ and the water there ſhall be bytter and ſtynke and he that dyd yͤ wronge ſhall not aſterte without wretche ⁊ myſchyef but yf he do amendes. ¶R. As touchynge Patrykes purgatory ye ſhall vnderſtonde that the ſeconde ſaynt Patryke that was abbot ⁊ not byſſhoppe whyle he preched in Irlonde he laboured ⁊ ſtudyed for to tourne thylke wycked men that lyued as beeſtes out of theyr euyll lyfe for drede of the paynes of helle/ ⁊ to conferme them to good lyfe/ and they ſayd they wolde not tourne but ſome of them myght knowe ſomwhat of the grete paynes and alſo of yͤ blyſſe that he ſpake of. ¶Then ſaynt Patryke prayed to god almyghty therfore ⁊ our lorde Iheſu Cryſt appered to ſaynt Patryke and toke hym a ſtaffe ⁊ lad hym in to a wylde place ⁊ ſhewed hym there a rounde pytte that was derke within ⁊ ſayd/ that yf a man very repentaunt ⁊ ſtable in byleue ⁊ wente in to this pytte ⁊ walked therin a daye and a nyght/ he ſholde ſe yͤ ſorowes and the paynes of euyll men/ ⁊ the Ioye and blyſſe of good men. ¶Then Cryſte vanyſſhed out of patrykes ſyght/ and ſaynt Patryke arered and buylded there a chirche and put therin chanons reguler and cloſed the pytte aboute with a walle/ and is now in the chyrche yerde at the eſt ende of the chyrche and faſte ſhytte with a ſtronge dore/ for no man ſholde vnpertly go in without leue of yͤ byſſhoppe/ or of the pryour of the place. Many men wente in and came out agayne in Patrykes tyme and tolde of paynes and Ioye that they hadde ſeen/ and the merueylles that they ſawe ben there yet wryten/ and bycauſe therof many men tourned and were conuerted to ryghte byleue. Alſo many men went in ⁊ came neuer ayen. In kynge Ste phens tyme kynge of Englonde a knyght that hyght Owayne went in to ſaynt Patrykes purgatory ⁊ came agayne ⁊ dwelled euer after durynge his lyfe in yͤ nedes of thabbay of Ludenſis that is of thordre of Cyſtercus ⁊ tolde many wondres that he had ſeen in Patryks purgatory. That place is called Patryks purgatory / ⁊ the chirche is named Reglis. Noo man is enioyned for to go in to that purgatory / but coūſeyled that he ſholde not come therin / but take vpon hym other penaūce. And yf a man haue auowed ⁊ be ſtale ⁊ wyll nedes go therin / he ſhall fyrſt go to yͤ bisſhop ⁊ than he ſhall be ſente with lettres to the pryour of the place ⁊ they bothe ſhall coūſeyle hym to leue / ⁊ yf he wyll nedes goo therto he ſhall be in prayers ⁊ in faſtynge .xv. dayes / and after .xv. dayes he ſhall be houſeled and ladde to the dore of the purgatory with proceſſyon and letanye / and yet he ſhall be coūſeyled to leue it / and yf he be ſtedfaſt and wyll entre / the dore ſhal be opened ⁊ he bleſſed ⁊ go in on goddes name and holde forth his waye / and the dore ſhall be faſte ſhette tyll yͤ nexte daye and whan the tyme is the pryour ſhall come and open the dore / and yf the man be comen he ledeth hym in to yͤ chirche with proceſſyon / and there he ſhall be .xv. dayes in prayers and faſtynge.

¶ Of the meruaylles of ſayntes of Irlonde. ca.xxix.

Here Giraldus maketh mynde that as men of this nacyon ben more angry than other men ⁊ more haſty for to take wretche whyles they ben alyue / ſo ſayntes and halowes of this londe ben more wretchefull than ſayntes of other londes. Clerkes of this londe ben chaſte and ſaye many prayers ⁊ done grete abſtynence a daye / ⁊ drynke all nyght / ſo is accoūted for a myracle that lechery reygneth not there as wyne reygneth / and ben choſen out of abbayes in to the clergye / ⁊ done as monkes ſholde / but they that ben euyll of them ben worſte of all other. Noo good men amonge them though they ben but fewe bē good at the beſt. Prelates of that countre ben full ſlowe in correccyon of treſpaſſe / ⁊ beſy in contemplacion ⁊ not in prechynge of goddes worde. Therfore it is that all yͤ ſayntes of that londe ben cōfeſſours ⁊ no martyrs amonge them / ⁊ no wonder / for all yͤ prelates of this londe clerkes ⁊ prelates ſholde do is to them vnknowen. Therfore whan it was put agaynſt the byſſhop of Caſſyll how it myght be that ſo many ſayntes ben in Irlonde ⁊ neuer a martyr amonge them all ſythen that the men ben ſo ſhrewed ⁊ ſo angry / ⁊ the prelate ſo reccheles ⁊ ſlowe in correccyons of treſpaſſe. The biſſhop anſwered frowardly inough and ſayd / our men ben ſhrewed ⁊ angry ynough to themſelfe / but to goddes ſeruaūtes they lay neuer hande / but do them grete reuerence ⁊ worſhyp / but englyſſhe men come in to this londe that can make martyrs ⁊ were wonte to vſe that crafte. ¶ R. The byſſhop ſayd ſo bycauſe yͤ kyng Henry the ſeconde was tho newe comen in to Irlonde freſſhely after the martyrdome of ſaynt Thomas of Caūterbury. ¶ Gir. In this londe / in Wales / ⁊ in Scotlonde ben belles ⁊ ſtaues with croked hēdes / ⁊ other ſuche thynges for relykes in grete reuerence ⁊ worſhyp / ſo that men of this londe drede more for to ſwere vpon one of thoſe belles and goldē ſtaues than vpon the goſpelles. The chefe of all ſuche relykes is holden Iheſus ſtaffe that is at Deuelyn / with the whiche ſtaffe they ſay that the fyrſt ſaynt Patryk droue the wormes out of Irlonde. ¶ Aug'. de ci. dei. ca. vii. yf men axe how it may be that dyuers maner of beeſtes ⁊ of dyuerſe kynde that be bygoten bytwene male and female some ⁊ ben in ylondes after Noes flode. Men ſuppoſe that ſuche beeſtes ſwymme in to ylondes aboute and fyrſt to the nexte and ſo forth in to other. Or elles men ſaylynge in to ylondes brought with theym ſuche beeſtes for loue of huntynge / or angelles at god almyghtyes cõmaũdement brought ſuche beeſtes in to ylondes aboute / or the erth brought them forth fyrſt ⁊ fulfylled tho goddes cõmaũdement / that cõmaũded the erth to brynge forth graſſe and quycke beeſtes.

¶ Here endeth the deſcrypcyon of Brytayne / the whiche conteyneth Englonde / wales and Scotlonde / and alſo bycauſe Irlonde is under the rule of Englonde / and of olde tyme it hath ſo contynued / therfore I haue ſet the deſcrypcyon of the ſame after the ſayd Brytayne / whiche I haue taken out of Polycronycon. And bycauſe it is neceſſary to all Englyſſhmen to knowe the propretees commodytees ⁊ merueylles of them. I William Caxton haue them ſet fyrſt in enprynte accordynge to the tranſlacyon of Treuiſa / whiche at the requeſt of the lorde Barkeley tranſlated the boke of Polycronycon in to Englyſſhe.

¶ Fynyſſhed ⁊ enprynted at London in Fleteſtrete at the ſygne of the ſonne by me Wynkyn de Worde / the yere of our lorde god. M.CCCCC.and.xv.

W C
wynkyn
de
worde